



# ZHANXIAN

BOOK 01

*Ren Yuan*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Acknowledgement

This is a fan-made ePub conversion of the chinese novel "Zhan Xian".

This series has been passed on from various translators, but the latest is at [weletranslation](#)

ePub Conversion by: [Lisa Hayes](#)

Have fun reading!

p.s.

I hope you didn't pay for this?!

# Chapter 1 - Reborn

It is said that when people face death, they will recall everything that has happened in their life, especially their mistakes, regrets, what left them the most unreconciled. Yang Chen was experiencing this right now.

The first thing to flash through his mind was, after he had been framed, desperate, wanting to explain but having no way to speak, the main perpetrator loudly hooted right in front of Yang Chen, and Yang Chen, seriously injured, had no way to resist.

“I’m the killer, I did it, and so what? Who will believe you now? You’re the murderer!” Yang Xi’s malicious smile was exceptionally clear to Yang Chen’s eyes: “I’ll tell you, I leaked the information, I invited the Greatest Heaven Sect’s young master, I killed him, I framed you, and so what?”

“You bastard!” The seriously injured Yang Chen was basically unable to confront Yang Xi head on, and could only rail at him.

“What manner of creature are you? Are you suited to have the Ten Thousand Year Vermillion Fruit? Don’t you see your reflection in a puddle of piss?” Yang Xi laughed coldly: “I accused you before the Greatest Heaven Sect, said you coveted the young master’s Vermillion Fruit, and assassinated him. The Greatest Heaven Sect rewarded me with the Vermillion Fruit, and chased you to kill you. If you want to blame someone, you can only blame yourself for not understanding the world, and not obediently handing over the Vermillion Fruit to me back then, wouldn’t

everything have been fine if you did? A lowly type born from my family's tenant farmers, how are you suited to possess the Vermillion Fruit? How do you dare refuse my requests?"

.....

The second to appear was the scene of Yang Chen's beautiful master, forced by the Greatest Heaven Sect master to be used as his practitioner stove, vowing to die rather than obey, committing suicide.

"Yang Chen, go, go far, far away, don't think about avenging me in ten million years, survive, go!" The look of farewell in his beautiful master's eyes was so clear in Yang Chen's mind, even when facing death, Yang Chen could feel such heart rending pain.

"Master, blame me for everything! Blame me for implicating you!" Yang Chen knelt before his master, crying bitterly.

For the sake of one Vermillion Fruit, Yang Chen had been framed by Yang Xi and had now even implicated his sect. The Greatest Heaven Sect master had unexpectedly discovered that Yang Chen's beautiful master actually had a rare postnatal full spiritual root, and had immediately decided to turn her into his practitioner stove. Four yuanying cultivators from the Greatest Heaven Sect had surrounded the Pure Yang Palace, now leaving no road in the sky nor door into the earth through which to escape.

"Yang Chen, go!" His beautiful master's eyes were firm, without the slightest ripple. With a Greater Blood Escape Technique, Yang

Chen was sent outside the encirclement, and with his final glance at his master, he saw the scene of her detonating her yuanying.

“Master!” Yang Chen’s miserable howl reached dozens of li.

.....

The third scene that appeared was just after Yang Chen had ascended. Before painstakingly cultivating until he could finally ascend, Yang Chen had thought he could finally take revenge, but he hadn’t expected that, in the end, he would only be by himself, and confronting a great sect like the Greatest Heaven Sect, he was still without means, and, in the end, could only ascend. However, after ascending, he had still encountered the Greatest Heaven Sect’s sponsor in the spiritual world and immortal world.

“You ascending is still too much of a waste, I’ll let you stay as an example to others, to let them see the conclusion to offending me!” The former Greatest Heaven Sect master, now the Profound Heaven Sect vice master, sneered as he looked at Yang Chen, and placed him under a restriction.

Everyone could see Yang Chen’s miserable fate after they ascended, but the Profound Heaven Sect’s influence was great, and nobody dared object. Besides, the one suffering was Yang Chen, everyone only learned from his example. And Yang Chen suffered in this way for thousands of years.

.....

But very soon, Yang Chen's memories turned to his happiest scene, that moment he received his first flying sword from his beautiful master.

“Yang Chen, I've specially refined this Bright Light Sword for you, take it properly, and cultivate diligently!” His master's slender jade fingers held that Bright Light Sword and handed it to Yang Chen. That instant was the happiest moment in Yang Chen's road of cultivation.

The scene froze, and Yang Chen couldn't help screaming miserably with the burst of heart rending, lung tearing pain in his body.

“Aaaa.....”

A long, miserable shriek echoed from Yang Chen's throat, filled with strong unwillingness, scaring everyone around him to jump.

“What person dares make a racket here?” A furious shout resounded, soon followed by the lazy appearance of a human silhouette, who immediately looked at the bewildered Yang Chen in the crowd.

“Causing such a racket before the monastery gate without reason, and being so rude before even entering, there's no need for you to participate in the spiritual root test today!” Yang Chen didn't even have time to clearly see what the person who appeared looked like before he swung a wide sleeve, sending Yang Chen soaring uncontrollably high into the air, hands and feet swinging,



flying far away.

Yang Chen fell heavily to the ground with a loud thump, unable to get up for a long time. But this pain also let Yang Chen understand that he was still alive.

He had survived old devil Yi's Greater Demonic Body Explosion Technique? What was a little bit of pain to a pleasant surprise like that? When, ecstatic, Yang Chen was just about to circulate his profound power to heal the pain, he discovered that there was unexpectedly not a shred of magic power within him.

With great alarm, practically not daring to believe it, Yang Chen mobilized it once again, but there was still no trace of activity. Could he have lost all his magic power? In great trouble, heart racing, Yang Chen recalled the overlooked circumstances of the scene just now. Monastery gate? Spiritual root test? What was that?

Yang Chen now discovered that he was no longer at the devil punishing battlefield in the immortal world, but rather in an extremely unfamiliar place. His surroundings was verdant hills and limpid water, mist rising in spirals, seemingly a good place to cultivate.

Struggling to his feet, Yang Chen discovered that he was dressed in rough plain clothes, something bulging painfully at his waist. Touching it, he discovered a sharpened wood cutting blade.

Boom, Yang Chen's mind exploded like a thunderclap, coming to

a realization in a flash: these were the circumstances of when he participated in the Greatest Heaven Sect's spiritual root test. Unexpectedly, when he was struck by the Greater Demonic Body Exploding Technique, he had not only not died, but even returned to his childhood.

“This is outside the Greater Heaven Sect's gate in the mundane world!” Seeing those distant once familiar people with all kinds of expressions, Yang Chen was certain, he had been reborn. The reason those people looked both familiar and not, was because enough time had passed to forget them, a full ten thousand years.

However, however much time passed, it still wasn't enough to eliminate Yang Chen's hatred for the Greatest Heaven Sect. Yang Xi had entered the Greatest Heaven Sect, and later killed the Greatest Heaven Sect's young master, but blamed it on him. And all his later suffering, everything that happened later, was all related to this sect.

Having gone from a great principal golden immortal back to a mundane mortal, Yang Chen didn't know how to describe his feelings besides hatred. He could only be certain of one thing, no matter how he put it, he was still alive. A hundred thousand celestial troops and generals had fallen and disappeared, but at least he was still alive, and also alive at the moment he most looked forward to.

The person who punched him was very skilled at hitting ordinary people, at least Yang Chen could only stay seated, unable to stand for a very long time, as if something was tying him down. Only when the first batch of several dozen the people he had come with



walked out of that decorated gate arch did Yang Chen feel his body relax, finally able to stand up.

“Really unfortunate!”

“Failed this year again, ai!”

.....

A series of sighing voices came from the crowd. When a few of the same generation from the same village as Yang Chen saw him struggling to get up, they ran over to help.

“Right, at least we still had the chance to try. Chen’zi was out of luck today, he didn’t even get a chance!” One young man seemed rather warm hearted, dusting of Yang Chen as he spoke.

“Fine, let’s go, we’ll go back!” Basically nobody had any chance today, and everyone naturally followed when someone took the lead: “We still have a month on the road, let’s go! Maybe there’s a chance next year!”

“Forget about it, an immortal destiny spiritual root is Heaven’s destiny, if it didn’t work this year, next year probably won’t work either.” On the road down the mountain, someone sighed.

“Don’t say that, spiritual roots will be obtained at a certain auspicious time. As the body grows, root bones will appear at some time, perhaps my time of growth will come this year, then I’ll have

an immortal destiny spiritual root next year!” The speaker was naturally a person filled with hope for his own body.

“Yang Xi and Yang Lan were lucky this year, old master Yang will become even more dominant now. His grandson and granddaughter both have cultivation spiritual roots, he will walk even straighter in the village!” Along with disappointment, there was naturally also pride. Everyone also spoke with envious tones.

Yang Xi and Yang Lan. When Yang Chen heard these two names, dusty memories seemed to irresistibly re-emerge from the depths of his mind. Especially Yang Xi, who Yang Chen hated to the bone. If not for him, his master wouldn't have been implicated. If not for him, Yang Chen wouldn't have had to live a humiliating life of hiding his identity and relying on the charity of others, dodging west and hiding in the east. It might be said that at least fifty percent of Yang Chen's misfortunes could be blamed on Yang Xi.

Fortunately Yang Chen had been reborn now, and also been reborn before he had began to cultivate. That meant that Yang Chen had countless opportunities. Walking behind everyone on the road back home, Yang Chen secretly made plans.

Yang Chen actually felt he was lucky to have been driven away outside the monastery gate because of his scream. Yang Chen didn't know if he could have held back his anger if he really had confronted the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect. He didn't have any magic power at the moment, and he wasn't the opponent for even the lowest level disciple.

Yang Chen cared even less about not being chosen. With the

memories and more than ten thousand years of cultivation experience in his mind, entering some sect or not was completely meaningless to him.

Even if Yang Chen was good for nothing in his last life, and even good-for-nothing when he had reached the world of immortals, in the end he had once been a great primary golden immortal. Of the sects in this mundane world, besides the Pure Yang Palace of his sect, how could any of them enter Yang Chen's sight? How would Yang Chen be unable to step into the world of immortals by relying on the cultivation experience from his last life? At worst, even walking the same road as before, he could still become a great primary golden immortal again.

However, did he really want to walk the same old road as before? Framed by Yang Xi, hunted by the Greatest Heaven Sect, humiliated by the Profound Heaven Sect's restriction? When this thought scuttled through his mind, an extremely enticing idea appeared immediately afterward. Before old devil Yi exploded his body, he had told a lot of things to the equally dying Yang Chen, even including some devil methods old devil Yi had used to improve his spiritual roots before cultivating.

Old devil Yi had been on a rampage in the immortal world for centuries, tens of thousands of celestial troops and generals unable to do anything against him. Finally a traitor had sold him out, trapped in a net laid out by a hundred thousand celestial soldiers, then surrounded and stopped. But even then, old devil Yi had still massacred in all directions, creating rivers of blood. In the end, succumbing from his serious injuries, he had used the Greater Demonic Body Exploding Technique to take the hundred thousand celestial soldiers down with him.

The reason why old devil Yi could move so unhindered in the immortal world was that one of his five phases, the flame spiritual root, was a complete spiritual root. Luckily, Yang Chen knew this spiritual root upgrading method, he also had a flame spiritual root, and right now he still hadn't begun to cultivate. Wasn't this a heaven sent opportunity?

With the appearance of this idea, Yang Chen's heart immediately began to race. Even back when he had ascended to the spiritual world, and then again ascended to the immortal world, he still hadn't forgot himself in excitement like this. However, at the same time as excitement, there was also an awkward feeling of being unable to either advance nor retreat.

That was a devil method that relied on murdering people and absorbing their life essence to supplement his spiritual roots. He was a reborn great primary golden immortal, did he really need to cultivate devil methods? Back then old devil Yi had killed tens of thousands of people, did he really have to go kill tens of thousands to cultivate? With his ten thousand years of cultivation experience, it was impossible for his cultivation to be lacking. Killing people to feed his spiritual roots on one side, regular cultivation on the other, the two ideas turned round and round in Yang Chen's mind, for the moment he was unable to decide.

"Have you forgotten? Yang Chen!" In his mind, a strict voice berated him: "Have you forgotten how your master was humiliated, how she committed suicide holding hatred? Have you forgotten how you were framed by Yang Xi, never able to clear your name? Have you forgotten how you were humiliated and treated like a slave by that arrogant Profound Sect fellow after

ascending? Have you forgotten it all? You've already spent a life as a loser, will you spend this life as a loser as well?"

"No!" Yang Chen gave a low shout, those bitter memories he had thought forgotten rushing into his heart in an instant. His master's sad and beautiful expression when she faced death, Yang Xi's pride after framing him, the contemptuous gaze of that lord in the immortal realm looking at him as if he was even lower than a dog, all appeared frantically before his eyes. Finally, he again remembered the moment his master gave him the Bright Light Sword.

"No!" Nothing was allowed to break the beauty of this moment. Unprecedented resolve was expressed in Yang Chen's gaze: "Even if I have to carry the burden of even greater massacres, even if I become a unique monster, I will still protect you, I will still keep you happy and safe from now on."

Having patiently endured for ten thousand years in his previous life, Yang Chen's character was incomparably tenacious. After making his decision now, Yang Chen instantly calmed down. Looking at the tall Greatest Heaven Sect gate, he gave a cold laugh, then turned and left.

"Master, wait for me, wait for me to enter your sect again. The tragedies of my last life will not happen again." Yang Chen shouted inwardly, like a vow: "In my last life you helped raise everything I had, in this life, let me help raise you to Heaven!"

## Chapter 2 - As Executioner

Going from the Greatest Heaven Sect back to the Yang village was a one month journey. The sect was responsible for fare and wagons when they came, but these washouts had to make their own way back. The Yang village youths weren't particularly prosperous, and could only take this more than month long journey on foot.

Everyone had considered this point, and they had all brought some silver coins before leaving. They bought a large pile of steamed buns in a small store at the foot of the mountain, using bundled skins as bags and ate them on the way. Peasants walking on long journeys wasn't any strange thing, and they didn't have any farm work to hold them up anyway. If by chance they had an immortal destiny, they would transform from fish into dragons, and if not they would return to resume their lives.

Yang Chen had already recovered his usual friendly disposition. With his target set, Yang Chen didn't become irascible. Never one with strong opinions, in the eyes of his comrades, Yang Chen seemed to have become his own person, polite and amiable, always smiling, but also capable of easily getting the others to do things according to his suggestions. Nobody felt anything was strange, it was just that what Yang Chen said seemed very reasonable.

Casually finding a pretext, Yang Chen left the group and set out alone. The others didn't feel that anything was strange, practically everyone assuming he wanted to return to see if he couldn't get another chance, but nobody said anything, and just let him leave.

Yang Chen naturally didn't return to the Greatest Heaven Sect like everyone thought, but rather turned right around and entered the mountains. With a woodcutting blade on hand and his ten thousand years of experience, Yang Chen could casually find food and drink. The reason Yang Chen avoided everyone, was because he wanted to start forging his body.

Such forging was entirely different from cultivation, it didn't draw qi into the body to cultivate qi refining arts, but rather used external martial skills to practice external martial arts styles, turning his body more powerful. As for internal arts, he didn't practice any of them.

To cultivating disciples, martial arts seemed like utterly inferior methods. As long as one trained with qi to build a foundation, one would naturally have spiritual power to nurture the body, a hundred times more efficient than external arts forging. Besides, practicing martial arts seemed like a complete waste of cultivation time. If one had time, it would be more cost effective to consider refining pills or excavating some spiritual stones.

Yang Chen was no idiot, with ten thousand years of cultivation experience, he knew better than anyone how large the difference was when cultivating with a strong body compared to a weak body. Perhaps the difference wouldn't be too visible in a few centuries, but the gap was frightfully clear when ascending for real.

The foundation was most important for cultivating, and besides the most basic cultivation spiritual roots, the foundation was embodied in an even sturdier physique. A good foundation meant even more powerful development.



Efficiently building the body was the first step. Even the road of cultivation wasn't only about studying methods of cultivation, while ignoring the body. Spiritual power could admittedly strengthen the body after reaching a certain level, but strengthening a weak scholar and a robust body still had different results.

At the same time, one cultivating warrior skills and one who spend all day long meditating also had fairly considerable differences in fights between cultivators. Yang Chen's goal was to use external martial arts to refine his muscles and bones before starting to cultivate.

There was another reason for only cultivating external arts, and no internal arts. That was that old devil Yi's spiritual root improvement devil art could only be used before cultivating. There was basically no way to deal with the restrictions of the cultivation method.

Besides martial arts, there was also running, jumping, and a string of other methods to improve the body's flexibility and speed. On the way back to the village, Yang Chen was jumping rather than running, and relied on his knife to find all his food.

Over more than ten days, Yang Chen's memories returned with increasing clarity. Everything from the time of his youth returned once again to his mind. While forging his body and running, Yang Chen soon reached an ordinary mountain.

This mountain wasn't far from a small time, but very few people came here. The mountain was barren, with almost not a speck of spiritual qi. There was a tiny mountain temple, long since in ruins, with the temple walls half caved in.

Yang Chen stood in front of this mountain temple, carefully making sure that this really was that mountain temple in his memories. Then he smiled, pushing open the half rotten temple doors, and walked inside.

There were originally murals on the walls, but they had already been eroded by wind and rain until they were extremely spotted and striped. After Yang Chen entered the temple, despite the image of the god on the spirit tablet long since turning illegible, only leaving lumps of clay behind, he still first paid his respects to the spirit tablet. The mountain god may be minor, the temple may be ruined, but that was still a celestial official.

After paying his respects, Yang Chen turned to the area behind the spirit tablet and an old locust tree, pacing the distance to verify the location, and began to dig. After digging close to two meters deep, he came across a solid object.

Yang Chen exulted, digging bit by bit along the edges of that object, exposing a square metal chest. The chest had been buried in the ground for years, but didn't show any signs of corrosion, only darkly unremarkable.

Lifting up the chest, it weighed at least fifty kilograms. If not for Yang Chen recently building his strength and having a robust physique since childhood, he really couldn't have lifted it.

This chest was something old master Yang, Yang Xi's grandfather, had left behind in his youth in case his family encountered some disaster in the future, they could use it as capital to rebuild. Only, now this capital was in Yang Chen's hands.

Next, Yang Chen would take this capital back to bring his parents away from the Yang village. Back when Yang Xi had framed Yang Chen, he had even used Yang Chen's parents as hostages, leaving Yang Chen no option but to pinch his nose and accept it. In this life, Yang Chen didn't plan on giving Yang Xi that chance.

At this time, old master Yang probably hadn't told Yang Xi about this yet, to Yang Chen's advantage. First filling in the earth he had dug up, then transplanting a small tree over here, Yang Chen carried the chest to a grove next to the road where he found a place to bury it again. Making sure there were no clues anywhere, Yang Chen followed the road back towards home.

Rushing on the way, Yang Chen's speed wasn't any slower than those companions walking. When they returned to the village, Yang Chen also just caught up.

One month of efficient tempering made Yang Chen seem a bit tougher than when he left. Despite being just sixteen, he could compare to adults.

The news that old master Yang's grandchildren, Yang Xi and Yang Lan, had been chosen by the Greatest Heaven Sect caused great waves in the village. Almost the entire county was shocked,

and even the county magistrate dropped by to congratulate. For a while, Yang village was bustling as if holding a majestic festival.

Amidst the bustling scene of old master Yang's whole family, the sad departure of the washout Yang Chen seemed entirely unremarkable.

Yang Chen's family was just named Yang, they didn't have any blood relationship with the old master. The family of three rented a carriage in the county capital, not bringing much stuff, and very quickly left the range of the county.

Yang Chen dismissed the cart near the next county capital, then rented another cart in the new town, switching at roughly six places on the way to the second location. Finally Yang Chen bought a cart, and after more than a day on the road, the family hurried to near where Yang Chen had buried the chest.

Resting for a few hours at a suitable place, another box quietly appeared in the Yang family's luggage, and furthermore placed within another chest, visible to nobody.

Soon after, changing directions, they travelled for roughly two months, hurrying over to where Yang Chen wanted to settle his parents. Fortunately they travelled on official roads the whole time, and since the family didn't seem rich, they weren't beset by any robbers, safely reaching their destination. With all these arrangements, it would be impossible for anyone to find Yang Chen's parents again later.

In fact, this road had already taken them out of the state of Chen where the Yang family came from, and entered the borders of the state of Zhao. For two old docile farmers like Yang Chen's parents, leaving the state of Chen was practically impossible. But Yang Chen seemed to have planned as if he could see the future, and they arrived smoothly without any danger on the road.

Old master Yang's capital really was substantial. Besides more than six hundred tael of gold, and more than one hundred tael of silver, the rest was unexpectedly all lower quality spiritual stones. The several tens of catty of spiritual rocks was equivalent to several tens of thousands of tael of gold.

Yang Chen wasn't the least modest, buying houses, land and servants in a somewhat remote but verdant location, getting his parents a large manor, several hundred fields of arable land, dozens of servants, and more than a hundred tenant farmer families. The two farmers who had never before enjoyed one easy day, suddenly went to the kind of lordly people they had admired all their lives, who others had to greet as sir and madam, they really didn't dare believe it.

This was a remote place, and besides the farmers living here, it was rare to see other people. Even war wouldn't influence this place. This was a place Yang Chen had carefully chosen, and he had naturally thought it over completely.

With everything arranged to his satisfaction, Yang Chen was in no hurry to leave, but rather accompanied his parents for half a year. In this half year, Yang Chen had been increasingly diligent in his training, further adding the excellent food, he seemed sturdier

and a size larger. His whole body tight with muscles, he didn't look like he was just sixteen.

With one season's harvest, life at the manor had also stepped onto the right track. Yang Chen said goodbye to his parents, and left this new home. It had already been nine months since his rebirth.

.....

On the table of an executioner a thousand li distant lay twenty tael of gold, and opposite the executioner, sat Yang Chen.

"You mean, you want to become an executioner, and if I help you, this is mine?" The old executioner didn't even dare believe what his eyes saw and what his ears heard, did this world have such luck?

Executioner wasn't any admirable job, in fact, in the current hierarchy, executioners were loathed by gods and shunned by ghosts, inferior to even beggars. Nobody would show them any respect on the street. To boot, because they killed too much, they would offend Heaven, according to legend falling to the eighteenth layer of Hell after death. The old executioner absolutely didn't dare believe that someone would actually spend so much gold on a request like that.

“I have a bad fate, the diviner said that if I don’t kill enough people, I’ll draw death on my parents’ home, therefore I want to borrow the status of executioner to kill some people and neutralize my lot.” Yang Chen spit out some nonsense justification: “I only want to do it for half a year, I’ll leave after half a year, and you do what you should do.”

Taking his place to kill for half a year, reducing his sin of killing, and also giving him twenty tael of gold. Even when removing the bribes for the lord, it still left a considerable profit. If the old executioner didn’t take him up on it, he would be an idiot.

Falling ill, taking a leave of absence, then recommending an apprentice – the old executioner only used half a day to arrange everything. Yang Chen’s muscular build left other people without any doubts as to whether he was qualified to take on the heavy duty of an executioner.

Nobody knew why Yang Chen would want to be a mundane executioner. Only Yang Chen himself knew that there was once an armed rebellion in the heavenly court of the immortal world, something that happened a very long time before Yang Chen ascended. But Yang Chen also realized that it happened roughly after he was born, at that time the sky in the mundane world turned blood red for one day and one night, shortly after the world was in rebellion, several dynasties changing.

According to what Yang Chen knew, after the rebellion in the heavenly court, several thousand immortals, large and small, were beheaded on the Immortal Execution Stage. And as for the Immortal Execution Stage, a magic tool possessed exclusively by



the heavenly court, to avert the the experts operating it from becoming a threat to the immortal world, it was always operated by a person from the mundane world. As for the candidates who would operate the Immortal Execution Stage, they were naturally chosen from among the executioners of the mundane world.

If Yang Chen could enter the Immortal Execution Stage, then he could honestly execute immortals to practice the devil method. Killing one immortal out to be even more beneficial than killing ten thousand mortals. Since he wouldn't carry the name of a devil practitioner but could still replenish his cultivation spiritual roots, thinking about it, this was simply a duty assigned to him by Heaven, arranging for him to execute immortals.

Yang Chen quickly entered the situation, the day after everything was finished, he had a convict to behead. This was the first time Yang Chen killed on the execution ground, and it was also the first time he tried old devil Yi's method. Even if the old devil said it on death's door, there was no way to be sure if it was true. But Yang Chen would try it anyway. Executioner, there was no second choice for authoritative and fair murder.

“For every debt there is a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, pardon me!” Yang Chen was bare chested, his head wrapped with a blood red silk cloth. Reaching out and grabbing the death sentence board stuck in the clothes of the kneeling convict, he threw it to the ground. He raised the executioner's blade in his right hand.

Along with Yang Chen's movements, the spectators inside and outside the execution grounds immediately opened their eyes

wide, their breathing halting. Long since prepared strong wine was placed to the side, and Yang Chen raised the bowl, first drinking a large mouthful, then filling his mouth again and spraying it over the executioner's blade. All this done, Yang Chen looked at the convict with bright eyes, suddenly issuing a murderous spirit, as if he had suddenly turned into a different person. The executioner's blade rose high, and fell sharply.

The crowd only saw a bright flash of blade light, they didn't even dare be certain Yang Chen had already done it. But Yang Chen seemed to have returned to being that friendly youth, unexpectedly already holding a brand new silk cloth and starting to wipe the blade. Everyone stared blankly, fixedly. The convict's head was still properly on his neck, not moving at all, what was going on?

Just as everyone were bewildered, a blood trace suddenly appeared on the convict's neck. The wound quickly grew wider, becoming a red line. Soon after, with a thump, the head fell off from the wound, exposing a bowl sized cut, hot blood spurting out like spring water, shooting into the air. The sound lasted for five or six breaths before losing its strength. At this moment, the convict's body that had been kneeling until now, fell to the ground.

There as a burst of noise, followed immediately by resounding cheering.

Yang Chen drew a deep breath, already unconsciously recalling some of the method in his mind, and immediately started to circulate it. An invisible aura burst from the corpse into Yang Chen's body, becoming a warm current, finally passing into Yang

Chen's four limbs and hundred bones.

# Chapter 3 - Whoever Doesn't Dare Behead

People were still commenting on the new executioner's skill, while Yang Chen was feeling that warm flow within his body. Old devil Yi's method really was correct, at least so far there still hadn't been a problem, he just didn't know what the result would be.

Returning to his little courtyard, Yang Chen took out a five colored stone from under a millstone. Even if people saw it, they definitely wouldn't know what it was. Only Yang Chen knew that this five colored rock was something used in the immortal sects of his old life to test a disciple's postnatal spiritual roots. Innate spiritual roots were set from birth, only postnatal spiritual roots could change.

Holding it on either side, the five colored rock practically didn't change at all, but when carefully looking, there was a trace of faint, almost imperceptible, red light. This also meant that his postnatal spiritual roots had made an extremely minute change. After all, he had only killed one person, it was really too trivial to truly change his spiritual roots. Only, at least it proved that this method worked.

With Yang Chen's ten thousand years of cultivation experience, he still hadn't discovered any injuries when using the method, nor had he found any hidden dangers. In other words, for the moment there really wasn't any problem with using this method. Most miraculous was that, one, this method didn't raise his spiritual or

magic power, and two, didn't forge his soul essence. Even if he practiced it, he would still be an ordinary person and wouldn't violate the taboo of the heavenly court, he still had the chance to enter the Immortal Execution Stage.

Starting half a year later, bandits sprang up like weeds all over the nation, always more being arrested. Under such vexing circumstances, the court issued a hard-line decree, all bandits arrested would be executed! Under such an unprecedentedly harsh decree, many bandits were arrested practically every day all over the nation. At the start it was a few, afterwards it became more than ten or twenty, and within several days, they were arrested by forties and fifties.

In the county town, besides the supposedly ill old executioner, the only headsman was Yang Chen, who was in charge of cutting off several dozen heads each day. At the start, people still excitedly went to the execution grounds to watch, but after seeing it, nobody was in the mood for such entertainment any longer.

“For every debt there is a debtor, I have no past grudges with everyone, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, following orders, please pardon me!” Before each time he carried out the sentence, Yang Chen would say these words. Saying it was to make clear that he should not be affected by karma. Having said it for several days, Yang Chen was already exceptionally familiar with it.

Snap, Yang Chen swung the blade and lopped off a head, blood rushing from the headless neck, but Yang Chen wasn't dirtied by even a drop. This was the result of his meticulous training, cutting off more than a hundred heads had given him confidence in his

skill not to be hit by a single drop of blood after decapitating.

Sss, Yang Chen drew a deep breath, inhaling the breath of life seemingly contained within the corpse into his own body. Having already circulated the method more than a hundred times, he immediately circulated it once again, swiftly storing the qi within his four limbs and hundred bones, nourishing his body, changing his spiritual roots.

His hands didn't hesitate in the slightest, Yang Chen skillfully went down the line as fluent as running water, walking over in front of the second convict, decapitating, inhaling, circulating, followed by the third, fourth.....

On that day there were forty five bandits to be beheaded, and after Yang Chen beheaded the last one, his body was already brimming with power. Carefully sensing the changes in his body, Yang Chen still faintly shook his head. The life essence of mundane people, no matter how many were absorbed, were apparently not very useful. There wouldn't be a clear effect unless he killed maybe tens or hundreds of thousands.

Only, what Yang Chen thought of as completely useless, in the eyes of others, was an entirely different matter. Perhaps it was because of that method, but after each time he killed people, Yang Chen would be wrapped in a dense bloody aura that didn't scatter for a long time afterwards. His whole body felt as if he had climbed out of a sea of blood, vicious qi overflowing in all directions. Let alone ordinary people, even the soldiers stationed at the execution grounds would turn their heads when they saw Yang Chen, avoiding his eyes.

When walking down the streets in town, the residents didn't even dare glance at him, for fear they couldn't look away in time. Yang Chen only needed to appear for the streets to empty out. This also saved Yang Chen a lot of trouble, at least nobody dared come over to make trouble. No matter how much they loathed Yang Chen, in his presence they didn't dare say half an improper word.

Resting in the morning, decapitating at noon, training in the afternoon, the regular days continued for a month. Yang Chen had also absorbed the life essence of a lot of convicts. Even if it wasn't enough for him to reach the goal he hoped for, just the bloody qi of his body was enough to let his martial arts rise to the next level.

On this day, when Yang Chen was finished at the execution grounds and on his way home, he saw the sky filled with red clouds. Today was extremely strange, sunset clouds had appeared just at noon, and filled the entire sky, their color as red as blood.

Seeing this scene, Yang Chen's face finally revealed a smile. The moment he had waited for so long was just this day. The sky filling with blood, this was the day he had learned of after ascending to the immortal world in his previous life, the day the heavenly court changed.

After eating dinner, Yang Chen went to sleep early. Strangely, this night, no matter who it was, all would fall asleep early. Even if they weren't in bed, they would still suddenly be attacked by weariness and immediately find some place to completely fall asleep.



“Yang Chen, you are an executioner?” In the dream, Yang Chen heard the shout of a judge.

“Yes, lord!” On hearing this voice, Yang Chen swiftly rose from his bed, answering towards the emptiness. Yang Chen now discovered that he was no longer in his room.

“As long as they are convicts, do you dare behead? Can you behead?” The voice asked another question.

“As long as they are convicts, I dare behead, and I can behead!” Yang Chen replied without the slightest arrogance.

“Follow me!” The owner of the dignified voice didn’t reveal itself, only reaching him from one direction: “On the execution ground, behead the convicts!” The voice was filled with the aggressiveness of a lord, basically leaving people without any thoughts of resistance.

“Yes, lord!” Yang Chen didn’t think about it, only answered and followed the path suddenly appearing before him, only walking up with large strides. Soon, he saw an execution ground crowded with people.

At some unknown point, Yang Chen had already been changed into the executioner’s dress he wore on the execution grounds. A soldier with unclear appearance, clasping an executioner’s blade in both hands, held it in front of Yang Chen. Yang Chen reached out and took it, raising the blade with practiced ease, and running a finger along the edge. Before beheading, at least he had to make

sure the blade was sharp.

“Little brother, I’ll borrow this chance to speak!” Just testing the sharpness of the blade, Yang Chen’s belt was softly pulled by someone, followed by a very fawning voice.

Yang Chen turned his head, discovering a robust and prosperous fatty, dressed in fine silks, one hand softly pulling at his belt, the other hand quietly stretching towards Yang Chen, holding an ingot of gold of at least ten tael.

“Little brother, can’t you do me a favor?” The fatty’s face had a kind of intimate smile, reaching out and pressing that gold ingot into Yang Chen’s belt: “I’ve already bribed the others, as long as little brother lets my son off at the execution grounds, only cutting a superficial wound when decapitating, not taking his life, and hiding it from the presiding official, other people definitely won’t notice. Afterwards I will thank you considerably!”

“I’m only an executioner, in charge of carrying out the sentence, I have no understanding of other things!” Yang Chen only pushed away the fat hand, then turned and walked onto the execution grounds.

“Brat, refusing a toast only to be forced to drink the forfeit, I’m a highly ranked court official, if you fail to appreciate kindness, you won’t be able to take the consequences!” When the fatty saw Yang Chen’s refusal, his expression changed immediately, fiercely shooting a low shout at Yang Chen’s back.

“You may be a high ranking court official, but how is that related to a headsman like me?” Yang Chen sneered and climbed directly onto the stage, holding the blood red executioner’s blade to his chest, quietly standing there, waiting for the order to begin.

This time it wasn’t just Yang Chen carrying out the executions alone, there was a long line of executioners holding blood red blades. Yang Chen couldn’t even clearly see how many there were. This scene really was shocking, what kind of execution grounds would cut off so many heads?

Dong dong dong, three drum beats, the sun seemed to have already reached its zenith. Yang Chen only heard an order: “Behead!” Immediately afterwards, a death sentence plate was thrown out.

“For every debt there is a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, carrying out orders, please pardon me!” Yang Chen spoke his customary working phrase, then soon after grabbed the death sentence board stuck in the prisoner’s clothes, throwing it aside, with a loud shout, the executioner’s blade rose up high, and fell with a snap. One head immediately rolled away, and the headless body slowly fell over, blood gushing out.

Finished with all this, Yang Chen didn’t absorb the life essence like usual, but rather quietly held the blade in place, waiting for the dispatch.

“Nineteen thousand three hundred seventy two executioners, beheaded three thousand eight hundred forty three people.” In the

void, a voice seemed to both calculate the statistics and making a report.

Suddenly a gale rose, soon dispersing all the dust. Yang Chen was still in the execution grounds, but the just decapitated convict was gone without a trace. The only thing in the wide open space before him was a delicate and charming beauty, kneeling in the dust, flashing perfect white jade features, surpassing the beauty of flowers, face contrasting the red clouds, beautiful in a hundred ways, unlimited grace.

The beauty knelt in the open space, but standing around were several dozen executioners like Yang Chen, seemingly all waiting for the death sentence.

“Behead!” Another shout, and a death sentence plate landed in front of an executioner. That executioner immediately stepped forward, but just as he was about to swing his blade, the beauty spoke up: “I’m innocent, please general have pity.”

That executioner saw her beauty, and already pitied her, further adding her sweetness, calling him general, directly made this executioner’s bones soften and tendons go limp, mouth and eyes wide open, but unable to move.

The supervising official grew angry, shouting at another executioner: “You, behead!” The death sentence plate seemed to have grown eyes, flying over in front of another executioner. This executioner stepped forward, and was equally entreated by the beauty, immediately captivated and unable to move.

The following several dozen executioners were all the same. The supervising official was already unable to restrain the anger in his voice, and finally, the plate appeared in front of Yang Chen, the official's fury incomparably clear in his shout: "You, behead!"

Yang Chen stepped forward, standing next to the beauty. When the beauty raised her head, exposing her devastating charm, her sweet voice: "General, I'm unjustly accused!" Just one soft call, but it already revealed a bone softening charm, even steel refined a hundred times would turn soft enough to wind around your fingers.

But unfortunately, Yang Chen seemed to have a heart of stone, looking at that delicate beauty as if he didn't see her, only shouting: "Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, no recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!"

Words finished, no matter how heartbreaking the lamentations of the beauty, the great blade rose up high, and with one cut, snap, the beauty's begging voice stopped, her beautiful head flying far away, no different from any ordinary convict sentenced to death.

"Good!" Yang Chen swung down the blade, and heard a cheering voice by his ear. Yang Chen didn't even glance sideways, but there was a cold smile in his heart.

"Three thousand eight hundred forty three people, only one hundred fifteen beheaded." The voice still reported the statistics in

the void.

“Yang Chen, over here!” Someone called out behind him, and Yang Chen followed without thinking twice. The other executioners who were unable to behead the beautiful woman still stood there stupidly as if not understanding anything.

Soon reaching another execution ground, but here Yang Chen was the only executioner, and the convict was a middle aged man with disheveled hair wearing dragon robes. Strangely, he didn’t have any restraints, and there were no sergeants attending. Standing in place, with prestige rather than fury, he looked coldly at the approaching Yang Chen.

The soldier guiding him had already disappeared somewhere, and only Yang Chen confronted this middle aged man by himself. But Yang Chen didn’t say anything, only quietly standing in place.

“Yang Chen, behead!” The supervising official’s voice resounded once again, and a death sentence plate landed in front of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen raised the executioner’s blade and stepped forward without a second word. When the middle aged man saw the circumstances, his eyes opened wide, his expression displaying the aura of a ruler, shouting at Yang Chen: “I am the reigning son of Heaven, the king of yesterday and tomorrow, you dare be rude?”

This voice was like the clang of metal, like gold and jade, deafening to the ears. Cowardly people might go limp and

unconsciously kneel when shouted at by this voice.

Boom, Yang Chen didn't care, walking up and kicking. How would the soul of a great primary golden immortal care about a tiny human emperor? Kicking the middle aged man to the ground with one foot, firmly stepping on him, he swung the blood colored executioner's blade.

"Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!" Speaking his catchphrase, Yang Chen's large blade cut down, and the head of that fellow who called himself emperor rolled away.

Ding, with a brittle sound, a tiny white jade pendant was revealed under the emperor's corpse. The jade was rich and smooth, and one could tell it was a quality item with a glance.

Yang Chen looked around him, there was nobody there, laughing coldly in his heart, he reached out and grabbed the pendant, putting it in his belt. He stood quietly, waiting for the next instructions.

"Two people beheaded, one did not glance sideways, one took the jade pendant." Yang Chen couldn't hear the voice in the void recounting the final statistics.

"Good! Yang Chen, the heavenly court's immortal execution stage needs an executioner like you, are you willing?" This time the never seen supervising official stood in front of Yang Chen,

asking kindly, holding a white ring in his hand, slowly offering it.



# Chapter 4 - I'm The Executioner

“As my lord instructs!” Yang Cheng bowed and accepted the ring. When the supervising official indicated it, he slowly placed it on his finger.

On putting on the ring, it issued a soft light that enveloped Yang Chen's whole body. The ring then disappeared from Yang Cheng's finger, only leaving behind a mark like a tattoo.

“This is the pass token of the Immortal Execution Stage, it's by relying on this token that you can enter the stage!” The supervising official gave his instructions expressionlessly, then pointed behind Yang Chen: “Besides you, only the people to be executed can enter the Immortal Execution Stage!”

Yang Chen turned his head and discovered that at some point a road had already appeared behind him, leading to a dazzlingly splendid great gatehouse. The gatehouse was more luxurious than any in the mortal world, even having two golden dragons roaring against the sky mounted on giant pillars. In the middle above it was written three bold large words in blood red, Immortal Execution Stage. When approaching one would discover that these three words were actually made from living flesh, still squirming. Below the gatehouse stood four fully armored soldiers as guards.

“Halt, who dares enter the Immortal Execution Stage without authority?” When Yang Chen approached, someone immediately called out to him.

Yang Chen stretched out his hand, the marks on his finger immediately visible. Strangely, at this point, the ring itself suddenly appeared, making the guards understand. After seeing it, the four stepped away from the gate, letting Yang Chen enter.

Entering the gatehouse, there was a misty light, hiding everything. Yang Cheng stretched out his hand, and touched the space. Thinking about it, he approached the white light with large strides. The white light didn't block him, letting him enter.

Only when they saw this scene did the four soldiers outside relax. One soldier suddenly turned his head to ask: "Lord, he's light fingered, robbing the corpses, why would he be chosen?"

The supervising official lord had appeared next to the four at some point, looking at the ball of light without anything strange, then said: "You're well aware of who will be beheaded on the Immortal Execution Stage this time. Only he and one other beheaded the criminal without taking bribes, and also beheaded the beautiful woman with one cut, and still dared to kick down and behead the king of yesterday and tomorrow, where the others first kowtowed before executing. The other people weren't strict with the criminal, were reluctant to behead the beautiful woman, or didn't even dare. This Immortal Execution Stage doesn't have people more suitable than them. Taking things from the dead, is always better than from the living."

"Besides, having entered the Immortal Execution Stage, besides food and water to eat and drink, there is also the Immortal Executioner Blade, and it's only as long as one isn't tarnished by any blood, flesh or items from immortals that one can leave." The

supervising official watched the four gatekeepers next to him: “Do you feel that he, a mortal, while beheading so many immortals, will still have the chance to leave? His thievery, how couldn’t that sever his chance to come out?”

The guards then finally came to a realization, the series of tests were only to choose a suitable candidate. Not only did he need outstanding bravery, but also a weak point. People fitting such requirements were as rare as phoenix feathers and qilin horn, finding such a suitable person was exceptionally rare, truly a prodigy.

When Yang Chen set foot in the white light, it was as if he suddenly stepped into another world. The scene revealed before him was an incomparably vast execution ground.

In truth, Yang Chen had never had a chance to see the Immortal Execution Stage even in his previous life. The Immortal Execution Stage, as the name implies, was the place where the heavenly court executed immortals, and the immortals that could enter had only one identity, that of sentenced prisoners. Yang Chen was no executioner in his previous life, nor was he a sentenced prisoner, so naturally he had no chance to experience it.

Just ahead was a golden blade stand, made in the style of two dragons coiled together, the dragon heads facing upward, their mouths open wide. Within the two open dragon mouths, a blood red extremely vicious blade was neatly placed. After Yang Chen entered, he only swept his gaze around the execution ground, then was attracted by the long blade.

This blade was different from the great executioner's blade Yang Chen usually used. The edge was longer, and faint flashes of lightning spread along it. The wide blade was a different tune played with equal skill compared to the executioner's blade, only useful for beheading. The handle was black, but seemed as if it had long sharp teeth, leaking a malevolent aura, as if one would be swallowed by a fearsome beast just by gripping it.

Taking a step forward, Yang Chen gripped the black handle. Instantly, a violent to the limit killing intent rushed into his mind like a landslide or tsunami. Mixed within it were countless wails and howls, as if the countless people who had died under this blade were all wildly voicing their anger.

"I do not fear the living, so how could I fear the dead?" Yang Chen sneered, basically paying it no heed. The killing intent rushing into Yang Chen's mind seemed to have suddenly run into a firewall dike, instantly surrendering, fundamentally unable to raise the slightest commotion.

The vicious blade seemed astonished, and again sent a burst of thoughts: "Obey me, I will bring you to behead countless immortals of the primary heaven! Before you, even the killing intent of great primary golden immortals will be in awe!"

Undeniably, it was unknown how many powerful immortals had been beheaded by this vicious blade, and it had a natural suppressing effect when confronting immortals. Yang Chen felt a chill throughout his body, unconsciously trembling. That was a normal reaction when immortals confronted the Immortal Executioner Blade.

But Yang Cen was a former great primary golden immortal, and sobered after just a distracted thought, his boundlessly powerful will starting to contend against the will of the vicious blade.

Nobody knew the scene within the Immortal Executioner Stage, and Yang Chen hadn't anticipated that he would have to face such a great inconvenience after entering the Immortal Executioner Stage with his mortal body.

The vicious blade already had a will of its own. If ordinary mortals entered, without need for debate, there would be only one outcome: to serve the vicious blade, to become a slave to the Immortal Executioner Stage under the control of the vicious blade's will.

"Obey me!" The violent will forced itself inside once again, and Yang Chen, his body unable to endure such pressure, knelt on the ground. Confronting such a mountainous killing intent, Yang Chen could spare no effort to keep his mind from being suppressed.

The unwillingness of his previous life, the grievances, the pointless scenes appeared before Yang Chen once again, forcing a shout from the bottom of his heart: "I will not surrender!"

His master's delicate appearance before her death appeared again, flashing Yang Chen a sad and beautiful smile, instantly turning back to the happy scene when Yang Chen just held the Bright Light Sword.

“You’re just a blade, I’m the executioner!” Yang Chen shouted loudly, rising back to his feet.

Boom, all the essence of the killing intent completely rushed into Yang Chen’s body, all of it absorbed by Yang Chen without any apprehension. In his mind, the only thing Yang Chen remembered was what he had shouted just now, I’m the executioner!

Yang Chen’s body became an all new battlefield. However, the scene was completely different from before. if before it was the vicious blade’s will trying to influence Yang Chen on the blade, making Yang Chen surrender to the blade, then now it had become an away game for the vicious blade, completely located in Yang Chen’s body.

“Obey me!”

“Surrender!”

“I will lead you to behead immortals!”

.....

No matter the threats or coercions, Yang Chen only guarded that one bright point in his heart. I am the executioner! This sentence immediately decided who was the master, and no matter how the vicious blade exhausted various methods and strategies, it was left powerless before Yang Chen’s heart.

Finally, the vicious blade's will grew weaker and weaker, and, under Yang Chen's tightly guarded mind, began to merge with the killing intent Yang Chen had gained from killing more than a hundred people in the mundane world.

When this merging of killing intent began, there was no longer any time for rest, the whole process finished like a hot knife through butter, the next moment, the vicious blade's will had completely merged into Yang Chen's killing intent.

"I'm the executioner!" Yang Chen's eyes gradually brightened, saying this as unhesitating as slicing through a nail. The vicious blade was already docile in his hand, and besides a closely intertwined fluency, there was nothing else. Lifting the long blood colored blade, Yang Chen squinted and added: "You're just the executioner's blade."

With the series of unexpected events, the fusion of killing intent, Yang Chen hadn't sensed the changes that had occurred in his body. Holding the vicious blade, standing there, he sensed a killing intent overflowing heaven spring up. His whole body seemed enveloped in a faint red light. As he opened his eyes, rays of severe killing intent shot out, making people shudder.

"This is?" Seeing the vague red light his body released, Yang Chen jumped with surprise. Back when hunting old devil Yi, because he had killed too many people, the old devil had also been enveloped in a layer of red light. Even though Yang Chen only had a faint red sheen right now, it still seemed the same as old devil Yi, killing intent overflowing from the body, clearly revealing a

unique vicious devil.

“Fortunately I prepared in advance!” Yang Chen smiled, but didn’t mind in particular. He raised his blade and walked ahead, stepping towards the tall stage. That was the true Immortal Executioner Stage, the place for putting immortals to death.

But Yang Chen didn’t immediately step onto the stage, but rather looked to the side. The accommodations of the Immortal Executioner Stage were very simple, one kitchen where Yang Chen could eat and drink, one small room where he could sleep, as well as a bathroom. Food and drinking water would be arranged automatically for Yang Chen, without need for him to do anything, in the room was also a set of seamless heavenly robes in the style of an executioner for him to wear, repelling dust and water. Everything Yang Chen needed to live was provided here.

The spacious execution ground was where prisoners would be tied up, but now there still wasn’t a soul in sight. But Yang Chen knew that it would very soon be filled with more immortals than could be believed, for Yang Chen to behead one by one.

Drinking water, eating food, bathing, changing clothes, Yang Chen finished everything without hurry, then picked up the vicious blade and stepped onto the Immortal Executioner Stage. After sitting down, he began to study the ring on his hand.

Since entering the Immortal Executioner Stage, the ring had always been in the shape of a ring. Yang Chen had once possessed a ring of this style in his previous life, that was a token of holding a post at the heavenly court. Apart from this, it also recorded



accumulated achievements, and was also a pretty decent storage ring. The ring on Yang Chen's hand was relatively special, it was the only one the heavenly court issued to mortals.

Nobody had anticipated Yang Chen to know all this like the back of his hand, nobody knew the extraordinary things Yang Chen had already experienced in his last life. This life he would keep those regretful things from happening again.

Boom, boom, boom, three crashes of thunder, and in the execution ground below the Immortal Executioner Stage suddenly appeared a dense crowd. By Yang Chen's rough calculations there were several hundreds, and the number was constantly rising.

Yang Chen saw everything, but didn't make a move, still quietly sitting on the Immortal Executioner Stage, his eyes closed in rest. With the appearance of so many people within the Immortal Executioner Stage, suddenly, the vicious blade's will started making noise within Yang Chen's body again.

“Kill them! Kill them!”

The sudden appearance of targets made the vicious blade's will hibernating in Yang Chen's body go crazy again. That kind of thirst for beheading the living, urge to strip their flesh, almost made Yang Chen unable to hold onto his mind.

In the end, Yang Chen finally firmly remembered that he was the executioner, and the melting of the vicious blade's will he felt before seemed too quick, a bit illogical. Sure enough, after the

targets of the Immortal Executioner Stage appeared, it appeared once again.

If Yang Chen had began to work just now, the vicious blade might have already touched Yang Chen's will, once again invading his heart. But Yang Chen forcibly endured, sitting upright and motionless on the stage, and the vicious blade could only jump around and flaunt its ferocity again.

In fact, this will basically wasn't that of the vicious blade, but rather the will of the entire Immortal Executioner Stage. The vicious blade was in itself a part of the Immortal Executioner Stage. It had always been putting immortals to death and beheading devils, its killing intent flourishing until it was practically irresistible, ever since the foundation of the Immortal Executioner Stage. If it was anyone else, they would definitely have been controlled by the Immortal Executioner Stage. Unfortunately, the mortal that entered this time was Yang Chen.

Already well prepared, naturally he wouldn't be controlled by the Immortal Executioner Stage. Tightly guarding his heart, Yang Chen always held fast, I am the executioner! No matter how it dashed left and charged right, that violent will was still unable to Control Yang Chen.

The vicious blade was always held in his hand, its body trembling slightly under the influence of the Immortal Executioner Stage, as if it wanted to leap from Yang Chen's hand and begin the executions on its own. Yang Chan rigidly held the handle, his other hand gripping the blade, never giving the vicious blade the chance.

Finally, the Immortal Executioner Stage's struggle came to an end again. The trembling vicious blade slowly calmed down, and within his heart there was no longer that kind of violent will agitating Yang Chen to kill those prisoners, as if that immortal Executioner Stage will had no choice but to step aside, and recognize Yang Chen as the executioner.

“You have to keep firmly in mind that you're just the Immortal Executioner Stage, just a blade.” Yang Chen once again solidified his confidence: “I'm the executioner, I'm the master here, only I can decide who will be killed, and when!”

The Immortal Executioner Stage's will didn't struggle further, obediently accepting Yang Chen's authority. The entire Immortal Executioner Stage seemed to be alive, changing according to Yang Chen's control.

“Very good, I'm the executioner!” Sensing this obedience, Yang Chen gripped the blade and stood.

# Chapter 5 - What Do I Gain From Beheading You?

“So it’s you?” A voice came from among the crowd of prisoners, astonishing even Yang Chen. Could someone in the immortal world still recognize him?

“Who?” Yang Chen pointed in the direction of the voice, and while he spoke, a tightly bound grey clothed old man suddenly appeared on the Immortal Executioner Stage. On reaching the stage, his body was already crouched, waiting for Yang Chen’s blade to fall. Immortals entering the Immortal Executioner Stage had long since had their cultivation crippled, and even a mortal like Yang Chen could do whatever he wished to them by relying on the Immortal Executioner Stage.

“Several months ago, you dug up a metal chest in my temple, and also paid your respects to me, remember?” The old man’s clothes were worn and torn, a bit discrepant with his status as immortal: “It’s rare that someone would go there, and even more rare to bow, that’s why I remember you clearly.”

On hearing the old man’s words, Yang Chen also understood. This old man was clearly a land god. Land gods couldn’t be called great or minor, barely passing as immortals.

“So it’s you!” Yang Chen smiled, but didn’t hurry to swing the blade. Anyway, he was the only executioner here, and the heavenly court’s Immortal Executioner Stage didn’t need to worry about

time. When he cut, was entirely up to Yang Chen.

“You’re a mortal, how can you do something so disgraceful?” The old land god suddenly grew resentful, loudly censuring Yang Chen.

“You also know that I’m a mortal, how could myself have any leeway to decide things like these?” Yang Chen gently caressed the vicious blade in his hand, giving a casual answer. Able to ask such questions, he didn’t have a brain, it was no wonder he was just a land god when he was so pedantic, and still such a poor land god.

“Rebelling against the heavenly court, disgraceful!” The old land god was still talking by himself, but he kept repeating himself, and especially kept mentioning the word “disgraceful”, constantly saying it.

“The motions of heaven are always the same, the laws of heaven are never the same.” Yang Chen saw no point in arguing with the old land god, and only gave his own reasoning: “For so many years, the key positions of the heavenly court have always been held by the same people, since heavenly law is never the same, then why should the Jade Emperor always be him alone? The Queen Mother of the West is also always her alone. So many experts have ascended, but no matter the height of their cultivation, they can still only be the most menial celestial soldiers or palace maids, if it was myself, myself would still rebel even if told myself couldn’t!”

This was the justification of those people rebelling against the heavenly court, and Yang Chen naturally knew about it. Only, even as he spoke, he knew he was playing the lute for cows.

“Disgraceful! Disgraceful!” Besides this line, the old land god was no longer able to say anything else through his anger.

“Great rebellion or minor rebellion, it’s still unrelated to me, I’m just a tiny mortal, myself can’t care about so many matters.” Yang chen smiled calmly, telling the livid old land god: “Before your body ends, perhaps senior still has some unfulfilled aspirations, perhaps myself can help you accomplish one or two.”

“Aspirations?” The old land god looked distracted, then immediately cursed in agitation: “My aspiration, is to cut those rebel thieves into ten thousand pieces!”

“If those rebel thieves don’t include me, perhaps myself can help you accomplish some of it.” Yang Chen smiled calmly, not minding the old land god’s agitated display: “Of course, you also know that killing endlessly is something myself can help you with. Only, killing this or that is done on your behalf, so what do myself gain from it?”

“En?” The old land god clearly hadn’t though Yang Chen would react like that, and he struggled to turn his head from the stage to look at Yang Chen, no quite daring to believe it asking: “You, are you telling the truth?”

“With the current cultivation sects, there will inevitably be an indelible relationship between the immortal world and the mortal world, myself have a permanent grievance with the Profound Heaven Sect, killing some of their people is something myself have

to do.” Yang Chen was also very earnest: “Myself swear on my heart, myself will definitely kill the people of the Profound Heaven Sect. If you have no other final wishes, please be on your way at ease!”

“Since you dare swear by your heart, I’ll believe you this once!” The old land god hadn’t thought a mortal like Yang Chen would know so much about the affairs of the heavenly court, and believed him once he heard Yang Chen’s vow: “If you ever have the chance to leave the Immortal Executioner Stage, then go to my ruined temple. Under the ground in front of the altar are a few catties of spiritual stones I hid back in the day. I’ve been destitute for half my life, and those things I left behind before ascending, I’ll give to you! Do it!”

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!” Yang Chen stood up and rattled off these words to the old land god. Immediately afterward, without any sloppiness, his hand rose and the blade fell, the old land god’s head fell to the ground in an instant. Blood spurted out, but none of it touched Yang Chen’s body.

Hiss, drawing a long breath, old devil Yi’s method circulated once again, swiftly absorbing and dissolving the old land god’s life essence. The warm flow within his body immediately surged to the top of his head, afterwards swiftly circulating several turns along the conception and governing vessel meridians, then disappeared without a trace. This alone was something Yang Chen couldn’t have accomplished even by killing hundreds of mortals.

Yang Chen closed his eyes until the heat had disappeared, then opened them again. He immediately sensed that something had changed with the ring on his hand, with a thought, he discovered that the achievement value on the ring had changed, already turning from zero to several hundred thousands.

Yang Chen's heart twitched. This ring was the token of a heavenly court position, but at the same time it also recorded achievement value. That beheading the land god raised the value showed that those rebels already had a firm grasp on the heavenly court, and had altered the rules for achievements. Killing justly would naturally raise achievements. The achievement this immortal once had in the heavenly court now raised Yang Chen's.

Only, a few hundred thousand couldn't be called much, or little, it didn't enter Yang Chen's sight. This Immortal Executioner Stage was densely packed with convicted prisoners, wouldn't that be an achievement?

The second prisoner to be transported up was a minor celestial soldier. Yang Chen didn't pay any attention to his history, only asking him just like he did the old land god before: "Before your body ends, if senior has any unfinished aspirations, perhaps myself can help you accomplish one or two. Of course, the rules are as ever, what do myself gain from helping you?"

"What do you want?" While he was just a minor soldier in the heavenly court, he was probably a famous character in the mortal world, and had the bearing to match. He was exceptionally calm before his death.



“Whatever you wish, cultivation arts, or perhaps some treasures you left behind in the mundane world, spiritual world, or immortal world, it’s all fine.” Yang Chen smiled faintly: “To your benefit, I might complete a cherished desire on your behalf, exceptionally fair, cheating neither young nor old.”

“And if you take the payment but can’t complete my desire?” The soldier snorted coldly, questioning Yang Chen.

“Everyone are great lords, myself am a tiny mortal, myself don’t dare boast of the sea.” Yang Chen still spoke indifferently: “What myself can do, myself will try to do. For what myself can’t do, my capability is limited, and myself don’t dare make guarantees. Only, everyone have entered the roll of immortals, all problems are solved after death, there is no need to hope for re-entering reincarnation. There is no need for the things you leave behind. If they are set aside for the younger generation, myself won’t insist either, it’s all up to you!”

His voice wasn’t loud, but within the Immortal Executioner Stage he was audible to everyone, and he was also extremely relaxed. What he said here was naturally heard by everyone.

“Since it’s like that, I don’t have any aspirations, do it!” The heavenly court soldier didn’t have any lingering desires. Closing his eyes, he waited for Yang Chen to move.

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!” Yang chen didn’t insist either, he had already said that he might not be able to succeed, and didn’t force anyone to

accept it. If they didn't want to, Yang Chen naturally wouldn't be angry, anyway, after they died, their life essence would nourish him.

Snap, the vicious blade flashed, and the heavenly court soldier fell to the stage. The achievement points in the ring was only a few tens of thousands, it seemed this soldier really was at the bottom.

But the soldier's life essence was several times more robust than the land god's, and breathing in, circulating, and absorbing, took several times longer. With just two people, Yang Chen sensed enormous changes within his body. It really was like he expected, beheading immortals was several tens of thousand times more effective than beheading mortals.

"I've moved unhindered for a lifetime, without cares or concerns, I have no desires I need a mortal like you to settle. Saying more is useless, do it!" The third was extremely straightforward, and took the initiative to speak up before Yang Chen could ask.

"Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!" The counterpart was straightforward, so Yang Chen would be even more straightforward, speaking his phrase, hand rising and blade falling, neatly ending it. Besides giving Yang Chen a few dozen achievement points, as well as altering Yang Chen's spiritual roots and energy channels, he left nothing else behind.

"I have nothing to say either, as long as you have the chance to kill a few rebels in the future." The next immortal was also

unreconciled, and after speaking, he didn't wait for Yang Cheng to urge him, saying by himself: "Before I ascended, I once left behind a medicine garden for my descendants. Unfortunately, I left in a hurry and didn't have time to notify them. I'll give it to you, it's at the Sun Painting Mountain, I once arranged a prohibition, if you want to enter, you can't avoid a bit of trouble."

"The Sun Painting Mountain medicine garden?" Yang Chen's mind turned, blurting out: "Seven Steps Certain Death Formation, three steps forward, two back, one left, one up, make seven half turns, repeat seven times, requires water type spiritual force to enter, seven by seven, forty nine steps, one mistake means certain death, senior has left behind a lot of good things. Many thanks!"

"How did you know?" Hearing Yang Chen speak it without a word out of place, the mountain god simply didn't dare believe his ears. Things he originally thought only he knew seemed to be defenseless in front of Yang Chen, how couldn't he be shocked?

"Myself just know!" Yang Chen knew it because this medicine garden would be discovered two thousand years later, when some medium sized sect sacrificed the lives of several dozen yuanying experts to brute force their way inside. Yang Chen naturally wouldn't explain himself to the mountain god, only adding: "After ascending, unless one agrees to cripple one's cultivation and lower ones realm, there is no way to transmit such information to the lower worlds. Senior, myself guarantees that this medicine garden won't gather dust again, senior depart at ease!"

"The art to control it is....." The stunned mountain god looked at Yang Chen, the explained the method to control it.

“Many thanks, senior!” Yang Chen saluted him once again.

“Can’t be seen through!” The mountain god only said this. At this juncture, nobody thought there was any way to survive, anyone could see it clearly, but they still had the qualities of immortals, each and everyone’s display drawing Yang Chen’s admiration.

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!” With each immortal Yang Chen executed, he would patiently speak these words. After speaking, Yang Chen would cut.

“Why do you say that before each time you chop? The fifth seemed like a scholar, with no way to tell his position. When he came up he asked Yang Chen this, and even mocked: “Could you be afraid that you’ll come to a bad end after beheading immortals, and have a guilty conscience?”

“Myself just don’t want to affect karma!” Yang Chen didn’t pay attention to the mocking tone, giving him a calm reply: “Even though everyone dies at my hand, myself am not the origin of your death. If you want to settle karma, place it on the people who gave the sentence, if senior still has any lust for revenge, put it directly where it belongs! I’m just an executioner, not subject to karma!”

“You’re not affected because you say you’re not?” Even though the scholar was tied up, his eyes rolled quickly: “Perhaps it’s beyond your control?”

“Affected or not, it all depends on my heart.” Yang Chen didn’t get angry, only replying with his opinion: “Executing everyone is my duty, myself find no shame in my heart. If myself say myself is not affected, myself is not affected.” The scholar couldn’t help be discouraged by the strong confidence in his words.

Since entering the Immortal Executioner Stage, Yang Chan had practically always referred to himself as “myself”. Any one of these immortals he executed could be senior to him, and therefore Yang Chen only addressed them as senior, and himself as myself, with no other appellations.

“Fine, I too have unfinished desires, you kill a few people, and I’ll set aside some things for you.” The scholar chuckled gently, then told Yang Chen: “In Luqing Mountain’s Elm Pill Valley, I left behind some magic treasures and pills. After you leave, you can go there to look for them. Whether you can find them is up to your luck!”

“What do I need to watch out for when entering Elm Pill Valley?” Yang Chen asked, his voice as ever.

“Entering is simple, just go inside, leaving requires using the Eight Treasures Wind Copper Mirror to subdue the eye of the formation and leave the valley.” The scholar’s reply was also extremely fast, without the slightest hesitation.

“Good plot!” Yang Chen suddenly sneered: “Elm Pill Vanishing Valley can be entered but not left. The Eight Treasure Wind Copper Mirror, can leave but not enter! Myself am not in the mood to fool senior, so senior intending to harm my life cannot be

allowed, myself am offended!”

“Hahahaha! You’re actually a clever junior, you know there’s a trick.” The scholar laughed out loud: “By chance you know about Elm Pill Vanishing Valley, it seems your life shouldn’t end. However, I’m already like this, my death is near at hand, I wonder what you can do apart from killing me when you say you’re offended?”

“Myself am untalented, but as it turns out myself knows a type of Destroying Immortal Absolute Devil Hand.” A cold smile floated onto Yang Chen’s face, speaking with a flat voice: “Even though myself am a mortal, lacking magical power, with the Immortal Executioner Stage myself can still use one or two. Senior, before your end, you will properly endure life!”

When Yang Chen’s words fell, the scholar’s face had already changed completely. Not just him, the entire crowd below the stage also had different expressions.

# Chapter 6 - Beheading All The Small Change And Meeting Monsters

Not just the scholar on the stage, even the other convicted prisoners below it shivered when they heard Yang Chen. Destroying Immortal Absolute Devil Hand could even be called the most malicious punishment in the immortal world, even great primary golden immortals would itch all over, experiencing unendurable suffering. When the itch was at its peak, it could make people scratch their whole bodies and faces until they were drenched with blood.

Especially the viciousness. This Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand, not only could the user control it freely, but also had the extremely important effect of being able to block the cultivation of the person who was trapped in it. Once hit by it, it required a cultivation far higher than the implementer in order to find a way to remove the target's pain, or it would follow him through his life like bone maggots.

When Yang Chen had offended the Greatest Heaven Sect's people in the mundane world through Yang Xi's false accusations, he hadn't expected that the Greatest Heaven Sect was only a branch of the Profound Heaven Sect in the immortal world, and the Profound Heaven Sect was a part of the main force in this rebellion against the heavenly court. After ascending, Yang Chen had been carefully watched, and the Profound Heaven Sect master had used this Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand on Yang Chen to make an example.

Intending to make Yang Chen the model of disobedience, each month the restriction on Yang Chen would flare up, and each time Yang Chen would be in unbearable pain, losing all prestige in the immortal world. In order to make his impression on people even more profound, Yang Chen hadn't even had his cultivation blocked, to the extent that he eventually cultivated to the level of great primary golden immortal.

The Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand belonged to a plundered series of devil arts, and was vicious to the extent that only the masters of a few great sects were qualified to cultivate it, passed down orally so that no others could learn it. It was just that this technique was used too much that Yang Chen had still caught parts of it.

“Who are you? How can you know the Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand?” The scholar was alarmed, practically in despair. Yang Chen clearly didn't have any need to intimidate someone on death's door like him.

“Myself said, an ordinary mortal, just happen to control the Immortal Executioner Stage.” As he spoke, the vicious blade in his hand turned into a slender needle.

“Senior, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, but senior was first to hold malicious intent, and myself taking revenge with the Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand is karma, which myself will continue!” Since he didn't kill him, Yang Chen didn't say his customary phrase. When he finished, Yang Chen was already moving. The slender needle repeatedly flickered across the scholar's body, and the middle aged scholar couldn't help starting



to groan.

The itch was difficult to settle. If it was normally, perhaps the scholar could have used his hands to scratch, but right now he was in the Immortal Executioner Stage, his cultivation was crippled, his body bound, with no chance to scratch. The pitiful scholar could only constantly squirm, with no way to halt the pain. At this moment, even if he lost all his face, he still wished someone would help him scratch. But unfortunately, Yang Chen wasn't that kind.

The Immortal Executioner Stage flashed with golden light, and the middle aged man was transported outside the platform. Yang Chen's voice spread from the stage: "Senior will be left for last, as for the time it takes to behead these thousands of people, senior can only endure."

The immortals entering the Immortal Executioner Stage hadn't foreseen that Yang Chen would have a move like that. They all also knew the danger danger in the scholar's words, and had just wanted to see Yang Chen suffer a prank, but they hadn't expected him to immediately see through it. Associating it with what Yang Chen previously also knew about the medicine garden, these immortals discovered that it might be rather difficult to conceal things from the executioner on the Immortal Executioner Stage.

Even immortals didn't want to have to suffer disgrace just before their death, but Yang Chen's way of doing things made them take up an attitude without hatred. Yang Chen was just a mortal, it was impossible for him to change the heavenly court. Their tragedy, just as Yang Chen said, every debt has a debtor, but that wasn't Yang Chen.

As for that middle aged scholar, Yang Chen said it clearly, he was first to plot to kill Yang Chen, and Yang Chen also didn't mind continuing this piece of karma. Everyone didn't know how many people they had killed on the road of cultivation, and nobody felt anything improper about this way of handling things, perhaps with the exception of that scholar.

Let alone when Yang Chen didn't force them. If they wanted they could leave behind their aspirations, if they didn't then Yang Chen would happily send them on their way, not making things difficult for anyone, leaving nobody with more to say about that.

People who wanted to die, let alone when they had lived longer than they could remember, immortals who had experienced life and death, saw everything clearly. If they wanted to live, then they could have bowed their heads and surrendered before entering the Immortal Executioner Stage. Since they had already entered, then they had already made their choice, long ago rejected life and death. Who would still put Yang Chen's little tricks in their eyes?

Yang Chen had also guessed this bit correctly, and that's why he would be so unrestrained. No matter how open-minded about life and death, in the end there would still be some tiny regrets, and this was the power of Yang Chen's words — “If there are still some unfinished desires, perhaps myself can help complete them.”

The direct result of these words was that at least half the convicted prisoners pronounced their desires to Yang Chen, and also mentioned the rewards.

“My sect has declined, if there’s the chance, look after them! Here I have a lost «J Water Secret», it suits J water innate qi, very powerful, help me pass it on!”

.....

“I know of a spiritual rock vein in a deserted valley, men’s footprints are rare, monsters are numerous, I expect it still hasn’t been found, I’ll give it to you!”

.....

“Before ascending, I forged several dozen flying swords for my juniors, but after I ascended they never discovered them, you take them! Those flying swords are the results of all my efforts before ascending, don’t let them gather dust.”

.....

Yang Chen’s mind churned like boiling water, constantly engraving the final wishes and rewards of those immortals. Some matters, like agreeing to look after descendants, Yang Chen agreed to directly. Those who wanted Yang Chen to kill people, he would first consider, and if they intersected with his enemies, Yang Chen would agree, and if they didn’t, he wouldn’t easily nod.

The more it was like this, the more it seemed like yang Chen would agree to do, those who originally wanted people killed saw him shake his head in refusal, and they were about to die, those

things they left behind would also be wasted, so they might as well clear their hearts and directly hand over those things that were supposed to be rewards, without any conditions, sighing meeting death.

Before each time he killed, Yang Chen would always read out his “every debt has a debtor” phrase, and after beheading them, silently use the devil method to inhale the final gift those immortals unknowingly left behind into his body.

This went on at a very high speed, and Yang Chen didn’t have time to think about it, continuing without a rest until he had killed all of them, including the scholar he had used the Ruining Immortal Absolute Devil Hand on, and half the Immortal Executioner Stage had turned a bright scarlet red.

Even though his body still didn’t have a trace of magic power, Yang Chen still felt a revolutionary change taking place within his body. As if something was germinating within him, sprouting to grow strong and healthy.

Glancing at his achievement score, Yang Chen discovered that he had already passed one billion. To Yang Chen, this was an extra benefit. Even though these achievement points were useless in the mundane world, once he ascended to the spiritual world, they could be used for a lot of good things.

“Yi?” Somewhere in the immortal world, the official who had brought Yang Chen into the Immortal Executioner Stage seemed to sense something, giving a surprised expression. “So soon?” After speaking he seemed to recall his manners, and waved his hand

behind him: “Send another batch inside!”

Yang Chen was just drinking water and resting when he suddenly discovered that the just emptied Immortal Executioner Stage had again become packed to the brim, with even more immortals being delivered inside.

Having already absorbed the best features of the vitality of the immortals from before, Yang Cheng basically didn't feel tired. Only, he still slowly followed his own rhythm, slowly draining the cup of water in his hand, then again climbing onto the Immortal Executioner Stage with a steady pace.

Land gods, chop!

Mountain gods, chop!

Celestial soldiers, chop!

Strong men, chop!

Palace beauties, chop!

Children, chop!

.....

“Before dying, does senior have any unfulfilled aspirations, perhaps myself can help you complete one or two.” Yang Chen spoke the same words, but with a flavor of death.

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!” Yang Chen didn’t know how many time he had spoken his executioner’s work phrase, neatly killing all the convicted prisoners in one go.

“Hiss”, outside the Immortal Executioner Stage, after the supervising official had discovered that the Immortal Executioner Stage had been cleared once again, almost drew in a cold breath. More than two thousand immortals had all been killed by Yang Chen in such a short time. Even he himself, if faced with so many immortals, might not be able to continue so fiercely.

In fact, one immortal facing so many immortals, even if mountain gods, land gods, and celestial soldiers were all small change, they were still immortals, even more venerable than emperors. Being able to actually kill them without the slightest hesitation, this person was simply naturally predisposed to being an executioner.

Another batch was sent inside, and Yang Chen also knew the pattern. Each time one thousand two hundred would be sent in, when they were done another batch would follow. They were just the lowest level small change, but Yang Chen had killed more than ten batches, close to twenty thousand of them.

The rebellion against the heavenly court was no small matter,

even though those rebels had grudges, they still didn't dare massacre indiscriminately in the rebellion, in order to avoid being unable to regret it. A lot of people treated these people of the old heavenly court carefully, arresting those that could be arrested, thereby leaving an especially large amount for Yang Chen to execute.

There was already a faint red color around Yang Chen, that was the display of dense blood qi after killing too many people. Even though Yang Chen had already absorbed their life essence, he still had no way to quickly dissolve the hurricane of killing intent brought about by killing so many immortals.

When killing afterwards, having already lost all their magical power, even those immortals couldn't help trembling before him. Basically nobody dared look Yang Chen in the eyes, as if they had a feeling of heartfelt fear towards him.

After killing this batch and resting a while, Yang Chen finally saw a different kind of prisoners. From how they were treated, he could see that the grade of these immortals had risen substantially.

"The Thirty Six Heavenly Spirits, Seventy Two Earthly Fiends, Twenty Eight Mansions, Twelve Earthly Branches!" Yang Chen could only sigh, these originally remote divinities had now become convicted prisoners under his feet.

"Before dying, does senior have any unfulfilled aspirations, perhaps myself can help you complete one or two." Red light lingering around him, Yang Chen speaking these words indeed alarmed these immortals. How many immortals did he have to kill

to create a killing intent that even immortals of this level would fear?

Surprisingly, the higher the level of the immortal, the more they seemed to care about their path. Yang Chen's words seemed like a last chance for them.

“I have a trump card «Great Sun True Understanding», help me find a suitable successor to pass it on!”

“I have a secret abode in the mortal world, at Blue Vault Mountain, the controlling method is like this.....”

“Before ascending, I had a vein of B Wood True Essence in my abode, go get it if you have time, together «B Wood True Secret» it will have unimaginable effect. Only, you have to help me find my disciple from back then in the spiritual world, and pass on this Universe Unbounded Sword Art. If you can't find him, it goes to you! Ai!”

“Here I have a «Pill Accumulating Scripture», you find a fated person to pass it on to!”

“We have a «Twelve Zodiac Crowd Guarding Great Formation» for twelve people to use together, we'll leave it for you, to guard your abode!”

“«Heavenly Cycle Constellation Great Formation» diagram, no need to ask how powerful, it's considerable. For you!”



“«Heavenly Spirit Treasure Refining Secret», it can freely refine your treasures, for you, it’s fine if you don’t pass it on.”

“«Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret», if your luck is good, it can refine your magic tools with seventy two layers of formations, pass it on!”

.....

In succession, practically all were secret methods, formation methods, pill arts, tool refining techniques, and even lost abodes, so much that Yang Chen didn’t even dare believe that these people actually had so many good things. He could also find some proof in his memories that these things were actually all real. Especially the Twelve Zodiacs’ Crowd Guarding Great Formation, it was simply a revolutionary formation that could promote even paradise by a level.

Again successively beheading several dozen immortals, executing heavenly generals was nothing, when executing the twelve zodiacs, Yang Chen randomly discovered that his achievement score had begun to climb by units of a hundred million. Once he was done with the twenty eight constellations, he had already surpassed one trillion.

Shocking Yang Chen even more was the life essence of the twenty eight constellations, they seemed to each have different five phases and yin yang properties, when inhaling them he seemed to be able to feel something sprouting and growing into a great tree within

him, exceptionally wonderful.

“Phew”, after a long time, Yang Chen finished absorbing and opened his eyes. Entering his field of view were a variety of monsters, spanning practically every kind of category.

Erlang Shen’s Howling Celestial Dog, Old Man of the South Pole’s White Spirit Deer, the Immortal Crane, Chang’e’s Jade Rabbit, elk, flying tigers, tortoise serpents, even a few flood dragons, practically everything Yang Chen could remember was here. These were the pets and mounts of those immortals.

“My master has peaches of immortality, and I have one too!” The Old Man of the South Pole’s White Spirit Deer suddenly spoke up, startling Yang Chen to jump: “Very long ago I raised that peach in an abode in the spiritual world, go taste it if you have time, it’s tasty.”

# Chapter 7 - Chop Chop Chop

The peaches in the hands of the Old Man of the South Pole were comparable to the best peaches of immortality that the Queen Mother of the West had! Yang Chen almost drooled while listening to the White Spirit Deer.

“You actually hated to part with those peaches so much that you even left them in the spiritual world! Really miserly!” A disdainful voice came from the side, it was the Immortal Crane that was almost as inseparable from the White Spirit Deer as its shadow, and was also a companion of the old Man of the South Pole. It taunted: “I ate that peach long ago and left the pit in the mortal world, I don’t know if it’s borne fruit yet.”

Yang Chan stood to the side, listening to the two arguing, without speaking up, letting these two butt heads before facing death.

“That peach tree should have grown in the mortal world’s.....” The Immortal Crane shouted at Yang Chen, then added a request: “Go take a look if you have the chance. Now, behead the two of us!”

.....

“Woof!” The Howling Celestial Dog spit out human words: “I still have a drop of blood essence in the lower world, if some animal can fuse with it, it might stir the blood of ancient beasts, its

location is.....”

“I have a «Beast Governing Art» ability, it’s the cultivation method of my beast race, a hundred times more brilliant than those beast controlling sects, it’s just that the requirements are a bit high, see if you have the luck!” Blue Ox also spit out human words.

.....

These monster deities were different from those twenty eight constellations, they were all the mounts or pets of upper level immortals in the heavenly court, and always maintained their true bodies without transforming into humans. Only, these demon deities were abnormally powerful, not lacking in any respect compared to those who became straight deities.

Yang Chen was too busy to mind it will cutting heads off, but after a few he carelessly glanced at his achievement score, and immediately jumped from fright. More than ten demon deities had actually given Yang Chen several dozen trillion points. In this great heavenly court rebellion, a lot of people felt lucky, and captured and arrested as many major and minor deities as they could, all to the benefit of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen’s body was now shrouded in a dense bloody light that looked like a cloud of blood surrounding him when viewed from afar. This casually gave any cultivator that saw it the impression of an old monster of a killing calamity, and not a mortal who still hadn’t cultivated any arts or had any magical power.

Even if Yang Chen didn't speak throughout the entire process of beheading demon gods, killing intent still flowed from his body, and one Heavenly Monarch who had just been delivered to the Immortal Executioner Stage was immediately so terrified by Yang Chen's killing intent that he drew his last breath on the spot.

"You're lucky to have lasted until now with such heavy injuries!" Looking at the Heavenly Monarch who had died without him doing anything, Yang Chen couldn't help shaking his head and sighing.

The ones now entering the Immortal Executioner Stage were higher level. Heavenly monarchs, heavenly generals, eight cave immortals, seven stars of the Big Dipper, the six Ding and the six Jia, the Five Lords of the Elements, the Four Guardians of Time, the Three Stars of Luck, Longevity, and Prosperity, the Marshal of the Heavenly Canopy, Chang'e, Juling Shen, and numerous others. However, different from the previous minor deities, these high level immortals were practically all seriously injured, and their faces expressed unreconciliation and having no way out.

The Fire Lord, chop! A rich extremely fiery essence rushed into the bottom of Yang Chen's lungs.

The Water Lord, chop! Water property essence.

The Wood Lord, chop! Wood property essence.

The Earth Lord, chop! Earth property essence.

The Metal Lord, chop! Metal property essence.

Just by beheading the five virtue star monarchs, Yang Chen felt the five phases attributes within him rise sharply. Let alone the overflowing feeling from the twenty eight constellations, when he killed now, Yang Chen couldn't help feeling a bit exhausted even when he always tried to balance his feelings.

The Immortal Executioner Stage within him still constantly wanted to vent its killing intent, but couldn't cause any great waves under Yang Chen's control, and was forced to listen and obey his arrangements.

Resting in the little room, Yang Chen didn't care about sleeping, but spent great effort on calming his qi, then let that rich current of killing intent blunt. Even though the red cloud still roiled, he was no longer like a man of blood. After resting a bit, Yang Chen returned to the Immortal Executioner Stage.

There was practically no complaints to be heard among the great lords. Victory was victory, defeat was defeat. They had spent all their strength, but still ended up on the stage like this. They didn't have so much unwillingness and disappointment, but were rather unusually cheerful.

“I have a medicine raising bottle gourd, it's in the lower world at.....”

“In all my life I've compacted a pure yang sword qi, never being

distracted, its power isn't unruly, try practicing it if you're interested!"

"To meet you before death is good karma, I have a set of banner formations, I'll give them to you!"

.....

Yang Chen calmly accepted this information, and calmly spoke his "every debt has a debtor line", beheading these previously famous immortals one by one.

If the deities before could be called small change, Yang Chen certainly didn't have any waves in his heart about dealing with them, but these higher immortals were another matter entirely. In fact, Yang Chen condensed all the killing intent in his heart to be able to achieve this calm.

Yang Chen could almost feel the immense changes taking place within him with each mortal he executed, it was practically even more terrifying than killing tens or hundreds of thousands of people. But he no longer paid attention to the achievement score, he had long ago surpassed one quadrillion, even to the extent that he was attacking the order of tens of quadrillions. With just a few more, he would probably break through that magnitude.

Outside the Immortal Executioner Stage, the dew immortal soldiers who were originally guarding the stage were now constantly feeling wave after wave of violent killing intent from inside, and couldn't help but shudder. They were just common

celestial soldiers, they had no way to resist such terrifying killing intent. If not for their orders, they didn't know how far they would have run already.

Even the execution supervisor could only tremble. Looking at an immortal soldier shivering, he couldn't help saying: "This Immortal Executioner Stage is an immortal tool that can only connect the mundane world with the heavenly court, from the Heavenly Court one can only enter, and it's not certain one can leave through the mundane world either. We were appointed to select an executioner from the Great Dream Play Formation, we can already be considered having fulfilled the new emperor's orders. The Immortal Executioner Stage is showing its power, it'd be better if we kept some distance."

Finished speaking, he took the initiative to retreat. The soldiers saw him and immediately looked at each other, then stumbled over themselves to be first to get away from the vicinity of the Immortal Executioner Stage, running until they couldn't feel the killing intent from the Immortal Executioner Stage, then stopped. One soldier quickly asked: "What's with the Immortal Executioner Stage? It's never been like this before!"

"How many immortals have been beheaded on the Immortal Executioner Stage in the past? In the immortal world there hasn't been more than several dozens over these years. This time there are tens of thousands, and that much immortal flesh and blood. Let alone the Immortal Executioner Stage, what would happen to a mundane executioner tool when bathed in so much immortal blood?" The supervising official was the first to retreat, and he explained with lingering fear as he looked towards the Immortal Executioner Stage.



“There’s still one treasury of my dragon palace in the mortal world, I don’t want these things to end up in the hands of traitor dragon kings, to your benefit, the treasury is at.....” Before the East Sea Dragon King was beheaded, he had a kind of attitude to not let those traitors have an easy time, to Yang Chen’s advantage.

Thousand Li Eye, Wind Following Ear, Duke of Thunder, Mother of Lightning, Marquis of Wind, Master of Rain, the Four Heavenly Kings, the Pagoda Bearing Heavenly King, the Five Gate Revealers, Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, Black Tortoise, the Deity of the Moon, the Deity of the Sun, the Deity of War, Chang’e, Xuan Nü, were beheaded one by one.

When facing Chang’e and Xuan Nü, Yang Chen basically didn’t see enchanting women, only two prisoners waiting for the execution of their sentence, and ended them in one chop.

Before her death, Chang’e still left behind a «Countenance Halting Heart Sutra» which, besides the Countenance Halting Cultivation Technique, it also had a lot of prescriptions for age halting pills, from the mortal world to the spiritual world to the immortal world. Most frightening was that the Countenance Halting Heart Method could not only halt aging, but could also be used by the cultivator to freely adjust her appearance, simply an ultimate treasure female cultivators yearned for even in their sleep.

“Golden Star of the Sun, if senior has any unfinished desires, perhaps myself can help senior accomplish one or two!” Yang Chen had by now killed so many batches of immortals that he was once

again seeing one golden immortal after another. In front of him now was the Golden Star of the Sun, Li Chang'geng.

“My way will disappear with my death, there are still some things I'm reluctant to leave. Unfortunately, His Majesty is unable to reverse the turning of the sky. This old man has here a «G Metal True Art», in the lower world there is a G Metal Innate Qi, you take advantage of it!”

When the Golden Star of the Sun had also fallen under Yang Chen's blade, Yang Chen discovered one thing. That was that when these tremendously powerful ones who could truly fight, like Nezha, Erlang Shen, Lü Dongbin and others, they were basically impossible to capture alive, and these who were captured were basically less than half. Of course, the proportion was even higher for high positions.

That's why Yang Chen wasn't surprised when he saw the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord. Having killed a lot of these main deities of the heavenly court, Yang Chen no longer had any fear, he expected there was nothing that could shock him even if he confronted the Jade Emperor.

It seemed the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord hadn't been questioned too harshly, and his expression was extremely relaxed. But when seeing Yang Chen he first felt a burst of subconscious fear. Having killed too many deities, that cloud of blood around him was already so thick it couldn't spread out, involuntarily spreading an aura that made people's hearts leap with fear, and even main divinities on the level of the Grand Supreme Elderly lord couldn't resist it.

However, in the end the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord was the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord, and recovered to normal after just an instant of fear. Eyes opening wide, he seemed able to directly pierce that blood cloud to see Yang Chen himself. After looking steadily at Yang Chen for a while, his eyes suddenly shone, and he eagerly asked: “Five element spiritual roots, complete Yin and Yang, rare to see in ten thousand years, you are the best cultivator child I have seen. To have such a destiny before my death, are you interested in being my last disciple?”

Becoming the disciple of the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord? Even if it was just before his death, who could imagine the great opportunity that involved? However, the desperately beautiful eyes of Yang Chen’s master in his last life flashed through his mind, as well as the instant of happiness when she reached out and handed over the Bright Light Sword. Just these two scenes quickly made Yang Chen’s heart stop swaying, and he made a decision.

“Many thanks for Elderly Lord’s gracious intentions, but I already have my master in this life, I’ll have no other!” When Yang Chen calmly said this, it seemed as if his heart broke free of some restraint, free and easy, wide open sea and sky. Yang Chen knew that, in the future, no lure less than becoming the last disciple of the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord would ever disturb him. Unconsciously, Yang Chen received a cleansing of his soul. Even before he had started cultivating, his chances of success were already one chip higher.

“Ai, no chance even at the end!” The Grand Supreme Elderly Lord sighed slightly, apparently also seeing Yang Chen’s aloofness. With just a sigh, his tone returned to normal: “Nevermind,

meeting before death is destiny. Even if I can't take you as disciple, by your appearance, you will also cultivate in the future. I'll dig up two things to give you, you pick them on your own!" The Elderly Lord had already heard what Yang Chen said before, and naturally knew what he would do, speaking very optimistically.

Yang Chen hadn't anticipated to actually be able to receive the favor of the Elderly Lord. Stumped for a moment, he immediately exulted, standing in his place thinking deeply before speaking up: "Myself accepts Elderly Lord's gracious intentions. Right now, myself would like Elderly Lord's 'One Chi Becomes Three Purities' and tool and pill refining secrets, Elderly Lord please bestow them."

No need to mention One Chi Becomes Three Purities, the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord's skill in refining tools was absolutely first class among first class. Each item the Elderly Lord produced, whether cut diamonds or palm leaf fans, yin yang bottle gourds, or clean jade bottles, they were all top grade immortal goods. As for refining pills, there was even less need to mention that, a number of extremely unique medicines that made people drool, all came from the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord's hands. Since Yang Chen could choose, he'd naturally choose the best. However, it seemed as if there was still a cheap trick involved in his choice. The Elderly Lord had let him pick two, but Yang Chen's choice included three.

"One Chi Becomes Three Purities, haha, just a divinity separating secret art, it's called «Three Purities Secrets», remember it well. Your killing intent overflows, the Three Purities Secrets can refine killing intent into divine consciousness, you might be able to use it very soon."

“There’s nothing special about an old man’s tool refining, just the Universe Eight Trigrams Stove and some tricks. However, if you wish, great yin yang five phases double cultivation without an eight trigrams stove can be even more tremendous than my old man. Fine, «Universe Treasure Raising Secrets», use these secrets once after each time you’ve finished refining, ordinarily use this for conservation and the effect will be even better, remember it for now!”

“Coming noisily and leaving noisily, in the end it’s still a matter of my Dao. Fine, consider the pill refining techniques a parting gift, and use a bit sharper skill when seeing me on my way. There’s no name, you name it, this is just a technique, and no secret prescription, gather those on your own!”

Personally seeing the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord on his way, couldn’t describe the feeling in his heart. The «Three Purities Secret», «Universe Raising Treasure Secret», and what Yang Chen named «Elderly Gentleman Pill Arts» that the Elderly Gentleman gave him were recorded in his heart. Yang Chen just wanted to rest a bit, but it didn’t seem the new Heavenly Court would give him the time. In the originally completely empty Immortal Executioner Stage, appeared another two convicted prisoners.

This time there were only two, but they were the most venerable two. When Yang Chen looked at them, the married couple had no restraints and just stood there with straight backs, looking at Yang Chen with dignity.

# Chapter 8 - Incalculable Achievement

“We are the supreme ruler of the golden imperial watchtower of the boundless heaven, the magnificent all encompassing true god, the Jade Emperor. Traitor, whence dare thou be rude!” The man, dressed in an imperial robe and wearing the imperial crown, shouted loudly, like a thunderclap by Yang Chen’s ears. He wasn’t even influenced a moment by the lingering killing intent around Yang Chen.

The phoenix crowned woman next to the Jade Emperor stood quietly without speaking, only a sharp light flashing in her eyes, enough for any person to fear her majestic presence and prostrate themselves on the ground.

“Sorry, seniors, but this is the Immortal Executioner stage. The immortals entering here are only of one identity, and that is as convicted prisoners!” Confronting the two former rulers of the heavenly court, the Jade Emperor and Queen Mother, Yang Chen only calmly said: “Myself am Yang Chen, the executioner of the Immortal Executioner Stage!”

Meanwhile, the heavenly court’s newly appointed emissary in charge of controlling the achievement scores was just looking at the suddenly appeared stranger that was quickly racking up achievement, his mouth wide open, appearing at the number one spot on the achievement roll. The numbers recorded were, individual, tens, hundreds, thousands, ten thousands, hundred millions, trillions, ten quadrillions, hundred quintillions, septillions, ten octillions, hundred nonillions, undecillions, ten duodecillions, hundred tredecillions, quinquadecillions, ten

sedecillions, hundred septendecillions, novendecillions, ten vigintillions, all the way to hundred unvigintillions. On the order of ten to the sixty fourth power, the number so enormous he simply didn't dare believe it. [\[1\]](#)

The Grand Supreme Elderly Lord was the founder of Daoism, his achievements were already boundless. That's why, even in the midst of rebellion against the heavenly court, nobody dared be disrespectful to him. But all the immortals who participated knew that, if the Elderly Lord didn't die, the new heavenly court basically couldn't be rebuilt. Therefore, once the new Jade Emperor ascended, he immediately had the Elderly Lord executed.

This was after all the resentment of cheating ones master and extinguishing the ancestors, once the arrow was on the bowstring, it had to be loosed. Once in this situation, there could be no consideration. Nobody dared kill the Elderly Lord, but that was to Yang Chen's benefit. The Elderly Lord's achievements in the old heavenly court were boundless, meaning that his achievement score had already reached the magnitude of a hundred unvigintillion. Of course, killing the Elderly Lord was also a matter of boundless achievement in the new heavenly court, and Yang Chen's achievement score had immediately charged into units of hundred unvigintillions, already the longest number on the achievement score roll.

The Elderly Lord's alone had let Yang Chen's achievement score step past everyone, appearing far above on the achievement roll. Moreover, the gigantic number made that official in charge of inspecting the achievement roll speechless for a long time.

According to the rules of the heavenly court, achievement score could be directly exchanged for a great many things, including all sorts of magical treasures and pills, cultivation techniques, and tools, pets and subordinates, official positions and abodes, practically anything. According to Yang Chen's present boundless level achievement, he could directly exchange his achievement score for the entire heavenly court.

The new Jade Emperor had just ascended, his experience shallow, and even if he could gather vast amounts of achievement, there was still no way to compare with the founder of Daoism. And the achievement roll immortal tool, just like the Immortal Executioner Stage, could only be used to look over exchanges, and couldn't be used to change the rules for calculating.

A completely unfamiliar and unheard of name, not the partner of any sect, nor anyone who had established some alarming contribution in the rebellion, nor the newly appointed Jade Emperor, how could he be ranked number one?

Thinking of a stranger never heard of by anyone in the heavenly court exchanging everything, even as a great primary golden immortal, the newly appointed heavenly court achievement emissary was unable to keep his brow from unconsciously beading with sweat, tremendous fear almost making him believe he had committed some unpardonable mistake, unconsciously starting to tremble. There was definitely some mistake here!

"Whence does the traitors dare hurry?" The Jade Emperor, or more precisely, the former Jade Emperor took a step forward and shouted at Yang Chen, but could only blankly Yang Chen walk



past. Besides shouting, he could do nothing.

“No wonder those people would rebel, can you do anything other than bossing people around?” A trace of disdain flashed through Yang Chen’s eyes. Slowly shaking his head, he flashed the sinister blade.

“Do you not fear eternal damnation after doing it?” The Queen Mother Of the West finally spoke up to the side, her pronunciation clear like moonlight, carrying a sense of a monarch overlooking the world, phoenix eyes holding power. It was just one sentence, but it pierced even deeper than the Jade Emperor’s shouting.

“Myself am acting on behalf of the Dao of Heaven, it’s boundlessly beneficial, how could there be damnation?” Confronting this Queen Mother, Yang Chen was instead a bit more courteous than towards the Jade Emperor, but words could offer no explanation. While speaking, he suddenly revealed the achievement score on his ring, the enormous number even making Yang Chen himself turn lifeless for a moment.

“On behalf of the Dao of Heaven?” The Queen mother also saw the long string of digits on Yang Chen’s ring, and her eyes dulled, no longer with the brightness from before, as if she had suddenly aged. She muttered: “It seemed Heaven has already changed!”

“If senior still has some unfinished desires, perhaps myself can help accomplish one or two!” Yang Chen confronted the two completely different monarchs, said this, then quietly waited for them to speak.

“It’s already at this stage, what desires could still be left?” The Queen Mother of the West spoke with a somewhat bleak expression, then immediately regained her high minded dignity. Even being only a weak woman without the strength to truss a chicken inside the Immortal Executioner Stage, the unique air she exuded at this moment enchanted even Yang Chen.

Quietly straightening her clothes, the Queen Mother dashed a smile at Yang Chen: “Lend me the blade, I need a mirror!”

“Subordinate is crude, I have been irreverent!” The Queen Mother’s optimistic display won Yang Chen’s respect. Whoosh, the uniquely vicious edge flashed, appearing in front of her. The flat blade now became as bright as snow, reflecting the Queen Mother’s charming appearance.

Facing the edge, the Queen Mother of the West carefully arranged her hair as if she was at her own Jade Lake. After casually adjusting the phoenix hairpin on top of her head, she gave a slight nod to Yang Chen, walking over to the edge of the Immortal Executioner Stage by herself, looking all around at the surrounding scenery, then said to Yang Chen behind her without turning her head: “Executioner, do it! Be quick!”

Xiu, a sharp whistle, a sliver of light like bright snow and black hair caressed the Queen Mother’s neck. But nothing else changed, the Queen Mother still stood there, gazing into the distance. After a moment she exposed a smile: “Such a fast blade, many thanks!”

Yang Chen swung his blade, but didn't look further at the result, directly turning around and confronting the Jade Emperor, once supreme ruler of everything, calmly and grimly saying: "The Empress is already on her way, senior, do you still have any unfinished desires, perhaps myself can help accomplish one or two!"

Seeing the Queen Mother of the West standing there suddenly fall to the ground, the Jade Emperor who had just been forcefully roaring exposed a panicked expression. Looking at Yang Chen, his shout held a different timbre: "We are the Jade Emperor, you dare be rude?"

"No longer!" Yan Chen had just seen the Queen Mother of the West confront her fall so calmly, now seeing the Jade Emperor forget himself like that, the last trace of respect for a senior vanished without a trace.

"We are the Jade Emperor, you're all traitors!" Confronting the death of his body and end of his Dao, the once Jade Emperor lost all sense of dignity, almost hysterically swinging his fist at Yang Chen. But he only swung it were he stood, even without any restraints, he didn't dare step forward to argue with Yang Chen, let alone teaching him a lesson.

"For every debt there is a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, this is my place of duty, executing orders, please pardon me!" Yang Chen finished his executioner's catchphrase with an expressionless face, then took a few steps forward and swung the vicious blade.

The heavenly court achievement emissary looked at Yang Chen's score suddenly rising again, and his whole face was stunned. Yang Chen's achievement score had already been on the level of a hundred unvigintillion, but along with him beheading the Queen Mother of the West, his score directly shot up almost to the limit of what the achievement roll could display. Nine hundred unvigintillion, that was almost the largest number the achievement roll could hold.

Looking at the second name on the roll, the name of the newly appointed Jade Emperor, the newly appointed achievement emissary almost cried. The heavenly court was newly established, could it be that someone accumulating enough achievement points to reach this position was an error in the immortal tool, leading to this world of darkness? He didn't know how the achievement roll was arranged before, but it may be assumed that the Jade Emperor was number one!

One fellow of unknown origin, a fellow whose name the achievement emissary couldn't find even when he searched the entire heavenly court, actually had an achievement score even higher than the Jade Emperor? If there wasn't any problem with the achievement roll, then there was definitely a problem with him, the achievement emissary. The newly appointed Jade Emperor wasn't some kind and benevolent person, that was a powerful character who had just delivered every person loyal to the old heavenly court to the Immortal Executioner Stage. If he let the Jade Emperor know about it, then he, as the achievement emissary, would definitely end up there too.

Yes, there was definitely some problem with the rules of the achievement roll. In this moment of desperation, the achievement

emissary's brain worked an unknown number of dozens of times faster than normal, at once becoming aware of the main point of the problem. The achievement roll was an immortal tool, as long as someone wore the token ring of the heavenly court, their achievement score would be calculated by the achievement roll, there would be no error here. The only possible problem could be that the just converted achievement roll was still using the old rules.

Thinking of this, the achievement emissary was just about to try operating the achievement roll to research how to alter the calculation rules, when he sensed someone entering with a sweep of his divine consciousness, his personal assistant. But he couldn't let anyone see the ranking of the achievement roll right now, so he hastily put it away and asked in a low voice: "What is it?"

"Milord, the Jade Emperor's emissary is here, the Jade Emperor wants to see the achievement roll!" The personal assistant bowed and reported, then quietly waited for the achievement emissary's orders.

Boom, like a thunderclap by the achievement emissary's ears. The Jade Emperor wanted to see the achievement roll. But could he show it to him now? The achievement emissary no longer knew what to do.

Only, no matter what, the Jade Emperor had actually sent a person instead of a talisman with the summons, this was presumably some grand occasion. There might be a lot of people waiting to see it, not going wasn't an option. But right now the damned achievement roll was a huge pain in the ass!

Trembling with fear and trepidation, the achievement emissary cautiously followed the Jade Emperor's envoy for the high firmament treasure palace. His shaking as he walked astonished the envoy, but he couldn't ask about it and only tactfully reminded: "Be careful not to be discourteous before the Jade Emperor!"

At the near firmament treasure palace, the new Jade Emperor was just holding a grand feast for the ministers. In fact, this was also considered the celebratory feast for overthrowing the old regime. Some people at the feast deserved rewards, and they would be casually awarded some achievement points.

Seeing this scene from a distance, the achievement emissary's legs almost buckled. Even with his golden immortal cultivation, his terror wasn't light. The hoped for day of overthrowing the old heavenly court had come with great difficulty, could it be he would be thrown into the Immortal Executioner Stage because he still hadn't had time to change the rules on the achievement roll he had just been put in charge of?

With great difficulty forcing himself to complete the great formal courtesies for the Jade Emperor without mistake, the Jade Emperor's next words almost made his soul fly away and scatter.

"Achievement emissary, display the achievement roll, let all the ministers inspect it!"

At this very moment, Yang Chen's vicious blade was already held

up high, and before the shocked eyes of the previous Jade Emperor, chopped down heavily. Pop, the vicious blade that had beheaded tens of thousands of immortals only gave a slight sound before bloody light immediately sprayed out, the Jade Emperor's body collapsing to the ground, no different from any common corpse.

The figure on the achievement roll rose sharply once again, instantly exceeding the range of what the roll could display. The instant the achievement emissary displayed the achievement roll, Yang Chen's name flashed once, and disappeared without a trace.

The achievement emissary couldn't help shuddering. If the Jade Emperor saw that the person on the number one spot wasn't him, he didn't know what kind of thundering fury he would display.

Just when the achievement emissary in desperation was planning to throw it to the ground and smash it, he suddenly heard the quiet laughter of all the immortals, as if everyone were extremely satisfied with the ranking, and leisurely assessed it one by one. Even the Jade Emperor laughed, clearly, even though that achievement score was low, as the newly appointed Jade Emperor, he could easily accept that his score wasn't high.

"Achievement emissary, bestow minister XX one hundred thousand achievement!" The Jade Emperor's voice echoed from up high.

The achievement emissary stared blankly, raising his eyes, with astonishment just finding the Jade Emperor's name listed as number one on the achievement roll, and that harbinger of

calamity-like Yang Chen had already flown off to unknown parts. The achievement emissary's whole body shivered, as if he had just ascended from hell into paradise.

“Your servant obeys the Emperor's decree!” Inwardly joyous, he still didn't dare neglect his mouth and hastily operated the achievement roll, noting down the Jade Emperor's conferred reward.

“Minister XX, eighty thousand achievement!”

“Minister XX, sixty thousand achievement!”

.....

A string of rewards left the achievement emissary too busy to raise his head. With great difficulty completing the awards, the Jade Emperor finally seemed very satisfied with the achievement emissary, in the end instructing: “Achievement emissary, give yourself one thousand achievement points. Afterwards the achievement roll will follow these rules, and mustn't be changed lightly!”

For the first half of what he said, the achievement emissary rejoiced over obtaining a thousand points for himself, but the latter half made his heart drop. That Yang Chen's name appeared in his brain once again, that outrageously long number behind the name testing his nerves again and again. However, at this time he didn't dare say anything else, the Jade Emperor, the sole ruler of everything, had a mouth of gold and spoke words of jade, he



couldn't tolerate the slightest lip service. Anyway, since Yang Chen's name had already disappeared, would the achievement emissary foolishly expose it?

Thinking of this, the achievement emissary made a great bow, deferentially saying to the Jade Emperor on the throne in a loud voice: "Your servant, receives the decree!"

---

[\[1\]](#) (Author note:

Ten thousand:  $10^4$

Hundred million:  $10^8$

Trillion:  $10^{12}$

Ten quadrillion:  $10^{16}$

Hundred quintillion:  $10^{20}$

Septillion:  $10^{24}$

Ten octillion:  $10^{28}$

Hundred nonillion:  $10^{32}$

Undecillion:  $10^{36}$

Ten duodecillion:  $10^{40}$

Hundred tredecillion:  $10^{44}$

Quinquagintillion:  $10^{48}$

Ten sedecillion:  $10^{52}$

Hundred septendecillion:  $10^{56}$

Novendecillion:  $10^{60}$

Ten vigintillion:  $10^{64}$

Hundred unvigintillion:  $10^{68}$

Tresvigintillion:  $10^{72}$

TL Note: Chinese has individual expressions for every multiple of 104 rather than 103, and are perhaps more descriptive, like:

ten sedecillion = sand of the Ganges

ten vigintillion = inconceivable

hundred unvigintillion = boundless

tresvigintillion = big number.)

# Chapter 9 - Three Purities Secret

Yang Chen naturally didn't know about what had happened at the near firmament treasure palace, but the enormous achievement score still made him leap high with fright. On his achievement ring, a long string of zeroes made it clear that the magnitude of his current achievement score was very high. But within the range of what the ring could display were only a line of zeroes, and no other numbers.

If anyone else saw it, they would definitely believe that Yang Chen was someone without any achievement. Only Yang Chen himself knew what kind of immense figure this string of zeroes represented. The reason why there were no other numbers was simply because it was too long, and couldn't display more.

Since the Queen Mother of the West had already passed away, the old heavenly court no longer had any chance of regaining their authority. Yang Chen had nothing else to do at the Immortal Executioner Stage.

Placing the vicious blade on its stand, Yang Chen returned to the little room. After planning and resting, he took off the celestial executioners garb prepared for him in the Immortal Executioner Stage, changing into the mundane clothing he wore when he arrived, putting everything in order. Forcefully constraining the churning and joy in his heart, he firmly walked towards the gate of the Immortal Executioner Stage.

If one was polluted with the blood or flesh of an immortal in the

Immortal Executioner Stage, or touched something the shouldn't be touched, the great gate of the Immortal Executioner Stage would disappear automatically. But Yang Chen had always been very careful, and even now the great gate still towered in its place, without the slightest change.

Under the Jade Emperor's explicit order, the supervising official could draw on the strength of the entire heavenly court to use the Dream Play great formation once in order to draw an executioner from the mortal world. Once chose, unless the executioner died within the Immortal Executioner Stage, there was no way to select another. Since Yang Chen hadn't died, the Immortal Executioner Stage's prohibition wouldn't be activated to notify the heavenly court's officials.

The Jade Emperor was already dead, and for the moment there would be no new immortals entering the Immortal Executioner Stage. Yang Chen knew about this, after he had ascended and entered the Heavenly Court, he had never heard of anyone being executed.

Walking over to the portal, he turned his head and looked at the Immortal Executioner Stage, looked at that vicious blade, the corner of his mouth showed a smile, then he stepped through the gate with large strides.

The scene before his eyes changed with blinding speed, suddenly turning dark. Yang Chen focused at the distance, but he was still in his broken house, and it was still night. He just didn't know how much time had passed in the mortal world.

When Yang Chen appeared, the weather was originally early winter, but everyone in the county town seemed to tremble and couldn't help pulling their bedclothes closer, as if feeling a bone chilling cold. Rats and ants burrowing underground also suddenly stopped moving at that moment. The entire town was still like a ghost town.

A lot of people in the prison suddenly woke up, starting to shiver uncontrollably from cold, as if the god of death was already at their side, and a few cowards even collapsed.

On a distant mountaintop, a woman whose body was like the white jade of a fairy suddenly looked in this direction, frowning, muttering to herself: "Such a great killing intent, just how many souls as this monster extinguished?" Her figure flashed, already gone from her previous place.

There were also some others who noticed this direction in a few other directions. The old just looked, but a lot of people immediately flew off. Their cultivation was high and low, unevenly matched.

Yang Chen finally noticed something was wrong. In the Immortal Executioner Stage, this killing aura and killing intent was nothing, but in the immortal world it was enough to drive people insane. If he didn't quickly settle the issue of the killing intent before he met some cultivating fellows and his luck was good, they might realize he was an executioner and not care further, but if his luck was bad, they might immediately cut him up with their flying swords to eliminate evil and defend the Dao.

With his former temperament cultivation, this bit of killing intent was nothing. But Yang Chen hadn't anticipated that the killing intent from killing immortals would be revealed, it really was something of a miscalculation.

Three Purities Secret, Yang Chen suddenly recalled what the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord said, the Three Purities Secret could refine killing intent into divine consciousness, that was simply a life saving treasure in this situation. No wonder the Elderly Lord would say he'd use it very soon.

Yang Chen didn't dare be neglectful, hastily reciting what the Elderly Lord taught him about the Three Purities Secret, starting to slowly comprehend the mysteries within it. After a long while, Yang Chen sat down in meditation, and started to cultivate it according to the methods of the Three Purities Secret's first level. The Three Purities Secret had altogether nine levels, and even with Yang Chen's more than ten thousand years of experience in cultivating, he could still only do it step by step.

Yang Chen's temperament cultivation was already at the level of a great primary golden immortal since his rebirth, and despite this being the first time he practiced it, he still instantly entered the condition for cultivating, without self or others.

After six hours, Yang Chen woke from his practicing. Letting loose a long breath, Yang Chen began to slowly inspect the changes in his body.

The Three Purities Secret was the key to the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord's turning one qi into three purities, only, it could only

raise divine consciousness, and not magical power. Yang Chen was long since aware of this, but as he practiced, he was still shocked at the changes in his divine consciousness.

Originally Yang Chen's body was born mortal, and without cultivating any arts, he was naturally without any divine consciousness or magical power, just the empty ten thousand years of cultivation experience and temperament cultivation. But with the first time cultivating the Three Purities Secret now, his divine consciousness had immediately risen a large chunk, so much that it had even caught up to when he successfully cultivated almost to the foundation building stage. The result was outstanding, simply stupefying.

Even Yang Chen himself hadn't anticipated such an outstanding result, and in bewildered he even started doubting his own judgement. But very quickly he noticed the blood cloud that had already grown a lot thinner, and accepted the facts.

Absorbing killing intent, turning it into divine consciousness, it turned out that interesting. Yang Chen determined that, as long as he cultivated for another few days, this overflowing killing intent would be completely absorbed, no longer with any need to worry about this killing aura.

The sky was already bright, and Yang Chen left the house and pushed open the gate to the courtyard, thinking to go see how much time had passed. However, with a glance he discovered that nothing seemed to have change, exactly the same as before he left. There was no change in the street scenery, nor even any change in the people, those neighbours still looked at him extremely



cautiously, afraid to provoke his attention.

“What date is it?” Yang Chen directly pulled over a neighbour to ask. But he hadn’t anticipated that this simple touch would immediately scare that neighbour enough that he didn’t dare move, squeezing out two words after his teeth chattering and body trembling for a long time: “The..... fifth!”

Yang Chen let go, and that neighbour frantically crawled and ran into the distance as if he had just received a general pardon, not even daring to turn his head. The cold intent of Yang Chen’s body made people move far away with their hearts alarmed.

“The fifth!” Yang Chen stared blankly, not even one day had passed, everything that happened, could it have been a huge dream? Absorbing all that life essence, was it all an illusion?

“Impossible!” Yang Chen shouted inwardly. Even though he had only heard about it in his previous life, he could be certain that there would be no beheadings in nothing physically entered the Immortal Executioner Stage.

When he stepped out from the Immortal Executioner Stage, it had been his real body, and not just a thought. Moreover, if he was only a thought within the Immortal Executioner Stage, it would be impossible for him to be the opponent of the vicious blade.

And Yang Cheng had the greatest proof, the discerning eye of the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord. Even completely without magical power when entering the Immortal Executioner Stage, the elder’s

eyes still weren't lacking to the extent that he couldn't tell apart a real body and a consciousness entity. Since he said his body's aptitude was extremely good, that absolutely wasn't a lie.

Turning around, Yang Chen closed himself into his little courtyard, walked over to the millstone, and fished out that five colored stone. By just touching it, the five colored stone released a great brilliance, the five colored light extremely dazzling. This also made Yang Chen let loose a breath, everything that had happened, none of it was a waste.

The killing intent was still very dense, before killing people today, Yang Chen still had the chance to refine it a bit more. Thinking of this, Yang Chen immediately returned to his room, sitting cross legged with his palms and soles of his feet facing the sky, and began to practice the Three Purities Secret once again.

He still had to execute people at three quarters past eleven, so Yang Chen only cultivated for two hours in the morning before stopping. The blood cloud had weakened a bit, but it was still thicker than old devil Yi's back then. Fortunately this blood cloud could only be seen by cultivators with magical power, ordinary people would only feel a heartfelt terror, and nothing else. Common people fearing executioners seemed to be a common thing in the mortal world, and wouldn't cause any great panic.

Hastily killing a few dozen people, Yang Chen was warned by that seemingly dodging little minor official that he would be executing minister Sun's whole family of three hundred people tomorrow. He might be tired, so he should prepare early. Yang Chen was unconcerned, and hurried back to his house with large

strides to start cultivating.

This time Yang Chen cultivated the whole time from three in the afternoon to seven in the morning the next day. Right now Yang Chen was scrambling for time, he had to completely absorb his killing intent before those devil exterminating, Dao protecting people dared come here.

Yang Chen had also planned the choice of this county seat far in advance. This was where the distance to any cultivator sect was the greatest, and even experts on flying swords would take at least two days to get here. This was enough to let Yang Chen suppress his killing intent to the level of ordinary people.

The Three Purities Secret was worthy of being the Elderly Lord's trump card, when all was said and done, Yang Chen only practiced it the third time, and no more than eight hours in a stretch, and it was still only the first level, but with the third time he practiced, Yang Chen's divine consciousness was already enough to study the changes within his body.

The red cloud on the surface of his body rushed madly into Yang Chen as if pulled by some huge gravitational force, and after a short series of changes, it joined the formidable ranks of a large army of divine consciousness. So much that Yang Chen could even clearly sense the slight chill of the blood cloud flowing within him.

The more formidable his divine consciousness, the faster the absorption speed, forming a positive reinforcement spiral. But Yang Chen still couldn't be relieved, because the absorption speed was still a bit slow compared to the density of the blood cloud.

Compared to the joy over his divine consciousness, Yang Chen was even more concerned about how to deal with puritanical cultivators.

Yang Chen had never thought that he would possess divine consciousness so unsuited to his magical power, before he even had a trace of magical power. By his experience, his present divine consciousness was already equivalent to when he was at the foundation building stage in his previous life. Using weights of silver to compare it, then he was like an ordinary person who had suddenly received several tens of thousands of tael of silver, enough to squander for a lifetime.

Faintly, it was as if his formidable divine consciousness wanted to split into two pieces, which made Yang Chen feel strange. Such an indication, according to the records of the Three Purities Secret, should be the omen of the divine consciousness splitting. Since it was one qi becoming three purities, then the divine consciousness would naturally ultimately split into three pieces. However, that was at least something that would happen above the yuanying stage, at the dacheng stage, how could something like this happen when he had just started to practice it?

What Yang Chen didn't know was that divine consciousness splitting was related to magical power, and would appear after the divine consciousness was one realm higher than the magical power. Yang Chen's current condition was that he didn't have a trace of magical power, but his divine consciousness was already at the level of an initial stage foundation builder, which as it happens met the conditions.

However, indications for splitting of divine consciousness was clearly the peak of the first level of practice, he could already practice the second level art.

The final purpose was for one qi to become three purities, this required splitting into three parts. Now that he already had the signs of splitting, Yang Chen naturally wouldn't halt it and continued practicing. Simply, after completing this round of practice, Yang Chen naturally switched the Three Purities Secret's first layer art to the second layer art.

Entering the second layer, Yang Chen immediately felt vigor like a swallowing whale. The blood cloud surrounding him rushed into his body as if it was suddenly engulfed in a powerful storm. The absorption speed was at least twice as fast.

Yang Chen almost became drunk on the unrestrained feeling, and his divine consciousness rose sharply at the same time. The blood cloud also swiftly weakened, and in a short few hours, Yang Chen had already absorbed almost seventy percent of the killing intent. The thick blood cloud had grown faint, as if already weakened to the level of old devil Yi back then, all that remained was a thin red curtain. And this faint red curtain also dissipated within it.

At the same time as Yang Chen sat quietly practicing, in the distance in all directions, several people were just controlling flying swords to fly, their target astonishingly Yang Chen's location.

"Yi?" One white dressed young girl among them dashed out an expression of surprise. The bloody killing intent over there had

actually swiftly weakened in a short few hours, could it be some unknowable unforeseen event had taken place there?

“Humph!” Looking in that direction, the frosty expression on white dressed young woman’s face didn’t warm in the slightest: “No matter who you are, daring to be create such a killing calamity, even if you flee to the ends of the world, I’ll still find you to protect the Dao!”

Yang Chen didn’t seem to be aware of any of this. Having just stopped practicing, he was racking his brains to remember a person he had an impression of. It seemed that person had been saved on the execution ground back then, and afterwards been taken to a sect to cultivate, afterwards becoming the pride of a generation. That person’s surname was Sun, reportedly from the family of officials, and her grandfather seemed to have been a Chao minister.

Coincidentally, the family Yang Chen was to execute turned out to be a family of officials, that also had a government minister surnamed Sun.

# Chapter 10 - Robbing The Execution Ground

Yang Chen didn't know why minister Sun's whole family would be executed, all he knew was the minister Sun's official birthplace was here. It might be that he had committed some offense in the capital and been remitted back home, then afterwards, because of some unknown reason, gotten his whole family executed unto the third generation.

When Yang Chen left his small house at dawn, after close to twenty hours of practicing, the killing intent outside him was already so thin it practically wasn't noticeable. The killing intent absorption rate of the second level Three Purities Secret was more than double, and by the time he finished, Yang Chen was already at most like an executioner that had killed a bit too many. Even if he still had some killing aura and killing intent, it wasn't on the level of opposing heaven.

The first crisis after leaving the Immortal Executioner Stage was finally quietly dissipating. Yang Chen had held the advantage in the race with time, and turned himself into a mortal before those puritanical cultivators arrived. Because he had only cultivated Three Purities Secret, absorbing killing intent and turning it into divine consciousness, he didn't have a trace of magical power. Even if jindan stage cultivators came over, they still couldn't discover anything abnormal about Yang Chen.

The instant he approached the execution ground, Yang Chen saw that familiar face. Yang Chen had looked up to that cultivation

genius many times in his previous life, but now that unique genius was like a startled little rabbit, curled up in the crowd, her eyes wandering back and forth across the surrounding crowd, her gaze displaying a deep despair.

Sun Qingxue, the Blue Cloud Sect's direct disciple in Yang Chen's previous life, an outstanding talent of the young generation, equally matched with the genius disciples of other great sects. Once she had been a character of reverence for Yang Chen, but right now she was so helpless, and unspeakably scared as she looked at Yang Chen.

Amidst the astonished gazes of the crowd, Yang Chen walked over in front of that young Sun Qingxue. Right now Sun Qingxue was at most ten years old. The little girl saw Yang Chen walk over, and was even more frightened, her small head exerting itself to pull back behind her relatives, but since she was fettered she was unable to move much.

Even if Yang Chen's killing intent was almost absorbed, what was left was still enough to frighten ordinary people. Right now, standing in front of Sun Qingxue, not only her, but even the adults next to her were so scared their souls almost flew off when faced with the executioner's killing intent Yang Chen radiated.

"Don't be afraid, little sister!" Standing there, Yang Chen didn't get too close, only revealing a smile to Sun Qingxue: "Don't worry, your whole family will be alright."

On the execution ground, an executioner with upper body naked, head covered with red cloth, one hand raising an executioner's



blade, radiating incomparably cold killing intent, now suddenly spoke so amiably to a few prisoners slated for execution, this was even more shocking than a beggar suddenly pulling out tens of thousands of strings of cash, and those arrested Sun family members almost all displayed expressions of shock.

“Really? Big brother!” Young Sun Qingxue displayed an expression of pleasant surprise: “We’ll really be alright?”

The other Sun family adults couldn’t help closing their eyes. They seemed to already know their fate, right now they had already been escorted to the execution ground, and the executioner coming alone to tell them they would be alright, idiots would believe it. Only the insensible Sun Qingxue would take Yang Chen seriously.

“Really, I won’t trick you!” At the same time as Yang Chen spoke, he took the initiative to release his his killing intent. He believed that there were already puritanical cultivators in the surroundings who had rushed over.

Even though ninety nine percent of Yang Chen’s killing intent had already been absorbed, the release of the remainder, plus the constant reinforcement of his divine consciousness, made all the people around the execution ground shiver. Watching that silhouette standing in the middle of the execution ground like a god of death, even the supervising official was a bit scared, not knowing whether he should throw out all the death sentence plates and hurry up and leave this damned place.

Practically the instant Yang Chen released his killing intent, he

heard a sharp whistle next to his ear, and at the same time a stern shout: “Monster, cease!”

Immediately afterward, several silhouettes suddenly appeared from the horizon, flying in the direction of the execution ground. A few beams of light shot like arrows, directly at Yang Chen. But the instant before hitting him, all the lights disappeared from the spot, turning around and flying back. A few divine consciousnesses swiftly enveloped Yang Chen, and dissipated after sweeping across him once.

“An executioner?” A befuddled voice echoed, and several shares of immense imposing manner immediately seemed to appear in the sky, enveloping all the people in the execution ground, making all the ordinary people below stare at the sky in amazement.

“Heavens, immortals!” Someone finally gave voice, and the originally not many people immediately knelt on the ground. The several people who appeared were without exception hanging in the air. Besides the legendary immortals, who could accomplish that?

Yang Chen stood there without moving, as if scared dumb, resisting his thoughts and without releasing his own divine consciousness. However, he was always facing Sun Qingxue, and gave her another smile. His gaze seemed to tell her: “See, didn’t I say you’d be fine?”

“Fairy Shi!” Yet another white light suddenly appeared, and all the people in the sky seemed extremely courteous towards the new arrival. The person who spoke just now even bowed slightly. When

the white light halted, everyone on the ground were stupefied, dumbstruck as they looked at that cold countenanced woman.

Hearing this name, Yang Chen's gaze immediately rose. Fairy Shi was also a world renown young character when Yang Chen was cultivating in his previous life, the personal disciple of Green Jade Immortal Island, practically the number one person of the young generation. She had unexpectedly also showed up here.

Yang Chen looked at that ice cold silhouette, looked at that sword light as spotlessly white as the clothes she wore, and couldn't help sighing slightly inwardly. Shi Shanshan was still exactly as he remembered her, only, that was a ten thousand year old memory. At the same time as he sighed with lamentation, he also tightly guarded his divine consciousness, for fear he would divulge the slightest clue, directly treated as a butchering monster and purified.

Shi Shanshan only dashed a slight nod to the person who spoke just now, without saying anything else, only looking at Yang Chen who was just gazing at her. Fairy Shi was never very talkative, and all cultivators knew and didn't mind her manners.

"Providence births virtue, bearing such a heavy sin of killing, do you not fear retribution?" Nobody had anticipated that the ice cold fairy Shi would speak to a vulgar ordinary mortal, and even to an executioner despised even by common people.

"Every debt has a debtor, this is my place of duty, executing orders!" Below the sky and above the earth, all gazes were focused on Yang Chen as he calmly spoke. At the same time he also stared

fixedly at Shi Shanshan in the sky, without retreating half a step.

“How stupid, this person’s sin of killing is strangely heavy, he’s definitely related with the monster we’re looking for.” Yang Chen’s words to Shi Shanshan immediately offended one of the young cultivators in the air. Shi Shanshan was the idol of countless gazes, but when she now lowered herself to advice Yang Chen, Yang Chen stubbornly refused to repent, immediately causing her protectors to jump out: “Fairy Shi, we had better capture him to question him closer.”

“There is now many cruelties under heaven, murders taking place each day, which executioner in the world is unlike him?” Fairy Shi didn’t speak to Yang Chen again, only perfunctorily leaving some words to the supposed protector, her gaze closely watching Yang Chen’s eyes. It seemed that the words so confidently spoken by the owner of those eyes, left her very surprised.

Shi Shanshan could feel that Yang Chen’s words came from the heart, he hadn’t even answered whether he feared heavenly retribution. But the reason was still very clear, the job of an executioner was killing people, you couldn’t say that a diligent executioner had done anything wrong. Perhaps even immortals, though you could say that killing people was wrong, you still couldn’t say an executioner was wrong for following orders.

Where was there any absolute right in this world, where was there any absolute wrong, even experienced in worldly affairs, one had to distinguish right from wrong and not lump different matters together. Thinking clearly about this, Shi Shanshan

suddenly felt a wide open understanding in her heart, and her practice that had been somewhat rough in the past, suddenly broke free of all restraints, swiftly circulating through her energy channels.

With a sudden revolution, her spiritual force moved one lap within her body, without any kind of restriction. Even an alarming genius like Shi Shanshan had to exult inwardly. At the peak of foundation building, she could finally consider attacking jindan.

The change in spiritual force within Shi Shanshan didn't escape the divine consciousness of the others, and even if they didn't know just what had happened, they could conclude that Shi Shanshan's mental cultivation had made a great advancement, and her power had subsequently increased a level further. The several puritanical cultivators that had come all stepped forward and cupped their hands to Shi Shanshan: "Congratulations, fairy!"

"Many thanks, everyone!" Shi Shanshan cupped her hands in return to the surroundings, then gave Yang Chen a slight nod. Giving him a rather complex look, she suddenly waved one hand, a line of white light appearing in front of Yang Chen. He reached out and took a tiny pill into his hand. At the same time and extremely cold and aloof 'thank you' reached Yang Chen's ear.

Yang Chen declined to comment, and Shi Shanshan didn't say anything else either. Her gaze also left Yang Chen, finally falling on Sun Qingxue next to him.

"Little sister, your bones are rather unusual, your good fortune is profound, do you want to follow me to cultivate?" Shi Shanshan

yet again spoke to a mortal, but the contents and target made everyone relax. One little girl, and bringing her to cultivate, it seemed fairy Shi was moved to affection.

Sun Qingxue naturally hadn't foreseen that such a gigantic meat pie would fall from heaven, and at ten years of age, she didn't even know how she should answer the fairy-like big sister's question. Instead it was the adults next to her that spoke in unison with surprised expressions: "She does, our family's Qingxue is willing!"

"Little sister, do you want to?" Shi Shanshan didn't pay any attention to the Sun family members, she only looked at Sun Qingxue, waiting for her reply.

At this time, Sun Qingxue completely lacked the demeanor of an outstanding genius that Yang Chen remembered, only fearfully looking at fairy Shi in the sky, then again looking at the family members at her side, then finally casting a glance at Yang Chen, as if this big brother who had smiled at her in the execution ground a few times, had given her hope, made her feel even more relieved than her own family.

"Didn't I tell the truth?" Yang Chen didn't give Sun Qingxue any direct answer, only smiled and spoke.

"En!" Just while the bystanders were doubtful, Sun Qingxue understood Yang Chen's meaning. Yang Chen had just said that she would be alright, and that her whole family would be alright, and Yang Chen still said the same now.

Sun Qingxue's gaze again turned to the beautiful fairy in the sky. With Yang Chen's affirmation she seemed to find confidence, and despite still being tied up, she shot a question at the sky: "If I come with big sister fairy, will my family be alright?"

This question made all the people in the air smile. Fairy Shi also smiled slightly, like a beautiful flower blossoming in the sky, the souls of the surrounding people immediately flew off. The renowned fairy Shi was admittedly addressed by her surname, but there was also a hint of meaning to say she was like stone, never smiling all year round. But when confronting a little girl, everyone were lucky enough to see her smile. [\[1\]](#)

Shi Shanshan's smile gave Sun Qingxue unlimited courage, and she bravely struggled to stand up, saying to Shi Shanshan in the sky: "As long as my family is fine, I'll follow you!"

With several immortals showing up personally, ensuring the safety of a family was the simplest of matters, even on the execution ground. The supervising official didn't even have the courage to order them to stop, and only watched the Sun family's members ropes undone one after another, then quickly disappear from the execution ground after Shi Shanshan.

Only once the entire Sun family had disappeared out of sight did the supervising official shakily stand up, once again ensure that there were no more immortals in the sky, he strengthened his courage and shouted hoarsely: "The convicted family has been robbed from the execution grounds by the powers of Tiger Head Mountain, release the news with bounties and warrants of arrest."

Everyone had seen the people in the sky, and also heard them address fairy Shi, but nobody dared say anything, everyone agreeing with the explanation that Tiger Head Mountain were responsible.

Yang Chen snickered in his sleeve. On his way home, in his mind replayed the little girl Sun Qingxue's final words and the scene of her reluctantly turning to leave.

“Big brother, thank you!”

“Big brother, I'll find a time to come see you in the future!”

.....

If he told the people of his previous world that the Blue Cloud Sect's Sun Qingxue had said something like that to him, out of ten thousand people, ten thousand and one wouldn't believe him. But in this life it was fact. The only thing that left him puzzled was that it should have been the Blue Cloud Sect's people that appeared to save Sun Qingxue, so how come it was Green Jade Immortal Island's fairy Shi? Could it be that Sun Qingxue would be a disciple of Green Jade Immortal Island in the future, and not taught by Blue Cloud Sect?

However, whether Sun Qingxue was a disciple of Green Jade Immortal Island or Blue Cloud Sect in the end wasn't of any great importance to Yang Chen. His achievements as executioner had no come to a successful conclusion, and it was time to leave.



What Yang Chen cared about now was what cultivation technique he should cultivate in order to gain the greatest advantage on his future road of cultivation.

---

[\[1\]](#) (TL note: Shi means rock or stone.)

# Chapter 11 - Yin Yang Five Phases Secrets

Now that it was time to leave, Yang Chen wasted no time. After handing the duties back to the old executioner, Yang Chen left the county seat empty handed without a second thought. Of course, all of his luggage was stored in his achievement ring.

To be able to meet Sun Qingxue and Shi Shanshan was an unexpected pleasure, and on his first meeting with the two women, the encounter had ended full of goodwill. Yang Chen wouldn't deliberately pursue anything, but it would still be rude to refuse such good karma when it was an inadvertent result.

Yang Chen very quickly disappeared from the eyes of those county seat commoners, and after a few months nobody any longer thought about an executioner named Yang Chen.

Yang Chen was now drooling before a great pile of cultivation techniques. Since leaving the Immortal Executioner Stage, his postnatal five phases spiritual roots were already completely full, and moreover completely full in yin yang five phases. Yang Chen couldn't avoid giving himself a few introductory cultivation techniques.

According to Yang Chen's original plan, as long as he had full fire spiritual roots he would naturally cultivate according to the road of his previous life, advancing step by step. After all, Yang Chen had even cultivated to great primary golden immortal, and with his fire spiritual roots completely full he could save at least half the time it took in his previous life.

But now, not only was Yang Chen's fire spiritual roots full, but all his spiritual roots plus the yin yang attributes were all full. This made other thoughts rise in his mind.

In his previous life there were a group of quintuplets who each had one of the five phases, focusing on cultivating theirs. The five brothers' spirits were connected, and when they joined hands they formed a five phases great formation, becoming extremely potent in both attack and defense while mutually engendering each other. Ordinary cultivators that hardly differed from them in strength might not be their enemy when they acted together.

But those were five brothers cooperating, Yang Chen now had filled double yin yang five phases spiritual roots, he could cultivate all five phases arts, and they were controlled by a single person, even more superior than five people acting together. Besides, with all yin yang five phases, it was really a bit of a waste to only cultivate one.

Not only that, but Yang Chen still remembered what the Elderly Lord said in the Immortal Executioner Stage. With great yin yang five phases double cultivation, he could be even more tremendous than the Elderly Lord even without an eight trigrams stove. Yang Chen couldn't forgive himself if he wasted such potential.

Yang Chen didn't want to give up on this opportunity no matter what, that's why great yin yang five phases double cultivation had already become Yang Chen's future cultivation direction. Only, what Yang Chen had to worry about now was cultivation techniques.

Yang Chen had obtained a lot of them while beheading immortals in the heavenly court. «A Wood True Secrets», «B Wood True Secrets», «D Fire True Secrets», «G Metal True Secrets», «E Earth True Secrets», «J Water True Secrets», six articles of true secrets that were all able to transfer great yin yang five phases' most basic innate qi, corresponding to the innate qi of each attribute, simply the best yin yang five phases cultivation arts in the world. If he could get «C Fire True Secrets», «H Metal True Secrets», «F Earth True Secrets», and «I Water True Secrets» to match, he would have a full set of great yin yang five phases true secrets.

But these great yin yang five phases true secrets had one condition, and that was that he had to refine all the yin yang five phases innate qi, otherwise he would be unable to cultivate. It was just unfortunate that, even though Yang Chen knew the locations of the majority of the yin yang five phases innate qi, they weren't easy to reach. Even if he wanted to cultivate these true secrets, it was impossible at the moment.

While the other techniques he had received were also good, as well as formation arts, they were practically all high level, and impossible to practice with Yang Chen's current cultivation. The trump cards left behind by those immortals were lost arts, and absolutely not something someone who had just begun to cultivate and still not entered the qi refining stage could covet.

Thus, Yang Chen could only first use some rudimentary five phases arts to lay a foundation in the place of the great yin yang five phases secrets, until such a time that he could obtain yin yang five phases innate qi and begin to cultivate the true great yin yang five phases secrets.

The second level arts of the Three Purities Secrets had already thoroughly absorbed the killing aura around Yang Chen, turning everything into divine consciousness. Only, this killing aura and killing intent hadn't disappeared completely. As long as Yang Chen willed it, his divine consciousness could swiftly turn into that kind of killing intent again, an extremely sharp weapon to awe enemies.

By now Yang Chen's divine consciousness was already on the level of the late foundation building stage from his last life. Although divine consciousness was enormously useful in cultivation, without any more killing intent, the Three Purities Secrets couldn't advance by leaps and bounds like that, and could only gradually advance step by step, thin streams flowing together into rivers.

At present he first needed the strength to protect himself. Otherwise, no matter how formidable his divine consciousness, he was still useless without a spec of magical power. Yang Chen naturally wouldn't make a mistake like that.

The cultivation from his precious life that he was most familiar with was naturally the Pure Yang Palace's Great Sun Fierce Yang Central Scripture. This was a required course for fire cultivation in the Pure Yang Palace, and was also the foundation scripture Yang Chen was most familiar with. Yang Chen's first cultivation was with this one.

When he started cultivating the Great Sun Fierce Yang Central Scripture in his previous life, he had still spent practically a whole month before he could sense a trace of magical power. But right

now Yang Chen only needed to start cultivating before his body began to frantically produce magical power.

With the knowledge of more than several hundred thousand times of cultivating it in his last life, the Great Sun Fierce Yang Central Scripture had practically become instinctual to Yang Chen, basically without any deviation in comprehension or errors in cultivation. Adding the divine consciousness far more formidable than his magical power, Yang Chen felt that most basic trace of magical power by just circulating it once.

Soon after, the bits and bits of magical power began to flow along familiar pathways under the control of his powerful divine consciousness, warming, nourishing, opening the energy channels.

With this one circuit, Yang Chen discovered that the benefits he had obtained in the Immortal Executioner Stage were, by far, not just as tiny as full spiritual roots. All his flesh had improved substantially as it was nourished by the enormous life essence of the immortals. The strength of his body and capacity of his energy channels were at a level that Yang Chen found outrageous. The difficulty he remembered from breaking through the key meridian gates the first time he cultivated practically couldn't be felt.

Without trying he didn't know, but with one circuit he discovered that his body was actually even stronger than after he originally passed into the foundation building stage. There were close to no impurities within his body, as if it had already been strengthened by the spiritual force at the Immortal Executioner Stage, and was strengthened even more efficiently than the spiritual force. In fact, that was the life force of immortals

including the Jade Emperor, the Queen Mother, and the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord.

Spacious and pliable energy channels, plus magical power completely in line with his physical attributes, Yang Chen simply didn't dare believe that this was the effect of the first circuit. At the end of one cycle, Yang Chen even had the feeling of magical power flowing through his meridians.

Opening his eyes, Yang Chen discovered that his ears and eyes already seemed a lot sharper than before. In the past he could only see clearly for a couple dozen meters, but now his clarity had more than doubled, and he even seemed to hear traces of the motions of ants crawling beneath his feet.

Slowly getting up from under the blazing sun, Yang Chen felt the overflowing magical power within him, and couldn't help laughing. Shortly after extending one finger, a ball of flame appeared on the tip, swaying back and forth along with Yang Chen's movements, changing shape as it wished.

Phew, extinguishing the flame with a breath, Yang Chen was indescribably relaxed. He had stepped into the first level qi refining of his last life by practicing just once.

For ordinary people to enter the qi gathering stage, they first had to be able to sense the spiritual influence between heaven and earth and draw it into their bodies, and they also had to be able to complete a full cycle, to draw that trace into their dantian, then they would have truly entered the realm of qi gathering. Only, to be able to take this step was also considered entering the first level

of qi gathering.

Completing a full cycle on the first time practicing was impossible even for the most talented genius. Normally, even with full spiritual roots and exceptional perception, this step would at least take a few months from start to finish. Opening the vital meridian points would even more require unremitting spiritual force accumulation and perseveringly attacking to be able to surmount. The road of cultivation wasn't smooth sailing, not one in ten could step into the first level of qi gathering from the start of cultivation. Yang Chen was unique in having ten thousand years of cultivation experience.

However, Yang Chen stopped cultivating after completing one cycle. The key to yin yang five phases double cultivation was to balance the yin yang five phases. Even though there was no need for exact equality, less differences was better to avoid imbalance. Of course, the yin yang five phases being completely balanced was the best, and if there was some difference one could only equalise the yin five phases and the yang five phases, then level them out someday in the future.

The Great Sun Fierce Yang Central Scripture counted as yang fire among the yin yang five phases. Yang Chen was now looking for suitable foundation cultivation techniques to completely cultivate the other nine kinds of attributes as well, then he could accomplish five phases natural engenderment within himself.

Yang Chen had a great pile of fire attribute central scriptures, from low level to high, but he didn't have many of the other attributes. However, the only thing that made Yang Chen happy



was that he had a few low level foundation cultivation techniques on hand for a few elements, especially a «Blue Wave Water Blade Secret» for water attribute foundation cultivation.

Even though Blue Wave Water Blade Secret was an offensive technique, and very ordinary at that, Yang Chen didn't care. He wanted this Blue Wave Water Blade Secret to cultivate water attribute spiritual force in order to enter the Sun Painting Mountain medicine garden. Besides the seven step bewitching instant kill formation, entering the Sun Painting Mountain medicine garden still had one other requirement, and that was water attribute spiritual force.

The medicine garden was something left behind by an immortal in the Immortal Executioner Stage that was found and entered by later generations. Even though Yang Chen didn't know just what rare panacea were inside, the sect that discovered the medicine garden had sold large quantities of elixirs for a very long time, and their disciples had also been enviably rich in pills, presumably their harvest wasn't small.

There was still some time before the Pure Yang Palace's main sect accepted disciples, and Yang Chen was just going to go pick up the medicine garden in this time. Relying on Yang Chen's experience in compounding pills from his last life, he estimated he wouldn't have any issues with pills for cultivation at least before the yuanying stage.

Even though it was the first time Yang Chen came into contact with water attribute techniques whether in his last life or this one, such a basic technique was still simple in the extreme before a

person with the experience of a great primary golden immortal.

The difference from the Great Sun Fierce Yang central scripture was that he had to spend a bit of time on the Blue Wave Water Blade Secret. Three days later, he had also successfully completed one cycle of the Blue Wave Water Blade Secret, equally stepping into the first level stage.

Even though his five phases were complete, since Yang Chen wanted to cultivate great yin yang five phases secrets, he naturally had to match yin and yang. Fortunately he had foundation techniques for all yang five phases, but he lacked two of the yin five phases. It couldn't be helped, he could only first cultivate the yang five phases to get a bit of strength to defend himself. As for the yin five phases, he could wait until he had gathered the cultivation techniques before cultivating it.

Yang Chen spent about ten days on the remaining three attribute techniques, then having completely entered a more or less correct realm. The next days were mainly for Yang Chen to try controlling the five kinds of techniques to circulate simultaneously and to mutually engender each other, which took a lot of time.

In this time, his formidable divine consciousness finally showed its conclusive effect. Circulating the five kinds of techniques simultaneously was very unpracticed at first and split his concentration five ways, extremely difficult. Several times in a row he was defeated because he was unable to harmonize them.

After Yang Chen had wholeheartedly cultivated Three Purities Secret a few times, with a level heart and calm qi, and relying on

his formidable divine consciousness, after a few more tries he finally managed to move the five phases together. Having experienced his first success, what happened next was only to be expected. In another five days, Yang Chen could already skillfully enter a state of the yang five phases engendering each other.

Strictly speaking, the five kinds of spiritual force wouldn't lose to the spiritual force of an ordinary person's second level refined tools. However, in the end they were still only five kinds of spiritual force, Yang Chen's trouble for stepping into the second level would be five times that of others. Even with the convenience of five phases engendering each other, it would still expend three times the labor.

Fortunately Yang Chen's spiritual roots were all full now, and he was suited for practically all attributes of spiritual force, with outstanding aptitude and outstanding physical condition, plus transcendent experience, he could increase his cultivation speed. Yang Chen's final verdict was that, if he didn't have any outside forces helping, his cultivation speed in this world might still be less than half as fast.

However, even with a slower cultivation speed, Yang Chen would be a lot more difficult to deal with than ordinary people of the same level. With the five phases gathered, Yang Chen already had a five phases great formation, making him invincible from the start in both attack and defense.

Yang Chen kept cultivating as he travelled. He had too little spiritual force to start refining tools, let alone being unable to control swords to fly, even if he was given a flying sword to use on

the ground, Yang Chen still couldn't control it. What the majority of ordinary people used at this stage was talismans. If there were weapons, they were the most basic, they might be a bit better than what mortals had, but far from the level of tools.

The most suitable to use for travelling was the blue cloud talisman. The blue cloud talisman could lighten one's weight, naturally allowing for higher speed, and without being very tiring. Since Yang Chen had started to cultivate, he would naturally use cultivation to settle the problems he faced.

To Yang Chen, drawing talismans was a piece of cake. Yang Chen didn't know how long it had been since he touched drawn talismans, but his preparations were sufficient, with a set of any materials. Once his magical power had achieved some minor success, he started drawing these simple talismans.

Yang Chen nodded with satisfaction as the first talisman lay in his hands. If those cultivators saw this, they would definitely stare wide eyed and gasp in amazement. Even the simplest talismans weren't something that could be completed successfully on the first try.

Yang Chen currently had one advantage, and that was that he could use the same kind of spiritual force, no matter which type the talisman required, making the process extremely smooth. After drawing more than ten blue cloud talismans in a row, Yang Chen also made a few dozen offensive fireball talismans, woodthunder talismans, thirty thousand catties talismans, and others for self protection.

When he had placed these well made talismans in the achievement ring, Yang Chen's heart suddenly twitched. The Grand Supreme Elderly Lord's Universe Raising Treasure Secret could raise the intrinsic quality when refining tools, then couldn't it have the same result on paper talismans?

# Chapter 12 - To Kill For A Secret, Just Kill

When thinking of the Universe Raising Treasure Secret, Yang Chen suddenly thought of something funny. It seemed that the higher level it was, the higher the heavenly court immortal who passed it on was, the simpler the name. Let alone A Wood True Secret, B Wood True Secret and such, Heavenly Spirit Treasure Refining Secret, Earthly Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret, Universe Raising Treasure Secret, so simple it made your hair stand up.

But in the mortal world, a lot of sect's central scriptures were as tremendous as they could be, like Great Sun Celestial Flame Emperor Tyrant Secret, like Autumn Sunflower Yin Water profound Element Secret, like Five Qi Flame Light Bone Refining Secret, like Boundless Radiant Flame Central Scripture, if they could be longer then they would be, if they could sound more intimidating then they would be,

With those names that were frequently long enough to be a mess, with mortal sects hating that they couldn't choose even more earth shaking names, immortals seemed more interested in the essential contents, simply giving them a few characters to describe their features. He estimated that if he didn't have to differentiate the source, Grand Supreme Elderly Lord would probably have named his Universe Raising Treasure Secret as Raising Treasure Secret. It seemed he had done so with Three Purities Secret, and he hadn't even named the «Elderly Lord Pill Arts» Yang Chen had named.

But this was only one of Yang Chen's casual thoughts, just a minor detail. What Yang Chen was thinking about right now was

whether the Universe Raising Treasure Secret would be effective on drawing talismans.

Strictly speaking, there was a great pile of cultivation techniques in Yang Chen's mind right now, and practically all of them were high level techniques. Only what he had learned from the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord, whether the Three Purities Secret, the Universe Raising Treasure Secret, or the Elderly Lord Pill Arts, all of them could be cultivated from the qi gathering stage and used until the Grand Supreme Elderly lord's stage, their efficacy rising along with cultivation level. When all was said and done, these were true invaluable treasures.

But even so, the Elderly Lord's cultivation techniques weren't something that could be easily grasped by qi gathering stage people. Originally the Grand Supreme Elderly Lord had thought Yang Chen would be able to understand these mysteries after reaching the yuanying stage, too bad he hadn't foreseen that Yang Chen would actually have the cultivation experience of a great primary golden immortal.

Yang Chen read over the Universe Raising Treasure Secret very lightly, then started to ponder its mysteries, spending two days time before raising his head with a smile. The Elderly Lord's Raising Treasure Secret was wide-ranging and profound, but he had finally figured out a bit of the beginning. The remainder required practical experimentation to figure out.

This bit of introductory content was actually the key to cultivating it, the operation method. But that alone wasn't enough, the Universe Raising Treasure Secret contained hundreds of

techniques that could be assembled in different combinations to suit different materials. At that time the Elderly Lord had given him the mnemonic chant, but in order to understand what materials suited what techniques, there was no way other than for Yang Chen to constantly experiment and ponder.

If he said he'd do it then he'd do it, his cultivation might be at the first level, but his five phases attributes were complete, and with the talismans he had drawn himself, experimenting wasn't any major inconvenience. Moreover, with such lowest level items and Yang Chen's cultivation experience, he could know some things without even experimenting.

His hand issued a line of red light that softly covered that fireball talisman. The fireball talisman only shone slightly, then recovered to normal shortly thereafter, seemingly not the slightest bit different from a normal fireball talisman. But holding it in his hand, Yang Chen could feel that the fireball talisman had undergone some minute change.

Phew, the seemingly improved fireball talisman suddenly ignited, shooting out an enormous fireball that blasted a nearby rock into pieces. At the same time Yang Chen's other hand also shot out a fireball, but much smaller than the one just now, and even though it also broke a rock, the difference in power between the two fireballs was clear.

With his experience, Yang Chen could see with just a glance that the power of the talisman that had passed the Universe Raising Treasure Secret was at least twenty percent higher. This was still when Yang Chen was just at the first level of cultivation, it would



increase even more as his cultivation advanced. Of course, that was only talismans.

As an experienced person, Yang Chen knew better than anyone what the significance of such lowest level talismans was. At the same time as he was inwardly proud, he also couldn't help sighing in admiration over the Universe Raising Treasure Secret. However, after one sigh he also recalled that this was Grand Supreme Elderly Lord's art, an effect like that was required. Thinking of this he also very soon stopped being amazed.

With this successful experiment, Yang Chen disregarded everything else to first use the Universe Raising Treasure Secret on all the talismans he had on hand. After a short time, when no more large improvements could be made, he set off in one direction, rushing towards the five hundred kilometer distant Sun Painting Mountain.

The Sun Painting Mountain was always in a verdant and lush place, but for some reason the spiritual influence here didn't quite suit the scenery. Therefore there were no cultivators here. Even though the scenery was beautiful, it was still an old forest deep in the mountains where men's footprints were rare, and there were basically no mortals around. This also lead to this being a haven for wild animals, and one could frequently see some vicious beasts. At the same time, this was also one of the reasons Yang Chen had to prepare so many talismans.

With the foundation of the first level of qi refining, there was basically no need for Yang Chen to fear these animals, at the same time it also made him even more agile and lithe, enough to deal

with the complex terrain here.

The spiritual influence here was lacking, but that wasn't because this place was barren and unclean, it was because of that medicine garden, which concentrated and absorbed the spiritual influence within hundreds of kilometers, leading to this condition. Yang Chen knew this bit very well.

Yang Chen found an open space within a dense thicket and sat down to meditate a while. After recovering his spiritual force and physical strength, he began to look all around, searching for the location of the medicine garden.

Unable to rise into the sky to observe, he could only climb vantage points, Yang Chen expended a lot of effort to roughly ascertain the direction through the paths of mountain rivers. This was the effect of the basic formation arts from his previous life, otherwise it would've been impossible to discover. The reason that sect could find the medicine garden in his last life, was because a severely injured great scholar at the peak of jindan had carelessly escaped here, stumbling onto the location. It was basically impossible for ordinary people to care about this place.

After resting once again and recovering his physical strength and spiritual power, Yang Chen stood and suddenly turned his head to speak in one direction: "You've followed me for so long, shouldn't you show yourself?"

Along with Yang Chen's speech, a man's silhouette slowly appeared at the top of a not distant tree, showing a somewhat unexpected expression, and even more surprise and

embarrassment over being discovered by his target, and consequently sulked: “You actually discovered me?”

As early as when Yang Chen finished refining his pile of talismans, he had discovered that someone was following him. The pursuer behaved extremely brazenly, his divine consciousness sweeping pompously, as if he basically didn't put Yang Chen in his sight. His divine consciousness wasn't very strong either, Yang Chen estimated it was at most a fellow at the third level of qi gathering.

Yang Chen didn't know why this fellow followed him, and didn't pay him any attention. On the contrary, as long as he didn't take any initiative to provoke him, Yang Chen didn't want trouble. Additionally, Yang Chen was still a bit afraid that there was divine consciousness attached to the pill Shi Shanshan had given him. Yang Chen didn't want to let her know his secrets, so he always endured patiently. Naturally, this fellow had followed him the whole way to the Sun Painting mountain.

Almost from the moment they entered the Sun Painting Mountain, Yang Chen had discovered that the divine consciousness Shi Shanshan had wrapped up in the pill had already disappeared, presumably the distance already exceeded the range Shi Shanshan could sense. It wasn't that Shi Shanshan could monitor the several thousand kilometers distant Yang Chen at any time, only that, with the divine consciousness within it, the instant the pill was destroyed, the divine consciousness would alert its owner, making the position known.

A young man appeared in front of Yang Chen's eyes, dressed

extremely luxuriously, twenty something years old, eyes constantly flickering, apparently just contemplating something. Having his concealment broken by Yang Chen's shout, after asking a question out of astonishment, he flew into a rage and snorted coldly: "A tiny executioner, deliberately mystifying things. I don't care how you discovered me, hand over the thing Shi Shanshan gave you, and I won't kill you!"

The gift of thanks that Shi Shanshan gave Yang Chen on the execution ground back then was a body refining pill. This body refining pill was useless to people who had already started to cultivate, and could only improve the spiritual roots of ordinary people a little bit, but had a good chance of inciting the spiritual roots of ordinary people to appear.

It might be that fairy Shi gave Yang Chen this pill back then out of gratitude, in order to give him the chance of cultivating. However, other people didn't know what it was, only aware that fairy Shan had given him something good.

Those people at the execution ground with their own status wouldn't attack a mortal, but that didn't stop them from telling their juniors. Thus, someone started to covet what Yang Chen had, but Yang Chen disappeared very quickly, so a lot of people started to search within a radius of hundreds of kilometers. Appearing here was the one winner who stumbled on Yang Chen and sensed the divine consciousness within the pill.

"You're talking about this? Here!" Yang Chen casually tossed over the pill that was completely useless to him. He already had complete postnatal spiritual roots, so this body refining pill was

basically rubbish to him. Besides, as long as he wanted, he could have countless such things after obtaining the medicine garden.

“Body refining pill?” This youth clearly knew what was what, reaching out and beckoning, the body refining pill swiftly flew into his hand, seeing what it was at a quick glance.

Seeing that this pill was an elixir that required at least foundation building to refine, the youth felt a burst of satisfaction. Even though it was meaningless to him, he could still use it to trade for some other things or perhaps some favors. Following Yang Chen this whole way wasn’t a waste.

With Yang Chen’s great primary golden immortal insight, and this pill being useless to him, as long as this fellow didn’t obstruct his work, Yang Chen wouldn’t mind giving him some benefits to get rid of him. Immortals had the vision of immortals.

However, things turn out contrary to what is desired. Yang Chen wanted this youth to leave after getting the pill, so he could collect the medicine garden as he wished. He didn’t expect that this youth would roll his eyes, his heart unexpectedly holding a poisonous plan.

“You’re an executioner, killing people without regard, what did you come here for? I think, it might be something shameful?” The youth put away the body refining pill and looked ominously at Yang Chen.

A lot of people knew that fairy Shi had given this pill to Yang

Chen, so if Yang Chen made some noise later and implicated him, then it would be an enormously bad turn. Even if the youth was certain Yang Chen didn't recognize him, that just meant he was certain of ten thousand to one, but feared the one in ten thousand. Only the dead can keep a secret forever.

“Beheading demons and eliminating devils, acting on behalf of the Dao of heaven, that is our duty!” The youth thus shouted virtuously in front of Yang Chen: “The unlawful things you desire at this place, everyone can punish, pay with your life!”

He pointed with both hands, just about to launch the Sword Finger he was most proud of to take Yang Chen's life, but he only finished half the motion before there was a sudden flash before his eyes, a line of ice cold light flashing past his eyes. Immediately feeling a chill at his neck, he sank into darkness.

Across from him, Yang Chen had at some unknown time taken an executioner's blade in his hands, and chopped down with practiced ease. The youth's head flew a meter into the air, blood spurting out, and his corpse crumpled to the ground.

Despite already having cultivation at the third level of qi gathering, when facing Yang Chen he was still treated like an ordinary mortal. Without any idea how Yang Chen discovered him, without using any means to protect himself, he had been directly beheaded by one competent blade from Yang Chen.

“Guzao!” With a swing of his hand, the executioner blade instantly disappeared. Before the corpse fell to the ground, Yang Chen casually pinched the tiny cosmos bag at the youth's waist,

and with a soft pull, took it into his hand.

“If you’re going to kill to keep secrets, just kill, why use so many justifications!” Blurting out a lecture, Yang Chen didn’t pay attention to anything else: “With your mouth saying yes but heart saying no like this, words differing from action, there’s no need for a third calamity to descend, you’ll still die without an unmarked grave. Dying early or dying late are no different, be on your way at ease!”

Softly squeezing that cosmos bag, Yang Chen casually threw it into the achievement ring. A tiny qi refining third level fellow who even drooled over body refining pills, what could he have that would be worth Yang Chen’s attention?

He didn’t know how long ago it was since that mountain god left the medicine garden here, but presumably no less than a thousand years. In fact, even for the lowest level mountain god, the time required to ascend to the spiritual world and then again to the immortal world, a thousand years was nothing.

Swiftly walking over in the direction he had been investigating, his divine consciousness spread out. After frantically sweeping in a circle, Yang Chen revealed a smile, and charged with large strides towards a tree thick enough to wrap one’s arms around.

Soon about to collide with the tree, Yang Chen still moved forward without pause. Just as one foot touched the tree, the scenery before his eyes suddenly changed.

A vast dome suddenly appeared above Yang Chen, as if he stood in a great palace hall. On the dome were seven by seven, forty nine coldly glittering flying swords arranged in a regular formation, as if they were forty nine vicious enemies looking for people to devour, silently watching Yang Chen's actions.



# Chapter 13 - Peeled Fruits Best For Consumption

Seven by seven, forty nine raised flying swords made people in Yang Chen's previous life terror-stricken at the news of the seven steps enchanting deadly array. This place was left behind by the mountain god for later generations before ascending to heaven, but due to some unknown reason, it couldn't be passed on. Not to mention that Yang Chen at present had cultivated only to the first qi layer, even for Yuanying Beginning Stage experts, one wrong step and they would also be killed by those forty nine flying swords. In his previous life, the sect which discovered and occupied the Yang Mountain medicinal garden paid the price with several Yuanying experts.

At this moment, Yang Chen was confronting such a frighteningly great enchantment. However, Yang Chen knew the key to entering the spell, thus in his opinion it wasn't the least bit dangerous.

Within the enormous palace hall, there was not a single object or soul apart from Yang Chen present. The floor beneath his feet was made up of uniformly patterned square tiles, as smooth as a mirror. However, it gave off a kind of warm feeling as it was being stepped on. Here the spirit power was pretty close to ordinary, no longer resembling the thin spirit power outside.

Yang Chen was exactly in the middle of palace hall. Passing through it, he came across that camouflaged large tree which spread up until here. This exact piece of the slab under his foot should be the starting point of the seven steps enchanting deadly

array.

Forty-nine steps, every step having its fixed position. With a single wrong step, a life would end. Although Yang Chen had planned everything in advance and also had accumulated a lot of experience, he was still extremely nervous as he stood at the edge of death.

But after carefully taking a few steps, Yang Chen's mind finally regained its calmness. He was taking one step at a time, moving carefully towards the center of the sword spell. Finally, when he was at the forty ninth step, he stepped on a white stone, following which his silhouette flashed and disappeared from its original place.

Just a moment ago, Yang Chen's step landed on the ground with a crash. He still hadn't distinctly seen anything under his foot, but apparently he had stepped on a lump of something that crashed apart with a thunderous sound. Although he was surprised, his spiritual awareness had already started to sense his surroundings. At once, he found himself in some sort of space.

There was one very large palace in the center, on top of which the familiar dome resided. The interior of the palace, however, wasn't entirely empty. Rather it was filled with a large pile of skeletons from all kinds of beasts.

The center of this huge palace was densely packed with skeletons. There were entire skeletons from various sorts of beasts, some still hadn't decayed and maintained their original appearance, some had already turned into piles of dried up bones,

however. All of the beasts shared a common trait: There were sword scars present on the skulls of every beast, leading to their death.

Yang Chen quickly realized that a sword was used here to kill the intruders and then throw off their corpses. Nobody had come here for a long time, however. Only a pile of skeletons which might have been strong or weak beasts or demons was discovered after the bursts of the large, camouflaged tree arrived. Unfortunately for them, if just one strike from the sword could kill a Yuanying expert, even though they were ferocious demon beasts it was still impossible for them to escape.

Previously, just by a glance, Yang Chen had already discovered those who had died immediately, as their corpses had not rotted. Clearly all of these demon beasts had surpassed foundation stage.

There was a serpent which was several tens of feet long and had two raised wings on its back. One look could confirm that this was precisely a flying dragon serpent. Although the flying dragon serpent was already dead, between its eyes was a hole, pierced through by a sword. The snakeskin covering its whole body was completely intact. Both its raised wings were equally long and narrow, only its flesh had dried up. Beneath its snakeskin, its snake bones were completely intact. Only its inner dan could not be found at any place, neither could it be seen.

There was a golden peng bird, the wingspan of which was several tens of feet, on top of its head was a similar scar. It's golden body was still upright, preserving its whole life's appearance. Its flesh had also dried up similarly; only the skeleton was left over. Its

internal dan had also similarly disappeared.

A large tiger with its head in a posture as if facing the heavens was also present. The tiger's skin was completely intact, as were his bones, and once again the inner dan couldn't be found.

.....

Unexpectedly there were several tens of such high ranked skeletons. Yang Chen was extremely amazed. Initially, he was under the impression that this was a simple medicine garden, he hadn't anticipated this kind of a pleasant surprise. Among the several skeletons, just by a quick glance, Yang Chen had determined that several of them had even exceeded the golden dan phase. All the leftovers were several foundation stage beasts.

These demon beast skeletons were the best materials for refining. Remains of skin, flesh and feathers may or may not be useful. Yang Chen's only regret was that these ferocious demon beast's inner dan had already disappeared. They had probably all been absorbed by this medicine garden's spell, transformed into pure effective energy to provide nutrients for these herbs.

Hurriedly looking over these skeletons, he stored them all in his Achievement Ring. Yang Chen felt quite relieved. Skeletons of ordinary demon beast's were also left over, yet every part of these beasts was totally rotten an absolute waste.

These things, Yang Chen naturally felt disdain for them. After having swept around with his spiritual awareness for any items

worthy of being collected and having found nothing, Yang Chen started to observe his surroundings more carefully. Since there was a door here to enter into the medicine garden, surely there also had to be a pathway.

Very quickly, Yang Chen discovered a white stone, identical to the one which he had stepped on within the sword spell, underground, beneath the main hall. After having observed his surroundings for some time, he did not find anything, so he stepped on the white flagstone once again.

Suddenly, the landscape which was painted in front of him had suddenly changed into a small room. Inside the small room, Yang Chen found one transparent, clean bottle. It looked very sophisticated on the white stone slab. When looking at the clean bottle's bottom, one could see the traces of a light-blue colored liquid, looking almost dried up.

On seeing this, Yang Chen became determined to enter into the medicine garden's center. The bottle before his eyes was the backbone of the medicine garden. That meant that it was the item which supplied all the drugs in the medicine garden with power.

This clean bottle was that celestial being's refining tool, it absorbed spirit force and circulated it around its circumference numerous times, before concentrating it in here according to clear rules defined by its original master, tending to the plants' requirement requirements for spirit power in order to grow. The binding of this clean bottle signified that this Yang Mountain now belonged to Yang Chen.

In his previous life, it was said that, that the sect which discovered this garden required the abilities of four Yuanying experts to successfully collect this bottle, nevertheless Yang Chen did not need to go through so much trouble. The Mountain God had already told all the secrets of medicine garden to Yang Chen when he was facing death's door. Knowing these secrets, Yang Chen bound the medicine garden almost effortlessly.

As it should be, the most crucial secret of medicine garden's secret methods was the power of this liquid. Despite the fact that Yang Chen only had the cultivation of qi layer, he used a secret method to bind the clean bottle and still had ample power to spare. When Yang Chen used that secret method on the clean bottle for a while, the clean bottle issued a burst of energy, then became light and fell down into Yang Chen's palms.

Feeling the clean bottle in his hands, Yang Chen's heart was stirred. His body appeared in the center of the large medicine garden. After a quick glance, he was so stunned, that he could not help blankly staring around him for a while.

No matter who it was, when looking for the main ingredients for refining foundation pills, even one Profound Yang Fruit would cost at least several thousand spirit stones. But in front of Yang Chen, they were planted like cabbages, covering his entire field of view. He was looking around blankly, so shocked he couldn't even utter a single word.

The reason why foundation pills were so precious was because of the low availability of Profound Yang Fruit. Even with large amounts of money, it was not easy to find. A superior concocting

master would only use a single profound yang fruit to manufacture at most two foundation pills, which led to the price of foundation pill remaining so high.

In front of Yang Chen's eyes, however, there was an area of at least several tens of hectare, planted entirely with Profound Yang Fruits. Though Yang Chen did not know the methods used by that Mountain God, but it usually was quite difficult for the roots of the profound yang fruit to grow and survive. The leaves on all the branches were also quite thick and on top of every tree, there was one bright-red profound yang fruit, each and every one of them resembling a tiny, red lantern.

There were incredibly too many Profound Yang Fruits, perhaps there were several tens of thousands? Yang Chen simply did not dare to imagine how many foundation pills could be refined from this many profound yang fruits. If so many foundation pills suddenly appeared in the city markets, how many foundation experts could it create?

Reaching out his hand, Yang Chen plucked a Profound Yang Fruit, placed it on his hand and carefully scrutinized it. The Profound Yang Fruits which Yang Chen had seen before had all been about the size of a strawberry, but this fruit was, at least, three times bigger, about the size of an apple. Even just holding it, Yang Chen felt a heaviness pressing down on his hand.

These Profound Yang Fruits were definitely matured for a thousand years or even more, thus, the medicinal effect would increase more than ten or maybe hundred fold. But are these truly Profound Yang Fruits?

Looking at this bright-red, plump Profound Yang Fruit, Yang Chen's appetite seemingly increased. Unexpectedly without really thinking about it, Yang Chen immediately put that fruit into his mouth, taking rapid bites.

A familiar sour taste filled his mouth. All of Yang Chen's five senses narrowed on one feeling: sour. This was the flavour of Profound Yang Fruit's outer skin though it wasn't entirely bad. The reason why the flavor of the foundation pill was so unpleasant was due to this outer skin. However Yang Chen once again wanted to confirm it:

“Pah!”

After spitting the outer skin, he once again took a mouthful, his teeth penetrating through the entire outer skin, exposing the strawberry sized core of the red fruit.

Yang Chen used his tongue to taste the flavour of that core. A sweet flavour roused his spirit. Sure enough, after the flavour was determined, Yang Chen immediately took out the core of the fruit and started chewing, almost swallowing it directly into his stomach.

In his previous life, how could Yang Chen be willing to spit out that thick peel. Despite its bad taste, that peel was also an important ingredient in concocting pills of immortality, even though the capability of the core of the fruit was most significant. The bitter peel, however, still had one tenth of the efficacy and



three tenths of the spirit power of the fruit. Even that one superior master who concocts pill of immortality at the time of refining foundation pills would also be unwilling to peel out the core. Even though it was bitter, he would still demand to use it to the fullest.

Yet facing the hundred of thousands of Profound Yang Fruits, Yang Chen could eventually experience the taste of an unmixed core of the profound yang fruit. Sweet juice, as well as a smooth taste, really this is a rare delicacy, ah! Even after eating one he still wanted more.

Only now, did Yang Chen become aware, that just to satisfy his appetite for good food, using this core was a bit too much. Afterwards, Yang Chen immediately began to refine that fruit's core, which contained great medicinal power within.

The five yang phases method began to circulate at the same time, moving in five different directions, frantically trying to absorb the spirit power within the profound yang fruit. Due to the growth of thousands of profound yang fruits, the spirit power in the medicine garden was abundant. Just then, out of the fiery gold pellet, an unending stream of herb's spirit power started rushing out.

Due to five yang phases method, spirit power from five directions forcefully entered Yang Chen's channels simultaneously, following the way of five yang phases method and began to circulate incessantly. These five attributes frequently provoked one another. The spirit power slowly began to strengthen. Yang Chen immediately sensed the feeling of spirit power permeating his channels increase substantially.

A large amount of spirit power began to circulate in Yang Chen's channels, frantically rushing towards numerous bones in his four limbs. Afterwards, all channels in Yang Chen's whole body were filled entirely with vigorous spirit power. However, that one profound yang fruit's medicinal ability hadn't completely spread out and was still continuously releasing spirit power.

Taking a foundation pill is same as having a great success in refining qi which can be used later to attack the foundation stage bottleneck. It contains sufficient spirit power to support him in reaching the foundation stage a few times over, successfully. At present, Yang Chen had only cultivated to the first qi layer. Thus, due to the core, the spirit power quickly rose to the limits of the first qi layer.

If he was in his previous life, Yang Chen could use this portion of formidable spirit power to attack the second qi layer directly, but at the moment, Yang Chen was only cultivating the five yang phase five types of the five yang phases method, as such, the five yin phases hadn't been cultivated at this time, so he inadvertently allowed his yin and yang to become unbalanced. Impatiently sitting in the room, Yang Chen was beginning to become aware of his misfortune regarding the five attributes. The yang five phases restricting each other slowly began consuming more and more spirit power.

Five attributes overcoming each other and dividing completely is wishful thinking. The five types of different attributes spirit power coming in contact with each other had become his own bane. Spirit power began to surge up and grind, so as to reverse the motion of yang five phases method, slowly being consumed.

In this way, even that one profound yang fruit's medicine power had still cost Yang Chen half a day of time, slowly being used up so that almost nothing was left. Later Yang Chen unexpectedly reversed five phases method, consuming his spirit power frantically. At the last stage, however, all the five phases possessed their own portion of spirit energy which couldn't be removed.

Yang Chen specifically paid attention to this remaining tiny portion of spirit energy and was pleasantly surprised to discover, that this was the pure essence of the five portions. The spirit energy of the five phases, when refined into spirit power of the five phases which are able to pass each other mutually, became more condensed with pure essence. This spirit power, when compared to the past had two or three times higher quality.

The five great yin and yang phases, five phases trying to engender each other, raising spirit power, rather than consuming it. But, regardless of cultivation level, all had huge benefits. This was something Yang Chen had recently discovered. Yang Chen also found a reverse cultivation skill that could even hide his cultivation. This was another huge benefit for him.

As a result, his plan to join his teacher's sect again was completely within his grasp.

When one Profound Yang Fruit's core was exhausted, Yang Chen also stopped his cultivation. Furthermore, the channels in his body were all filled. His whole body had a high temperature, but it seemed as if he was taking a comfortable bath in a sauna.

A fragrant smell was coming from his mouth. The profound yang fruit's core still left an aftertaste in Yang Chen's mind. This one core had increased his cultivation. Even lightly drawing air, the sweet fragrance entered his mouth, piercing through to his abdomen. Unable to contain his emotions, he continued to linger on enjoying such a rare delicacy, feeling as if he had become tipsy due to wine.

“It seems this fruit tastes delicious after peeling! Ah!”

Yang Chen, who gazed towards the profound yang fruit, couldn't help but say this loudly a countless number of times, pausing only to sigh.

# Chapter 14 - Executioners Also Desire Immortality

While passing through the fields of Profound Yang Fruit, Yang Chen came across another scene.

This time no longer were there vast stretches of medicines, but rather just a few medicines, scattered on the side of a mountainous region. This medicinal farm in the center had truly different topological-and weather conditions for different drugs. In short, it was most suited for the growth of drug ingredients.

These herbs, although they were few in number, just by a glance, Yang Chen could determine, that there were, at least, three six-leaves-ginseng. Although they only revealed the top of their surface so that only six leaves and the roots underneath were visible, Yang Chen using his years of experience could swiftly determine that the ginseng beneath that had, at least, surpassed two thousand years of age.

At the time when these three ginsengs were transplanted into this medicine garden, they were already thousand year ginsengs. After passing a thousand years more in the medicine garden, these ginsengs already had an almost perfect essence.

To step into the ranks of the gold pellet sect at foundation stage is a great accomplishment, refining the thousand year ginseng into a nature oil, such an opportunity could increase his chances by at least three times. These three ginsengs were enough for Yang Chen

to make three nature pills. At that time, whether it is the teachers or the seniors who desire to breakthrough, all could be used to increase his chances.

There still were four fleeceflower roots, as well as seven vital, large pieces of lingshi in the remaining piece of land. Not to speak of any other herbs, just these ginseng, rootweed and lingshi were already priceless.

With a single look at these four thousand year matured fleeceflower roots, Yang Chen immediately recalled zhuyan pills prescription which he obtained from Cheng'e back then. The main drug of which was definitely this fleece flower root. Its maturity in the present year had already well exceeded the requirements, and the medicinal effect was also quite good. Presumably, if only Yang Chen was able to get the zhuyan pill, he could also cultivate frantically like those women.

Not to mention the lingzhi, even though this drug ingredient is quite common, a lingzhi surpassing two thousand years is still quite rare. In a situation where someone is seriously injured, as long as he has a lingzhi gyokuro pill, even if he is an Yuanying stage expert, all of his internal and external injuries can be treated, with an almost miraculous recovery resembling as if raising someone from dead.

In another direction, expanding widely in a large area are the wood-decay fungus, seven spirit resin, pseudoginseng, tall gastrodia and female ginseng. Unlike the Profound Yang Fruit fields this area had large discrepancies. Although they were only ordinary drug ingredients, all of them were matured for thousand

years. Hence, when any of these herbs will be refined to make pills, their medicinal effects would all be increased by at least several times.

Any drug which Yang Chen could think of, he was able to find almost all of them here. Thousand years of time, together with the spirit power nourishment can change even the most ordinary plantago into the most outstanding items.

Yang Chen was stupefied at the sight of such a huge accumulation of wealth. No wonder the sect that discovered this medicine garden in his previous life was able to stand out. Having so many drug ingredients which can be refined to so many high level pills would help the cultivation a large number of experts! Even Yang Chen didn't need to do anything, just by selling these drug ingredients in an auction house he could become a very rich and influential person.

Unfortunately for Yang Chen, who had cultivated to the qi layer, even if he desired to concoct pills of immortality it was still not possible. The spirit power even at foundation level is incapable of fulfilling the requirements for concocting pills of immortality, as it is consumed too quickly. At least, until he reached fifth qi layer, he would not be capable of refining most of the simple medicine pills. Facing towards the land filled with herbs, the only thing Yang Chen could do was to eat them like the profound yang fruit and to make of use of his opposite five phases of yin yang together with condensing his own spirit power.

At that moment, Yang Chen resolved to keep the medicine garden in his hands, admiring its messed up conditions. So many

precious natural resources, if really discovered by other people, Yang Chen estimated they would lose their minds. Fortunately, the control over the medicine garden's clean bottle was already in Yang Chen's hand. He did not need to be so anxious anymore.

With his heart set, Yang Chen immediately disappeared through the center of the medicine garden, that clean bottle again appearing in his hands. Just as he was about to set out, his heart was suddenly moved and he raised his hand towards the sky to receive the palace. The large palace began to shrink rapidly, changing into a small lid, able to cover the clean bottle seamlessly, with the lid's form resembling that of a circular dome.

The forty nine swords constituting the sword spell incessantly moved on the lid, like tails of forty nine agile fishes. The spell able to kill yuanying stage experts made Yang Chen drool with desire when just looking at it. Unfortunately, his cultivation was too low for this. Let alone the sword spell, even if he was given a flying sword, he could still not use it, so affected by his heart's greed he could only eye it.

Luckily all of this was already collected by Yang Chen though at present he could only look at it, but not use it, yet this still made Yang Chen abnormally happy. The clean bottle successfully combined with its lid, forming a pair, as if of heaven and earth, combining the medicine garden together with its defensive sword spell, henceforth looking as if the yang mountain medicine garden had become his own.

After storing the bottle with its lid, Yang Chen's silhouette immediately appeared on top of the Yang Mountain. That



camouflaged large tree had already disappeared, and Yang Chen was standing still in its original place, holding that clean bottle with its lid in his hands.

Having been immersed in the vast extent of the medicine garden, he would find it impossible to let go and even now Yang Chen did not dare to believe this large amount of riches together with those natural resources are within his hand. If he had these in his previous life, where even owning a vermillion fruit could be an offence for a low social standing person, he would be attracting series of extreme misfortunes.

Thinking of this, a picture of his teacher's beautiful eyes facing death's door flashed in Yang Chen's mind again, immediately afterwards, the scene of his teacher handing him his bright sword once again emerged, making Yang Chen feel incredibly warm.

Bowing his head to look at the clean bottle with its lid in his hand, Yang Chen sensed a kind of feeling coming from the top of the clean bottle, finally confirming for himself, that he owned this wealth, which could make even the most unyielding man in this world feel tempted.

Calmly storing the clean bottle and its lid in his Achievements Ring, Yang Chen finally felt relaxed in his heart. In mortal kingdoms, it was still not possible for someone to easily steal Yang Chen's Achievement Ring and walk away, even if it was possible for experts to open others qiankun pouches, but it was impossible for them to see through objects from the heavens. These treasures have already changed their family name to Yang. \*(Ed. Note: Changing family name can mean changing ownership in China)

Thinking of something in his heart, Yang Chen did some actions and a large pile of dried up bones of animals suddenly appeared on the ground next to him, the densely packed bones almost filled the entire mountain forest. As for being discovered by someone, Yang Chen did not care.

Calculating the time, the day when the sect of his master from his previous life will take disciple was approaching. If he started from here, following this route, he even had the time to return home once, to pay a visit to his parents and afterwards go to the Pure Yang Palace to formally become an apprentice.

After taking a moment to decide, Yang Chen began to set off. This was a new road of cultivation, totally different from his previous life. The only identical thing was, that Yang Chen could pay his respect to the same master.

Master, you just wait, I am coming.

In the recent days, the Yang family manor had been decorated with lanterns and coloured banners and was a festive sight to behold. Be it the Yang family's lord or be it the villages' farmers and tenants, everyone had a cheerful look on their face.

The young master of the Yang family, who had been away from home for six months, had returned two days ago to visit the main hall. The Yang family's lord and madam were so happy, that they were jumping from joy. In happiness, they bestowed a reward on each and every tenant family. The entire manor had the feel of a

great celebration.

Naturally Yang Chen was unwilling to tell his father and mother about his personal matters, but he still left, at least, fifty kinds of talismans for them. All these talismans were upgraded by Yang Chen using the Universal Treasure Raising Arts. These talismans could be used for his father's and mother's safety. When torn apart, they would immediately attack.

Certainly, Yang Chen did not forget to warn them repeatedly that in the following period of two years, there would be a rebellion in the country. He had already placed bewildering talismans on more than ten paths coming through the surroundings of the mountainous region. So long as an outsider intruded this area, he would immediately get confused and become disoriented due to the constant illusions and unconsciously leave the path to the manor. At least during this confusion, it is unlikely that anyone would be able to disturb the peaceful life here.

Although Yang Chen's bewildering talismans were quite low leveled, after constantly using the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, their efficacy had a large increase. The leaking of spirit power was very minimal, so even if a Jiedan stage expert passed above it, he would at most see that this was just a piece of overgrown mountain wood. It would be quite unlikely that even he could discover this flourishing manor. Anyway, it could be assumed that for this kind of expert it would be below him to dispose of ordinary people. Thus, the Yang family would naturally be safe.

In order to take care of his father's and mother's health, Yang

Chen thought of the best means. This time he is incapable of refining any medicinal pills, but instead he could use the body refining pill given to him by Shi Fairy. Body pills, as the name implies, apart from stimulating people's spirit roots, can hammer one's body into shape. A rare product for ordinary people indeed.

Yang Chen divided the body pill into two for the benefit of his parents. For them to eat the body pill at this age, it was already impossible to arouse their spirit roots, but nevertheless Yang Chen's parents were already quite robust, due to being nursed by various drugs.

Yang Chen carefully selected a batch of Profound Yang Fruit's leaves and figured out a tea recipe to boil it and set it aside as an ordinary tea to be used by his parents. Profound Yang Fruit's leaves contain a small amount of spirit power, suited for the slow absorption by ordinary people. Regularly drinking this kind of tea would increase the longevity of his parents as well as save them from various illnesses.

After settling down his father and mother, Yang Chen once again departed from his home. After two months, Yang Chen appeared at the gate of the Pure Yang Palace, on Meiqing mountain.

As he trod the Meiqing mountain on foot, familiar sceneries entered Yang Chen's eyes, one by one. Along with these familiar scenes, cheerful memories from his previous life also appeared in his mind.

There were still many days of time left for the Pure Yang Palace to recruit disciples, but the small town below the mountain was

already fully packed with the people who had come to try their luck. Originally the population of this small town was only several hundred, but due to the sudden inflow of two thousand youngsters, together with their family members, all accommodations were jam packed.

Every year the town would have these kind of circumstances, so the people of the small town were not surprised by it anymore, and even treated this time as a way to make some extra income. All houses had guest rooms to rent. As for safety, they didn't have to care about it, with the Pure Yang Palace to receive disciples in near future, who would dare to infuriate the immortal teachers of the Pure Yang Palace by flouting its laws?

For hastening his journey so he could rest for the remaining days, apart from the three purities secrets, he didn't practice any other cultivation methods. Due to his misfortune with the Five Phases Arts, the spirit power in his body had already been suppressed to very low, while his energy had become extremely pure. In this case, even if it was an external disciple, conducting the ordinary disciples tests, he was unlikely to discover any spirit power on Yang Chen's body. Moreover, Yang Chen was unlikely to meet the chief instructor.

Amidst everyone's expectations, the main gate of the Meiqing mountain's lower monastery finally opened. Rows of ten uniformly dressed disciples appeared one after another. Inside of the monastery, a very small, square-shaped region appeared. A simple entrance test was being held in this square shaped region.

Within a short moment, three males and three females, a total of

six youngsters walked away from the gate and divided themselves into two rows on both each side and began to wait for youngsters to enter the small region in line, to test their spirit root and decide whether to include them as outer monastery disciples.

Yang Chen was in the middle of the line, leisurely waiting for the people ahead of him to enter the monastery. Compared to the surrounding youngsters, Yang Chen was quite calm and not particularly anxious about anything.

One by one, youngsters proceeded to test their spirit root. If someone was suitable, his name was immediately announced to become an outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace. If he didn't have the suitable spirit root, then he had to walk through the other side to leave. Ten outer disciples were taking care of the two thousand youngsters, in perfect order, without even the slightest confusion.

At last, it was Yang Chen's turn. Yang Chen took a deep breath, suddenly feeling a little nervous. Then immediately he shook his head. He had already experienced the three disasters and nine tribulations. Feeling anxious for a small spirit root test, he would truly lose all face.

Suppressing his nervousness, Yang Chen calmly entered the small region. Under the arrangements of the inner disciples, both hands should be pressed on the array to test the spirit root.

After several breaths, the array began to reveal a blazing colour and at the same time a number appeared. After looking at the array for a moment, the disciple loudly said:

“Fire spirit root, seventy one.”

Suddenly several people started commenting:

“Seventy one, fire spirit root, pretty good aptitude!”

“Again, someone passed.”

.....

“What is your name?”

Within those discussions, a familiar senior, who had looked after Yang Chen in his previous life, loudly asked.

“Yang Chen!”

Yang Chen hastily exclaimed his name, so that the experienced senior brother could make out the two words.

“Yang Chen?”

That familiar senior read Yang Chen’s name and suddenly his complexion became somewhat strange. He lowered his body a little and produced a piece of talisman jade in his hands. After sweeping it with his soul power, he looked at it one more time and suddenly

his face showed surprise. He asked:

”Are you an executioner?”.

Yang Chen stared blankly.

When had he become so famous that even the lower generations of the Pure Yang Palace knew of him being an executioner? Despite being amazed, Yang Chen nodded.

“I am!”

Yang Chen replied. As this was not a shameful identity, Yang Chen had not even thought of denying it.

“In the previous few months, have you killed over a thousand?”

The senior brother again asked in a breath. These words caused other disciples to cry out in surprise.

“I did!”

Since the other party already knew that he was an executioner, they should also know what he had done as an executioner. Yang Chen nevertheless nodded admittingly. Only, in his heart, he was becoming more doubtful. Who was so against him? Could it be the sect teacher of the guy who tried to get rid of him at the Yang mountain?



“You, an executioner who kills, regardless of any concerns, actually dares to speak lies in order to cultivate? Are you not afraid of the heavens?”

Suddenly, an exceptionally rude voice came loudly from another side of the room.

# Chapter 15 - First Temper Yourself

“An executioner who kills will receive the wrath of the heavens?” Yang Chen replied, looking at the person who would speak these kinds of words while feeling intensely irritated.

Yang Chen recognized him, his name was Sun Hai Jing. He was a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, belonging to the Luminous Moon Hall. In his previous life, this Luminous Moon Hall and the Fierce Yang Hall to which Yang Chen belonged, were secretly clashing with one another. Yang Chen’s master was the head of the Fierce Yang Hall. Yang Chen had a fire attributed spirit root, if he joined the Pure Yang Palace, if not for some strange accident, he would surely enter the Fierce Yang Hall. Sun Hai Jing suddenly appearing and blaming him without any cause would then again be only natural. But Yang Chen was baffled, when did he become so well known? Even in the Pure Yang Palace, which could only be considered a third rate sect in the field of cultivation, someone unexpectedly knew his great name and status.

“Murder is murder, don’t tell me it is different based on status?” Sun Hai Jing looked at Yang Chen’s guiltless face and loudly snorted. “What’s more, you have killed so many, even the Pure Yang Palace won’t accept this kind of a monster.”

“I remember, that in the Pure Yang Palace, there is a rule that disciples of the same sect cannot injure each other, or else they will be severely punished.” Yang Chen confronted Sun Hai Jing indifferently. He smilingly said: “It seems that Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples always interfere in the matters of other disciples of same sect, according to sect’s law, shouldn’t they be severely

punished?” “Ridiculous!” Sun Hai Jing angrily said: “Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples only follow the sect’s orders to punish the disciples, how can that be considered as injuring each other? You are an .....xu.....tioner” Barely finishing the sentence, Sun Hai Jing suddenly became aware of the paradox within his words. ‘Executioner’ speaking these five syllables his voice became very low, up to the point where one couldn’t even hear it.

“I am an executioner, naturally I am extremely evil, it’s nothing for me to find a person in the middle of the street and cut off his head, heinous, is it not, right?” Yang Chen smiled for Sun Hai Jing to continue the argument, then beaming with smiles rhetorically asked him: “Senior disciple, do you know what authorities are for? Furthermore what is the use of the execution ground?”

An executioner was a person selected by the Imperial Court to carry out the death penalty, now even if the country declined due to it, executions would still be carried out on the behalf of authorities. Even the Law Enforcement Hall of the Pure Yang Palace was unlikely to have such a fair executioner. Sun Hai Jing wanted to make life difficult for Yang Chen, he was simply asking for trouble.

“You have killed too many, in the end you are still disrupting the peace of heaven!” Sun Hai Jing did not want to talk about this with Yang Chen anymore. Truth be told, arguing again was useless, he could only find another way. For someone who has killed, there are too many other aspects which could be looked into.

“For the disciples who have too many sins, the disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall will strive hard to carry out their

responsibilities, could it be that injuring disciples of the same sect is also disrupting the peace of heaven?” Yang Chen still responded as before, using the disciples of Law Enforcement Hall. Even if Sun Hai Jing was a bull with the support of a mountain, he could still not say even a word against Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples, let alone reject their methods or slander their duties. Moreover Yang Chen had also firmly stuck to the point that his executioner duties were equivalent to the duties of the Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples.

“Whether or not disciples have wronged, is all in the hands of the sect leader and the elders of the Law Enforcement Hall, again it is not.....” As soon as Sun Hai Jing said these words, he immediately discovered his mistakes again, so he shut his mouth so as to not speak anymore wrong words.

“Whether or not a prisoner is beheaded, is due to rulings of authorities, could it be senior disciple believes that a small executioner like me is in charge?” Yang Chen looked at Sun Hai Jung with a ridiculing expression, appearing to be jeering at his ignorance. This time, Sun Hai Jing’s words were aimed at the Palace Master and the elder of the Law Enforcement Hall, who had made him experience embarrassment. Not waiting for him to speak, Yang Chen loudly said: “As long as someone excels in killing, he can not join or discuss immortal cultivation? I do not know if senior disciple excels in killing, but I do know that the headmaster of Pure Yang Palace excels in it. Could it be that senior disciple thinks that the sect master is also not fit to join?”

This slandering caused huge changes, commenting on the sect leader’s merits and demerits, Sun Hai Jing was so stunned, he couldn’t even think. “Disrespecting the sect master, Pure Yang

Palace doesn't require this kind of disciple!" Sun Hai Jing could finally cling onto one argument, so he hurriedly declared it loudly. Other people hadn't been able to speak. Sun Hai Jing was discarding everyone else present here. Moreover it seemed like he wasn't even leaving any room for discussion. At the side, the examiner for the spirit root test of the disciples was also somewhat dissatisfied, creasing his brows he loudly spoke: "Sun Hai Jing, receiving him or not receiving him, is it solely for you to decide? Moreover, we haven't heard any disrespect for the sect leader in his words."

Sun Hai Jing did not dare to speak to his senior rudely, only turn to this side and explain to his senior with a smile: "Senior brother, I am only afraid that he has degenerated to the devil's path and it would stain my Pure Yang Palace's reputation, that's all."

"Entering the devil's path is also possible just by cultivating, could it be that junior Sun wants me to chase out all the sect graduates?" Said the senior disciple, while feeling very discontented at Sun Hai Jing's manners. So many seniors were sitting there yet nobody had said anything, but Sun Hai Jing kept on talking and talking, and moreover interfered with the matters of others, clearly not putting any of the people present here in his eyes, so he immediately felt bitter.

"This, senior, has he not killed too many?" Sun Hai Jing said sluggishly. He awkwardly explained with a smile: "I was just afraid of any accidents."

"Junior Sun, since you also cultivate, why do you care about a common person so much?" That senior loudly sneered and,

looking at Sun Hai Jing suddenly asked: “This common person, how do you know he is an executioner? Don’t tell me your spirit awareness is stronger than these several strong minded seniors present here and is able to discover what they haven’t been able to see.”

“Ah!” Sun Hai Jing became distracted again, apparently, this time if the explanation was unclear, he would have completely offended these many seniors here. Without anything to say he could only lower his voice and with a smile say: “This news is spread by Greatest Heaven Sect’s Uncle Master Li, demanding that we better not receive this executioner!”

“Apparently in the eyes of Senior Disciple Sun, whether the Pure Yang Palace will receive a disciple or not, is actually up to Greatest Heaven Sect’s uncle master Li to decide!” Seeing Sun Hai Jing hesitate, Yang Chen already stated loudly with a gentle smile: “Please allow me, dare I ask, this Li Senior Brother, is he Pure Yang Palace’s sect leader? Or is he the older generation’s cultivating elder? His one word can make the Pure Yang Palace follow it as if it is an imperial edict?”

This sentence of Yang Chen directly hit Sun Hai Jing’s soft spot. Even in his previous life Yang Chen had been in disagreement with Yang Xi from the start and in the Pure Yang Palace many were dissatisfied with the bossy attitude of the Greatest Heaven Sect. This kind of sentence directly instigated all disciples to stand up against the resentful attitude of Greatest Heaven Sect.

“You are Yang Chen?” The disciple who just a moment ago refuted Sun Hai Jing, looked over to Yang Chen: “Since you have a

fire attributed spirit root, my Pure Yang Palace will immediately accept you as a disciple!”

“Wait a moment!” as Yang Chen was delighted in his heart, a voice echoed loudly. The voice echoed loudly and everyone present turned towards the source of the voice. Yang Chen smiled at this familiar voice, however because it was from too long ago, he had already forgotten who it was. Anyone who would dare to stop him this time from joining Pure Yang Palace to pay respect to his master was Yang Chen’s enemy, even if it was the emperor himself, he would not care in the slightest. Though the person himself had not arrived his voice was already heard. The crowd felt that each and every person heard that sound. It was very clear and distinct, but no one felt that it was ear piercing. Besides Yang Chen, others felt as if the speaker was an intimate friend, giving off a favourable impression without saying anything. The person soon showed himself. No one was able to discover where he came from, as if he had been standing there all along or like he had stepped on a magical cloud and slowly descended to the ground. Almost all of the Pure Yang Palace disciples present at the scene bowed and saluted to him as uncle master. Only Sun Hai Jing addressed him as master. Sun Hai Jing said this loudly, but it allowed Yang Chen to recall the identity of this person. This person was Luminous Moon Hall’s deacon Chu Heng. At present he had already cultivated to the foundation stage, an inner disciple. “You originally are an executioner without any regard to murder?” Chu Heng looked at Yang Chen and suddenly asked him. “I am!” Yang Chen hadn’t concealed anything indispensable, so he nodded in agreement. “Although what Sun Hai Jing said is wrong, he only thought of the sect, so you should not slander him in this way.” As soon as Chu Heng appeared on the stage, his imposing manner already dominated all of the disciples. Who else would dare to make a sound while he was speaking? Every year the people responsible for recruiting new disciples were all third qi layer or

higher outer disciples. To become inner disciples, they had to cultivate to the foundation stage. Among all of the disciples present at the scene, Chu Heng had the highest seniority, so nobody would dare to refute his words. Yang Chen originally wanted to say something, but still forced himself to endure, waiting for this Chu Heng to demand something first. If this Chu Heng would dare to obstruct him from joining Pure Yang Palace, then Yang Chen would also not care about offending him, who originally did not even consider Fierce Yang Hall as same sect. “After killing too many people, many cultivators will have a hearts devil. Just because your body possesses a spirit root, my Pure Yang Palace will still receive you as a preparatory disciple.” As soon as Chu Heng started to talk, he immediately approved Yang Chen to join Pure Yang Palace as a disciple. Yang Chen relaxed in his heart, no longer saying anything, he only cared about easily joining Pure Yang Palace, whether or not others were chosen, he hardly cared. Chu Heng said this to get Sun Hai Jing out of his predicament, reckoning that the situation of Sun Hai Jing was anything but reassuring as Sun Hai Jing had to secretly inform his master. Only because Yang Chen was allowed to join, Yang Chen deliberately didn’t make things difficult for Sun Hai Jing. “To temper your mental state and to eliminate devil intentions, also to ease your evil tendencies to kill and to join my Pure Yang Palace, within ten years, you will act as a servant and will not cultivate any techniques.” Chu Heng had once again given an excuse, but it seemed like a correct approach. To drag back Yang Chen’s cultivation for ten years for no reason, it was nothing less than being vicious.

Many disciples burst into commotion, a servant for ten years, isn’t he just making fun of him? This Chu Heng seemed fair, but was actually siding with Sun Hai Jing. Only, the outer disciples could do nothing against this inner disciple, a dispute would only annoy him and he cleverly had already sent a note his master to



settle the dispute for him.

“Servant for ten years?” Yang Chen loudly sneered and was just about to refute, when Chu Heng once again spoke: “This is for your own good, you don’t understand the goodwill of people. You have killed so many just like that, if your evil tendencies repeat during cultivation and they affect your mind, the consequences would be too horrible. As long as you concentrate on restraining your nature, diligently accumulate virtues and temper yourself, then you have nothing to be anxious about when cultivating.” “This senior, that Senior Disciple Sun Hai, is very quick to act in accordance with commands of other sects, I believe, should he spend a few years to temper his nature?” Yang Chen asked sarcastically while smiling. “He did not act in accordance to the Greatest Sky Sect’s instructions, this matter you should roughly understand.” While answering Yang Chen’s question Chu Heng didn’t show the least bit of anger, as if not to lower himself to Yang Chen’s level. However he became aware that Yang Chen’s words were those which the outer disciples in charge of recruitment test were desirous of asking which could not be avoided. Thus facing them to give an explanation of some sort he took the opportunity to point towards Yang Chen’s words. “Shi Fairy has shown her appreciation for you by giving you a body refining pill, that is your enormous luck.” As soon as Chu Heng opened his mouth to talk, the disciples present on the scene cried out in surprise, making sounds that indicated that nothing more needed to be said.

Shi Fairy, the idol of most young cultivators, this did not seemed to surprise Yang Chen. Unexpectedly to get the appreciation of Shi Fairy of the Green Jade Island of Immortals is enough to make him enviable. With this sentence of Chu Heng, Yang Chen immediately became aware of how he became so well known. Presumably Shi Shanshan who was not interested in anything except herself,

appeared that day with people who were all admirers of Shi Shanshan. The favour shown by Shi Shanshan to Yang Chen was not liked by many people.

Since Yang Chen obtained the body refining pill, it was his good luck to have a spirit root and these young accomplished cultivators did not wish to appear in front of other male pursuers of Shi Fairy in the future, so sending information about Yang Chen to each faction was a matter of course. This Sun Hai Jing was supposedly commanded, at that time, by a disciple of Greatest Sky Sect was present there, so he was deliberately trying to make things difficult, but was refuted by Yang Chen so strongly that he was left dumbstruck and could only call out Chu Heng.

“Only, if you feel that Shi Fairy will take care of you and that cultivation will be a smooth road, then you are gravely mistaken.” Chu Heng, looking at Yang Chen stated virtuously: “I arranged this sort of plan just to make you understand that cultivation is not easy. You need great perseverance and strong will power with talent to succeed. In case you can not endure these ten years, then don’t blame me for being ruthless, with my Pure Yang Palace’s large influence you will have no opportunity to seek refuge with other factions.”

After this remark all of the present disciples quieted down. After all Yang Chen himself was an executioner and also really killed without any regard, adding to that the just mentioned reasons, perhaps Yang Chen has become self satisfied due to appreciation by Shi Fairy, so he should temper himself in order to get strong willpower.

Although Yang Chen had spirit root, he was not anyone talented, for one person with average talent who had yet to be an outer disciple, who would offend a foundation stage inner disciple?

“I will not give you the opportunity to blame.” At that time, to embarrass Yang Chen, Chu Heng again started talking: “Within these ten years if you feel like you are able to challenge my unworthy disciple Sun Hai Jing, you can challenge him. If you are able to defeat him, I will excuse you for the remaining period as a slave and you can directly cultivate, how about it?”

# Chapter 16 - Promises Must Be Kept

Rather than saying that this offer was for the benefit of Yang Chen, so that he could start cultivating earlier, it would be better to say, that this was an opportunity for Sun Hai Jing to use right and proper reasons to abuse Yang Chen. It's important to know, that Sun Hai Jing had already cultivated for several years and at that time he had already reached the qi refining realm. Although reaching the third qi layer was not any frightening talent to be envied, for dealing with an ordinary person this was more than enough.

For ten years, Yang Chen would not be able to cultivate and Sun Hai Jing would continue to progress each day, the disparity would only increase more and more with time. As Yang Chen would keep postponing the time to challenge Sun Hai Jing, the chance to defeat him would become smaller and smaller.

And in case Yang Chen would not dare to challenge him, Sun Hai Jing would greatly exploit Yang Chen's identity as a servant by finding someone else to keep insulting Yang Chen until he couldn't endure it anymore and leave. Ten years of time was enough for Sun Hai Jing to do many things. And since these were the instructions from Chu Heng, he could freely overdo it. In short, everything could be excused with the justification that it was to temper Yang Chen's mind, and others could not refute it.

Then, even if Yang Chen didn't leave, the order given by the Greatest Sky Sect's uncle master Li would still be fulfilled, by not letting Yang Chen cultivate and it would furthermore be impossible for him to meet with Shi Fairy in the future. In the case

that Yang Chen would lag behind in cultivation, then after ten years his cultivation would require dangerous methods to progress, added to that kind of insult, his nature would clearly become very weak, so there would naturally be no need to worry about him.

This was a setup which could not be easily blocked or investigated and it could easily be entrusted to someone else, so that they may go through with it and easily damage Yang Chen. Only, by then, who would get Yang Chen out of his predicament?

As Chu Heng had finished talking, without waiting for Yang Chen to reply, he turned towards other direction. Suddenly his voice could be heard:

“Senior Brother Du, how do you think of this younger disciple’s plans?”

Everyone turned their gaze in the same direction as Chu Heng. Over there, a lone shadow suddenly appeared and the outer disciples responsible for recruitment all bowed respectfully and saluted:

“These disciples pay their respects to Uncle Master Du!”

Yang Chen recognized this senior Du, his name was Du Ming Qian and he was a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall. His conduct was usually upright, but he rarely listened to anyone. Usually there would not be a disciple of the law enforcement hall here today, but unexpectedly he had come, it seems some disciple

had informed him of the events here. The argument which was equating an executioner with a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall had piqued his interest.

Finally, Du Qian nodded faintly in response to the salute by those disciples. Immediately, his gaze fell onto Yang Chen's body and then slightly turned to the other side in Chu Heng's direction and loudly snorted:

“My Pure Yang Palace has no such rules, is this solution your own trick?”

“My Pure Yang Palace had no such rules before, only, my Pure Yang Palace has also not received any executioner before, only ordinary people. He has even murdered over a thousand people. Moreover, if he thinks that he has some kind of relation with Shi Fairy, he will become arrogant and that is not good for his cultivation. Thus, this very minor self endurance training should also be good for him.”

Chu Heng gently smiled, not minding Senior Brother Du's manner.

“Even in the presence of Shi Fairy, I also would lay out such arrangements, perhaps Shi Fairy herself would also not say anything.”

“Even if it's important for him to temper himself, it is also up to his master to set the arrangements, I am afraid, Younger Disciple Chu, that this is kind of inappropriate.”

Du Qian wrinkled his brows, nevertheless he could not do anything about Chu Heng's method and could only try to find some loopholes to deal with him.

“This disciple has just been just recruited, he had just barely joined Pure Yang Palace and is still yet to formally become an apprentice, naturally it is not that inappropriate.”

Chu Heng smiled, having easily dismissed Du Qian's concern and then stopped to return. Turning towards Yang Chen he asked again:

“Yang Chen, are you willing?”

“If I don't want to, what other way is there?”

Yang Chen still hadn't replied directly and instead asked a question.

“If you don't want to, it proves that you have a nature of running away and with my Pure Yang Palace's large influence, although you have no real chance you can still try to go to another place to get a better chance.”

Chu Heng had already said this sentence once, but he was not tired of saying it again.

“In case this disciple challenges Senior Sun, no matter the result, it is probably asking for punishment by committing the offence of injuring a disciple of same sect?”

Yang Chen thought and asked again.

Chu Heng smiled and didn't reply, but rather turned towards Du Qian and said:

“Senior Brother Du is from the Law Enforcement Hall, surely you will believe his words.”

Du Qian was a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall, in this respect he naturally had the qualifications to speak. Muttering to himself, even if he could not do anything about Chu Heng's actions, he still couldn't conceal his good intentions and loudly said:

“Since there is a prior engagement, naturally it will not count as disciples of the same sect injuring each other.”

“When I challenge him he cannot ask for a helper?”

Yang Chen laughingly asked again.

“Naturally he can't, since a challenge is a private matter between two individuals, even if someone loses, he will have to accept his loss, fair and square.”



Chu Heng, who seemed very proud of himself for coming up with this move, answered Yang Chen's question very patiently.

“Finally if he is injured, then what?”

Yang Chen's complexion became seriously concentrated, as if to ask about, and thoroughly understand all possibilities and only then challenge him.

“That's very regretful, but only you can be blamed for not being skilled enough, not other people.”

Chu Heng smiled again, his mood was absolutely cheerful, so he replied happily:

“You can be at ease, when disciples of the same sect compare notes, they can seriously injure each other but not take one's life. You can ask Senior Brother Du about that, aswell.”

Du Qian couldn't do anything now to support Yang Chen. He only nodded towards him and said:

“When you challenge him, notify me so that I can be present at the duel. At least, I will be able to save your life so there is nothing to be concerned about.”

“Many thanks Senior Brother Du!”

Yang Chen could naturally differentiate between good and bad. After expressing his thanks to Du Qian, he turned towards Chu Heng and asked again:

“Becoming a servant for ten years, beginning from now, in these ten years I can challenge Elder Brother Sun Hai Jing at any time and if I win, I can start to cultivate formally, is that right, Uncle Master Chu?”

While speaking, Yang Chen already used Elder Brother Sun to address Sun Hai Jing, as well as calling Chu Heng and Du Qian as Uncle Master. What Yang Chen had said just now, was the same as what Chu Heng had spoken just a moment ago, so he naturally didn't say anything and just nodded in agreement.

“When I challenge senior Sun, this a challenge between us and others cannot interfere, nor can anyone of us be replaced with another person. If someone receives injury, it's one's own fault for not being skilled enough, moreover it's quite possible to suffer a serious injury, but nobody can be killed. Uncle Master Chu Heng, is that correct?”

Yang Chen once repeated what Chu Heng had recently said to ask thoroughly. Chu Heng once again nodded.

“In that case, I agree to Uncle Master Chu's punishment.”

Yang Chen saluted towards Chu Heng and Du Qian and immediately afterwards walked towards Sun Hai Jing.

“Elder Brother Sun, I am Junior Yang Chen, I challenge you! Please advise me!”

Who could have anticipated that Yang Chen would immediately go to Sun Hai Jing to issue a challenge? After hearing what Yang Chen said, almost all people there stared at him, wide eyed and with their mouths hanging open.

If an ordinary person who challenges a cultivator of the third qi layer is not mad, then he has to be a complete fool. Yang Chen appeared quite ordinary and he was neither mad nor foolish, so who could have thought that he would do something like this?

Chu Heng and Du Qian on the contrary, secretly nodded as Yang Chen had raised the challenge immediately. Even though it seemed as if Yang Chen’s challenge was an impossible affair, this time he actually had the largest advantage. If it had been at a later time in future, Sun Hai Jing would have progressed incessantly and Yang Chen who could not cultivate would not make any progress, so his chances of victory would grow smaller and smaller.

Only, despite nodding, Chu Heng thought that Yang Chen’s challenge was overestimating his capabilities and did not care about it. Meeting Sun Hai Jing’s gaze, he gave a slight nod to handle the affair and didn’t say anything.

Sun Hai Jing was inspired and felt that he had naturally nothing to be worried about. As for Yang Chen’s challenge, his master had spoken very clearly just a moment ago. Yang Chen had still asked

him again and again, that this time Yang Chen could not be held responsible for any fractures or breaking of ribs, which could be considered as insulting his master by making him reply personally.

All of a sudden with an excessive movement of his limbs, Sun Hai Jing even twisted his neck so that a cackling sound echoed in the area. Anyway this was his limit. Controlling one's body's joints was already an easy thing to do. But this movement produced a sense of cruelty and at least several outer disciples who were there on the side turned their heads, not wanting to see any more.

Everyone unhurriedly walked to one place of unused space. Sun Hai Jing fished out a Thousand Jin Talisman from his qiankun pouch and with one hand indicated for Yang Chen to start. Facing an ordinary person, Sun Hai Jing was two hundred percent certain of his victory, as long as the Thousand Jin talisman could make it difficult for Yang Chen to move forward, it would give him free rein to slaughter. Under these kinds of circumstances, if he was forced to use a large amount of magic power, then he would truly lose face. Also if Sun Hai Jing were to lose to this man here, then Chu Heng would not have any face left.

Yang Chen finally advanced, moving towards Sun Hai Jing's side. He had already decided which was the easiest way of dealing with Sun Hai Jing. In his previous life the Luminous Moon Hall strived for supremacy over the Fierce Yang Hall and ultimately the people of the Luminous Moon Hall sold his master to the Greatest Sky Sect, leading to his master's regrettable suicide. In this life the Luminous Moon Hall has once again colluded with the Greatest Sky Sect to scheme against him, so he would not let Sun Hai Jing off easily.

“Be careful Senior Brother, I am about to start!”

Yang Chen still warned him politely before he started.

Sun Hai Jing in front of him laughed out loud, saying with disdain:

“Junior Brother Yang Chen, bring it on!”

He was already ridiculing Yang Chen by calling him Junior Brother and it seemed he was determined to destroy Yang Chen as such.

Yang Chen had solemn look on his face, a portion of cold qi appeared from Yang Chen’s body. The surrounding people looking from one side felt as if the atmosphere within the room had become many times colder.

“Killing a large number of talented people can accumulate this kind of aura of death?”

Chu Heng, who simply didn’t care about the killing intent emerging from Yang Chen’s body, coldly snorted as if to get the attention of Du Qian, who was standing on the side, to make him clearly see what kind of person Yang Chen was in the end.

Everyone who was watching only sensed a burst of intense killing intent which appeared somewhat frightening, but nothing more. But Sun Hai Jing, who was bearing the brunt, didn’t feel the same

way at all.

In Sun Hai Jing's eyes, Yang Chen, who was standing in front of him, had suddenly turned into an ocean of blood from hell, wanting to engulf Sun Hai Jing. The monstrous killing intent invaded Sun Hai Jing's spirit awareness, making Sun Hai Jing tremble from dread and collapse, other than that he could not feel anything.

Clenching the Thousand Jin Talisman in his hand he threw it, but it did not even show the slightest effect. The talisman looked like it was very likely to hit Yang Chen, but at the last moment his body merely leaned to one side and immediately dodged it. Afterwards he resolutely rushed up towards Sun Hai Jing, who was standing at the same place without any movement and ruthlessly punched him.

Bang, after storing power in the fist for a long time, it firmly hit Sun Hai Jing's nose. Even if Sun Hai Jing's cultivation had been more profound, under the circumstances where he could not use his magic power, his physical body would be incapable of resisting this kind of punch. Immediately his nose had started bleeding and darkness enveloped his vision.

Even without waiting for Sun Hai Jing to respond to the pain, Yang Chen's other hand had already grabbed the Thousand Jin Talisman out of Sun Hai Jing's hand and then rapidly moved his body backwards. Then, leaning his shoulder to come near to Sun Hai Jing's elbow, he pushed it in the reverse direction, forcefully bending his joints.

Kacha!

An absolutely horrifying sound echoed through the room. That hand of Sun Hai Jing could be seen hanging softly by the side, incapable of moving it anymore, as a blood curdling screech came out of Sun Hai Jing's mouth. The severe pain almost made him lose consciousness at this point.

Yang Chen nevertheless did not let him go and in an instant his body leaned towards the other side of Sun Hai Jing, with his other hand as his second target. However Yang Chen had retracted his foot previously to pull him, thus Sun Hai Jing had already fallen to the ground involuntarily. When he fell, Sun Hai Jing had used his only free hand to support himself. But immediately he issued a painful howl, like that of a dying pig, again.

And so Yang Chen took the opportunity to throw himself at Sun Hai Jing's body, tightly pressing him down with the top of his knee and hitting Sun Hai Jing's shoulder, pulling his only remaining hand and turning it over using force.

Kacha!

The arm that was supporting his body finally twisted in a weird way behind his back. To the bystanders it seemed as if the joint was bending baselessly.

As both of his hands were twisted and broken by Yang Chen, Sun Hai Jing kept on screaming. Yang Chen's powerful fist kept on smashing incessantly against Sun Hai Jing's temples.

Bang! Bang!

Sounds like these unceasingly echoed, while Sun Hai Jing's screams became weaker and weaker, while the sound of struggling also became very feeble.

Alarmed, Chu Heng was just about to intervene. But before he started moving, a hand appeared before his eyes and stopped him. Smilingly Du Qian said:

“Junior Brother Chu, in a duel between two people other people cannot intervene.”

“See, my disciple has already sustained injuries!”

Chu Heng who was under great urgency could not help but shout loudly, which made the disciples who were watching in the surroundings, jump.

“To be injured, naturally is his lack of skill, others cannot be blamed! It is unavoidable to suffer serious injuries, these are the words spoken by you, Junior Brother Chu.”

Du Qian's facial expression was, as before, full of smiles, his hand stopping Chu Heng from intervening, explaining on one side and using his spirit awareness on the other side to check the circumstances over there, he confidently stated:



“Be assured, Junior Brother Chu, I guarantee your disciples life is not in danger.”

While he was speaking, Yang Chen had already stopped his punching. Blood was spread across Sun Hai Jing’s face, who was already unconscious. Both of his arms were disabled, one was bent backwards from the elbow joint, while the other one was snapped at the root. The temples on his head were in complete mess, with some broken bones pressing down on them. But he was still alive and not dead yet.

Calmly getting up, Yang Chen confronted Chu Heng who was fuming with anger and slightly smiled while saluting him.

“Uncle Master Chu, this disciple has already challenged and defeated Senior Brother Sun, Do Uncle Master Chu’s previous words still hold?”

# Chapter 17 - Who Would Still Dare Instruct You

Chu Heng looked utterly flustered and exasperated, but since Law Enforcement Hall's Du Qian was present right now, even if Chu Heng had enormous guts, he still did not dare to hit Yang Chen in front of Du Qian. Thus, with a loud groan he didn't pay any more attention to Yang Chen and directly rushed to his disciple to examine his injuries.

After carefully inspecting him, Chu Heng couldn't help but take a step back and take a deep breath. He hurriedly reached out to his qiankun pouch to find a few medicinal pills, squeezed them into Sun Hai Jing's mouth and began to clear up the spots where Sun Hai Jing's bones were broken. Suddenly he looked towards Yang Chen maliciously. Everyone present including Du Qian didn't dare to believe this outcome. Yang Chen, an ordinary person had unexpectedly won, when facing the challenge of the third qi layer disciple Sun Hai Jing? What had happened? But in front of so many eyes, even for people with unclear vision, they could not help but trust the events which had taken place before their eyes.

From the start to the end of the battle, Yang Chen fought in a very ordinary way, using only his fists to attack and not using a bit of magic power or cultivation techniques to attack. At the same time from start to finish this Sun Hai Jing, a third qi layer disciple, hadn't been able to use even one cultivation technique. Barely using a Thousand Jin Talisman to attack, however with such a great disparity between these two, Yang Chen easily avoided it.

“Good skills, good strength!”

Du Qian spoke out his views of Yang Chen while walking towards the Law Enforcement Hall. Though he had a favourable opinion of Yang Chen, it was still just a favourable impression and nothing more, so as to not let Yang Chen and Chu Heng develop any hostility with him. But the earlier battle by Yang Chen made Du Qian say a few praising words about him.

Yang Chen had displayed his superiority in great detail, from releasing killing intent to affect Sun Hai Jing's mind, to ruthlessly punching him to stop him from using any techniques, then breaking Sun Hai Jing's arms and in the end beating Sun Hai Jing unconscious. Yang Chen had done all of this in one breath's time, extremely efficiently. This made even Du Qian gasp with admiration.

This praise from Du Qian had come from his heart, if he were in Yang Chen's position, even Du Qian was not able of guaranteeing that he could beat Sun Hai Jing so easily. Yang Chen not only accomplished it, but also did it so beautifully which naturally demanded heartfelt praise.

Yang Chen looked as if he was unwilling to spare Sun Hai Jing, but it seemed more like he was slapping Chu Heng's face. While Chu Heng was treating Sun Hai Jing, Yang Chen kept on asking him:

“Uncle Master Chu, can this disciple start cultivating already, I need not become a servant for ten years anymore, right? Uncle Master Chu, do the earlier words of Uncle Master not hold?”

After one inspection, it was determined that only Sun Hai Jing's arm and skull bone had suffered fractures with a few injuries and Chu Heng had calmed his mind by then. Hearing Yang Chen's questioning again and again, he almost killed him on the spot. Finally he remembered that there was still a Law Enforcement Hall's disciple on the side, so not daring to be excessively rash he forced himself to nod.

"Not bad, you already challenged and defeated Sun Hai Jing, so naturally you can begin to cultivate."

While speaking, he bit his lips with his teeth tightly, so as not to explode on Yang Chen in anger, calming down only after a long time.

"Seize every opportunity and hope that next time you will still get so much good luck!"

Chu Heng once again coldly humphed, before rapidly leaving the monastery gate, carrying his seriously injured disciple.

"Uncle Master you really praise me too much, this disciple only has some reckless strength that's all, without luck it was out of question."

Yang Chen said this with excessive modesty. When Chu Heng heard this, his silhouette paused for a moment before rapidly disappearing.

“How did you avoid Sun Hai Jing’s Thousand Jin Talisman?”

Du Qian was interested in this. A Thousand Jin Talisman by a cultivator of the third qi layer had unexpectedly missed an ordinary person without using martial arts. This made the numerous cultivators who were present unable to endure it, therefore, Du Qian curiously asked Yang Chen about it.

“I didn’t avoid it, Uncle Master Du.”

Yang Chen gave an honest reply to Du Qian.

“You didn’t avoid it?”

Du Qian repeated without thinking and suddenly he became aware of the something, paling with fright he asked again:

“You actually didn’t avoid it? You were aware of the path of the Thousand Jin Talisman?”

“Not aware, Uncle Master.”

Yang Chen laughed and immediately replied:

“Only, since it’s name is Thousand Jin Talisman, shouldn’t it have the weight of a thousand jin? If not, how could it so easily overwhelm Senior Sun during a life and death situation?”

Du Qian did not know what to say now. Sun Hai Jing had suffered a great injustice. Earlier, when Yang Chen's killing intent had intimidated him, he had thrown the Thousand Jin Talisman with great difficulty, believing that it would be able to suppress Yang Chen, but Yang Chen had recklessly continued on and in the end pushed down his body, throwing himself onto Sun Hai Jing, which was equivalent to supporting the weight of Yang Chen's body with the Thousand Jin Talisman.

Originally Du Qian was still baffled, Sun Hai Jing was a third qi layer cultivator, when comparing him to Yang Chen, an ordinary mortal, how could there be such a great difference? But he hadn't been able to think of this. So that's why Sun Hai Jing's arm was broken so easily! It turns out this was the reason.

However, Yang Chen had not show any mercy, but this was also rather close to Du Qian's character. If Yang Chen wanted to beat someone, he should not stay his hand and efficiently settle the enmity, only that was the best policy. Looking at the surroundings Du Qian discovered that the outer disciple responsible for the recruitment had already stopped, all of these qi layer disciples were looking at him, waiting for him to instruct as the most senior person there.

“Continue with your duties!”

Du Qian gestured with his hands and stated, hardly paying any attention. Of course, recruiting outer disciples was not his duty, he had only appeared here after hearing that Chu Heng was making things difficult for someone. Now that the affair had already

concluded, there was no need for him to stay here.

Everyone loudly agreed and began to return to their duties without paying any more attention to Yang Chen. Upon seeing this, Du Qian also did not speak much and only hinted to Yang Chen meaningfully:

“You are already my Pure Yang Palace’s outer disciple, do your best later, okay!”

Even without Du Qian’s reminder, Yang Chen had already considered the situation of the surrounding outer disciples. If one were to speak from the beginning, they watched as Chu Heng master and disciple tried to suppress Yang Chen, but still they didn’t speak up for him, so when Yang Chen had ruthlessly beaten Sun Hai Jing, this caused them some unhappiness.

Man is such a strange creature, when they see that their equal is bullying the weak, they sympathize with the weak. But when the weaker person resists and is able to successfully fight back, it directly hurts their ego, as this individual whom they thought was weak, but had turned out to be totally different. The words ‘as the rabbit dies, the fox grieves’ describes their interdependency quite well. If every person was like Yang Chen how could they still experience the joy of being a senior? Who could have imagined that as soon as Yang Chen entered his teacher’s sect, he would have to face these kind of circumstances. Yang Chen could not understand this.

Yang Chen did not pay any more attention to this. In order to pay his respects to his teacher again, even if he had to cross mountains

of dagger and seas of flame he wouldn't care much. Let alone these outer disciples, even if it were the nine tribulations, they would still feel like a walk in the park to him. Master, wait for me, I have already entered the Pure Yang Palace and will soon become your apprentice!

The test for verifying the spirit root ended very quickly. In only a day's time, two thousand people were already examined. Only twenty people possessed a spirit root. All of these twenty people, including Yang Chen, joined as outer disciples.

The bunch of twenty newly accepted outer disciples met with an inner disciple, who lead them to the next place along the complicated mountain road, finally entering the Meiqing Mountain. After rushing for more than ten miles on the mountain road, before midnight they reached a manor halfway up the mountain.

“This is a place where you will cultivate for a long time.”

The disciple leading the way brought them to a hall and said to everyone:

“You all wait here, someone will come to arrange where you will live. Good luck to you all, work hard to become inner disciples in future!”

After speaking without paying attention to anyone, he departed.



These twenty people were all looking at each other, not knowing what to do, all of them, except Yang Chen, who was standing at his original position. Yang Chen stood at one place calmly, but within his mind, the memories of the events that had taken place in this manor in his past life, were surfacing, bit by bit. In those days, he had just entered Pure Yang Palace and was also brought to this manor and he spent entire three years here.

Yang Chen had almost no impression of these cultivators. But that is quite natural, as every year each sect would find some people who possess spirit roots and receive them as outer disciples. However not every individual who possesses a spirit root would be successful in cultivation, many people are already ruthlessly eliminated at the first stage. In those days, apart from Yang Chen, everyone in his group had been eliminated, thus he didn't have any memories of them, which was entirely normal.

In all of the commotion around him Yang Chen calmly found a place to sit in the middle of the hall and started waiting. Of the other new disciples, each and everyone was cautious and apprehensive of their new surroundings, let alone sit down, they did not even move from their original place. Compared to Yang Chen, they seemed like a group of children who have not experienced the world.

Soon, a person looking like an old manager appeared in the center of the hall with two healthy servants following behind him. Yang Chen didn't rise from his seat, as he indeed knew this old manager very well. In his previous life, during these three years, he had lived according to this old manager's arrangements, so much so, that the old manager did not even need to introduce anything to him.

After the old manager came in, he looked at the group of standing people when he finally saw Yang Chen sitting leisurely. His brows slightly creased, but then immediately smoothed out.

“This old man is called Shangguan Feng and is this Yi Xiu manor’s overall manager, also the one in charge of everyone’s life for the next three years.”

The old manager introduced himself.

“If everyone has any requests in the future, you can directly find this old man.”

“Many thanks, Manager Shangguan for all your troubles!”

Yang Chen who was smiling the entire time while Shangguan Feng was speaking, stood up and cupped his hands, greeting him. Only after he moved did the other people manage to respond, following suit with him, everyone began to express their thanks towards Shangguan Feng. He was the manager in charge of their lives in the future, naturally they could not easily offend him.

Shangguan Feng was extremely overjoyed at this and he immediately took fancy to Yang Chen, who had shown quick wittedness, together with respect towards him. Only, despite being overjoyed in his heart, he could not help but feel somewhat sorry, as the earlier greeting clearly showed him, that Yang Chen could give a hard time to anybody, but with such clever words, why would he insist on completely offending Uncle Master Chu Heng at

the time of the disciple selection?

“Henceforth, for three years, everyone will live here in Yi Xiu manor, here, everyone will learn to read and gain enlightenment, observe the geography of the stars, learn to practice pharmacy and distinguish different herbs. After three years, everyone will participate in an official selection to become a genuine outer disciple of my Pure Yang Palace!”

Shangguan Feng spoke directly, precisely informing everyone of their duties in this Yi Xiu manor.

Hearing Shangguan Feng’s words, the bunch of new disciples started discussing between themselves and at last, one courageous disciple carefully asked:

“Manager, could it be that we are still not genuine outer disciples?”

“Ha ha! Just because your body possesses a spirit root, you think you have the qualifications to become a genuine outer disciple? It is still out of question for you to become a disciple.”

Shangguan Feng gently chuckled and explained to everyone:

“These three years are for everyone to build good a foundation and to select a proper cultivation path. At least in three years time everyone has to reach the qi gathering layer and only them will everyone have the required talent to become a genuine disciple.”

Even if their body possessed a spirit root it was still unlikely for everyone to receive a good education, like Yang Chen, who had spent the greater part of his childhood in a peasant household, there he could not demand to learn to read and write. Without the knowledge to read letters, how could he successfully read a rare book for immortal cultivation? As for the geography of the stars, practicing pharmacy and distinguishing different herbs, it would build the foundation for concocting pills of immortality in the future. To concoct pills it was necessary to learn to distinguish between different herbs, as well as to be familiar with different materials!

As everyone managed to understand these many things and were no longer asking any questions, in their heart they felt a sense of urgency and concern. Previously they had believed that since their body possessed a spirit root they could immediately join an immortal sect and would rise, but they didn't anticipate that the body possessing a spirit root was just a required qualification and nothing more. When they heard that for three years not only they would have to build a foundation but also cultivate to the first qi layer, everyone couldn't help but feel pressured.

“If we haven't reached that realm at that time?”

Someone asked, nervously.

“My Pure Yang Palace's techniques should not be easily spread, so if at that time you cannot reach the first qi layer, then you will have to become a servant for your whole life in this Ye Xiu manor!”

Shangguan Feng coldly said, giving a chill to everyone's mind. Everyone looked towards the two healthy servants behind Shangguan Feng with concerned eyes, as if realizing something.

“You don't need to look, these two were not been able to cross the barrier ten years ago.” Seemingly aware of their thoughts, Manager Shangguan warned them. Soon after that he instructed everyone:

“It's already quite late, so after eating you all find a place to settle down and tomorrow morning someone will come to take you to fulfill your responsibilities.”

With the sound of a clap, suddenly twenty healthy servants appeared in the hall, the same as the number of new disciples.

“All of you can choose a servant, he will be responsible for your daily activities.”

Shangguan Feng pointed a finger to the surroundings, allowing everyone to choose.

While everyone was looking at each other in dismay, Manager Shangguan moved towards Yang Chen's side and said:

“Yang Chen, Uncle Master Chu Heng has said that, since you have already defeated a third qi layer disciple, you are qualified to cultivate third qi layer techniques. Afterwards in Ye Xiu Manor you will be given proper treatment as an outer disciple.”

Yang Chen was gobsmacked, to allow him to enjoy outer disciples status at this time? One should be aware that outer disciples could contest to become inner disciples and formally becoming an apprentice to a master to learn skills, how could Chu Heng have such good intentions?

“I am already an outer disciple?”

Yang Chen asked while creasing his brows, without showing the slightest amount of ecstasy to others.

“You will only get the treatment of outer disciples, that’s all.”

Shangguan Feng laughingly explained. Soon after that he continued directly saying the most crucial point:

“Since you have already defeated a third qi layer disciple, this Ye Xiu manor does not dare to give you any cultivation direction, you better do your best, alright!”

# Chapter 18 - Explaining The Rules

This explanation from Shangguan Feng made Yang Chen understand everything in the end. Why Chu Heng had asked for his status to be raised this high, when originally he was filled with malicious thoughts.

Since Yang Chen had already received the status of a third qi layer outer disciple, the people responsible of guiding new disciples in the Ye Xiu manor would not provide any guidance to Yang Chen. He was at the third qi layer but still wanted to learn these unpopular mediocre introductory subjects just to amuse himself? If Yang Chen had been as ordinary as he was in his previous life, then that would have been the end of the story for him, he would have no means to learn to read and write. As he wouldn't have any knowledge of letters, then the rare books about cultivation methods would have made no sense to him and he wouldn't have known about the five phases of Yin and Yang. Wanting to cultivate to immortality like that? Let alone three years, even if he had thirty, he would still have remained a mediocre person and nothing more.

Chu Heng had a definite goal, if Yang Chen was incapable of getting out of this predicament at the Ye Xiu manor, he would be unable to move even one step further on the road to immortal cultivation. In this way, he not only entrusted this task to someone else, but also after Sun Hai Jing's condition would improve and he was able to cultivate for a few years, he could easily take Yang Chen's life in an oppressive way.

Even if, at that time, he didn't want to take Yang Chen's life,

Yang Chen could easily be demoted to a servant. When that happened, naturally he could think of many ways to return his humiliation and instead dishonor Yang Chen. According to an old saying, for a nobleman to take revenge, ten years is not too long, and it would take even more time to cultivate to immortality, hence he still had plenty of time to make Yang Chen repent for a lifetime.

Yang Chen was aware that Ye Xiu manor's manager Shangguan Feng was an expert at the peak of the qi layer. Since he was quite old, it was extremely unlikely for him step into next realm, therefore he could only assume the responsibility of a manager here. Speaking of the manager, he was the manor's owner, responsible for guiding the newly recruited disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. As Chu Heng was an inner disciple at the foundation stage, Shangguan Feng would not dare to disobey his instructions.

At that moment Yang Chen recalled, that when he joined the Pure Yang Palace in his previous life, Chu Heng had already been an accomplished disciple whose deeds had spread far. Who could have thought that someone who had barely joined Pure Yang Palace, had already offended a famous inner disciple?

Only, even if Chu Heng was thousands or ten thousand times more famous, it was still not enough, as Yang Chen did absolutely not require this introductory foundation knowledge, even if it was changed to advanced knowledge he still wouldn't need it. The reason why he insisted on joining the Pure Yang Palace was just to pay his respects under his master again and fulfill his long held wish.



After Shangguan Feng finished saying all of this, Yang Chen's complexion didn't even change one bit. He stood up and once again expressed his thanks towards Shangguan Feng, then he walked away to the side of the hall. While passing, he pointed his finger towards a forty year old, healthy servant who was considered to be the oldest and then he immediately left. Shangguan Feng's eyes followed Yang Chen until he had walked far away. In his heart he secretly felt satisfied, but he merely shook his head slightly, heaved a sigh and did not say anything.

Following after the servant on a long corridor bridge and turning, for around seven to eight times, Yang Chen arrived at his residence. Within the residence two female and one male, for a total of three servants were already waiting and seeing Yang Chen arrive, all of them saluted him to pay their respects.

“My name is Yang Chen, you all can address me any way you want.”

Yang Chen didn't like them standing on ceremony, all of those servants were disciples who had been previously eliminated. They didn't seem very old, but everyone one of them was a cultivator, it was only that they were at a lower realm, unable to become a genuine disciple, nothing more. The only thing that he could be sure of, was that they all had methods to stop themselves from aging, as it seemed that their genuine age was far from what it appeared.

The four servants didn't dare to be careless, one after another saluting again and calling him Young Master Yang. This was a title Yang Chen had already enjoyed in his family manor for half year,

yet he did not adapt to it in the least bit, but he was still satisfied with this kind of address.

After settling down and having a meal, Yang Chen lied down in his bedroom, which, compared to his family manor's lavish bedroom, was still somewhat more extravagant and he closed his eyes to rest. But his spirit awareness had already shrouded the entire residence without alarming anyone.

Those few servants had not started sleeping yet. In a small room on the outside, the servant who led the way, was speaking of the events that had taken place in the hall as the other servants laughed, feeling happy.

“We don't need to serve this kind of master meticulously, after a few years he will also become one of us.”

Another male servant laughed, speaking out what was on everyone's mind. Although the other servants did not say anything they nodded silently.

When Yang Chen heard this, his lips curled upwards. Soon after that, not even caring about these people, he properly laid down in bed, as if to sleep, and started to cultivate his Three Purities Secret.

Worthy of being called the Supreme elder's cultivation technique, it particularly specialized in tempering spirit awareness, even if he was lying down, he was still able to circulate it anywhere, just as before. This way Yang Chen would be able to practice his single technique anytime and anywhere. Even if there

were other breathing techniques of highly respected immortal cultivators, he would have to sit and meditate properly to practice them.

Resting that one night without any worries, Yang Chen got up early the next day. Afterwards, on one side Yang Chen enjoyed a delicious breakfast, while on the other side the servant who led the way, was explaining the arrangements in the manor.

The servant's name was Shen Da, originally his body also possessed a spirit root, but his luck was no good and he reached the required qi layer just two months after three year period, but by then he had already been demoted to a servant, now it had been ten years already. Within these ten years, apart from attending to the duties of a servant, he incessantly cultivated, expecting to break through to the foundation realm and become an inner disciple.

The rules in the Pure Yang Palace were not at all inflexible but only if one succeeded in reaching the foundation realm, could anyone enter the inner courtyard. In fact, not just Shen Da, but all of the servants in the manor had similar thoughts. Apart from serving these newly entered disciples they would also cultivate diligently, in the hope that someday in the future they would be able to become a foundation stage expert and genuinely enter the Pure Yang Palace.

All of this was Shen Da's own experience, naturally coming from him, all of this sounded completely logical. Yang Chen understood everything completely, but still waited for Shen Da to finish his explanation. After that he ordered Shen Da by waving his hands to

show him around.

He walked into a pavilion where a group of disciples was learning to read, and inside, there was a person who appeared to be the master, who was teaching a group of youngsters. On seeing Yang Chen and then looking towards Shen Da, he hurriedly got up and greeted Yang Chen:

“Senior Brother Yang, you have honoured us with your presence, how about giving some guidance to these youngsters? I invite Senior Yang to the seat of honor!”

All of the disciples who were learning to read also stood up. They came to Yang Chen and bowed to him:

“We greet Senior Yang!”

With a bitter smile, Yang Chen waved for them to disperse and continue with their work, as he could only turn around and leave. He had to turn back from several areas in succession, no matter whether they were practicing pharmacy or learning the geography of stars, regardless of what those disciples were studying, when they saw Yang Chen, all of them, including their teachers stood up and personally came towards him, bowing and yelling ‘Senior Brother Yang’, but not one person invited Yang Chen to visit and attend the classes. These people were all following proper etiquettes so as not make Yang Chen angry in any way.

After the whole morning was spent in this way, Yang Chen returned to his residence with Shen Da and lazily sat down on a

chair, commanding him:

“Shen Da get lunch for me now!”

“Young Master Yang, lunch is in the kitchen you can get it yourself!”

Shen Da sarcastically laughed while casually replying to him and then turned around to leave.

One look at Yang Chen’s bitter experience this morning at Ye Xiu manor and Shen Da immediately understood Yang Chen’s status, he even predicted Yang Chen’s end, therefore he would naturally not treat Yang Chen as a Young Master anymore.

“Shen Da, do you think that with Chu Heng’s instructions, I will be unable to raise my head in this Ye Xiu manor?”

Yang Chen didn’t seem surprised at Shen Da’s behaviour, looking lazy as before, and raised one of his legs to put it on the armrest of the extremely well crafted chair and sloppily asked.

“Young Master Yang!”

Shen Da turned around to look at Yang Chen with a smile that was not a smile:

“Considering the rules, I will still call you Young Master. Fifteen

years ago I was also your age and I also believed that since my body possesses spirit root, my natural talent would surpass regular people, but now look at me, I am merely a servant and nothing more. But I am sure that after these three years you will also be the same as me, but my position will still be better off.”

“How are you sure about this?”

Yang Chen asked, looking as lazy as before.

“Without someone to guide you, Young Master Yang, why do you think you will be able to pass?”

Shen Da sarcastically smiled:

“Are you under the impression that taking advantage of Senior Brother Sun when he was unprepared and mounting a sneak attack to knock him out, you could easily walk into Ye Xiu manor? At best you are a village brat with some brute force, that’s all. After three years, you will just be my underling, do you still dare to make me serve you?”

“Do the other servants also feel the same way?”

Yang Chen still hadn’t asked for the names of the other male and female servants yesterday, so he used something else as replacement.

“That’s right, Young Master Yang!”

The other three servants had appeared at some unknown time from a small room on the side and stood by Shen Da's side. Another male servant smilingly replied:

“We will only still call you Young Master Yang in order to follow manor's basic rules.”

“However, Young Master Yang will still have to take care of his own everyday life.”

Immediately, one female servant standing on the side said:

“The sooner you adapt to it, the better it will be for you.”

“Certainly, Young Master Yang can offer us these materials to eat or drink, to refuse these would be disrespectful of us, we can enjoy these pleasures on behalf of Young Master Yang.”

As the last female servant said this, the smiling expression on her face was spreading even more, as if a flower started blooming

“Manager Shangguan has instructed us to provide Young Master Yang with everything as a third qi layer disciple and luckily we are just at the juncture of third qi layer, maybe these things can assist us to break through to the fourth layer.”

All four of them were talking one after another, as if they had

already discussed this properly. Not only did they greedily covet Yang Chen's things, but also wanted to make Yang Chen tend to himself. Thanks to the heavens these people still had some awareness of their responsibilities and didn't try to make Yang Chen serve them.

“Even though both Chu Heng and Shangguan Feng pretend to uphold the rules, in actuality Chu Heng wants to deal with me, an ordinary mortal, by using the loopholes in the rules.”

Yang Chen's lazy voice sounded out:

“Are you even more ferocious than Shangguan Feng or Chu Heng? You all act this way, are you not afraid of breaking any rules?”

Listening to these words, the complexion of all of the servants drastically changed, but Yang Chen had still not stopped talking:

“Even Chu Heng and Shangguan Feng both maintain appearances when dealing with me, but you lowlives don't even bother to keep up appearances. Just because you were all immersed in bitter cultivation, have your minds all become foolish?”

Yang Chen still didn't move, but he had made Shen Da and the other three servants drip with sweat, unable to say anything. Yang Chen sneered in his heart and said:



“Do you need me to report this present conversation to Shangguan Feng and let him decide the argument?”

“Young Master Yang, you surely jest.”

Shen Da completely ignored what he himself had said earlier and said:

“We were only randomly speaking and haven’t really asked you to do anything, do the words of a joke also count as an offence according to the rules?”

“According to the rules?”

Yang Chen snorted. His voice suddenly became loud:

“According to rules, even if my lunch is already on my lips, when I ask you to bring it to me, you have to bring it to me, even if you are just going to get it and bring it to the edge of my mouth again! And you speak of rules with me?”

The four third qi layer servants did not even dare to move in front of Yang Chen, who had just recently joined the Pure Yang Palace. Not even daring to raise their heads, they became quiet out of fear. The faces of these four were deathly pale as if someone has sucked out their vitality.

“But I very much like you all for speaking this way to me, telling the truth.”

Seeing the attitude of the four servants Yang Chen lightly nodded:

“At least compared to people who keep on speaking honeyed words to get ahead and those who nominally made me a third qi layer disciple, but in fact forced people to not assist me in becoming stronger.”

Seeing Yang Chen change his tone again, all four servants were somewhat amazed and felt even less determined. Only after glancing at each other a few times were they able to look at Yang Chen again.

“I also appreciate your bluntness.”

Yang Chen said without letting the servants know about his thoughts, but Yang Chen nevertheless understood their way of thinking:

“Now I give you one chance. A chance to win these opportunities you just mentioned.”

“An opportunity?”

Shen Da loudly asked, hastily. If Yang Chen informed Shangguan Feng of their conversation, these four would have to suffer the consequences. Sect rules were sect rules and also applied to these servants. Since Yang Chen allowed them an opportunity, Shen Da

would absolutely not miss it.

“You four have to defeat me in battle!”

Yang Chen got up and indicated for those four servants to follow him, while he directly walked into a small courtyard in their residence:

“Whether you fight alone or together, as long as you are able to defeat me, I will act as if the previous incident didn’t occur and you all will also have nothing to worry about. As for those gifts which will be sent to me, they will all be yours without exception.”

“Are you serious?”

Shen Da looked pleased as he hastily asked. If Yang Chen didn’t raise this issue, even if Shangguan Feng became aware of it, he could still not do anything to punish their crimes, moreover this would also allow Senior Brother Sun to vent his anger, so surely Uncle Master Chu would be pleased.

“Certainly!”

Yang Chen’s face revealed a smiling expression:

“What benefits would I gain from cheating you servants?”

Looking at Yang Chen’s serious expression, it absolutely did not

appear to be false. Shen Da turned around to glance at the other servants and suddenly a smile appeared on the faces of all four.

“These are your words, even if manager Shangguan becomes aware of this, he can still not blame us for breaking any rule. Isn’t that right, manager?”

“Certainly!”

Shangguan Feng figure had unexpectedly appeared on the top of entrance of Yang Chen’s residence at an unknown time. He gently laughed:

“Just a moment ago I heard Young Master Yang’s words. Since it is Young Master Yang’s demand to compare notes with you all, naturally it will not be considered as breaking of any rules.”

A sinister smile had already spread across Shen Da’s face. He was just about to move when Shangguan Feng interfered:

“Shen Da, Young Master Yang has told all of you to come together, you all have to follow Young Master Yang instructions.”

# Chapter 19 - The Strength To Subdue A Group Of Ten

Yang Chen was not even a little bit surprised at Shangguan Feng's appearance. The spiritual awareness of an expert at the peak of the qi realm was enough to cover the entire Ye Xiu Manor, even if a blade of grass moved inside of the Ye Xiu Manor because of some wind, it would still not escape his spiritual awareness, much less Yang Chen who had been the focus of his attention, thus not watching him attentively at all times would be terrible.

It was just that he appeared only now and not when Shen Da and others were breaking the rules, while, above all, his first words were to remind those four to fight together, which was not good news, as far as Yang Chen was concerned. If the person with real authority in Ye Xiu manor had such an attitude, naturally Shen Da and the others also became aware of what they should do.

Anyway, Yang Chen's earlier words, saying they could either fight alone or come at him together, were all good, but he did not say anything in case he won. Naturally Shangguan Feng exploited this mistake and started the fight before it could be discussed. In addition to that Yang Chen didn't mention it and winning is winning, at most Shen Da and others would obediently serve him, what could he gain?

Due to the personal appearance of Shangguan Feng supporting Shen Da and the others, their courage greatly increased and these four people advanced forward at lightening speed, encircling Yang Chen. Yang Chen was not even looking at them, only watching

Shangguan Feng. Suddenly he smilingly asked:

“Manager don’t you think it’s quite lively?”

“You flatter me!”

Shangguan Feng slightly shook his head. He smilingly said:

“This old man just has the right to punish notoriety, but the sect leader didn’t permit me to hit new disciples.”

He only said this much, but Yang Chen understood everything. He was a master at the peak of the qi layer, to kill an ordinary person would just be an insult to him. Furthermore, as long as he would touch him, it would be an elder generation taking unfair advantage of the younger generation, and he would definitely face the accusation of injuring a disciple of his own sect. Although not too many cared about the Ye Xiu Manor, at least one or two inner disciple paid closely attention to it. Although the younger generation could compare notes with each other without any great problems, but Shangguan Feng could definitely not interfere.

In any case, four third qi layer disciples dealing with Yang Chen alone, if even all of them could not beat him down, then Shen Da and the others deserved to become Yang Chen’s servants. Originally their status was just as servants, if they were unable to beat him, could it be that they hope that some outer disciple or possibly even an inner disciple would get a few servants out of their predicament?

Hearing Shangguan Feng's words, Yang Chen stopped paying any more attention to him, instead he slowly turned his attention towards his confinement, by looking at those servants. Then, slightly smiling, he raised both of his hands, and in front of the faces of those servants, he unhurriedly bent down his hands, finger by finger, gripping them and forming two clenched fists. Then raising his chin, he indicated Shen Da, standing in front of him, as if asking him to bring it on!

The first one to attack wasn't Shen Da, but rather a female servant standing behind Yang Chen. She suddenly ignited a paper talisman and soon afterwards smoke filled the interior of the tiny courtyard.

Shangguan Feng, looking from above, slightly nodded his head. These servants were much more clever than Sun Hai Jing, to come up with a move to control the enemy and use this kind of strategy to interfere with Yang Chen's vision. All of the servants had spiritual awareness so this ignited smoke could not stop their attacks, but Yang Chen's vision would immediately be restricted.

But they hadn't noticed that this talisman's original name was Illusory Talisman. It had an intensely delicate bewildering effect and as long as an ordinary person was covered in the smoke, illusions would start appearing automatically. These illusions could change according to master's thoughts. When interfering with one's mind, this talisman was most difficult to deal with, but the power of the talisman depended on the master's cultivation.

Within the smoke, the terrible sound of a child wailing appeared, 'boo hoo', seemingly countless spirits demanding vengeance for

their grievances were wrapping around Yang Chen. Actually the female servant was aware of Yang Chen's background as an executioner, that's why she intentionally used the Illusory Talisman to make these departed spirits, who were demanding their vengeance appear.

Within the smoke, Yang Chen was standing motionless, as his eyes were looking at the ghosts, only Yang Chen's complexion didn't change even one bit. He coldly snorted:

“Humph, insignificant talent, when you were all alive I chopped off your heads, don't tell me I should be afraid of you after you died? Disperse for me!”

With a loud snap, the female servant controlling the Illusory Talisman suddenly started shaking, as if she had received some kind of shock. When the Illusory Talisman was used to scare Yang Chen naturally her spiritual awareness had also been scattered within it, with Yang Chen's loud shout, as if that spiritual awareness had become agitated, instead of intimidating Yang Chen, her own mind was shaken.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Within the smoke, two balls of fire flew towards Yang Chen almost noiselessly from both sides and their talisman power also started to attack.

It seemed as if Yang Chen had grown eyes on the back of his head, as he suddenly twisted his body and slammed both of his



fists, left and right and each fist accurately landed on the two fireballs flying towards him.

Bang! Bang!

Two sounds echoed in quick succession, both of the fireballs burst open, but didn't even harm a hair on Yang Chen's body, only his fists turned black.

Just as Yang Chen destroyed those fire talismans, suddenly a fiercely violent sound was emitted above Yang Chen's head as a long rod, as thick as an arm, was smashing down towards his head. The sound caused by the wind would frighten normal people easily.

This was Shen Da's strategy, a metal rod as long as his body, although it was not a cultivation tool, it still had considerable weight. Shen Da had taken great pains to make a Thousand Jin Talisman and attach it to the rod. When holding it in his hands, its weight was almost ordinary, but when it was smashed on the ground, its strength increased to a thousand jin. Even if there was a metal ingot, Shen Da was confident that one smash from the rod could turn it into a flat metal slice.

Shangguan Feng had closed his eyes, he was using his spiritual awareness to observe everything happening below. He had helped Shen Da with his rod, so naturally he was aware of its effects. In his heart, he believed that one smash from the rod would conclude things, but the next moment he suddenly opened his eyes, looking at the unfathomable events taking place.

Within the small courtyard of the residence, Yang Chen had extended only one hand to grab the rod that was fiercely smashing down on him. Shen Da was rather confident in the rod, but a thousand jin's weight were suddenly stopped with a muffled sound. Yang Chen's figure was standing motionlessly as if this great power didn't affect him in the slightest.

Shen Da's eyes were opened wide, he hadn't come across these kinds of circumstances before. Even if it was the inner disciple expert of Ye Xiu Manor, when comparing notes he had also not been able to use just brute force to stop this rod. But right now, unexpectedly Yang Chen had used just one hand to stop his powerful rod, how could Shen Da not be extremely shocked.

Just this one moment of shock provided Yang Chen an opportunity. Grabbing the rod's tip with his right hand, he forcefully shouted:

“Let it go!”

Under the intense contest, both Shen Da and his rod were unable to resist the pull forwards.

Shen Da's spiritual awareness had been tightly following Yang Chen's nimble but random punches. He was clearly looking at Yang Chen's movements, but it seemed as if his body had stopped listening to him. He tried to dodge those punches, but Yang Chen's fist had already smashed firmly into his face.

Whoosh!

Shen Da's body rapidly flew into the air, moving away from the confinement and finally bumped against the courtyard's walls. With a loud splatter, Shen Da's body motionlessly fell down to the foot of the wall.

According to Shangguan Feng's observation through his spiritual awareness, Yang Chen had only used one hand to grab the head of the rod. Shen Da's metal rod was very heavy, he was very clear about that. Adding the strength of the Thousand Jin Talisman to its own strength, the total weight of the rod would be around a thousand and thirty five jins, but Yang Chen had stopped that rod without even moving one inch from his place, it was indeed something that could make people gasp in amazement.

Until today Shangguan Feng had never believed that Sun Hai Jing had lost to Yang Chen due to carelessness. Based on the strength Yang Chen had shown today, Sun Hai Jing using a Thousand Jin Talisman at that time had indeed been a great mistake. Even if his mind hadn't been shaken by Yang Chen's murderous spirit, he would still not have been Yang Chen's opponent. If only he would have used some other methods. Merely, at that time, as soon as he got close to Yang Chen's fist, he immediately lost consciousness, so where would the other methods come from?

Taking care of Sun Hai Jing was easy, but taking care of Shen Da was also easy. Both were at third qi realm and although their spirit power was able to nurse their bodies, Yang Chen had already spent many years as an immortal, his best aspect had been his agile body,

but the disparity as compared to before was still quite large. Even Yang Chen had no exact idea of his complete strength at the moment, but just for blocking a Thousand Jin Talisman and a metal rod, it was more than enough.

Yang Chen began to violently swing the metal rod in his hand. Yang Chen was not moving it in any pattern, just simply swinging the metal rod, forming a circle that was revolving around his body while making buzzing sounds.

The smoke in the area was apparently stirred due to this sort of enormous strength and slowly began to show signs of dissipating. This alarmed the other three servants greatly. The female servant who was controlling the Illusory Talisman hurriedly fished out an embroidered ribbon, which was fully packed with pictures of various sorts. The female servant seemingly cherished this embroidered ribbon very much, but the present circumstances were beyond her control. With her hand she had activated a secret art and suddenly the embroidered ribbon flew.

Si - Si -

The embroidered ribbon rose like a poisonous snake, rapidly trapping Yang Chen and soon after that restraining the arm which held the rod. The embroidered ribbon was tightening down on his body, as if it had managed to come alive as it brushed across Yang Chen's body and coiled around it, so as to bind it.

Even Yang Chen couldn't help but nod in his heart, this embroidered ribbon of the female servant was a magical device with potential to develop, it was just that the class of the refining

method was not high enough and that the materials used to make it were quite low grade, thus it could only be used to twist around an enemy to control him, unable to fatally injure him. At best it would play a good role for containing the enemy.

The two other servants, seeing that Yang Chen had already been twisted in the embroidered ribbon, were quite pleased in their hearts. One of the servants launched a bright palm containing raging flames towards Yang Chen's stomach. The other servant fished out a peach wood sword from somewhere and a translucent beam of light stabbed towards Yang Chen's throat to kill him.

Even though Yang Chen only wanted to compare notes, with the appearance of Shangguan Feng, when these servants started to fight, they had already stopped caring about Yang Chen's life and started attacking his vital organs.

Just as the blazing palm and the peach wood sword reached his body, Yang Chen suddenly shouted loudly and forcefully straightened the embroidered ribbon, twisting around his body, with his arms. After that, it issued few rattling sound before snapping into a few pieces with a loud bang. Under Yang Chen's control, the rod in his arm incessantly swung towards the two servants who had wanted to take his life.

The female servant holding the peach wood sword was greatly astonished. Seeing that the iron rod would soon sweep at her body and that she would not be able to deal with it during that imminent peril, she instinctively raised the peach wood sword, trying to block it.

Bang!

An oppressive sound was produced and the peach wood sword immediately broke off at the guard. Watching this scene, the mind of the female servant simply broke down. All of the people lifelessly looked at the sword hilt within her hand and halted at the same place.

The rod in Yang Chen's hand suddenly halted and was then pulled backwards. The Iron rod's other head struck the hand of the male servant approaching from behind. The male servant ignited a blazing fire within the palm of his hand.

Kacha!

The sound of breaking suddenly echoed and within the blink of an eye, his wrist was bent at a strange angle.

At this moment Yang Chen turned towards the stunned female servant who still hadn't come back to her senses. Just as the male servant produced a blood curdling scream, Yang Chen's fist had already attacked the female servant's face.

One fist after another continuously attacked the female servant's face, Yang Chen didn't show one bit of mercy on account of her being female. Under the assault, the body of the female servant soon failed to rise and flew into the air, before falling onto the ground some distance away, and thus became motionless.

The male servant behind him saw the miserable condition of the female and immediately stopped shrieking, but Yang Chen had already turned towards him. Alarmed, the male servant subconsciously retreated backwards as fast as he could. He directly withdrew to the foot of the wall without even becoming aware of it.

With his body leaning against the wall, the male servant opened his eyes and was shocked to see the situation. From the side of his head rod, as thick as an arm, was pounded repeatedly at the position where the servant's skull was.

Bang! Bang!

Due to the repeated pounding, a hole was created in the wall, around the size of a head, with rocks flying everywhere.

Yang Chen silhouette followed soon after the arrival of the rod and suddenly he drew close to the male servant's body. With an explosion, the wall of the abode caved in, forming a hole. The male servant lost consciousness without saying a word.

The female servant controlling the Illusory Talisman had seen everything clearly. She hadn't anticipated any of this, four people with a cultivation of the third qi layer each lost miserably when confronting an ordinary person who had never cultivated before. It was unknown whether three of them were alive or dead and only she was remaining. She had never faced these kinds of circumstances before, hence she did not know what to do.

Regardless of her thoughts, Yang Chen threw the iron rod at her. Greatly alarmed, she hastily tried to scuttle out of the way and just in the nick of time could she dodge the rod. Looking behind her, she laughed loudly when seeing the iron rod inserted at the place where her foot had been just a moment ago.

But Yang Chen had already rushed towards her, when the female servant astonishingly abandoned the others and hurriedly started to rise, using a soaring technique she had recently learned. Soaring in the air she decided to escape.

But the rising female servant gave Yang Chen an exceptionally good opportunity. At this very moment, the female servant was directly between Yang Chen and Shangguan Feng, who was standing on top of the entrance.

Reaching out for the rod below his feet, Yang Chen's hand grabbed one end of the rod. Turning his body in a circle he used the power of his rotation and powerfully threw the rod, physically exhausting himself in the process. Though its target appeared to be the female servant it was actually aimed at Shangguan Feng.

The female servant in the air still hadn't rose high enough before suddenly something grabbed her foot and destroyed her balance. From afar it looked like Yang Chen's hand had grabbed the female servants leg, raising her high before whipping her onto ground severely.

The rod in the air, without losing even a bit of its speed, flew directly towards Shangguan Feng. Shangguan Feng's complexion drastically changed.



# Chapter 20 - I Can Guide You

The speed of the rod was very fast, and it's power quite pressing, but it was unable to endanger Shangguan Feng in any way. Even if he lightly dodged he could immediately get out of the way.

But Shangguan Feng unexpectedly did neither evade, nor did he have any intention to do so. Today if he decided to get out of the way, then tomorrow the entire Ye Xiu Manor and even the inner courtyard, would assemble outside of the entrance of Ye Xiu Manor to make fun of the fact that, facing a person who had just joined Pure Yang Palace a few days ago as preparatory outer disciple, he had been forced to use martial techniques to get out of the way.

If this news were to spread to the outside, that would be even more embarrassing than death for Shangguan Feng. So Shangguan Feng could not dodge and could only catch it firmly. Towards a person who had barely joined as a preparatory disciple and hadn't even cultivated any cultivation technique, throwing the metal rod, the adult manager had to break his confidence and stop this, only then he would be able to keep Yang Chen under control and illustrate the might of Ye Xiu Manor.

Like Yang Chen had done before, Shangguan Feng extended only one hand to grab the flying metal rod. That female servant had been between Yang Chen and Shangguan Feng, and now that metal rod coming towards him, seemed like a giant siege crossbow in Shangguan Feng's point of view, and he was going to catch the head of this giant siege crossbow.

Shua!

Just as the iron rod came into contact with his hand Shangguan Feng loudly shouted. Not good. The large impulse almost made his entire body go along with the metal rod's trajectory and fly off. Fortunately Shangguan Feng was alert at all times, so at the most critical time he used his other hand at lightening speed to keep the rod under control, but at the same time his body sank and halted at the same place as before, like a steel cast image of an ancient god.

Despite this, the metal rod within his hand still slipped out of his palm for a length of no less than half a foot, and the violent friction made Shangguan Feng feel a burning hot sensation in the hollow of his palm. But in this short moment, Shangguan Feng had already swiftly destroyed the painstakingly engraved Thousand Jing Talisman at the top of the rod.

Just as the Thousand Jin Talisman was destroyed, the weight of the iron rod suddenly lightened many times and holding it was not that laborious anymore. Its forward momentum had also decreased due to the lower weight. Hence the metal rod was clamped within Shangguan Feng's hands and was unable to budge anymore.

Fortunately, he was able to stop the metal rod at long last, using only his hands with almost eighty percent of his power. Only then was he able to overcome Yang Chen's power and could block his powerful throw. Shangguan Feng knew that it was due to destroying the Thousand Jin Talisman and some cheap tricks, but to the outsiders looking on, it seemed as if he had received Yang Chen's throw, face to face, directly and quite elegantly.

Just as Manager Shangguan relaxed, under his foot, two loud cracking noises arose, as a two foot tile on top of the entrance gate suddenly split open and shattered into many pieces. The force had been too fierce and although Shangguan Feng had already exercised sufficient control over it and had neutralized the impulse at that time, the force still passed on through his feet and the two foot tile of common materials was unable to endure it and immediately shattered.

Hearing this sound, Shangguan Feng immediately knew what had happened without looking. He could not help but smile bitterly, in this exchange between them, Yang Chen had come out as the winner. He himself was an expert at the peak of the qi layer, facing an ordinary person would be degrading his status, but now, even after using eighty percent of his strength, this tile under his feet had still been shattered completely. He had completely lost face now.

“Ah! Not good!”

Yang Chen’s voice came from below, actually he had already subdued that female servant and was facing upwards, watching leisurely, but nevertheless there was not a bit of sincerity when he cried out ‘in fear’ loudly:

“Take care, Manager Shangguan!”

Shangguan Feng wasn’t enraged by Yang Chen’s attitude, as the manager of the Ye Xiu Manor he had seen too many talented

individuals to care about Yang Chen's minor ridicule. Curious, he asked Yang Chen:

“Yang Chen, what kind of miracle medicine did Shi Fairy give you, that you actually have so much strength?”

“How would I know?”

Yang Chen smiled at him, but also did not conceal anything and directly answered him:

“Originally I already had great strength, but after eating the medicine given to me by Shi Fairy it has increased by much, but she did not tell me anything about that medicine.”

After Yang Chen explained all this, Shangguan Feng nodded in his heart.

“He is just an insignificant executioner, how could he recognize the medicinal pellet given to him by Shi Fairy?”

Suddenly he thought of something and he asked Yang Chen again:

“Yang Chen, have you practiced martial arts before?”

“I have followed my county town's experienced military drill master for several days.”

Yang Chen told a half truth. He had indeed practiced martial arts, only he had not followed his town's military drill master. He had actually practiced the heavenly court's secret martial technique which was used to increase the strength of celestial troops and generals, compared to techniques of the mortal world it was several times better.

Listening to Yang Chen's reply, Shangguan Feng's thoughts changed countless times. A common person practicing martial arts, even with great innate power, he could still not have the strength of a thousand jin. The only explanation could be the medicinal pellet given to Yang Chen by Shi Fairy. But if it was just an ordinary relationship, who would give such a precious medicinal pill as present to strangers?

There could be only one reason for this, Yang Chen and Shi Fairy, even if they don't have a very friendly or intimate relationship, should at least have some ties of blood or have some other kind of relationship. Otherwise, if he were replaced by any other person, she would not give away this kind of precious medicinal pill.

Perhaps Chu Heng had also received benefits from others to make things difficult for Yang Chen, but Shangguan Feng did not need to participate in this. Although Chu Heng was an inner disciple, Shi Fairy on the contrary was popular throughout the entire cultivation world and had the reputation of being young and outstanding, both of them could not be mentioned in the same sentence. For Chu Heng to offend Shi Fairy for someone else's friendship, this had to be taken into account very carefully..

“Manager, can these four people now be considered as having lost?”

Just as Shangguan Feng was muttering to himself, he heard Yang Chen’s questioning voice.

Looking at the circumstances below, Shangguan Feng could not help but shake his head. Of the four beaten servants, the first, Shen Da, had been beaten so much, that it was not known whether he was dead or alive. On the face of the one who had been using the peach wooden sword, a fist imprint could still be seen. The other male servant who had flames within his palms looked as if several of his ribs were entirely broken, and the remaining female servant, who had soared in the sky and had finally fallen on the ground, had not yet determined injuries. Nevertheless all four had indeed lost their consciousness.

If this was not called winning, then what is losing? Even if Chu Heng had been here and he had wanted to make Yang Chen lose, in his heart, under such circumstances he would also not be able to say even one word.

“You win!”

Shangguan Feng could only nod.

“That is good!”

Yang Chen didn't raise any objection. Extending his hand to point towards the four people lying on ground he said to Shangguan Feng:

“Manager Shangguan, I will have to trouble you to treat their injuries. Furthermore, seeing this place, I fear I would require a new place to live, so I will have to trouble Manager for the arrangements.

Shangguan Feng was not angered by Yang Chen's commanding tone. He was the manager, so these kinds of matters were just his responsibilities. After nodding, Shangguan Feng asked:

“How about substituting them for a few obedient servants?”

“No need!”

Yang Chen shook his head.

“I have handled these with great difficulty. Exchange these for new ones, only to beat them again?”

Shangguan Feng's speed was very fast and in less than a moment, someone came over at lightening speed to take these four injured and unconscious servants for treatment. Shangguan Feng himself looked after Yang Chen and exchanged his previous residence for a courtyard that was apparently more lavish and refined when compared to the previous one. The servants serving here were already waiting and solemnly welcomed Yang Chen and

Shangguan Feng.

“This Profound Pavilion is the dwelling place of supervising inner disciples, who come to inspect and test the outer preparatory disciples of my Pure Yang Palace.”

Shangguan Feng enthusiastically introduced Yang Chen:

“From now on, for three years, it belongs to you!”

“Manager Shangguan, isn’t this breaking the rules?”

Yang Chen naturally knew about this Profound Pavilion. Unexpectedly Shangguan Feng had arranged this courtyard for Yang Chen to live in. This made Yang Chen unable to say anything, as he had no idea about Shangguan Feng’s intentions.

“This courtyard originally had double the number of servants, including those four servants of yours, after their injuries are treated, they will immediately be transferred here.”

Shangguan Feng nevertheless did not reply to Yang Chen’s question. As if just minding his own business, he said:

“Anyway, you will live here, as no one in the Ye Xiu Manor currently owns it.”

“Manager?”



Yang Chen had no choice but to ask Shangguan Feng again:

“This is not in compliance with the sect rules!”

“What rules? Those are not rules! Usually we are just accustomed to these kinds of arrangements, but it isn’t stated anywhere that we absolutely must follow them. You can relieve your mind and live here. This is not counted as breaking the rules.”

Shangguan Feng indifferently said, showing off right now. After having seen and experienced Yang Chen’s battle prowess earlier, Shangguan Feng had totally changed his attitude:

“Previously, due to Uncle Master Chu Heng’s instructions, I had no choice but to punish you according to his arrangements, but after witnessing your earlier battle, my mind has cleared up.”

“You still haven’t cultivated but already have this kind of strength. If you successfully cultivate to the qi layer or the foundation realm, I don’t know what kind of frightening talent you will become.”

Shangguan Feng, upon seeing Yang Chen’s distrust, slowly explained this to him.

“I think highly of you!”

Just thinking highly of Yang Chen's future, this explanation was not at all sufficient to remove the doubts in Yang Chen's heart. Under these kind of circumstances, if Yang Chen's new privileges were to provoke Chu Heng's anger and he could slyly use some underhanded methods to dispose Yang Chen, that would not be good. Far too many cultivation geniuses have died before maturing, due to various sorts of 'unexpected accidents'.

"You are different from others, you are someone whom even Shi Fairy highly thinks of."

Shangguan Feng continued speaking:

"Even if Greatest Sky Sect's Li Qing Chen feels jealous, he still cannot dare to ask for your life. As for Chu Heng, he would dare even less. He can only use his status as a famous inner disciple to arrange layer after layer of obstructions to hinder your progress, but nothing more. Rules are rules, if you are able to bypass his obstructions, who would dare to repeatedly hinder you."

When Shangguan Feng had started speaking, he had addressed Chu Heng as Uncle Master Chu, but afterwards he directly addressed him by name. Clearly he absolutely resented these plans arranged by Chu Heng.

After discussing to this point, Yang Chen was finally convinced that Shangguan sincerely did not want to cause him harm, but rather, due to Chu Heng's instructions, he had no choice but to act like this. He couldn't do anything about it, as Chu Heng was an inner disciple and also quite an accomplished one at that. He was also skilled at persuasive argument, on one hand claimed wanting

to help Yang Chen temper himself, but on the other he created so many obstructions for Yang Chen and said: ‘I permitted you to enjoy the status of a third qi layer disciple, don’t tell me it is still not enough?’ As for others not daring to teach Yang Chen, this was the problem of other people, what did it have to do with Chu Heng?

Thinking about these things, Yang Chen also let his guard down and lightly nodded, accepting Shangguan Feng’s goodwill in the end.

“Younger Brother Yang must still not have eaten lunch, I will immediately order someone to arrange it!”

Shangguan Feng also became aware that in the future there would be ample time for these things. He had not planned for things to go this way today. So after he finished instructing those servants, he intended to leave directly, but Yang Chen shouted to stop him.

“Younger Brother Yang, do you still have other instructions?”

Shangguan Feng stopped on the spot and laughingly asked.

Yang Chen held out his hand, as if inviting him and asked him to sit down. Two female servants meaningfully glanced at each other, quickly served a fragrant tea and then immediately retreated from the drawing hall.

“Manager Shangguan, do not blame me for talking as an outsider, but if I offend you in any way, I ask Manager to forgive me.”

As soon as Yang Chen opened his mouth, he immediately tried to uttered an excuse for himself, apparently he had planned to say some unpleasant things.

However Shangguan Feng did not have any qualms, so he laughingly replied:

“There is no harm in just speaking!”

“Then I will not be polite, Manager Shangguan!”

Yang Chen cupped his hand in respect towards Shangguan Feng. Afterwards he earnestly said:

“Manager although I still haven’t cultivated yet, I have still practiced martial arts for several days.”

“I saw that, when Manager tried to catch that rod thrown by me, you evidently used just one hand to take care of it, but that was not enough and you had to use both hands in the end. Even if I suppose that you didn’t use your full strength, it still broke a two foot tile under your feet.”

Yang Chen’s words were related to the earlier battle’s last moments, when Shangguan Feng had resolutely received Yang

Chen's rod.

“What do you want to ask, exactly?”

Seeing Yang Chen's earnest words, Shangguan Feng thought Yang Chen was not a simple person. He asked with equal seriousness:

“Please advise me, Younger Disciple Yang!”

“I do not dare!”

Yang Chen hastily interrupted.

“The strategy to estimate an opponent's strength and but retaining an escape route is used very commonly and is entirely understandable. Only some situations require one to stake everything in one go, in a spurt of energy, but feeling fearful and nervous like then, and prudently thinking and calculating a clear method to handle things would rather make this kind of situation a lost cause from the start. Under these situations it might be a better idea to make prompt decisions, overturning the cauldrons and sinking the boat, thinking that this is your moment to shine. Maybe under this kind of irresistible force the enemy will just become incapable of resisting.”

Yang Chen did not dare to give any advice when saying this, but his tone clearly indicated that he was sharing advice. Even the successive contents were all like that.

At the beginning Shangguan Feng only appeared to pay attention, while disapproving within his heart. Yang Chen was using words to teach him a lesson about fighting, was this not insulting him?

Only, the more Shangguan Feng heard, the more serious he became. When Yang Chen started to talk about certain situations, he immediately thought back to when he tried to attack the junction to the foundation stage. Could it be that Yang Chen was giving him advice on how to reach the foundation stage?

“However, when attacking the juncture, if, at the most crucial point, one has no choice but to hold back a portion of his power, then how should one proceed?”

Shangguan Feng couldn't help but ask, as if Yang Chen was some kind of master.

“Pushing a huge boulder takes a large amount of strength.”

Yang Chen wrinkled his brows, using an example to explain:

“However, if you use your full strength to push the boulder, it will be more rapid. If something is obstructing the huge boulder, it would naturally take several times more, or even tenfold more strength. You can definitely preserve strength and slowly push the huge boulder at the top of the juncture, but then you have to add more power if you want to cross the barrier. You might as well push the boulder up and it will help you cross that juncture.”

# Chapter 21 - If You Can't Guide Me, Then I Will Test You

After listening to Yang Chen's words, Shangguan Feng felt as if he had gained enlightenment. Several years of doubt had apparently dispersed. For many years he had listened to the experiences of many experts at the foundation stage and all of them had said that the final juncture was the most difficult. Most of them had to use every method available to be able to break through.

Shangguan Feng had been incessantly pondering for a way to break through, using the experience of his predecessors as basis, but he hadn't been able to succeed. His efforts had always fallen short at the final moment. But that also increasingly affirmed his conclusion, that for the last extremely difficult juncture on building his foundation he would need to retain a portion of his strength for the last big effort. At the very least several foundation stage experts had said that this was the correct strategy.

But, the experiences of others may not be entirely suited for every person, so Shangguan Feng had continuously tried for several years, in the end, exhausting both his body and mind. Ten years of disappointment had made him lose all hope and at last he became completely discouraged and without any hope to reach the foundation stage. From then on, he had diligently taken care of Pure Yang Palace's Ye Xiu Manor, until today.

According to Yang Chen's memories of him in his previous life, Shangguan Feng had finally broken through and reached

foundation stage precisely by using his full strength, without holding back, to pound against the juncture. At that time he had still regretted that, if he had used this kind of method a hundred years ago, maybe he would have entered foundation stage and become an inner disciple much earlier, and would not have wasted two hundred years of missing the most optimal cultivation period.

In this life, since Shangguan Feng had already shown this kind of attitude, Yang Chen did not mind telling him about this information. In any case, making a favourable impression on a foundation stage manager in the Ye Xiu manor was not a bad thing for him. Furthermore, doing this kind of huge favor, which had cost him nothing, there was no reason not to do it.

However Shangguan Feng did not feel like this. Originally he had lost all hope, but now suddenly that flaming desire was once again ignited within his heart. Thinking about Yang Chen's method, he had already dreamed of himself reaching foundation stage. After pondering for a moment, he suddenly got up and deeply thanked Yang Chen.

“Many thanks, Younger Brother Yang, for giving me directions, If I succeed in building my foundation in the future, I will never forget Younger Brother Yang's kindness for guiding me!”

Even though he only said these words, in his heart, Shangguan Feng felt an unspeakable gratitude towards Yang Chen.

“Building foundation?”



Yang Chen pretended to blank out for a moment and then smilingly said:

“Senior Brother Shangguan, we were only discussing about some martial techniques we have experienced, this had no relation with building a foundation. If senior brother had an insight, that is only because of senior brother’s good fortune, it cannot be attributed to me.”

Though Yang Chen had said this, Shangguan Feng didn’t think like that. The more Yang Chen didn’t claim credit for himself, the more pure and good his nature seemed, the more Shangguan Feng felt grateful in his heart.

Feeling delighted, Shangguan Feng didn’t care about anyone else and once again cupped his hands towards Yang Chen to show his thanks.

“Younger Brother Yang, I will immediately go and train in seclusion for one to three months and as soon as I come out, I will personally give directions to you! Other people may not dare to teach a third qi layer disciple, but in any case this old man is still qualified, right?”

“Then I wish for Elder Brother to succeed!”

Yang Chen also did not forget about complimenting Shangguan Feng and soon afterwards he continued speaking:

“Many thanks, Elder Brother Shangguan!”

Unconsciously he had already started calling him as elder brother and not manager.

This time, Shangguan Feng’s actions had become even more rapid. In the evening of the same day, all four servants who injured by Yang Chen were delivered to the Profound Pavilion. The injuries on their bodies had almost recovered, external injuries already couldn’t be seen anymore. It could be assumed that a lot of precious medicines were used for their treatment. In that night, Shangguan Feng arranged everything and hurriedly started his closed door training to build his foundation.

When Shen Da and other three saw Yang Chen again they were not as unruly as before. These four were mere servants, but after the cold reception given to Yang Chen in the morning, when they had these kinds of malicious thoughts, having experienced Yang Chen’s invincible might, where all of them had been beaten unconscious and on top of that, with Shangguan Feng’s repeated warnings, these four did not dare to have any more ill conceived thoughts. When confronting Yang Chen, all of them bowed respectfully and when Yang Chen asked them to do something, none of them dared to disobey.

While Shangguan Feng had entered closed door training, Yang Chen had no choice but to face Chu Heng’s malicious moves again. He had made Yang Chen’s position so high, that everyone who met him had to cup his hands and treat him respectfully, so that Yang Chen could not complain about anything.

Although Yang Chen did not care about learning any fundamental knowledge, as he wouldn't need it, in order to not arouse any suspicion, he could not help but put up appearances, as if he was learning from the beginning. Otherwise, if a person who was filled with political wisdom, could practice pharmacy and could distinguish different medicines proficiently, having near perfect knowledge of geography of stars, was nothing but an executioner, it would definitely arouse suspicions.

Immortal cultivation sects placed extreme importance on teaching the future generations, if Yang Chen were to expose all this knowledge, then he would surely be considered as a spy from another sect, sent to steal Pure Yang Palace's teachings. In that case, it could be said that Chu Heng would surely rejoice for getting rid of Yang Chen, while at the same time rendering a great service for the sect.

Therefore, Yang Chen had to pretend and assume the appearance of an individual learning from the beginning. Naturally, Yang Chen's background as an executioner had already established him as an illiterate person, with no knowledge about most letters. Well, of course he would recognize some letters but in no way would they exceed a hundred.

Shangguan Feng had said that after coming out of seclusion, he would personally teach Yang Chen. But in Yang Chen's eyes, this affair arranged by Shangguan Feng was merely a case of using an extraordinary person in an insignificant position. Using this simple affair in exchange for Yang Chen's huge favor, it really was too cheap.

Next morning, with Shen Da leading the way, Yang Chen once again went to the Book Pavilion, where the preparatory disciples studied. But this time he did not go directly to the pavilion of the preparatory disciples who had joined with him, but rather he came to the pavilion where the disciples who had joined one year earlier than him were studying.

Seeing Yang Chen, the old teacher in the pavilion stopped and cupped his hands towards him:

“Senior Brother Yang, it is a great honor for us that you have come to this Hanlin Pavilion, I suppose this is to give directions to these younger brothers? I invite you to the seat of honor!”

And gave the same excuse as yesterday. Those sitting disciples also all stood up and showed their regards, everything was the same as yesterday without any difference.

“I don’t dare, this Yang is just a newcomer who still doesn’t understand many things. For some things I would like master to provide some guidance!”

Yang Chen reasoned curtly with a humble attitude.

“Huh, I do not dare, do not dare! Who would dare to teach Senior Brother Yang!?”

The old teacher replied with great alarm in an exaggerated manner of speaking, while he continuously moved both hands,

saying:

“I’m not qualified!”

“Are you not able to guide me?”

Seeing this kind of careless manner, Yang Chen’s tone immediately changed.

“Absolutely do not dare! Senior Brother Yang!”

The old teacher still continued with this kind of manner:

“Yang Chen are a third qi layer disciple, how can we dare to teach Yang Chen? Absolutely not!”

“Humph!”

Yang Chen coldly snorted.

“Since this is the case, I also will not make things difficult for you. Only I fear that you are lazy and incompetent and will hamper the student’s progress, so first I will test you.”

Bang!

A book was thrown in front of the old teacher and Yang Chen

pointed a large golden sword at the seat. Slashing it deeply he said: “Read every letter of every sentence from this book aloud and then explain it to me, I will listen and check whether you have made a mistake or not!”

After Yang Chen said this, no matter whether it was the old teacher or the preparatory disciples, all of them were the same as Shen Da and foolishly stared at Yang Chen. Test him? What is this?

Only, no matter who it was, no one dared to disagree. Yang Chen had been given the status of a third qi layer disciple, this had been decided and passed down by the accomplished disciple Chu Heng and at the same time properly arranged by Manager Shangguan. Who would dare to dishonor him?

Since he was a third qi layer outer disciple, naturally he had the authority to inspect and test other preparatory disciples and even had the authority to inspect these teachers. But, if this happened, were Uncle Master Chu’s arrangements still useful?

The first one to respond was actually Shen Da. Ever since Yang Chen had ruthlessly taught him a lesson he did not dare to have any other thoughts in his mind, adding to that Shangguan Feng’s repeated warnings, Shen Da already understood the circumstances.

Of course, the most important point of all of this was, that this action of Yang Chen didn’t break Uncle Master Chu’s established rules at all and was completely fair and reasonable, so even if he was here, he would also be unable to say anything. Hence, Shen Da

shouted loudly towards the teacher:

“Young Master Yang has commanded something, are you still not complying?”

Shen Da was someone among servants who had prestige, that old teacher didn't dare to neglect this shout and hastily picked up the book thrown by Yang Chen and started reading loudly.

Since he had already become aware that Chu Heng's arrangements had no meaning now, the old teacher also meaningfully glanced at him and not only started reading slowly and loudly, but also explained very clearly and logically, showing no signs of attempting to use crafty tricks.

The other preparatory disciples looked at Yang Chen, it seemed that they had also changed a little bit. Since Yang Chen could use this kind of method to break his obstructions and in addition to that could also enjoy a higher status when compared to others, including experience many natural resources, maybe he would very quickly rise above everyone. However no one could say anything, so all of them were calmly listening to the old teacher reading the book, acting as if they were not able to understand it very well the first time.

Yang Chen held a book in his hand, it was the same as the book in the old teacher's hand and he was pretending to turn the pages and read, but in the eyes of other people it seemed as if he trying to remember something and they actually did not dare to interrupt him. Yesterday, Yang Chen had fought with four third qi layer servants alone, three of whom had cultivation tools, and one of

them furthermore cultivated blazing palms. All of them were beaten by Yang Chen. This news has already spread, so naturally no one dared to disregard him.

From next day, every day Yang Chen would just change the teacher and the book. Every time a teacher would be forced to read a book for him and explain it, using the pompous reason of testing them to check whether they were competent or not. In every case the individual whom he demanded to test had to read books for a day or half a day and eventually all of them were made to read and explain one or two books before giving up.

Very quickly every teacher became used to this kind of thing. Firstly, Yang Chen hadn't broken any rules, and secondly, before entering seclusion, Shangguan Feng had taken care of this and had specifically instructed all teachers to help out Yang Chen as much as they could. So they had done as much as possible in accordance to Yang Chen's request, without creating much problems.

At the same, while Yang Chen was sending off the teachers for medicine debation, Du Qian appeared in the Profound Pavilion. After sending them off, Yang Chen turned around just to discover Du Qian looking at him with an expression that was a smile, yet not a smile.

“Uncle Master Du!”

Yang Chen hastily greeted him according to proper ceremony, it was a rule that ceremonies could not be disregarded.



“Originally I had thought that Chu Heng would give specific directions to make things difficult for you, but now it seems you are doing alright?”

Du Qian was very appreciative of Yang Chen, perhaps it was because Yang Chen’s background as an executioner and his own status as a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall were very similar. Furthermore at that time, Yang Chen had completely destroyed Chu Heng’s reputation, so until now Du Qian had believed that Yang Chen’s life was not very satisfactory, but after coming here that belief had completely changed.

Du Qian then asked:

“Has Chu Feng revoked your status?”

“My status is still the same!”

Yang Chen replied with a somewhat self deprecating smile.

“Then why did that teacher dare to to teach medicine to you?”

Du Qian did not understand, he originally thought to help Yang Chen, but it seemed as if Yang Chen no longer required it.

“Teach medicine to this disciple? No, no, no! Uncle Master Du, you are mistaken!”

Yang Chen seriously shook his finger while continuing:

“He wasn’t teaching medicine to me, Uncle Master Du!”

“I have seen it with my own eyes, how can it be wrong?”

Du Qian laughingly scolded him, but soon after that he asked:

“He didn’t teach you to debate about medicine, then what? Were you teaching him?”

“More or less, Uncle Master Du! Hehe!”

Yang Chen laughed.

“He was not teaching this disciple, this disciple was inspecting him, watching whether he is knowledgeable of his topics, so that fellow brothers are not misguided. You are also aware that, since Disciple has a higher status than his fellow disciples, naturally this Disciple was asked to take responsibility to check and inspect. I reluctantly had to accept this affair. But I will seriously test them, so as to avoid some people from cheating others for their personal gains and neglect the future of many fellow brothers.”

Hearing Yang Chen speak these kinds of shameless words proudly, Du Qian, whose nature was quite honest, could not help but smile. Shaking his head, he disappeared.

Even though it was out of question for Du Qian to provide much help to Yang Chen, there would always be a feeling of familiarity. Although this visit by Du Qian did not serve any purpose, seeing Yang Chen getting the same opportunities as the other disciples made him feel quite relieved. Since there was not much of a problem, he also didn't tangle much and turned around to leave.

Yang Chen was learning very rapidly, at least in the eyes of others this was so. No matter which book it was, as long as it had been read and explained once, he would immediately remember it. In a brief period of two months, all of the introductory books on learning characters, learning pharmacy, distinguishing medicine and learning the geography of stars, which the preparatory disciples had to learn in three years, were already studied by him.

While the other preparatory disciples, who had entered with Yang Chen, were slowly learning to read and write characters, Yang Chen already stood at the gate of the achievement room at the core of the Ye Xiu Manor. Here, two outer disciples were stationed at all times to guard the starting cultivation techniques for those who entered the sect, but it was highly unlikely that it held any other cultivation techniques. To experience the cultivation of high level techniques, he would first have to become an official outer disciple, only then could he go to learn from a successful outer disciple personally.

“This one is called Yang Chen, I have come today to enter the cultivation room to find a suitable method to cultivate, I ask for these elder brothers to help me out!”

Yang Chen said with a bow to the outer disciples who were

guarding the cultivation room.

“Yang Chen? I know you, you have just entered the Ye Xiu Manor some days ago. Just after these couple of days you want cultivation techniques? You think too poorly of my Pure Yang Palace!”

The relationship between the disciple who was guarding the cultivation room and Sun Hai Jing was pretty good, so he had already heard about Yang Chen beating Sun Hai Jing and was thus deliberately trying to make things difficult for Yang Chen.

“Do you really believe that you have already become a third qi layer disciple?”

Yang Chen still hadn't replied, when suddenly within the Ye Xiu Manor there was a burst of heavenly energy, powerfully rising in an imposing manner. Soon afterwards, it suddenly withdrew, following which a strong spiritual awareness swept through the place, affecting anyone who came in contact with it.

“Which Uncle Master has succeeded in building a foundation?”

Seeing the circumstances, that one outer disciple asked, being very surprised, but Yang Chen clearly understood who it was.

# Chapter 22 - Yin Five Phases Complete

Ye Xiu Manor was the most outer layer of the Pure Yang Palace and it was also the region where all of the new disciples with spirit roots began to build their foundations. Some distance apart from there, the outer disciples resided in the Nine Earth Manor. But suddenly someone had succeeded in building their foundation here, this was simply impossible in the eyes of those outer disciples. Someone who had such a cultivation had still not become an outer disciple?

Despite being pleasantly surprised, the outer disciple stationed at the gate did not dare to be certain. If he had not already experienced the eruption of the heavenly strength at an earlier time when another senior had succeeded in building his foundation, he would have not dared to determine that this was someone who had successfully reached the foundation stage.

In a flash, at the summit of the Ye Xiu manor the silhouette of a person appeared. The silhouette seemed to be confirming the direction and then directly flew towards Yang Chen's side. Before the person himself had appeared, his voice had already reached Yang Chen's and the guarding outer disciple's ears.

“Ha Ha Ha Ha, my brother Yang, if it were not for you guiding me, I still would not have dared to accept that I will see this day!”

Shangguan Feng had just come out of seclusion and immediately searched for Yang Chen's location and hurriedly flew to here. He had already succeeded in building his foundation, so flying was

nothing difficult for him and after reaching the foundation stage, the first person he wanted to meet was precisely Yang Chen.

Although he had met Yang Chen only two times, Shangguan Feng had sensed an incredible affinity with Yang Chen. If he had followed Chu Heng's instructions and had secretly suppressed Yang Chen, then he would not have this feeling right now. Because of Yang Chen he was already a foundation stage expert and an inner disciple, he now had the means to resist Chu Heng. He wanted to assist Yang Chen in his matters, but when all was said and done, the things Chu Heng had done were best kept under the table, so as to not affect sect's reputation.

Seeing Shangguan Feng appear, the guarding outer disciple's mouth opened widely, he wanted to say something, but ultimately he wasn't able to speak out. Who could have anticipated that the one who had succeeded in building his foundation was Shangguan Feng, the manager of Ye Xiu Manor, who had been deemed as too hopeless to reach the foundation stage?

“Greetings, Uncle Master Shangguan!”

The guarding disciple ultimately used ‘Uncle Master’ to address him, only he did not seem as delighted as Yang Chen.

“En!”

Shangguan Feng faintly responded, but did not pay any more attention to the guarding disciple afterwards and turned to Yang Chen, asking:

“Brother Yang, what do you want from here?”

“Elder Brother Shangguan!”

Yang Chen didn't address him as Uncle Master according to the seniority, but rather took the opportunity when Shangguan Feng had affectionately called him as brother, to address him as elder brother and said:

“I have come here to look for a cultivation method of the sect, that is suitable for me.”

“Then go in and choose!”

Shangguan Feng waved his large hand and without raising any objections allowed him to pass. He was still the manager of Ye Xiu Manor and hadn't left his post yet, also, as he had successfully reached the foundation stage, his influence had greatly increased. The guarding disciple who was continuously expressing his opposition didn't even dare to speak a word in front of him and obediently got out of the way.

“For selecting a cultivation method I will not go in with you, as I could easily misguide you.”

Before Yang Chen had set out to go into the room, Shangguan Feng repeatedly warned him:

“Remember, you have a fire spirit root, so select a fire attributed cultivation method.”

“Many thanks for your guidance, Elder Brother!”

Yang Chen cupped his hands towards Shangguan Feng to express his thanks. Although he didn't guide him inside, despite owing Yang Chen a huge favor, these words of Shangguan Feng were all very precious and they showed his support and concern for Yang Chen. Even if he hadn't said anything, Yang Chen naturally understood already knew what he should or should not do.

Watching Yang Chen enter the Achievements Room, the guarding disciple almost opened his mouth to say something, but ultimately chose to shut up in front of Shangguan Feng. Anyway, Shangguan Feng had already reached the foundation stage, so in few days he would have to leave. By the time the newly appointed manager arrived, Yang Chen would still have no one to guide him regarding the matters of cultivation and he was also not someone who could read some random foundation books by himself, quickly understand their points and succeed easily. Especially for those who had just entered the sect, they needed to stay at the Ye Xiu Manor for at least three years, so when the time came, Yang Chen would understand everything.

Although the Pure Yang Palace was a small sect, it still had the complete Yin and Yang five phases cultivation method. Since all of these cultivation methods were prepared for preparatory disciples, all of them were copied in a book rather than a jade slip. Preparatory disciples still hadn't learned to cultivate and produce spiritual awareness, so even if the cultivation techniques were on a



jade slip, these preparatory disciples would be unable to read them.

Yang Chen vaguely remembered the layout of the Achievements Room, after coming in, he remembered everything completely with just one glance around. Without any hesitation he directly went to the area where fire attributed cultivation methods were kept and selected the fourth book from the region, naturally just for the sake of keeping up appearances. In his previous life he knew the fire attributed cultivation methods well, so in this life he had no need to select fire attributed cultivation methods again.

Soon after that, Yang Chen resolutely moved towards the region having the earth attributed cultivation methods. To go from one region to another In the Achievement Room, one had to pass through a magical array and the people outside would absolutely not be aware of the cultivation method chosen by the person. They were not even aware of anything that the candidate did inside, which was quite convenient for Yang Chen.

Cultivators would generally allow their fate to choose, they generally chose any cultivation method just to give it a try, or one they had received beforehand. This was especially the case for those who had just entered the sect as preparatory disciples. Under normal conditions it was very rare that someone insisted on choosing a particular method. Even if it was the younger generation who had been cultivating in the sect since their childhood, they were also like this. Only after reaching the Foundation Stage would they choose a better cultivation practice. This was also why the room was without any supervision.

Yang Chen found his Yin five phases cultivation method with

ease. Finally he turned towards the metal attributed region to similarly find a book for metal attributed cultivation method.

Yang Chen didn't bring these other two cultivation method books out of the room, but rather memorized them inside. Due to his spiritual awareness and being reincarnated, Yang Chen possessed a highly retentive memory. In just a short moment he remembered all of the key secrets of the two cultivation methods.

In his previous life, apart from fire attributed cultivation methods Yang Chen did not care about the other attributes. Although his brain had some impression of the other cultivation methods, it was only because after his reincarnation, when he received these cultivation methods from the immortals he executed, he had used his spiritual awareness to memorize them but he had never used them before. Naturally in his past life he would not go around and deliberately collect an entire set of Yin and Yang five phases cultivation method, as he was not a sect leader, so he didn't have to worry about it.

But now Yang Chen had all of the starting portions for the Yin and Yang five phases cultivation secrets. Next he would have to cultivate the Yin five phases cultivation methods together with the Yang five phases cultivation methods at the same time, so that they would be able to restrain each other and reach a perfect balance. Of course, this was Yang Chen's final target. Yang Chen's currently goal was to circulate ten cultivation methods of Yin and Yang, so that they would be able to restrain each other simultaneously and have not just the five phases, but also Yin and Yang attain a perfect equilibrium, only then would he be able to achieve his goal.

Until then, perhaps Yang Chen would reach the boundary of the first qi layer! However now that he had already gotten the cultivation method, he could openly begin his cultivation. This was a huge step towards accomplishing his dream to pay his respects under his master again. Maybe, very soon Yang Chen would be able to see his master's beautiful face, and become her disciple again.

Everything Yang Chen was doing at the moment was just to pay his respects and study under his master again. As for his personal enemies, he had ignored them for the time being. Even if he wanted to go after them, he was only a minor qi layer disciple who had just joined a sect, how could he single-handedly kill disciples of the Greatest Sky Sect? Only an idiot would come up with such a moronic idea.

Seeing Yang Chen come out with a fire attributed cultivation method, Shangguan Feng didn't say anything. It was just an introductory cultivation method, nothing more and it didn't have any great merit or demerit. It would only allow the new disciple to feel qi and circulate it, become aware of the spiritual influence of heaven and earth, and also connect with it and at the same time produce the necessary spiritual awareness. These cultivation methods were different only in the name the big cultivation sects chose for them. No matter which one Yang Chen chose, all were the same. As long as it was fire attributed, it would do.

When Yang Chen was choosing a cultivation method, Shangguan Feng stood like a guard at the entrance of the Achievement Room, calmly waiting for him. His conversation with Yang Chen, using Elder Brother and Brother to address each other, in addition to Shangguan Feng's straightforward manner, already explained

many things. Even if the guarding disciple still wanted to play some tricks, he could not find any means to do so and could only wait calmly with Shangguan Feng for Yang Chen to come out.

“Let’s go to the Profound Pavilion, I will explain this cultivation method once for your benefit!”

Shangguan Feng snatched, and took hold of the cultivation method. After browsing through it once, he understood it clearly. Hardly waiting for Yang Chen to express his views, he directly turned around and disappeared with Yang Chen from the Achievement Room’s entrance.

The disciple guarding the Achievement Room did not dare to neglect this and immediately told the other disciple to go and notify the Nine Earth Manor. Having Shangguan Feng’s support, if Chu Heng still wanted to stop Yang Chen, it would just be a joke.

“Brother Yang, since you don’t have spiritual awareness, you can just listen to my explanation.”

Shangguan Feng began to read that book of the fire attributed cultivation method for Yang Chen to study it, once. Soon after that, he also began to explain every word in every sentence.

Although Yang Chen had learned this cultivation method long ago and he could even recite it by heart, at this moment he still had no choice but to assume a sincere appearance and listen.

Shangguan Feng became very delighted, he was well aware that on the path of cultivation, apart from the natural talent, the most important thing was one's own perception and hard work. A person with a spirit root of great value could naturally cultivate easily and become an expert. The comprehension of different cultivation method, as well realizing the boundary of every realm was different for every person. Many individuals who had a spirit root were eliminated only because of this reason. This three year period was to test the aptitude of every large sect's preparatory disciples. If one's perception was not good, then his hard work would be in vain.

Yang Chen understood Shangguan Feng's intention clearly, plus he also needed this kind of justification to cover up his abnormal cultivation speed. Therefore, going along with Shangguan Feng's idea, he stayed within the Profound Pavilion for several days.

Next, after Yang Chen clearly understood the cultivation method's secrets with the help of Shangguan Feng's initiation, he started the so called 'first time' cultivation. Naturally that was only a façade to show Shangguan Feng, underneath he started to cultivate the Three Purities Secrets and was learning to use the second cultivation secret for a week. Only after the week was over did he open his eyes to stop cultivating.

Nearly no one had been able to succeed the first time they cultivate, naturally Yang Chen was also 'not an exception'. As soon as Yang Chen appeared from the quiet room in the Profound Pavilion after the cultivation period was over, Shangguan Feng walked towards him, even leaving his own training he had hurriedly come to ask with his face full of expectation:

“How do you feel?”

“I can dimly sense a trace of qi in the air.”

Yang Chen had previous experience about it, so naturally he was aware of what capacity would make Shangguan Feng happy while not arousing his suspicion at the same time.

“Not bad, not bad, you can feel the qi in just one try, even if it was someone with better innate talent, he could still not have done better.”

Shangguan Feng seemed exceptionally happy.

“It seems my last few day’s effort haven’t gone to waste.”

“Many thanks, Elder Brother!”

Yang Chen laughingly expressed his thanks. Afterwards he quickly moved towards Shangguan Feng and asked:

“Elder Brother, when do you intend to depart from Ye Xiu Manor?”

Shangguan did not hide anything and directly told Yang Chen everything:

“Since I have already succeeded in building my foundation, I had already informed the seniors about this a few days ago and they have already urged me many times to come and pay my respects and enter the inner courtyard, but I have intentionally delayed it many times, so as to give directions to you. Now that you can comprehend it by yourself, it is also the time for me to go, finally.”

Yang Chen had already anticipated these kind of circumstances. Shangguan Feng had reached the foundation stage, so naturally he would become an inner disciple and Ye Xiu Manor would surely get a new manager.

Fortunately, Shangguan Feng had visited here before leaving, this actually saved a lot of trouble for Yang Chen. Afterwards even if Yang Chen’s cultivation was a little bit extraordinary, it could all be attributed to Shangguan Feng’s previous guidance.

“After I go, Brother you also need not be afraid and endure silently, that Chu Heng is an inner disciple, now I am also one. Furthermore, a few days ago, Senior Brother Du had also come to see you. If that Chu Heng keeps on making things difficult for a preparatory disciple, I am afraid he too will not be able to stay in the Pure Yang Palace, so you can feel relieved.”

Shangguan continued telling Yang Chen:

“No matter who the new manager is, I will tell him to attend to you as much as he can, so that you can continue living like you have these past few days and no one will restrict you!”

“Congratulations, Elder Brother, and many thanks, Elder Brother!”

Yang Chen would also not betray Shangguan Feng’s friendship. In his past life, Shangguan Feng had been someone who valued his friends and in this life, since fate had brought them together, he would help Shangguan Feng. Although Shangguan Feng still had to leave for the inner court, afterwards they would become even closer friends. Immortal cultivation was a long road and there would be enough time later on, so he was not very anxious.

After speaking with him, Shangguan Feng at once departed from the Ye Xiu Manor, without stopping anywhere. After resting, Yang Chen also entered the quiet room for cultivation. He had to make others feel that he was hardworking and diligent.

Without any other people by his side, Yang Chen finally stopped limiting himself and truly began to cultivate. The first method he cultivated was precisely that fire attributed cultivation method.

He was already so familiar with this cultivation method, he could not do any better in it. Without any hindrances he succeeded in cultivating it in the first try. In his body, fire attributed spirit power started circulating around.

Following which he cultivated the Yin cultivation methods of the five phases one by one. In his previous life he had no contact with it and only had experience of the Yang cultivation methods of the five phases. In each of the cultivation methods, he spent only a few days of time before he perfectly cultivated it.



Every single day, Yang Chen only stopped to rest for a short time and then returned to the room to cultivate. Except the few servants in the Profound Pavilion, other people did not even see him. This pattern continued for about half a month.

But this was still not sufficient. If Yang Chen's cultivation suddenly appeared to be at the first qi layer, this would appear very fast to other people. But he had already planned for this. Again continuing in the same manner, he directly cultivated the Yin Five Phases and circulated them, so that he could restrain his strength. Afterwards, carefully keeping the Yin and Yang Five phases secrets under control, he cultivated them under the same circumstances.

Until the Yin and Yang Five Phases secrets could be cultivated and could simultaneously attain a perfect equilibrium, Yang Chen estimated that he would have finally entered the first qi layer by then. Thus when this happened, the timing would be very good and people would not feel any suddenness, nor would they think that he was stupid.

# Chapter 23 - The New Manager Also Cultivates

After deciding on his plans, just as Yang Chen was about to rest and order Shen Da to prepare food, suddenly something disturbed his thoughts. Letting his spiritual awareness drift, he quickly discovered someone hurriedly flying towards the Profound Palace, and his cultivation was at least at the eight qi layer or above.

To be able to fly over the Ye Xiu Manor and have such a high cultivation, his identity was clear. This was surely the new manager of the Ye Xiu Manor. At this moment he was hastily flying there, obviously he had been informed that Yang Chen had finally come out of seclusion.

There was a rule that when cultivating in the cultivation room, if not for a very urgent matter, no one was allowed to disturb the cultivation of that person. Since the new senior disciple took his post, Yang Chen had never visited him. Clearly this new manager wanted to show his anger and that was the only reason why he would rush to come here so fast at this time to meet him, or maybe he wanted to use Yang Chen as an example to show his strength.

Yang Chen suddenly thought of something and fished out a thousand year old Profound Yang Fruit from his Achievement Ring. With a simple slash he divided it into two pieces, the pulp on the inside was bright red, resembling the colour of blood. He took a bite out of the core and began to chew it loudly. Around this time, a man's silhouette had already appeared at the entrance gate, just in time to look at this action.

Wang Yuan was Ye Xiu Manor's newly appointed manager and was also recommended by several Uncle Master of the Luminous Moon Hall, he was going to be responsible for handing out cultivation resources and deciding if the preparatory disciples had met the requirements for becoming outer disciples. The original manager, Shangguan Feng had successfully reached the foundation stage and turned into an inner disciple, so he was chosen to be the next manager of the Ye Xiu Manor according to this logic.

When the newly appointed manager had arrived, everyone in the Ye Xiu Manor had gone to welcome him. Whether it was the preparatory disciples or the servants, all of them had greeted him, only a few individuals were exceptions. But they were all above the manager and when the manager was taking office, they were all cultivating so it was no wonder that they had neglected him.

Naturally, a majority of those people had paid a visit to the new manager after their cultivation had ended, this kind of behaviour made manager Wang Yuan quite pleased. However, from his arrival until now, one individual had not appeared before him and that was precisely Yang Chen.

With regards to Yang Chen, Wang Yuan had a huge headache. This time, Luminous Moon Hall's Merit Transferring Disciple, Chu Heng had urged him repeatedly to use small tricks on Yang Chen and make sure that he would not be able to reach the first qi layer in these three years and be demoted to a servant. However, his predecessor and foundation stage expert Shangguan Feng had also already met with him and told him that he must treat Yang Chen very well, so that he would not suffer any grievances in any way.

As soon as he took office, Wang Yuan clearly understood the attention Shangguan Feng paid towards Yang Chen. Not only did he live in the biggest residence, the Profound Pavilion, all by himself with the highest number of servants, he was also provided with the status of a third qi layer disciple. If this was not paying attention, then what was?

But Wang Yuan quickly realized that the status of a third qi layer disciple was given by Chu Heng for his own benefit. Wang Yuan also quickly gained all of the information about the events how Yang Chen had offended him. Afterwards, Chu Heng wanted to get revenge but also feared that people would speak about his immoral character, so he had no choice but to use this kind of trick.

But, since he had become aware that Yang Chen had received guidance from Shangguan Feng and had used the trick of 'testing teachers' to overcome Chu Heng's obstructions, Wang Yuan already realized that those hindrances of Chu Heng were virtually non-existent for Yang Chen. Later, if Yang Chen was not stupid, becoming an outer disciple was already within his grasp.

However, the way he would treat Yang Chen would still depend on how Yang Chen treated him. If Yang Chen was tactful and discreet while facing him, then everything would be fine, but if Yang Chen talked arrogantly, then it would not be a surprise if Wang Yuan used small tricks on him. An eight qi layer master like him, dealing with a preparatory disciple who had not even reached the first qi layer, even if Yang Chen had the support of ten thousand gods behind him it would still not be enough to save him.

When he received news that Yang Chen had come out, Wang Yuan dashed throughout the whole journey to come there. Just as he was about to enter, he saw a scene which almost caused his soul to fall apart.

Yang Chen was holding something which absolutely resembled a Profound Yang Fruit, pulling it apart with his hands, he put it into his mouth to eat, with juices still dripping. Wang Yuan didn't even need to come closer, he could already sense the formidable spirit power accumulated in the peel thrown by Yang Chen.

“This, this is.....”

Wang Yuan scuttled forward with a big stride to catch the peel, that was conveniently thrown by Yang Chen in his direction, with his hands. He carefully observed it and determined that this was definitely a Profound Yang Fruit and not just an ordinary one, but a fully developed, thousand year matured Profound Yang Fruit.

A thousand year old Profound Yang Fruit! Unexpectedly Yang Chen was treating it like it was nothing, pulling it apart with his hands and throwing it into his mouth. At this moment, Wang Yuan's heart felt even more pain than if he had been cut by someone. What sort of wastrel would think of the eating the Profound Yang Fruit uncooked, and would even throw away its skin after peeling? This thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, if refined into a foundation pill could directly promote someone to the foundation stage and was also able to remove all of the likely and unlikely problems!

Clasping both of his hands around the pulp of the fruit, Yang

Chen still looked like before, with the juices still dripping from his mouth. At this moment Wang Yuan hated Yang Chen so much, he wanted to kick this wastrel from the mountain and see how far he would roll. Wang Yuan caught the two fruit peels and resentfully asked Yang Chen:

“Do you know what this is?”

“I don’t know, only it was quite delicious, Ah!”

Yang Chen replied, seeming disappointed that nothing of the fruit was left. He even extended his tongue to lick his lips, as if trying to get the aftertaste of the sweet pulp of the Profound Yang Fruit.

“You don’t?”

Wang Yuan almost roared:

“Don’t tell me you have not learned about different herbs?”

“I haven’t learned anything, because nobody would teach me!”

Yang Chen innocently replied to Wang Yuan. Using a kind of tone which could make people really angry, he leisurely said:

“If I go to ask other people, they are not able to inform me. Oh wait, who are you?”

Only then had Wang Yuan remembered his purpose for coming here and at the same time, when he heard Yang Chen's words, in his heart he secretly became resentful towards Chu Heng for causing hindrances to trap Yang Chen. If it were not for him stopping Yang Chen from learning about different herbs, how could Yang Chen have destroyed this kind of precious herb? If he could have used this foundation pill for himself then he could have easily become an inner disciple!

"I am Wang Yuan, Ye Xiu Manor's newly appointed manager."

Wang Yuan finally pushed down his anger and told him of his identity. Even if he had not said it, Yang Chen would still have known. In the future this Wang Yuan would also become an inner disciple and he would then rise to become Luminous Moon Hall's number two.

"So this is actually the newly appointed manager, I feel so honored by your arrival, so disrespectful of me!"

Yang Chen hastily cupped his hands, admitting his sin. Then he ordered:

"Bring, Tea!"

When Shen Da had finally brought the tea, Yang Chen directly threw the peel towards him and said:

“Shen Da, put that peel away, don’t embarrass us in front of manager Wang Yuan!”

Shen Da hesitated for a moment when seeing Wang Yuan’s reluctant expression, before finally letting go of the two fruit peels in his hands. When Shen Da put them on the tray and carried it inside, Yang Chen smilingly said:

“I found this fruit on the road when I was coming to join the sect, it was nothing special, it just had a delicious taste. If Manager Wang also wants to eat some of this fruit, then give me the permission to go out. I will get some of these tasty fruits for Manager Wang again.”

Hearing this, Wang Yuan’s eyes opened wide, unexpectedly there were more of this thousand year Profound Yang Fruit?

Listening to Yang Chen’s tone, not only were there more of these thousand year Profound Yang Fruits, but it also seemed as if Yang Chen had been eating them incessantly. This time, Wang Yuan also understood the reason why Yang Chen’s brute force surpassed disciples at the third qi layer. Ah! Eating the pulp of these thousand years old Profound Yang Fruits, who knew what magical effects it would have?

Although Shen Da was just a servant, he still had very good common knowledge. When he heard Yang Chen’s instructions, he believed it was some ordinary peel. But after seeing manager Wang Yuan’s broken hearted look, he thought more about it. Looking closely at the two peels, characteristics of different herbs flashed through his mind rapidly and after some time, he finally somewhat



determined what this thing was. Although he did not dare to be sure, looking at Wang Yuan's appearance, the remaining little bit of doubt disappeared.

Compared with manager Wang Yuan's appearance, Shen Da's expression looked even more unbearable. This peel was definitely of the Profound Yang Fruit and this fruit had only been skinned a long time after it had matured, Shen Da lifelessly stood up. Carrying the tray he just stood at the same place, both eyes fixed on the peel, without moving an inch.

This Profound Yang Fruit's peel had three tenths of the medicinal power of a Profound Yang Fruit inside, even though it was not enough to manufacture foundation pills, the remaining medicinal power was still more than enough to manufacture a few extremely effective yang qi pills. Using these few yang qi pills, maybe he would be able to get past the third qi layer bottleneck and enter the fourth qi layer.

Was such a thing really just given to him? Hearing Yang Chen's opinion, it was obviously so. However, Shen Da did not dare to believe it. His mind went buzzing until he heard Yang Chen's voice again.

Ten thousand year Profound Yang Fruits, there were still more! Shen Da's whole body shook on the spot and he blankly stood rooted to the ground, Wang Yuan was also stunned, not knowing what to say anymore. As for his original intentions for coming here, he had already locked and thrown them far away. What rebellious attitude, what consideration for elder brother Chu Heng's honor? Where would such a truthful and honest deal for a

Ten Thousand Year Profound Yang Fruit be then?

Even if Wang Yuan was already at the eighth qi layer, he still had to stand up and gasp for breath several times, only then was he able to control his emotions, raising his head to look at Yang Chen he asked:

“These words, are you really not joking?”

Both happiness and alarm were spread across his face, yet he did not dare to be really convinced.

“This is just a fruit, nothing more, getting more of it is not a big deal.”

Yang Chen was laughing in his heart, but he nevertheless continued expertly:

“Manager Wang, if you need them, I will again ask you provide me with the permission to set out on a journey. If I did not have the confidence, I would not have dared to promise Manager Wang to get these fruits.”

After Yang Chen finished speaking, as if he was afraid that Wang Yuan would not trust him, he raised his hand to pledge:

“After I swear on my heart’s devil, Manager will surely not doubt me anymore, right?”

Hearing Yang Chen unexpectedly swear on his heart's devil, Wang Yuan did not have any more doubts. What every cultivator feared most was an abnormal heart, especially this kind of a big oath. In case he made an oath on his heart's devil and his journey had no results, then the devil in his heart would grow inside of him and his soul would have no more place to go. That's why ordinary cultivators would generally not dare to swear an oath on their heart's devil.

In Yang Chen's opinion, the value of one Profound Yang Fruit was incomparable, if, in return, this Wang Yuan was able to show as much consideration as Shangguan Feng. Then Yang Chen would be able to spend these days in the Ye Xiu Manor with ease. Also, Yang Chen did not mind giving him one fruit. Perhaps to other people it was quite precious, but Yang Chen had more than several thousands of them on his body and could obviously treat them just as a delicious fruits and nothing more.

“Good! Younger Disciple Yang, if you have any problems in this Ye Xiu Manor, just find me!”

Wang Yuan directly put his hand on his chest to pledge:

“As long as your request is not too excessive, this Wang will not decline it.”

“Manager Wang, can I ask something? What is this fruit in the end?”

Yang Chen smiled and somewhat cunningly asked him.

If Yang Chen had not sworn the oath on his heart's devil, Wang Yuan could still find some means to keep the Profound Yang Fruit a secret, but now he absolutely could not do so, since the servant, Shen Da, was also present at the moment, so he started explaining:

“This is a thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, which is used as the main ingredient to manufacture foundation stage pills. If this Wang had that ten thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, I would have been able to reach the foundation stage within the next ten years. Still, many thanks, Younger Disciple Yang, for your generosity!”

“You are too kind!”

Yang Chen pleasantly replied. Within his mind, he was already aware that if there was no accident, then as long as this Wang Yuan managed the Ye Xiu Manor, no one would disturb him. Also, under the guise of receiving guidance from Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan, even if he cultivated rapidly, it would not raise doubt in other people. After all, not everyone could treat a thousand year Profound Yang Fruit as if it were just a fruit to eat.

Wang Yuan quickly took his leave, but not before he gave some sort of guidance to Yang Chen. Even though he had rushed here in a rage, ultimately when he left, he had a large grin spread across his face. Yang Chen had just used a Profound Yang Fruit to achieve an effortless victory for himself. His initial plan to make a show of strength had instead turned into a joyous occasion.

Chu Heng's arrangements no longer had any significance, or at least within the Ye Xiu Manor they had no meaning. The manager had already fallen under Yang Chen and the rest of the people also did not dare to talk rudely to Yang Chen, regardless of Chu Heng's instructions. Now Yang Chen was above all of the people in the Ye Xiu Manor and could do whatever he wanted.

It was just that Yang Chen had no time to waste on these pointless affairs. The sooner he rose to the foundation stage, the sooner Yang Chan could pay his respects under his master and the sooner he could plan for a good way to deal with her matters, where did he have time to waste?

Shen Da had been fortunate to the extreme, after receiving the two peels of the Profound Yang Fruit, he coincidentally also found someone among the servants who could concoct basic pills and very low-level yang qi pills, but he could still concoct quite a few of them. Although he could not monopolize both of the peels just gaining one would still be an enormous profit, at least now they could both dream of reaching the fourth layer. Knowing that these benefits had come from Yang Chen and also seeing the behaviour of Wang Yuan towards Yang Chen, he, together with the other servants started serving Yang Chen more obediently to completely satisfy Yang Chen.

After settling the dispute with manager Wang, Yang Chen once again immersed himself into his crazy cultivation schedule. Since he had the experience and the foundation of the Yang five phases, to simultaneously practice Yin five phases he merely had to spend a month's time. But he had always failed to grasp the main points of practicing both Yin and Yang five phases simultaneously, so

even if Yang Chen had formidable spirit power, he had still only succeeded once in the last three months because of a fluke.

After the first few tries, Yang Chen understood that to run, he first had to learn how to walk. After that, he tried to seek experience and look for a way and eventually the number of times all five phases Yin and Yang could operate simultaneously increased and the duration also became longer and longer, while at the same time his cultivation became more and more stable. Finally, one and a half year after he had entered the Ye Xiu Manor, he had finally completed the introduction of the Yin and Yang five phases secrets.

Now Yang Chen could honorably claim to have reached the first qi layer and could also sincerely become a genuine outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace.

## Chapter 24 - Outer Disciple

When Yang Chen finally emerged from the cultivation room after completing his training, he had already spent one year and four months at the Ye Xiu Manor, including the number of days he had spent in the room. This whole time Yang Chen stayed in the room to train and only came out for little things, like eating and resting and afterwards he went into the room again to cultivate.

However during the cultivation of the Yin and Yang five phases secrets, Yang Chen came across an unforeseen difficulty. In the time he had spent training, he had cultivated the Yin five phases in the first half of the month while he was trying to harmonize the five phases of Yin and Yang, so that he could cultivate them simultaneously. To circulate the innate qi of the cultivation method, Yang Chen had to use his spiritual awareness, refined by the three purities secrets, to control it and only then he was able to succeed. According to Yang Chen's prediction, by the time when he reached the next stage in the five phases of Yin and Yang cultivation, the difficulty would have increased at least several times. Fortunately, all things were difficult in the beginning, but since he had already grasped the basics of the cultivation method, his cultivation path would become quite smooth in the future. The cultivation he achieved with the five phases of Yin and Yang secrets was insufficient to refine the strength of the five phases of Yin and Yang to the next stage, the five phases of the Great Yin and Yang secrets. Yang Chen had decided to name the ten types of cultivation method of the five Yin and Yang phases secrets. Regardless of which one of the ten cultivation methods he was training in, Yang Chen called them whatever he felt was suitable and merely named them as first wood, second wood, third fire, fourth fire, fifth earth, sixth earth, seventh metal, eighth metal,

ninth water and tenth water. These were the ten types of spirit power.

Naturally, to others it appeared as if Yang Chen was currently cultivating the fire centered method which he had received from the Achievement Room in the Ye Xiu Manor.

These days, the great manager of the Ye Xiu Manor, Wang Yuan, paid great attention to Yang Chen. Not only were each month's gifts provided to him in sufficient quantity and on time, but it was also very likely that the manager kept watch at Yang Chen's Profound Pavilion every month, for several days. Every time when the manager was overseeing, he would also provide Yang Chen with guidance related to cultivation methods and all kinds of basic knowledge. Being treated so highly made people envy him.

When Yang Chen came out from his training, Wang Yuan was already waiting for him at the Profound Pavilion. Half a month ago, Yang Chen had said that he was entering closed-door training and that he already had some certainty. But apparently Wang Yuan was totally certain about this, so today he had already been waiting here for Yang Chen. After he saw Yang Chen, both of his eyes shone brightly, after only examining him once he already started congratulating him.

After meeting with Yang Chen today, Wang Yuan had felt something acutely different. On Yang Chen's body he could clearly sense fire attributed spirit power, this was a clear indication of successfully reaching the qi realm. Previously Yang Chen had to use the reverse five phases cultivation method to suppress his spirit power, but finally, after today he would no longer need that



sort of cover up.

After entering the Ye Xiu Manor, even though he had to learn everything from scratch while dealing with several obstructions arranged by Chu Heng at the same time, Yang Chen had still achieved the minimum requirement of reaching the first qi layer in the brief period of one and a half years, now nobody would be able to say that his comprehension ability was weak. As for those preparatory disciples who had entered together with him into Ye Xiu Manor, not one of them had succeeded in reaching the first qi layer, this clearly showed Yang Chen's superiority.

Although Yang Chen's basic knowledge seemed to be insufficient to others, no one could stop him from entering the ranks of the outer disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. Even if the Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng was present, he would also be unable to do anything.

Yang Chen clearly understood Wang Yuan's intentions and he had already sworn the oath on his heart's devil, so Wang Yuan was not worried that he would go back on his promise, but even so he still had to resist the pressure from Chu Heng and he defended Yang Chen in all kinds of matters.

This time was also the same, Wang Yuan had already made some preparations to congratulate Yang Chen when he reached the boundary of first qi layer, long ago. He clapped to signal the two servants behind the door to enter. Both of them were carrying a tray.

Of these two servants, one was a man and the other a woman, the

man was Shen Da and the woman was the female servant who had used the Illusion Talisman. Both of them were carrying a tray in their hands, each. One tray held a beautiful pouch, while the other one was fully packed with spirit stones.

“This is for you. After you have become qualified to the Nine Earth Manor, my teacher has made this qiankun pouch for you.”

Wang Yuan grabbed and threw that qiankun pouch into Yang Chen’s hands and introduced it very enthusiastically:

“You only have to put a mark of your spiritual awareness into it, then you can use it.”

In his heart Yang Chen was very calm, but on the surface he showed a surprised expression when receiving the qiankun bag, and in accordance with Wang Yuan’s instructions he used his spiritual awareness to brand it. Soon after that he pretended to feel some kind of difference and began to browse the inside.

Wang Yuan did not trouble Yang Chen this time. When he had received his own qiankun pouch for the first time, he was also like this and unable to contain his joy, so he absolutely understood Yang Chen’s mood right now. After waiting until he had fiddled enough with the pouch, Wang Yuan handed him the spirit stones on the second tray and said:

“Since Uncle Master Chu has said that you will have the status of a third qi layer disciple, you will receive one jin of spirits stones every month, then. Previously you had no expenses, so you were

not given any money, but now all of the spirit stones, from the time when you joined the sect until today, will be supplied to you.”

Yang Chen was not impolite and received them to put them into the his new qiankun pouch. As soon as Yang Chen was finished with everything, he dismissed all of the servants. Only then did Wang Yuan ask:

“Younger Disciple Yang, are you planning to go to the Nine Earth Manor right away or do you intend to stay in the Ye Xiu Manor for some more time? In my opinion, my generation of cultivators is a little bit more mild and honest in comparison.”

Now that Yang Chen was officially an outer disciple, according to common sense, he would naturally go to the Nine Earth Manor, where almost all outer disciple practiced cultivation. Only now that Chu Heng was acting as the Merit Transferring Disciple, it may be assumed that he would also try to use any way to take care of Yang Chen there. If he stayed at Ye Xiu Manor, he would enjoy special consideration.

But every matter had its own merits and demerits. If he continued to stay at the Ye Xiu Manor, he would have to wait for the three year period to come to an end, but Chu Heng would also be nearing the end of his term as the Merit Transferring Disciple and would be replaced with someone else. At most, he could waste Yang Chen’s one and a half year, but it was also possible that he might not need to directly confront Chu Heng and could cultivate calmly.

Even if the Nine Earth Manor had Chu Heng, almost all others

there were outer disciples. No matter whether it were the cultivation methods, the allocation of resources and spirit stones or the interaction between outer disciples, all of them were far better when compared to the Ye Xiu Manor. After all, the Ye Xiu Manor was only to teach the preparatory disciples. Even if he had Wang Yuan to guide him, it could still not be compared to the directions given by foundation stage inner disciples.

Moreover, compared to the Ye Xiu Manor, the Nine Earth Manor was rich in spiritual influence, which also had many advantages for cultivating. If it weren't for Chu Heng, going to the Nine Earth Manor was the best choice. But just because of Chu Heng, Wang Yuan was asking for Yang Chen's opinion.

"We cultivators always welcome difficulties, if, just because of one person, Uncle Master Chu, I bind my steps and not go forward, I will just remain a mediocre person in my entire life!"

Yang Chen was aware of Wang Yuan's meaning, but he still didn't accept Wang Yuan's good intentions, but rather resolving himself, he simply said:

"Today, if I cower, then in the future I will also shrink back from everything, it could also be assumed that I am simply unworthy of Senior Disciple Wang's attention and care. So I will ask Senior Disciple Wang to make the arrangements that I may leave for the Nine Earth Manor in a few days!"

In his previous life, just because Yang Chen had that kind of cowardly nature, he had ended up like that in the end, in this life he would not repeat the same mistakes.

These short few sentences left an indescribable feeling in Wang Yuan and also unknowingly stirred some kind of heroic emotions in him:

“Well said! Younger Disciple Yang, I appreciate your feelings, wait for ten days and after ten days, I will have my people see you off to the Nine Earth Manor!”

Originally Wang Yuan was a mild type of person which resembled Yang Chen’s impression of him in his previous life. He didn’t have too much of a desire to fight, if not, it would have been unlikely for him to be sent to supervise the Ye Xiu Manor.

But Yang Chen’s words had caused some kind of enlightenment to flash in his mind, restricting his insecure feelings, which had constantly made him think of his shortcomings and so on, but now Wang Yuan felt that his cultivation energy faintly vibrated, appearing as if he was about to break through at any moment. This sensation made him both excited and expectant. This type of enlightenment was an opportunity that would appear seldomly, he could not do anything about Yang Chen’s affairs and could only push away these matters for several days.

Moreover, even if he immediately went to arrange everything, Yang Chen could still not become an outer disciple right away. Every sect had its rules and Yang Chen clearly understood the rules of the Pure Yang Palace. If a preparatory disciple, who has met the required criterion, wanted to become an official outer disciple, there had to be a ceremony and only then could he be considered to have genuinely entered the sect. All outer disciples and the Merit

Transferring Disciple had a ceremonial relation of being master and disciple.

Sun Hai Jing and Chu Heng had precisely this kind of relation between them in the beginning, but after looking at Sun Hai Jing's spirit root it was determined that in the future he would also enter the Luminous Moon Hall, so naturally he started to curry favor with Chu Heng and Chu Heng in return started to pay attention to him, thus the relationship between the two individuals became more intimate when compared to others.

Even if Wang Yuan wrote a writ to send the news, he would still have to wait for several days before Yang Chen could leave. Yang Chen was also not very anxious to go and used this time to make some talisman papers.

After sending off Wang Yuan, Shen Da arrived in front of Yang Chen, appearing very respectful. After the last time when Yang Chen had beaten them unconscious, Shen Da had always treated Yang Chen this way. As soon as Yang Chen had been properly seated, Shen Da fished out a small jade bottle from his qiankun pouch and very respectfully handed it to Yang Chen.

“What is this?”

Yang Chen didn't extend his hand to take it, but rather looked at it and asked in great surprise.

“Young Master Yang, these are yang qi pills, refined from the Profound Yang Fruit from the last time.”

Shen Da explained quickly:

“This belonged to Young Master Yang’s initially, now I am returning them to Young Master Yang.”

Explaining all of this, Shen Da finally placed the jade bottle on the table in front of Yang Chen.

Yang Chen stared at Shen Da for a good amount of time, then he shook his head and said:

“You should use them, it isn’t that useful to me.”

Shen Da became very anxious, why didn’t Yang Chen accept the bottle, did he still doubt them? After Yang Chen defeated him empty handedly, Shen Da had conceded sincerely, but he was an intelligent person and had known that immediately after the fight Shangguan Feng had entered closed-door training and after just two months he succeeded in building his foundation, becoming an inner disciple. And today he personally saw Wang Yuan and Yang Chen discussing something and after that Wang Yuan had also hurriedly entered closed-door training, it would be a miracle if there was nothing fishy about it.

Thinking about Yang Chen’s behaviour around the two appointed managers, it was not difficult for Shen Da to understand that they must have gained some huge benefits from Yang Chen. If not, how could they agree to offend the inner disciple Uncle Master Chu and face his anger, just to assist Yang Chen? Moreover,

Shen Da had also recognized that fruit peel, the Profound Yang Fruit's peel which had been in Yang Chen's possession. What this implied was self-evident.

If he did not embrace Yang Chen's leg at this time, then after Yang Chen left the Ye Xiu Manor, he would not get any more opportunities like this. Shen Da and all of the other servants who had been beaten in that last fight had discussed it and afterwards Ho Lin had refined the fruit peels to produce this yang qi pill, but rather than swallowing it, they offered it to him today.

Seeing that Yang Chen did not receive it, Shen Da knelt down immediately without thinking and respectfully said:

“Young Master Yang, we are aware that Young Master has boundless prospects and in the past we have offended you, so we request the superior Young Master to punish us!”

“I have already forgotten about that affair.”

Yang Chen laughed. He already didn't have enough time to cultivate, how could a few servants possibly make life difficult for him? He was not a narrow-minded person like Chu Heng.

“Young Master, we four people only desire to be able to serve Young Master!”

Shen Da did not hide anything and directly told his request to Yang Chen. While he was speaking, outside of the door the three



people appeared in a flash and moved in front of Yang Chen and knelt down beside Shen Da in a row. These three people were Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin, precisely the servants who had been beaten by Yang Chen in the beginning.

Actually, Yang Chen hadn't expected this kind of event as, regarding these four people, he didn't harbor any ill will in his heart. Although these these four people had initially acted against him under Chu Heng's arrangements, after going through Yang Chen's lesson they had sincerely served him without any mistakes. Yang Chen was quite satisfied regarding this.

Now these four wanted to follow Yang Chen to follow his future development and also to borrow an opportunity to advance themselves. All of them wanted to move forward and Yang Chen was unlikely to obstruct their progress. In any case, these four could easily be employed, as among the servants their cultivation was considered quite profound. Yang Chen also didn't care whether they were following him, as in the Nine Earth Manor he would also get servants to serve him.

Seeing that Yang Chen was still thinking, all four of them glanced at each other and soon after that groveled in front of him and uniformly said:

“Please permit us, Young Master Yang!”

After a moment when these four had saluted Yang Chen by kowtowing, they heard Yang Chen's promising voice:

“Ok! Get up!”

Just as these four people delightedly got up, they discovered that the jade bottle containing the yang qi pills which they gifted to Yang Chen was still on the table before them.

“Young Master, these originally belonged to you, we only refined them, that’s all!”

Naturally Shen Da and the others did not dare to request for this kind of thing, they only wanted Yang Chen to give them a few pointers when the occasion arrived, just that would already be sufficient.

“Which of you refined this? Ho Lin?”

Yang Chen asked as he glanced at Ho Lin. Ho Lin hastily nodded.

Yang Chen laughingly reached out his hand for the jade bottle and took out a pill. After cautiously inspecting it for some time, a small flame suddenly appeared above his finger and wrapped around the pill in his hand.

It was just a yang qi pill, nothing more. It didn’t even require Yang Chen to use the Supreme Elder’s pill secrets and profound pill scriptures skill. Although Yang Chen’s flame was small, after a moment, that pill had already started burning and broke into small pieces. Soon after that there were more than ten medicinal pills within the bottle. After that, Yang Chen took out all of them and

also formed them into more yang qi pills, which he then loaded into the jade bottle and placed before the four people again.

“The yang qi pills were slightly unrefined. I just dispelled a few impurities.”

Seeing that those four were still somewhat hesitant to receive them, Yang Chen once again said laughingly:

“This stuff really has no use for me, you can take them!”

Those four exchanged a glance again and only then did Shen Da reach out his hands to take the jade bottle, as if he was receiving some precious treasure. After Ho Lin had witnessed what just happened, his eyes were filled with worship towards Yang Chen. A person who could refine a pill empty handedly and extract the pill medicine, even if it was just a yang qi pill, his future prospects couldn't be measured.

“Oh right, Shen Da, your cultivation base is not bad, in the evening just take two yang qi pills and directly swallow them, maybe with the sudden burst of energy you will be able to break through and cross the bottleneck of the third qi layer.”

Yang Chen advised Shen Da.

“Properly meditate and feel the cultivation energy and if you hold the medicine in your mouth for half of the time, you will have a chance of at least seventy percent for success!”

# Chapter 25 - You Are Not Professional

After hearing this, Shen Da was in seventh heaven, his guess had finally turned out to be true, although Yang Chen had the strength of the mere first qi layer, he still had an omniscient vision. He could easily see everyone's cultivation bottleneck and furthermore also give directions about how to break through. Shangguan Feng had been this way, Wang Yuan was also the same and now it was finally his turn.

At first, he was somewhat suspicious of Yang Chen after he had discovered that Yang Chen had a highly retentive mind. But he had never raised this subject in front of other people. But now, after listening to Yang Chen's words, even if others were to consider him stupid, he would always serve by Yang Chen's side.

For a moment, the other three servants looked at Shen Da with an envious gaze. Shen Da had so easily received Yang Chen's guidance, but they did not know when they could also receive this kind of opportunity

"Shen Da your accumulation of qi is already sufficient, you are merely not aware of the method to breakthrough."

Yang Chen glimpsed at Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin and knew what they were thinking and said:

"You are all still lacking, try hard!"

“Yes, Young Master!”

These three people woke up to reality and simultaneously saluted Yang Chen.

After Yang Chen finished speaking, he didn't dismiss them, but rather raised his hand and a ball of flame appeared again. The delicate flame on Yang Chen's hand began to transform into a variety of forms, one moment it turned into a thin thread of fire, another moment it transformed into a ball of fire and then in another moment it yet again turned into a realistic animal, made up of fire. In Yang Chen's hand, the flame seemed as if it had come alive.

When the four servants saw Yang Chen's effortless control over the fire, they were immediately stupefied. Could flame also be used in this way as a toy? Especially Gu Qin who was cultivating the blazing palm and had a fire spirit root similar to Yang Chen, was staring so hard, that his eyeballs almost popped out.

So that's why Yang Chen could refine the yang qi pill's impurities so easily, this exceedingly great mastery over a high-level fire controlling skill, even if it was an inner disciple who had reached the foundation stage, it would still surpass them. All of the four servants felt this way, their admiration towards Yang Chen grew enormously.

“Sometimes, cultivation is not only for fighting.”

Yang Chen's words timely echoed in the ears of the four servants.

“Think about some other paths to follow, it will broaden your horizon. Afterwards, when cultivating, don’t just stick to acquiring formidable magic power, control is also very important!”

Only when Yang Chen reached the Jindan Stage in his previous life did he realize this, of course in this life he would not repeat the same mistake. Only, in the ears of the four people listening, these words were like a morning bell which had awoken them to an all new world. Originally they cultivated with all their might in order to break through to the next realm and to be able to have valiant fighting strength, but now they discovered they had already diverged from the main road.

“Many thanks, Young Master for giving us directions!”

The four people wholeheartedly paid their respects to Yang Chen. This time, Yang Chen didn’t stop them and with a wave of his hand he instructed them to leave. Then he started assimilating the magic power surging within his body and began to refine it. Before going to the Nine Earth Manor, he should manufacture a few talismans.

Talismans require even higher-level material and even more formidable magic power to manufacture, the principle was the same as talisman papers, but a talisman had, at least, two to three times more power. Before, Yang Chen could not obtain the materials for the talisman so he had no other choice but to use talisman papers, but now he could consider making a talisman.

While Yang Chen was refining, within the Nine Earth Manor of the Pure Yang Palace at the Meiqing Mountain, the Merit Transferring Disciple on duty, Chu Heng, was angry at Ye Xiu Manor's Manager Wang Yuan's writ.

That preparatory disciple, Yang Chen, who had been recruited last year, that guy who was an executioner. Within the short period of just one and a half years he had managed to pass the boundary of the first qi layer and within several days, he would be sent to the Nine Earth Manor.

Chu Heng was a very prideful person and felt that if he personally dealt with an ordinary mortal using his status as a foundation stage disciple, he would lose all of his face. But because of the task entrusted to him by Greatest Heaven Sect's Li Qing Chen, he had ordered Sun Hai Jing to intentionally make things difficult for Yang Chen at the time the sect was recruiting disciples, so that Yang Chen would not get any opportunity whatsoever, but after that, Du Qian unexpectedly appeared and Yang Chen used this chance to beat Sun Hai Jing, firmly smashing Chu Heng's prestige.

Soon afterwards Chu Heng told everything to the two managers of the Ye Xiu Manor and asked them to create hindrances for Yang Chen, the rules determined by him were also properly implemented in the Ye Xiu Manor. But even with these circumstances, not only was Yang Chen still able to cultivate and reach the first qi layer, but he was also the first one to achieve this among the twenty disciples in the first year, this really made him furious.

Originally he believed that with the help of the two managers who were handling this affair and the rules he had already declared, which no one would dare to break, he would be able to handle Yang Chen, but now it seemed as if they didn't have any effect. He did not know who the person who had helped Yang Chen was, but if ever he found out, he would make that person pay. However, right now he had to seriously think about the matter of dealing with Yang Chen.

Allowing Yang Chen to become an outer disciple would certainly mean that he was breaking his promise, and Chu Heng could not allow this kind of thing to occur. But Yang Chen had already reached the first qi layer and he could do nothing to block him. So right now, the only thing Chu Heng could do, was to go to Sun Hai Jing and inform him about this news.

“You have to prevent that Yang Chen from reaching the Nine Earth Manor!”

Chu Heng coldly placed his request and turned around to leave.

“You can use any method, I don't care about it, but you cannot let anyone discover that you are the one breaking the sect's rules, otherwise even I will not be able to save you. Of course, whatever you do, I know nothing of it, do you understand?”

Sun Hai Jing hastily nodded and respectfully replied:

“Yes, Master!”



Hu-

A ray of light flew from Chu Heng's hand directly towards Sun Hai Jing.

“This is a cultivation tool for you to refine, you should refine it as soon as possible, it will provide some extra assistance with your strength! Furthermore, take these spirit stones with you, as the payment!”

“Many thanks, Master!”

Sun Hai Jing rejoiced and once again loudly expressed his thanks, following the respectful behaviour a disciple had towards his master. Only after Chu Heng had completely disappeared did Sun Hai Jing lift his head, a malicious smile was spread across his face, in both of his eyes was a mysterious expression.

After ten days Yang Chen would leave the Ye Xiu Manor to go to the Nine Earth Manor. The Meiqing Mountain was very large, the distance between the Ye Xui Manor and the Nine Earth Manor would require a full five-day journey on foot for an ordinary person. Even if he was a first qi layer outer disciple, he hadn't learned any flying or soaring technique beforehand, so he would need approximately three days time to complete the journey. This amount of time was enough for Sun Hai Jing to plan some mishaps.

The memory from one and a half years ago, when Yang Chen had beaten him unconscious in front of many fellow disciples, gave rise

to a strong feeling of rage in Sun Hai Jing's mind. If it were not for the other outer disciples and Yang Chen being at Ye Xiu Manor, Sun Hai Jing would have already taken Yang Chen's life. But now, with Chu Heng's support, Sun Hai Jing would absolutely not let Yang Chen live long enough to enter the Nine Earth Manor.

For the next ten days, Yang Chen didn't train, but only made a few talismans. When he was preparing these talismans, others were not around, so naturally, nobody knew that, apart from fire spirit energy, he could also cultivate all other spirit energies.

These few high-grade talismans had been nourished by Yang Chen through the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, compared to normal talismans they have quite a formidable power.

After seven days, Shen Da came out of his closed door training, a cheerful look was spread across his entire face and the expression in his eyes was also a lot brighter. He had finally crossed through to the fourth qi layer in one stroke with the help of Yang Chen's directions and the impact of the three yang qi pills. A trace of envy rose in Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin when they saw the look in Shen Da's eyes, but at the same time a lot of expectations arose in their hearts. What Shen Da experienced today, they could experience tomorrow, the only condition was that they also received Yang Chen's guidance like Shen Da.

On the ninth day, the whole of Ye Xiu Manor heard manager Wang Yuan's long and excited howl. Together with the howl, Wang Yuan's silhouette appeared in the sky and directly pounced towards the Profound Pavilion.

“Ha Ha Ha Ha!”

Similar to when Shangguan Feng had succeeded in building his foundation, Wang Yuan also arrived at the Profound Pavilion and burst out laughing:

“Younger Disciple Yang, your words from that time have allowed this senior disciple to finally attain the ninth qi layer!”

Yang Chen hurriedly appeared to welcome him, listening to Wang Yuan’s words, he repeatedly congratulated him.

“Again, this is thanks to Younger Disciple’s blessings!”

Wang Yuan gently laughed and cupped his hands to greet Yang Chen, soon afterwards he glanced at Shen Da who was standing behind Yang Chen.

He was quite surprised and only after examining him for a good moment did he nod towards Shen Da and said:

“Congratulations Shen Da, you are certainly hard working, you will go far!”

“This is all due to Young Master Yang’s guidance.”

Shen Da hastily replied. He was a servant, his status was quite different from a disciple. And so he did not dare to claim any credit

for himself.

“Oh, Young Master Yang’s vision is surely like a beacon!”

Wang Yuan was not very surprised, apparently he had already guessed that Shangguan Feng’s success in building his foundation had something to do with Yang Chen.

“This all depended on Senior Disciple’s previous guidance, all I did was listen to Senior Disciple’s words and just repeated some of them, that’s all.”

Yang Chen said a few modest words and pushed the credit onto Wang Yuan.

After talking about these matters, Wang Yuan said:

“Younger Disciple Yang, early tomorrow morning, I will arrange for people to escort you to the Nine Earth Manor, unfortunately, this Senior Disciple is a manager so I don’t have the authority to leave without permission, otherwise I would personally escort you.”

“I don’t dare to trouble Senior Disciple!”

Yang Chen politely refused, then spoke again:

“Your little brother has a request! These few servants have been

serving me without much trouble for more than a year, so I would like to bring them with me to the Nine Earth Manor, hopefully this does not inconvenience Senior Disciple?”

“What inconvenience? Just take them along with you!”

Wang Yuan did not consider this as any problematic affair. All official disciples could keep their own servants, whom they were accustomed to. However, he actually envied the luck of Shen Da and the other people.

Whether it was the Ye Xiu Manor or the Nine Earth Manor, both had servants, some of them even had a higher cultivation than the official disciples. These people were originally also disciples, but since their natural talent was lacking, their future prospects were limited and because of that they were forced to become servants, but all of them had been cultivating for a long time and many have reached the ninth qi layer or even the pinnacle of the qi realm.

Speaking of the official disciples, having a servant whose cultivation was higher than them both encouraged and provoked them to put more effort into training. This method was not something special, rather it was commonly used by almost all sects. On one hand it arranged for those defeated disciples with low comprehension to settle down, while at the same time it also provided an incentive for the new disciples, It was indeed killing two birds with one stone.

Since Yang Chen had asked for these four servants, when Wang Yuan sent them off on their way on the next morning, besides one servant, who was leading the way to the Nine Earth Manor, behind

Yang Chen, the two male and two female servants followed.

The Meiqing Mountain was entirely under Pure Yang Palace's control, the mountain range extended over a circumference of around a thousand miles. The Ye Xiu Manor was considered to be the region with the smallest amount of spiritual influence. The Nine Earth Manor was situated four hundred miles into the Meiqing Mountain and had far denser spiritual influence.

The servant leading the way did not talk much and kept his head down while walking. Among them, only Yang Chen was of the first qi layer so he was not able to fly or soar and could only walk, step by step, towards the Nine Earth Manor. However when he reached the second qi layer, he would be able to refine some flying talismans or possibly a paper crane or some other thing for transportation. At that time his speed would increase by a lot.

There were no problems during the first day, they had been walking with their full strength throughout the way, rushing as much as two hundred miles before stopping to meditate and circulate the qi within their bodies. They were only resting for one hour, before hastening on with their journey throughout the night.

In the night, the light from the sky was not very good since the starlight was almost insufficient. Fortunately, the leading servant was very familiar with the way, and the road to the Nine Earth Manor was only a straight path, so they were unlikely to lose their way.

Anyway, after walking for two hours, when the colour of the sky

was faintly brightening, suddenly Yang Chen sensed something peculiar. It seemed as if the spirit power in the surroundings was slightly stronger than usual.

An average person would in no way take note of such a small difference, but Yang Chen raised his vigilance and at the same time he gestured Shen Da and the others running behind him to be careful.

These four didn't doubt him and immediately got ready, putting their hands on their weapons and began to alertly observe their surroundings. Apparently the servant walking ahead didn't notice anything wrong and kept on walking as always. Although he did not turn around, he knew what was happening behind him and thought that Shen Da's and other four's vigilance was utterly ridiculous. This was Pure Yang Palace's territory, who would dare to cause trouble here?

After walking ten more steps forward, suddenly something flashed before everyone's eyes and all of them discovered that, although they were all still standing at the same place, the others had already disappeared without a trace.

Since they were already prepared, Shen Da and the others immediately took out their weapons, but there was not a soul in sight and they were not aware of the enemy's location.

Yang Chen halted at his original position and didn't move a step, he merely turned his head to look left and right, then, facing in some direction he started to talk:

“You have come for me, right?”

“For a mere outer disciple, you actually have very acute senses!”

Suddenly an erratic voice spread from the direction Yang Chen was facing.

“Someone has paid me ten spirit stones and allowed me to take all the items on your body in exchange for your life. Now, leave for the netherworld. You must not confuse me as your personal enemy!”

“Listening to you, it seems you are not a professional!”

Yang Chen suddenly sneered.

“These words are entirely wrong!”

“Oh? Then what would be the right words?”

The person hidden in the darkness didn’t immediately attack, but rather curiously asked Yang Chen:

“I have always thought that my words were not sufficiently formidable, maybe you can help me change it into something better.”



“A professional should speak like this:”

A smiling expression appeared on Yang Chen’s face. Advancing one step he started speaking:

“For every debt there is a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, you can only blame your employer and your own greed for committing this offence!”

# Chapter 26 - Five Levels Of Difference Can Still Be Surpassed

Bang!

Following Yang Chen's words, an Inflammation Talisman suddenly exploded in front of him. This fire attributed talisman had the highest attack power among all of the talismans Yang Chen had made, and was also nourished by the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. Although the sound wasn't particularly loud, it directly impacted a circumference of ten meters around the explosion.

Suddenly, a human reflection flickered inside of the impact zone as it was engulfed by the formidable power of the Inflammation talisman and at the same time a frightened cry resounded, immediately followed by a blood-curdling scream. A person's silhouette appeared to be writhing inside of the ocean of fire.

"Impossible, how could you find me?"

A terrified voice came from within the ocean of fire. The voice was full of pain, apparently he was seriously injured by Yang Chen's Inflammation Talisman.

"Because this rotten illusion of yours can only disturb my senses a little and has absolutely no effect on my mind!"

Yang Chen coldly smiled. Suddenly Yang Chen turned around and swung his fist. The shadow of a person that sneakily appeared behind his body was suddenly hit with his fist and it flipped over in the air for a few times, as if it was sitting on a roller coaster, and fell onto the ground. Then suddenly it just disappeared, seemingly melting into the background.

After this strike, the silhouette within the ocean of flame also disappeared and together with it, the blood-curdling scream. Apart from the sound of combustion of the blaze, left behind by the explosion of the Inflammation Talisman, nothing could be heard.

Yang Chen didn't grow overconfident, as his fist couldn't kill the other party. The other party was at least still capable of fleeing under his repeated punches, but the enemy had already made it clear that his strength was a lot higher than Shen Da and the others, having a strength of around the sixth qi layer.

“Not coming out?”

Yang Chen surveyed everything around him and then suddenly asked this.

“If you are not coming out, then I am going!”

“Going?”

The fleeting voice of the hidden person was heard once again, but due to the fuzzy noise, Yang Chen was unable to determine the

location of the person.

“Humph, why don’t you try to walk away in front of me?”

Without paying any attention to the other party’s scornful remarks, Yang Chen started walking forward with large strides. Along with Yang Chen’s large strides, the scenery kept changing incessantly. At this very moment, the enemy had discovered that Yang Chen had not been affected by the illusions previously, so he unleashed all of his might into the illusionary spell.

However, this was a real illusionary spell, not like the illusionary talisman used by Ho Lin. Its power was truly incomparable with the one Ho Lin used. But with Yang Chen’s strong willed spiritual awareness, he was still able to stop the illusion from affecting him. Therefore, the last two attacks had basically no effect, but the enemy had used the spell to suit his needs, so he could use illusionary copies of himself in those last two mirages and escape.

This time, an inferno of fire appeared before Yang Chen’s eyes. The fire inferno’s surroundings were incomparably bright. Within the inferno, the enemy was waiting for his chance to kill him.

Facing the sea of fire, Yang Chen sneered loudly and kept on moving forward, stepping into the raging blazes. With a bang sound, the violent blazes, together with a scorching wave of air moved towards Yang Chen, engulfing everything in its way.

This attack was not an illusion, rather an absolutely genuinely produced attack within the fantasy land. But from Yang Chen’s

perspective, flames could be seen everywhere, when suddenly a white light flashed, accompanied by a long and loud laugh. A white colored fog completely surrounded Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had promptly unleashed his Frost Talisman. The water attributed Frost Talisman emitted a cold air which was rapidly extinguished the fire. It froze all of the surrounding blazes without any decrease in magic power and covered the ground with hoarfrost.

Within the hoarfrost, a figure flashed with dazzling rays and Yang Chen's spiritual awareness immediately locked onto the former. The enemy's image faded away in a moment, without any traces, but Yang Chen's hand also was not slow. He immediately took out the Thousand Jin Talisman and it covered the entire region straightaway.

With its earth attributed magic power, a Thousand Jin Talisman was very easy to make, but Yang Chen's Thousand Jin Talisman was not an ordinary one. Originally the enemy was concealed within the illusions and so wanted to use his martial techniques rapidly, together with the illusions, to hide and at the same time attack Yang Chen, but after Yang Chen used the Thousand Jin Talisman on this large area, his speed immediately dropped.

In a split second, the enemy used his own magic power to break free from the influence of the Thousand Jin Talisman. But this was already enough for Yang Chen to lock his spiritual awareness on him.

Whoosh!

Finally the enemy came up with a killer move. A yellow colored light appeared within the range of Yang Chen's spiritual awareness. It was rapidly flying towards Yang Chen at a high speed, without making even the least bit of noise. Looking at it, it only seemed to be a yellow-colored light.

Ding!

The yellow colored light directly knocked against Yang Chen's body. The outline of an armor faintly appeared on his body. The yellow colored light was unable to penetrate and returned without having achieved anything.

“A Shell Talisman?”

The hidden enemy clenched his teeth and asked:

“You are just a first qi layer disciple, how come you have so many talismans?”

He had thought that a first qi layer disciple together with five third qi layer servants would have no way of fleeing, as long as they were to enter his illusionary spell. Now those third qi layer servants were all trapped very well within the illusionary spell, but this master whom he had believed to be the easiest one to dispose of, had put him in such a difficult position and even his talisman tool had been of no use.

The yellow colored light within his hand was actually a high grade symbol sword which he had incidentally purchased in an auction. Its attack speed was very quick, but the attack power was comparatively not that great. But this was already the most powerful tool he had for disposing of someone, but it failed by a mere slight resistance from Yang Chen's Shell Talisman.

What sort of Shell Talisman could be so difficult to deal with? This symbol sword was made by a person who was at the pinnacle of the qi realm, but it was surprisingly defeated by a Shell Talisman made by Yang Chen, a first qi layer disciple. To him this was simply the biggest mystery under the sky.

Astonished, at the same time, the killer also started fearing him. Someone who had such a formidable Shell Talisman couldn't possibly be an ordinary person, the only thing that could explain this kind of event was that this youngster had the favor of some great person. If he had known that this trip would be so dangerous, he would not have accepted such a small amount of spirit stones.

Although this Shell Talisman was difficult to deal with, it was not Yang Chen's own power and after its magic power was exhausted, this Shell Talisman would be worthless. But the talisman tool was different, when using it, he could supply it with his own magic power, so the killer was completely convinced that he could supply his own tool until Yang Chen's Shell Talisman ran out of magic power.

The killer had a good plan, but he hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen had already locked his spiritual awareness onto his position. After blocking the symbol sword, Yang Chen had taken out the

Five Golden Blades Talisman. Raising his hand, five golden-colored rays flew out like a sword towards the killer's position.

The killer hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen still had this kind of attack left and he was excessively surprised, but he knew that he had to evade it. The Five Golden Blade Talisman's attack was similar to a sword. If it were to hit, that would be no small matter. The killer had already experienced Yang Chen's attacks many times and had discovered that the talismans in Yang Chen's hand were enormously formidable, thus, he dared not receive it and hurriedly tried to evade.

However Yang Chen's Five Direction Golden Blades were extremely well coordinated, they had actually sealed him from the left and right and there was a mountain wall behind him. Stuck in the middle, the killer could only go towards Yang Chen and quickly take care of him. But the killer hadn't thought about why Yang Chen used the Five Blades Golden Talisman precisely at this position.

Yang Chen was waiting just for this moment, so that he could take advantage of the killer's forward momentum. He also moved forward and a heaven-splitting killing intent erupted from Yang Chen and struck the killer who was rushing over.

Even if he was a killer, the killing intent emitted by Yang Chen could even greatly startle a departed spirit. At this moment, it seemed as if he was facing a death god from the eighteenth level of hell, during this time, even his limbs stopped complying with his wishes.



At this moment, even if Yang Chen would just walk towards the killer and use some simple skill, it would already be sufficient to kill him. While rushing forward, Yang Chen fished out his Executioner's Blade from his Achievement Ring and after nearing the killer, he simply waved it towards the killer's head.

The Executioner's Blade streaked across the killer's neck without any resistance. Even though the killer was already at the sixth qi layer and even though he didn't forget to protect his body with magic power for even a single moment, after Yang Chen had painstakingly carved a few Golden Blade Talismans on the knife and it had become a talisman tool, these measures had become completely useless.

Chi!

Bright blood spurted out from the cavity formed from severing the head. But, Yang Chen had already moved towards the side, so not even a single drop fell onto him. From slashing the knife, withdrawing the knife and moving out of the way, all of it happened within the blink of an eye, and the majestic sixth qi layer assassin had his body and head separated.

Although the killer had died, the illusionary spell still hadn't disappeared yet and Yang Chen was as before still inside of it. Standing at his the original position, Yang Chen carefully swept his gaze around his surroundings. After determining the position of the illusionary talisman, he walked towards it and started his work.

Although this illusionary talisman had quite a good effect, in

Yang Chen's eyes it was not all that great. Using his Great Principal Golden Immortal's foresight, he quickly discovered the core of the spell.

This time he used his reverse five phases of Yin and Yang secrets with the five phases restraining each other, and began to sap away the spell's magic power from the core.

The reverse five phases of Yin and Yang secrets, the five Yin phases, and the five Yang phases were like two huge millstones, whose spirit power was grinding away the magical power of the spell little by little. Even though Yang Chen only had the strength of the first qi layer, but with some casual effort, he could easily sap away the magic power of the spell formation.

After the magic power was lost, the spell also lost its effect and the scene before his eyes changed once again, now resembling the familiar mountain road. As the servant who was leading the way appeared together with Shen Da, Gu Qin, Ho Lin and Ting Yuan, all of them were standing at the same place with a blank expression and in an alert posture, ready to fight.

Everyone suddenly saw Yang Chen's silhouette and that corpse without its head and all five of them immediately had a fright. Shen Da and the three others sucked in a deep breath, while the servant who was leading the way looked at Yang Chen as if he was looking at a monster. The circumstances before their eyes explained everything, with a glance they could discern that someone had been sent to kill Yang Chen and them, but that killer had already died under Yang Chen's hands and at the same time he had also gotten rid of the illusionary spell.

The assassin's qiankun pouch was still around his waist. Yang Chen gazed at the five people and leisurely untied it and opened it to check its contents. After taking a few jade slips and several spirit stones, he threw the pouch to the servant who was standing closest to him, Ho Lin.

Ho Lin was amazed by receiving the qiankun pouch and still hadn't clearly understood what was going on. But Yang Chen already held those several jade slips and used his spiritual awareness to examine them. After checking them out, he handed them over to Ho Lin:

“This is the method and the knowledge about the illusionary spell that guy used, it will help you a little, take it! Inside the qiankun pouch, there is also some information about a few well-known spells, you can take care of it. As for the rest, you four can divide it among yourselves!”

That servant who was leading the way was once again stunned and was filled with an incomparable envy when looking at Yang Chen smilingly throw the qiankun pouch of a sixth qi layer master to his own servants as if there was nothing inside of it. His heart was filled with incomparably huge waves of jealousy.

As for the assassin's identity, the servant indistinctly recognized him from a mark on his dead body, he was a rogue cultivator from the vicinity of the Meiqing Mountain, he also had some previous dealings with the people from the Pure Yang Palace. He had the strength of a cultivator at the sixth qi layer, this was something that even the servant was aware of, even that he had obtained a top

notch talisman tool a few years ago, which he did not reveal to others easily.

Thinking about this, he noticed that the talisman tool should still be in the qiankun pouch which Yang Chen had given away without even batting an eye. The belongings of a sixth qi layer expert, divided among servants. This generosity made the servant even more regretful.

Just when he was envying them, Yang Chen walked to him and handed him some of the spirit stones he had taken out from the qiankun pouch.

“This is a minor tribute for your hard work.”

The servant hastily took it, in fear and trepidation, then he suddenly felt baffled. How could he have this kind of a sensation when facing a first qi layer outer disciple, as if there was an absolute respect for Yang Chen in his heart. Could it be because he killed that sixth qi layer assassin? Or because he treated his servants so generously?

This time they stopped for over three hours due to the delay and the color of the sky had already turned bright and clear. Everyone hastily took care of the assassin's body and after resting for some time, they quickly continued their journey again.

On top of Nine Earth Manor's gate, Sun Hai Jing was gazing in the direction of the mountain, at the road that connected the Ye Xiu Manor to here. Roughly calculating the time when Yang Chen

had set off from the Ye Xiu Manor, he should be arriving here now, but there was not a single person to be seen on the road.

After two more hours passed and there was still no sound of activity on the road, Sun Hai Jing could not help but rejoice in his heart. This much time had passed already and Yang Chen had still not arrived, surely he had already been taken care of. Ten spirit stones had to be paid for that annoying person's life, but this transaction was really worth it.

Even though he was happy in his heart, an anxious appearance was on Sun Hai Jing's face. He was still incessantly mumbling to himself:

“How has he still not come? How has he still not come?”

Occasionally when someone passed and heard his muttering, they truly believed that he was worried about the new younger disciple and was getting impatient.

After a long time had passed, Sun Hai Jing was exceedingly delighted in his heart, many people had already seen his deeply ‘worried and sick at heart’ expression for his younger disciple, this was already sufficient. Just when he thought that it was enough and he stood up to go down, at the edge of the mountain road, suddenly a figure appeared. That was precisely the person whom he couldn't forget even if he died and his bones turned to dust, Yang Chen.

## Chapter 27 - It's Possible Now

That instant he laid his eyes on Yang Chen's silhouette, Sun Hai Jing's complexion turned bitter, as if someone had trampled on his face.

The news of the appearance of a rogue cultivator attacking the party of an outer disciple on the road connecting the Ye Xiu Manor and Nine Earth Manor would spread quickly. The party also included one servant from the Nine Earth Manor and four servants from the Ye Xiu Manor. It was certain that this news would definitely make the Pure Yang Palace angry and all of the rogue cultivators in the thousand mile circumference of the Meiqing Mountain would be thoroughly investigated.

Although he had been very careful when contacting the sixth qi layer rogue cultivator, under this sort of thorough investigation, he and Chu Heng would definitely be suspected. At that time, if they would be exposed, Chu Heng would definitely push all of the blame on Sun Hai Jing.

Once he thought of this point, Sun Hai Jing felt as if he had fallen into his own trap. Who could have thought that a sixth qi layer rogue cultivator could be incapable of overpowering a first qi layer cultivator? Even if there were five third qi layer servants on the opposite side, they were still not qualified to become an adversary to a sixth qi layer master. A difference of five stages, that was a disparity in power like a single jin to thirty-five-hundred jin, simply a difference between heaven and earth.

To travel from the edge of the mountain to the entrance of the Nine Earth Manor would still take some time. Just like an arrow had been shot after a rabbit, Sun Hai Jing crazily ran towards the Nine Earth Manor to inform Chu Heng about this news.

“Keep calm, don’t create an upheaval!”

Chu Heng glared at the panicking Sun Hai Jing and coldly snorted.

“That assassin is already dead, so there is no proof of anything, what are you afraid of?”

Only after Chu Heng raised this point, Sun Hai Jing was finally able to calm down. After Yang Chen reached the Nine Earth Manor, he also didn’t reveal anything about it right away. Only, when he looked at Sun Hai Jing, his gaze was full of resentment, but nobody was able to understand this behavior of his.

What happened after that was even more unimaginable, against this sudden provocation, Sun Hai Jing who was at the peak of the third qi layer did nothing and just quickly entered closed-door training to break through to the fourth qi layer. Moreover, according to Chu Heng’s estimation, this time it was very likely that he would break through.

“Which person dared to touch a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace at the Meiqing Mountain?”

After receiving the news of an attack on Yang Chen's party, all of the higher ups of the Pure Yang Palace were furious. Although the YuanYing ancestors hadn't moved, several JinDan stage experts already began to roar.

If a disciple of any sect was attacked by an outsider within the sect's own territory, it was a slap on the sect's face. From top to bottom, everyone was furious. The Law Enforcement Hall went all out and under the lead of a JinDan stage teacher, began to investigate everyone within a circumference of a thousand miles of the Meiqing Mountain. All of the rogue cultivators within the area were acting as if they were mourning their deceased mothers, all day, they had anxious and painful expressions on their faces under the fury of Pure Yang Palace.

“That assassin had used an illusionary spell?”

Du Qian, who was well acquainted with Yang Chen, brought Yang Chen to the Law Enforcement Hall to speak with him and get first hand information, before setting out to capture that person. At the moment, Yang Chen was sitting in front of Du Qian, while his four servants, together with the servant who led the way, were standing on the side. A qiankun pouch was placed in front of Du Qian and he was browsing through its contents one by one.

This qiankun pouch contained all of the assassin's belongings. Aside from many crystal stones, these items also included all of the jade slips taken away by Yang Chen, as well as all of the materials divided between Shen Da and the other servants. Since Du Qian was investigating this matter, he had asked for all of these things to look for any clues about the assassin.



On one side of Du Qian, the Merit Transferring Disciple, Chu Heng, was sitting. This investigation was Du Qian's responsibility, he was merely visiting that was all and had no say in it. All of the time he was looking at Yang Chen with an indescribable expression.

“Using a illusionary spell and a talisman tool, even if it was an eighth qi layer expert facing this, he would still get confused. My Junior Brother, how did you escape?”

For the Pure Yang Palace to find the identity of a rogue cultivator on the mountain under its control was really easy. At this moment, Du Qian had already become aware of that person's identity.

At the same time, from the things he left behind, he had also discovered how fearsome his cultivation was, but this caused Du Qian to be unable to comprehend the exact situation. The four third qi layer servants and a fourth qi layer servant were all affected, but this Yang Chen, who had the lowest cultivation of them all, only the first qi layer, was surprisingly not influenced in the least bit.

“I am an executioner, so murderous spirit overflows from my body. It is very rarely that there is something capable of shaking my mind.”

Yang Chen smiled. He casually continued:

“If not for this killing intent, maybe I wouldn't have been able to

escape it!”

Yang Chen was speaking casually, but Shen Da and the others did not dare to show this kind of attitude. Shen Da, who had the highest cultivation among them was the first one to speak. Recalling his memories, he said:

“Indeed, an aura of death had filled the sky but we had not thought that this was from the Young Master.”

The other servants also confirmed what Yang Chen had said. Since Yang Chen was not influenced by the illusions, then getting rid of a person at the sixth qi layer was also not an impossible matter. Moreover, the assassin’s corpse had been found, his head was cleanly cut off by a blade, clearly an executioner’s way of doing things.

“My Junior Brother, surprisingly you still have this kind of skill? Pretty good!”

Du Qian’s eyes shone brightly. Not receiving any effect in the area of illusions because of strong killing intent, the more he thought about it, the more his eyes shone. He could not have thought of any such method.

“Humph, this kind of blasphemy, only after killing many people could this kind of killing intent can be condensed, are you not worried that the heavens will not tolerate this?”

If Chu Heng was only biased towards Yang Chen before, now he completely had the intention of killing him. Rather than praising Yang Chen, Chu Heng rhetorically said:

“I am a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, not a killer like you!”

“Fellow Disciple Chu!”

Du Qian’s complexion immediately sank, he calmly stated:

“According to your words my Law Enforcement Hall’s disciples are all evil spirits, is this what you think? This opinion, is it just yours or of the entire Luminous Moon Hall?”

Even if Chu Heng had gigantic guts, he would still not dare to speak malicious words against the Law Enforcement Hall of his own sect. Just a moment ago he had spoken harsh words to suppress Yang Chen, but unexpectedly they could also be directed towards Du Qian.

“Senior Disciple Du!”

Chu Heng turned pale with fright, when the Law Enforcement Hall’s people would learn about these words of his, it could be reckoned that his life would not even have a proper ending, so he hastily explained himself:

“I was speaking to Yang Chen, he still hadn’t cultivated but killed so many people, his body is filled with an aura of death, I was just

afraid that it would affect his cultivation. I did not mean to insinuate the Law Enforcement Hall.”

“As long as he does not take the initiative to kill, why does it matter if he killed many?”

Du Qian coldly snorted again, implying that he would longer look into it, but also warning Chu Heng not to say anything excessive.

“A body filled with the aura of death is not affected by illusions.”

Du Qian again repeated, when suddenly a crazy idea was born within his mind:

‘If he, an outer disciple at the first qi layer, was allowed to climb the Heavenly Stairs, would it make the other sects go crazy?’

Once this thought appeared in his mind, Du Qian did not suppress it anymore. He had even already imagined the astonished and stunned expression of the great master, Su Bei. Feeling pleased with himself, he burst out laughing.

Chu Heng wrinkled his brows when seeing Du Qian laugh so freely in front of him, he wanted to stop him, but in the end he decided against it. Although their status was about the same, right now Du Qian was investigating the matter of the attack on Yang Chen, if he forced Du Qian to turn towards him, that would not be a good thing.

“Younger Disciple Chu, since Yang Chen is already an official outer disciple, you should stop caring about the previous matters.”

Du Qian kept on freely speaking:

“Since Little Brother Yang will cultivate at the Nine Earth Manor in the future, he will need your guidance even more.”

Du Qian’s request was indeed very excessive, Chu Heng was the Merit Transferring Disciple while Yang Chen was an outer disciple, so because he had the responsibility of teaching Yang Chen, even if he could not stand Yang Chen, he could only nod his head in defeat.

After he sent off Du Qian, Chu Heng’s complexion immediately changed. Facing Yang Chen, he coldly snorted:

“Yang Chen, about the earlier arrangements, since you have already beaten a third qi layer disciple, you will still be treated as a third qi layer disciple. But, you must not go around the Nine Earth Manor, seeking people to test them. If you have something you can’t understand, just come to me.”

Saying this, Chu Heng’s body slightly leaned towards Yang Chen, without paying any attention to the servants standing behind Yang Chen, he impudently said:

“Only I can provide you with the proper guidance, so that you can pass on, do you understand that?”

After he finished speaking, regardless of Yang Chen's attitude, he burst out laughing and directly walked out, minding his own matters and his figure disappeared in a flash, without leaving any trace.

Naturally, Shan Da and the other three also heard Chu Heng's last words, so they felt very anxious for Yang Chen. If Yang Chen could not receive guidance from the Merit Transferring Disciple, this would mean that all of the problems he had regarding cultivation could not be resolved and at the very least his cultivation speed would be very slow.

Yang Chen smiled at Chu Heng's words, he really wanted to slap that pompous expression on his face. He had been a Great Principal Golden Immortal, why would he need advice from a foundation stage disciple? Although all this time, he had to endure these kinds of things, seeing Chu Heng's comical performance, he couldn't help but shake his head sighing.

This sigh reached the ears of the servants, but they all thought it was because he would not be able to receive any teachings from Chu Heng. However, they still had great confidence in Yang Chen, since he could guide both Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan, so maybe reaching the foundation stage was not absolutely impossible, but it will require some more time, that's all. Moreover, he could also get those Profound Yang Fruits, so apparently the problem was not a problem at all.

No matter how, but Yang Chen had finally entered the Nine Earth Manor and also entered the ranks of Pure Yang Palace's

outer disciples. Once more, the distance between him and his master had shortened. Once he reached the foundation stage, he could pay his respects to his master.

The Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor was the place where all of the cultivation methods for the foundation stage or lower and the recipes and tools to concoct various sorts of pills were stored. Even the experiences gained by many experts of the older generations were stored here. As long as one was from the Pure Yang Palace, it didn't matter whether he was an outer disciple or a servant, all could access the Hidden Pavilion.

However, not everyone could enter the Hidden Pavilion when they wanted, or stay in it for how long they wanted. It would be based on the number of sect contribution points. Based on the number of contribution points one has, one would be treated in the sect, accordingly. Not only the time to stay in the Hidden Pavilion, but also the time to seek guidance from the Merit Transferring Disciple similarly demanded contribution points.

Certainly, each month the official disciples would be given their monthly allowances in the form of crystal stones. But servants don't receive this kind of salary, only a few crystal stones. However, to gain contribution points, everyone would have to take a chore from the sect and only after completing it, would they receive them.

A sect needed many things to develop, refining pills also required many types of materials, all of these things, including crystal stones, could be exchanged for contribution points. If the contribution points were not enough, then, to earn them, one

could ask for many types of hard labour in the sect, like taking care of the field where all the herbs were grown, lending help in concocting pills or purifying various types of materials and so on.

Since Yang Chen was just a newcomer, he naturally had zero contribution points. But this was not a great problem for him.

As he had joined the Nine Earth Manor, it signified that he could walk freely anywhere in the territory of the Pure Yang Palace and not have any restrictions, like he had in the Ye Xiu Manor. The surroundings also had one or two cities. Anything, as long as it was not an unusual or uncommon item, needed at the foundation stage or lower, could be exchanged in the cities.

Yang Chen had received crystal stones weighing one jin in the Ye Xiu Manor which can be exchanged for ten contribution points, enough to obtain the qualifications to remain in the Hidden Pavilion for one hour.

Inside of the Hidden Pavilion, everything was written in jade slips and not books, like in the Ye Xiu Manor. Regardless whether it was a servant or an outer disciple, all were cultivators and had spiritual awareness, which they could use to read those jade slips. Not only was using the jade slips more convenient, but they could also store a larger amount of information, at least two or three time more than books.

After entering the Hidden Pavilion, Yang Chen spread his spiritual awareness and began to look for the things he needed. This time, he was seeking the «Basics of Alchemy» jade slip. This jade slip contained information about the most basic concepts of



concocting pills, and two elementary recipes. Yang Chen was precisely looking for that.

After obtaining this jade slip, Yang Chen could openly 'learn to concoct pills', and afterwards refine the most basic pills. Then he would be able to exchange them for sect's contribution points. If Yang Chen had a large number of contribution points, they could be exchanged for all kinds of cultivation methods and it was logical that they would help to increase his own cultivation.

Yang Chen could not help but be cautious, every sect regarded their inherited cultivation methods very highly. Before meeting his master, if Yang Chen would be considered as a spy or a person having malicious thoughts, who had to be taken care of, then he would have to walk away from the normal cultivation path. For his master, he would have to endure everything.

After looking around for half an hour, Yang Chen finally found what he was looking for. Soon afterwards, inside of the Hidden Pavilion, Yang Chen loudly screamed in excitement, which even alarmed the supervisor of the Hidden Pavilion, who was an inner disciple. He was harshly rebuked and then driven out of the Hidden Pavilion. But, everyone became aware that Yang Chen had taken the «Basics of Alchemy» jade slip.

All of this was a part of his plan and once he returned to his room, he started happily laughing. From now on he could do everything openly and did not need to hide for the fear of exposing his abilities. Even if Yang Chen overstepped his bounds, in the eyes of the sect he would only be regarded as a genius with abundant cultivation potential. Everyone in the faction which he would

choose should be overjoyed.

# Chapter 28 - Useless Pill

A recently promoted outer disciple in the Nine Earth Manor, a person with the cultivation of first qi layer had surprisingly started a furnace to concoct pills. This news spread like wildfire in the Nine Earth Manor.

Yang Chen's great name very quickly became the talk of the whole Nine Earth manor. Only when mentioning him, everyone showed two kinds of expressions. When they heard that as soon as he entered the sect he defeated Sun Hai Jing who was at the third qi layer, everyone displayed an utterly astonished expression but when they heard that Yang Chen had entered the Hidden Pavilion to learn the «Basics of Alchemy» and has started a furnace to concoct pills at first qi layer their astonishment immediately changed to sneer.

“If he can learn how to concoct pills at the first qi layer, then what does that make us who have been trying to concoct pills for more than ten years?” Whether it was an official disciple or servant all agreed with this opinion, some had already started clamoring.

Everyone cannot help but laugh at this affair. There have been many famous alchemists who had to immerse in alchemy for several decades or even for more long before concocting their first pill, how can there be such a person who can concoct pills as soon as he started cultivating, isn't he just overstepping his boundaries? Not to speak of concocting pills, at first qi layer, even if he can control the flame properly and do not burn the ordinary drug ingredients, that alone will be an extraordinary feat.

However, Yang Chen doesn't care about these kinds of words. He instructed Shen Da to run to the nearest city to buy an ordinary pill concocting furnace and other common ingredients. Although this was his first time concocting pills, but Yang Chen had already spent all the spirit stones he received at the Ye Xiu Manor.

Buying a huge pile of drug ingredients and a beaten out pill furnace, Yang Chen entered seclusion to start on the road of alchemy. In the entire Nine Earth Manor, apart from Shen Da, Ho Lin and his other servants, no one was optimistic about Yang Chen's success. But Shen Da and other three servants had already seen Yang Chen easily remove the impurities of yang qi pill with a single hand so they had entirely confident that Yang Chen will succeed.

However, in the entire Nine Earth Manor including all his servants, everyone was curious about what Yang Chen will refine. Regardless of whether he will succeed or not, all the raw material used by Yang Chen surprisingly ordinary herbs purchased from the mortal world. At most, in that year, they would have reached their peak but it will still be far from enough to assist in increasing the spirit power.

Using these ordinary drug ingredients, what kind of pill can he refine? then even if he succeeds that worn out furnace will easily lose ninety-nine percent of the drug's efficiency, almost all the people in the Ye Xiu Manor thought this way.

Naturally Chu Heng had also heard this news, but he didn't say anything in front of other people, only sneered in his heart and

slyly used a disciple who was close to him to spread this news everywhere even among the inner disciples.

As a result, the news that an outer disciple without any foundation was vainly attempting to reach the heaven in a single bound reached the ears of many disciples. Every disciple who heard this absolutely despised him. Irritation was born in their hearts towards Yang Chen.

Within his small courtyard, Yang Chen opened a room which he regarded as the pill room. With the help of Ho Lin who had basic knowledge of alchemy, he started pill concoction for the first time after his rebirth.

Yang Chen had chosen to produce a traditional medicine, however, people were not aware of this kind of pill. After three hundred years from now, this pill will be produced and known as xun qi pill. All ingredients used to make this pill are ordinary and after being produced this elixir will not increase the spirit power nor will it heal anyone. As for those disciples who had already reached the first qi layer, it will be of no use.

But for the preparatory disciple who had just started cultivation, it is an extremely useful elixir. Xun qi pill, as the name implies can precisely sense the immortal qi. After consuming this sort of elixir, the ability of ordinary people to sense qi will increase by two to three times and they will be easily able to feel the qi in nature.

Naturally for this kind of pill, Yang Chen won't waste the precious materials acquired from the medicine garden. All drugs who have matured thousand years or more, even if they are

ordinary drugs, possess an unusual medicinal efficacy. Using the ordinary ingredients purchased from the cities is already sufficient.

Yang Chen didn't tell all this to Ho Lin and just instructed her to pay attention controlling the flame. Ho Lin had already done all the preparations needed for the process, now a pile of proper drug ingredients was stored near her waiting for Yang Chen's instructions.

After everything is done and ready, Yang Chen sat upright on a mat on the ground. His both hands stroking the two handles of the pill furnace in front of him and started the fire.

Previously Yang Chen had chosen the fourth fire cultivation method from the Achievement Room in the Ye Xiu Manor so naturally the fourth fire was produced in his hands. Two white strands of flame appeared in Yang Chen's both hands respectively finally converging in the pill furnace. The two strands of flame were successfully pulled to form two spiral shaped slender threads. Both threads spiraled around from the edge of the furnace to the core.

Yang Chen still hadn't started the refining but his control over the flame made Ho Lin , who was sitting opposite and watching attentively, gasp in admiration. In a brief period of several days, Yang Chen's control over fire has again risen one step becoming even more proficient. The slender threads of flame were extremely thin because of being pulled giving the feeling that the flame did not have sufficient temperature and can only be seen inside the pill furnace as a fine spiral. Who can realize that they were made up of

fire?

“Safflower!” Yang Chen suddenly said. Ho Lin did not dare to be careless and hastily threw the proper amount of Safflower into the furnace.

“Shen Dan!” After safflower was thrown into the furnace, Yang Chen again said. Ho Lin who had been repeatedly warned earlier did not get baffled and lightly added the Shen Dan into the furnace.

Both the herbs were engulfed by the spiral fire as soon as they entered and started to flow along with the flame. Rotating in two circles under Ho Lin’s attentive gaze they slowly turned into a medicinal liquid.

These two ingredients were very ordinary if proper care is not taken they will immediately burn, but at this moment, both of them had turned into a liquid without even a single mark of getting burned. Ho Lin was astonished within her heart, but controlling her emotions, she grabbed the next ingredient and was steadily gazing inside the pill furnace waiting for Yang Chen’s next instructions.

After blindly adding in the medicines, Ho Lin discovered a peculiarity. It seemed as if Yang Chen was intentionally controlling the flame to melt these drugs and follow along flame and rotate, apparently this had some other reason. However Ho Lin very clearly understood that even if she had the recipe and exact amount of materials, she didn’t have this kind of control and also couldn’t produce this kind of pill.

One hour quickly passed. During this time, the temperature of the pill furnace was controlled at some fixed point. This was the crucial temperature for refining the xun qi pill, if it is not exact then only a waste product will be produced without the slightest amount of medicinal effects. Finally, the moment to collect the xun qi pill arrived.

Yang Chen's approach to collect the pill was very special, at least Ho Lin is unable to make sense of what she is looking at. Not only Ho Lin, if it was any other great alchemist in the world, he will also be unable to recognize this pill collecting skill.

Yang Chen had learned this pill collecting skill from the pill scripture given by the Great Supreme Elder. The Great Supreme Elder had a very high-level knowledge in concocting pills second to none, also, the pills refined from the pill furnace of the Great Supreme Elder were matchless compared to others. This was not only due to the quality of the furnace but also because of this unique pill collecting skill developed by him.

This pill collecting skill is one of the many other pill collecting skills which Yang Chen found suitable for himself after much thinking. Yang Chen had only once refined this kind of elixir in his previous life to inspect his own fire arts. In any case, he also gained slight understanding about alchemy. Yang Chen can roughly determine what sort of technique should be used to extract a pill.

Along with Yang Chen's signal, the medicinal liquid flowing within the pill furnace suddenly started to split into numerous pieces. Every small piece started rotating around and later slowly



became circular and solidified. In less than half an hour, all of them turned into a round and plump pills.

Seemingly as if an unseen imaginary hand was holding these pills, they started to float within the pill furnace. Soon after Yang Chen stopped the flame in his hands. All these pills fell down and formed a pile at the bottom of the pill furnace.

Yang Chen smilingly pulled out a jade bottle prepared long ago to collect these xun qi pills. Later both he and Ho Lin took out one pill to examine it.

Properly refined round and plump xun qi pills, well proportioned and smooth outer surface, similar from all sides, anyone looking at it will love to twist it between their fingers. Unfortunately, like some good pills, it doesn't have any medicinal fragrance nor any kind of bad smell like some low-level pills, actually, this elixir doesn't have any kind of odor, which will really baffle people. If Ho Lin would not have seen Yang Chen refine this pill successfully, she herself would not have believed this is an elixir.

Ho Lin failed to realize this but Yang Chen was indeed very clear about it. It doesn't have a medicinal smell because all of it is confined inside the pill without the slightest amount of leakage. Just from the way it is, this xun qi pill is perfect and invulnerable. Yang Chen was quite satisfied with himself for refining this kind of pill in the first time.

“Young Master, does this pill have any use?” Ho Lin curiously asked. She hadn't heard of this kind of strange recipe and strange technique before. She had only asked after thinking about it for a

long time.

“For you and me it is useless!” Yang Chen faintly smiled making Ho Lin absolutely astonished at this answer.

“Isn’t useful for qi layer?” Since it isn’t useful for Yang Chen and herself, Ho Lin immediately thought to this extent.

Yang Chen slightly nodded and confirmed Ho Lin’s conjecture. Seeing Yang Chen confirm her conjecture, Ho Lin’s eyes brightly shined “could it be that this elixir is useful at foundation stage?”

“Also useless for foundation stage!” Yang Chen again replied.

Suddenly Ho Lin became suspicious, not useful at qi layer or foundation stage, then could it be useful at JinDan stage? How is this possible? This pill is refined just by using common herbs!

“You need not guess anymore, this pill is just useful for an ordinary person, for the benefit of those preparatory disciples.” Yang Chen directly answered Ho Lin’s question. Hearing this answer, Ho Lin immediately felt somewhat disappointed. He had wasted so many ingredients just for the benefit of preparatory disciples, doesn’t this mean he would not gain any profit?

“Don’t be anxious, first let’s take this pill to the Medicinal Hall for appraisal, maybe we will get a nice surprise, How about it?” Yang Chen did not specifically tell all the information to Ho Lin letting her use her own imagination.

Medicine Hall is responsible for buying and selling all kind of elixirs and materials in the Pure Yang Palace. It also has a courtyard in the Nine Earth Manor specifically to serve the outer disciples. Generally buying and selling through Medicine Hall and willing to spend contribution points is considered favorable. As well as if anyone can refine any elixir, Medicine Hall is willing to buy it or even exchange for contribution points

“You are Yang Chen?” Medicine Hall’s elder sized up Yang Chen and wrinkled his brows. Seeing Yang Chen nod admittingly, even though he did not have any friendly relations with Yang Chen he patiently tried to advise him “ Cultivation requires a steady and serious nature, if you want to practice alchemy, you must raise your cultivation and then come again. You should not waste your time doing this otherwise, it will be of no benefit to you.”

Hearing this advice, Yang Chen was quite pleased, since the other party was considering his own benefit. If other show good intentions towards him, Yang Chen will also not think ill of them.

“Many thanks senior for your good intentions.” Yang Chen cupped his hands to express his thanks. Soon after taking out the jade bottle containing the xun qi pill he handed it to the elder and said “Senior help me appraise this. How is the quality of this pill?”

“What is this pill?” The Medicine Hall’s elder took the jade bottle and opened it. Looking at the pill he asked “The appearance is actually pretty good, but it is any useful?”

“When I was at the Ye Xiu Manor I had eaten a few herbs which have been useful to increase my sensation for qi. So I tried to refine something but don’t know whether I succeeded or failed. Also thanks for your trouble the elder of the Medicine Hall to identify it.” Yang Chen randomly fabricated some excuse to conceal the affair regarding the recipe. (Tl note: so that no one becomes suspicious of him)

“I will accept the medicine, you should return back and wait for news. Appraisal of elixirs requires, at least, two days.” Medicine Hall’s elder didn’t say much, he had already told him what needed to be said. Moreover, even if Yang Chen had truly refined this stuff, it will be no use advised him again to pay attention to his real work and so on. So he only followed Medicine Hall’s rule and told Yang Chen to wait.

Yang Chen returned back to his courtyard to cultivate and wait, but again a lot of rumors started in the Nine Earth Manor. Yang Chen who didn’t knew the limits of his own capabilities had surprisingly refined an elixir from ordinary ingredients and taken it to the Medicine Hall for appraisal. Furthermore, according to an elder of Medicine Hall who had analyzed the elixir for half a day, this stuff has absolutely no use at the qi layer or foundation stage.

This news immediately gave rise to a lot of baseless rumors and mockery. Shen Da, Ho Lin and the other servants who ran errands for Yang Chen in the manor also had to face taunting expression with occasional sympathetic looks everywhere they went. Some people also felt sympathy for their next eight generation as they were following this kind of unreasonable master like Yang Chen.

This time, everyone was convinced that Yang Chen would turn into a joke when the appraisal of the elixir will come out so they were all waiting to mock him. That Medicine Hall elder had ample experience, just by tasting any new medicine, within half a day he can determine its medicinal properties. He had already said that it is ineffective for cultivators at qi layer or foundation stage so it is surely useless. An elixir made only from ordinary ingredients how can it be effective at JinDan stage?

As everyone in the Nine Earth Manor was waiting for Yang Chen to appear at the Medicine Hall, suddenly appeared a person who had never before visited the Nine Earth Manor, the master of Pure Yang Palace's Medicine Hall, JinDan stage expert Zhu Chen Tao.

Zhu Chen Tao immediately went inside the branch of the Medicine Hall and hurriedly asked the person in charge "Where is Yang Chen? Where is that Yang Chen who had refined this xun qi pill? At once bring me to meet him!

# Chapter 29 - The Useless Pill Turns Out To Be Significant

The master of Medicine Hall was known to have an absolutely unconventional nature in the Pure Yang Palace. His entire life he had meticulously researched alchemy and different medicines, even delaying his own cultivation. If it were not for the support of large quantities of elixirs, it would have been impossible for him to enter the JieDan stage. However, since he was a master alchemist, this kind of advancement was normal for him with the help of alchemy.

These days Zhu Chen Tao was researching a difficult problem regarding the concoction of pills, when he heard, some younger disciples talking about this new type of unusual elixir. Reportedly this new elixir helps neither in cultivation nor has it any other effect after consumption. This made him quite confused.

When delving into a difficult problem, one should try to look at it from a different angle, maybe he would be able to gain a sudden insight, Zhu Chen Tao also held this kind of opinion. That's why he called that younger disciple to come over and thoroughly inquired about this xun qi pill.

If it has no use for a person who cultivates, then what other significance does it have? Zhu Chen Tao was baffled. However, since this elixir had already been collected for appraisal, Zhu Chen Tao must have a look so that he can determine what use it has.

Seeing that the Medicine Hall master himself had personally appeared, the younger disciples hastily brought the elixir to him and explained everything to him about this elixir, such as the fact that this elixir cannot be used by people who cultivate and also this elixir was refined by a first qi layer outer disciple.

Just by holding the elixir for a moment, Zhu Chen Tao was able to determine about ninety percent of the ingredients in the elixir. He can immediately determine some medicines just based on their color alone. Nine out of ten of the raw materials in this pill were very mediocre herbs, so as to say they were all used by ordinary people. Not even a single high-grade herb was used.

Feeling disappointed, Zhu Chen Tao was just about the return this xun qi pill, when suddenly he discovered a slight anomaly. This pill was very carefully made and refined, it did not emit even a single trace of medicinal smell. Just this skill alone made Zhu Chen Tao feel inferior. He was a JieDan stage alchemist, so to manufacture this kind of pill using ordinary ingredients was not a very difficult matter for him. However, he was aware that the disciple who refined this pill was just at the first qi layer, which was an absolutely remarkable feat.

Just by looking at the mastery with which the pill was created, Zhu Chen Tao determined, that a thorough study on this thing, known as xun qi pill, was required. Since this kind of ordinary drug cannot influence him in any way, Zhu Chen Tao grasped a pill with his fingers and ate it. He believed that the fastest method to appraise a pill is indeed to use one's own mouth to taste it.

As soon as it entered his mouth, the xun qi pill quickly melted

and disappeared as if it had turned into air. Subsequently, it was no longer there. Zhu Chen Tao was stunned, don't tell me this pill has this kind of effect?

This herb is named xun qi pill, surely it must have a purpose. Zhu Chen Tao thought about it for a moment and apparently thought of something. He again picked up a xun qi pill and it entered his mouth.

However, once again this elixir quickly melted in his mouth, but this time, he was concentrating his soul to sense exactly what is happening and discovered something acutely different. As soon as the elixir melted in his mouth, an extremely feeble stream of qi attempted to rush into his channels, however it was stopped by his own spirit power and immediately dissipated without a trace.

However a shine appeared in Zhu Chen Tao's vision, he was familiar with that recent sensation when the stream of qi attacked his channels. This was the same sensation he had felt in the days when he had barely begun to cultivate and had attempted to sense the qi. Yes, no wonder why this was called xun qi pill. This elixir is the most simple means to assist those preparatory disciples to find the qi sensation.

Not useful for cultivators? Chu Zhen Tao did not particularly care, he was the Medicine Hall's Hall Master so compared to those ordinary disciples he must be even more broadminded and should consider the benefits to Pure Yang Palace even more.

No matter how strong a sect is, it is always because of its disciples, directly from the lowest leveled preparatory disciples to



the outer disciples and all along up to the inner, and even to the direct disciples, the disparity grows higher layer after layer. However, the lowest level disciples are the foundation of any sect. A sect's growing potential is not at all determined by the most powerful person within the sect, but it is decided by the lowest level preparatory disciples.

Zhu Chen Tao was an experienced person, so he was aware that trying to find the sensation of qi as a preparatory disciple before they start cultivating is extremely difficult. If at that time, they had the assistance of this xun qi pill, Zhu Chen Tao was sure, that the time required for them to become an outer disciple would at least be cut by half.

If the time to reach the first qi layer can be cut by half for every preparatory disciple, then compared to the present, the number of people who can become outer disciples will increase by many times. A large number of outer disciples implies, that the number of inner disciples will also greatly increase and the higher the number of disciples, the greater the sect's potential.

After he realized this point, Zhu Chen Tao took this bottle of xun qi pills directly to the palace master. As the leader of the sect, the palace master's view on this matter was even more sensitive and at once his eyes brightly shined.

“This disciple must be heavily rewarded!” The palace master immediately decided to reward Yang Chen.

“Also, this xun qi pill is my Pure Yang Palace's secret. Apart from us, two people, disciples of the sect and especially your Medicine

Hall's disciples. The secret of this xun qi pill certainly must not be easily revealed to outsiders. Having this xun qi pill, I am absolutely certain, that within a hundred years my Pure Yang Palace will be able to expand many times!" Having said that, even the Yuan Ying stage sect leader's voice started shaking.

However, a tiny first qi layer outer disciple was still unworthy for the sect master to show himself personally. Therefore, the medicine hall's hall master Zhu Chen Tao volunteered himself to go and find Yang Chen.

Even Zhu Chen Tao himself had some selfish interests for undertaking this task. After sampling the xun qi pill with his own mouth, he knew what it was made of. Even if he was a great master of concocting pills, if given the same drug ingredients, he still was incapable of properly refining this xun qi pill.

Strictly speaking, he basically hadn't seen the xun qi pill being refined. Even if he had seen the procedure he would only be able to produce a pill quite resembling it, but that also wouldn't have even a little bit of its effect. This made Zhu Chen Tao feel discouraged and simultaneously very excited.

The drug ingredients cannot be wrong, so the only mistake can be in the quantities of drug ingredients used and more precisely in the unusualness of the refining technique. It might be possible, that he hasn't even heard of this refining technique. Zhu Chen Tao had the urge to immediately meet with Yang Chen and to see the refining technique for himself.

Hence, the entire Nine Earth Manor was totally stunned, usually

they would only hear the legends of this great character of the Pure Yang Palace, Medicine Hall's Hall Master, JieDan stage Zhu Chen Tao who had hurriedly rushed to the Nine Earth Manor and started demanding to meet with Yang Chen.

Being graced by the esteemed presence of this great JieDan stage expert, the entire Nine Earth Manor started to jump and fly like dogs and chickens. Who could have thought that a JieDan stage expert would come to the Nine Earth Manor, wanting to meet with an outer disciple who had just recently joined the Nine Earth Manor?

Chu Heng, who was the Merit Transferring Disciple, was also considered as half the owner of Nine Earth Manor, was already very respectfully waiting nearby. Hearing that Zhu Chen Tao was demanding to meet with Yang Chen, although he had a cultivation of foundation stage, he could not help but shudder within his heart. For what reason does a Jiedan stage alchemy master so anxiously want to meet with an outer disciple?

Even though he was doubtful in his heart, not a single trace of dissatisfaction was seen on Chu Heng's face. He ordered a disciple to go and find Yang Chen and demand that he immediately come over. Wouldn't it be a joke, if a Jiedan stage expert would have to lower himself to go to meet with an outer disciple?

At that time Yang Chen was cultivating as always, his life these days was utterly serene. To other people it appeared, that every day at a fixed time he would meditate and train to circulate his qi and afterward just idle around within the Nine Earth Manor. Sometimes he would just squander away the sect's contribution

points, earned with great difficulty and exchange them all for time at the Hidden Pavilion.

Every day he would sit around in meditation to train and circulate his qi, in the eyes of countless people, this was already lazy to the extreme. They had never seen a lazier person than him. Adding to Chu Heng's unintentional attitude, other than his four servants, basically no one paid any attention to him.

Even Sun Hai Jing, who had recently come out of his closed-door training, also did no longer have that kind of hatred towards him as earlier. On one hand, Sun Hai Jing who had cultivated even a step further seemed to have let go in his mind. On the other hand, bothering about such a lazy person also didn't seem appropriate with his status. The more laziness Yang Chen displayed, the less threatening he became.

But no one was aware that although Yang Chen only cultivated for one day in a week, in reality, in that one circulation, he would cultivate the Yin and Yang five phases secret forward and backward and also every time before cultivating, he would consume a Profound Yang Fruit's pulp.

The pulp of the thousand year Profound Yang Fruit contains within it spirit power, that could make a stream of saliva flow from people's mouths. Even if this much medicinal power cannot be absorbed completely, in the situation where Yang Chen's Yin and Yang five phases secrets are instigating each other, a single circulation is enough for Yang Chen's cultivation to reach the realm of second qi layer.

However Yang Chen was not satisfied with this dramatic increase in the spirit power, and used the reverse five phases to subdue each other, so that the rapidly increasing spirit powers will crazily try to restrain each other and cancel out, only leaving behind the purest portion which the reverse five phases aren't able to offset. Nevertheless due to these reverse five phases of Yin and Yang, Yang Chen's cultivation once again returned to first qi layer.

Being processed by these kinds of forward and backward five phases of Yin and Yang's loop, the spirit power in Yang Chen's body was being continuously purified. Only Yang Chen knew, that this kind of purification was the best of the best. When he reaches the pinnacle of qi layer and tries to break through to the foundation stage, he won't have to purify the heterogeneous spirit power within his body.

Countless people bottleneck at the pinnacle of qi realm, just because they had used a variety of means to increase their magic power rapidly in order to rush to the pinnacle of the qi realm, but although the magic power is increased it's quality is far from sufficient. But Yang Chen will not have this kind of problem.

Since Yang Chen is now displaying fire attributed spirit power, naturally he would focus more on the quality of the fire attribute spirit power. After thoroughly digesting the medicinal power of Pure Yang Fruit, Yang Chen can always intentionally raise the spirit power of his fire attribute and reflect outside, for people to sense the fire qi circulating in his body.

Every day, a single complete circulation cultivation was already sufficient for Yang Chen. If it were not for this Profound Yang

Fruit, then the spirit power which he cultivated naturally during training is so small that it can be easily overlooked. Yang Chen was unwilling to waste his time during such hard labor. To the other people, it seemed as if he was just a lazy person.

“To blindly and painstakingly cultivate is not the correct path.”

Shen Da and other servants were very suspicious. Before entering the Nine Earth Manor, Yang Chen was not this kind of careless, why had he changed like this after coming here, he seemed like a different person. For them Yang Chen explained: “If just painstakingly cultivating can guarantee success, then why does the sect still encourage disciples to travel outside, concoct pills of immortality, refine tools and even do odd jobs to be exchanged for sect’s contribution points and still allows disciples to relax after cultivation?”

Under Yang Chen’s influence, Shen Da, Ho Lin and others only cultivated nine circulations in a day. He had informed them, that this was their limit. During the rest of the time, other than serving Yang Chen, they do odd jobs at the Nine Earth Manor, to be exchanged for sect’s contribution points. Yang Chen and his servants had turned into unusual few within the Nine Earth Manor.

Since Zhu Chen Tao had demanded to look for Yang Chen, naturally a disciple was sent at once to request Yang Chen to come over. It just so happens that at this moment Yang Chen was just taking a stroll, so when he heard someone calling him, he hurriedly rushed to come over. Some distance away, Yang Chen sensed an unusual breath, barely exposing a loftiness similar to a

monarch under the heavens.

Discovering this grandeur, Yang Chen's emotions were stirred, but his face didn't show any abnormality and he rapidly followed after the disciple, who was leading the way and arrived at the Medicine Hall.

Zhu Chen Tao didn't meticulously curb his own breath entirely, so naturally it was emitted. Nevertheless, a JieDan stage expert's grandeur made the urge to bow down in worship appear in the nearby people. The waiting disciples, were all breathing heavily, but still did not dare to rise, looking at Zhu Chen Tao, their hearts filled with great admiration.

“Yang Chen still hasn't come to pay his respects to the elders?”

At a far away distance, Chu Heng's berating voice was heard.

Yang Chen also didn't dare to be careless and very respectfully bowed in front of Zhu Chen Tao. Before he could open his mouth Zhu Chen Tao's figure arrived before him in a flash and clutched Yang Chen. Zhu Chen Tao loudly asked:

“You are Yang Chen? This xun qi pill was refined by you?”

“Yes, Elder!”

From his previous life, Yang Chen was well aware, that Zhu Chen Tao was a pill concocting enthusiast. He had refined this xun qi pill

precisely to raise his importance in the Medicine Hall. Initially, he had planned to refine some high-grade elixir, so that Zhu Chen Tao would take notice of him, but he didn't anticipate that Zhu Chen Tao would come this fast.

“Refine it in front of me!”

Without saying anything further, Zhu Chen Tao directly instructed Yang Chen to start concocting pills. When everyone standing on the side heard this, each and every person was stupefied. A JieDan stage expert had shown this much impatience just for this, this really made people unable to believe it.

“Here?”

Yang Chen was startled, following which he started laughing.

“Elder, this place has many people present, which is not suitable for the meditation to concoct pills of immortality. We should change the location!”

While speaking, he glanced at Chu Heng from the corners of his eyes. Very clearly, ‘many people present’ precisely meant Chu Heng.



# Chapter 30 - Shocking a JieDan Expert

“Move, let’s go to your concocting room!”

Without raising any objections, Zhu Chen Tao directly stood up to leave.

With this one move, other people who had still not dared to stand up, all hastily stood up. The elder in charge of Nine Earth Manor hurriedly stepped forward and hastily said:

“Elder, since you want to concoct pills, isn’t the Medicine Hall comparatively suitable? Moreover, all others wanted to observe and emulate younger disciple Yang’s pill concocting skill.”

He did not think this reason was enough, but due to this statement Zhu Chen Tao immediately remembered the palace master’s instructions, that the sect regards this xun qi pill as utterly important and no person should be made aware of it. Hearing the words of Medicine Hall’s elder, he straightforwardly gestured with his hands

“Do you have the herbs required by Yang Chen? Or do you have his pill furnace which he can use without much trouble?”

These few words declared his views, naturally everyone who heard this understood that Zhu Chen Tao absolutely did not want to look at Yang Chen’s pill concocting in here. Each and every person can only resentfully follow after Zhu Chen Tao, planning to

pass by and take a look at what kind of amazing pill Yang Chen had concocted.

Seeing what was happening, Zhu Chen Tao wrinkled his brows slightly

“What are you all doing? Don’t you have any daily activities to attend to? Go do your own tasks. Those who don’t have anything to do, immediately go cultivate, don’t be lazy!”

Hearing these reprimanding words, even a fool could understand that Zhu Chen Tao doesn’t wish for anyone to follow him. At this moment, looking at Yang Chen’s gaze, everyone was extremely jealous of him. This was a JieDan stage expert of Medicine Hall, if this experienced guy were happy and had randomly said a few words of guidance to them, it would have benefited them for their entire lives. Ah! What a pity, they received no such opportunity!

Upon seeing this, in his heart Chu Heng was also unsure what to think, he hurriedly waved his hand towards everyone and loudly instructed

“Get busy all of you! Elder, permit this disciple to accompany you!”

“What are you going to assist me with? Since you don’t have the fire attribute, you will also not be able to learn concoction, what do you hope to gain by following me?”

Chu Zhen Tao did not care whether Chu Heng was an inner disciple or not, whether he was the Merit Transferring Disciple or not and directly refuted him harshly.

“You sure are one easy going Merit Transferring Disciple, don’t you have any matters you have to attend to every day, eh?”

Facing this rebuke from Chu Zhen Tao, Chu Heng did not dare to utter half a letter and hastily bowed, asking to be excused. However when his gaze swept across Yang Chen, it was filled with malicious blaming.

Zhu Chen Tao just happened to catch this glance of his and immediately said with utter dissatisfaction:

“What are you looking at? Why? Are you jealous of an outer disciple, just because he can concoct pills? Luminous Moon Hall’s disciple, why are you becoming more and more unworthy of my respect?”

These words were extremely serious, Chu Heng absolutely did not dare to stay at the same place. Everyone watching also didn’t dare to casually keep watching and very quickly fled. Even after this, it still seemed as if Zhu Chen Tao was unwilling to forgive Chu Heng and loudly yelled after him “When cultivating, the most important thing is to cultivate the heart and nurture the character. Your nature still requires some sort of tempering!”

Many people look forward to the day when they could receive a JieDan stage expert’s guidance, but Chu Heng was certainly not

happy right now. The recent words of Zhu Chen Tao had been heard by everyone in the Nine Earth Manor very clearly. All of a sudden, he lost a lot of face. After this incident, the eyes of many disciples in the Nine Earth Manor could not help but turn somewhat contemptuous when looking at him. Naturally Chu Heng blamed all of this on Yang Chen once again.

However, Yang Chen did not care about Chu Heng's opinion. Since he had already raised his value to Zhu Chen Tao, naturally he was happy to make himself even more significant. He respectfully invited Zhu Chen Tao to his tiny courtyard and immediately commanded Ho Lin to prepare the ingredients. Shen Da, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin were all standing by, waiting for orders, for fear of making Zhu Chen Tao feel dissatisfied.

Inside the simple and crude pill concocting room, only these few people were permitted to stay. Other people of the Nine Earth Manor, even if they were enormously curious in their heart still did not dare to peep in front of a JieDan stage elder.

Ho Lin was already shaking due to nervousness, following after her master just for a brief month, and surprisingly he is meeting with a JieDan stage elder. Previously she did not even dare to imagine this kind of thing, but now at this moment, the JieDan stage elder was sitting in front of her. All of this just seemed like a dream.

Despite being nervous, Ho Lin's basic skills were pretty good. Soon all of the materials used for the concoction last time were all properly prepared. Even the quantities used were all properly weighed. Soon afterward, Yang Chen took out his pill concocting

furnace from his qiankun pouch and placed it in front of him.

“This is your pill concocting furnace?”

Looking at this crude furnace that had already reached its limit, Zhu Chen Tao could not help but reveal an astonished expression. Just with the help of this pill concocting furnace, Yang Chen was able to produce the xun qi pill. What does this mean? Could it be that another pill concocting genius is going to emerge from the Pure Yang Palace?

This astonished expression on Zhu Chen Tao's face only flashed for a moment before disappearing instantly. He was more interested in knowing Yang Chen's pill concocting skill. He had already seen the ingredients used and compared to his analysis they were not very different, only there were slight inconsistencies with the amount used, but this was still not sufficient to make Zhu Chen Tao incapable of producing this xun qi pill. The only thing that can explain this discrepancy is precisely the pill concocting skill used by Yang Chen.

In front of a JieDan stage expert, Yang Chen also could not help but take this seriously. Sitting upright in his place, both of his hands started gripping the two handles of the furnace and he began to work. Before the eyes of everyone present, something suddenly shined brightly and two flames appeared in Yang Chen's hands

Just with a glance at the flame in Yang Chen's hands, Zhu Chen Tao immediately determined that this is only an ordinary fire of the five elements and that the flame doesn't have any special

characteristics. This was not surprising, it would be a miracle if an outer disciple at first qi layer had a unique flame. The xun qi pill also doesn't have any marks of any eccentric flame, so obviously it is an ordinary flame.

Only, Yang Chen's control over the flame made Zhu Chen Tao's eyes open so widely that even his eyeballs seemed to come out. Just as the two thin spirals of flame began to rotate, he immediately fixed his entire attention on the flame within the pill furnace, not even blinking once.

Like last time as soon as the drug ingredients were mixed, they melted, then began to rotate and soon after homogeneously blended with each other. Finally, under Yang Chen's flame control, it was successfully scattered into small, well-proportioned pieces. Afterward, Zhu Chen Tao helplessly stared, as Yang Chen used a seemingly absolutely ordinary pill collecting skill to take out those successfully refined elixirs and placed them in a jade bottle.

From beginning to end, Zhu Chen Tao had attentively watched Yang Chen's skill without missing anything. With the rapt attention, he had observed and analyzed Yang Chen's techniques until Yang Chen had finished the refining.

After Yang Chen had collected the pills in the jade bottle, Zhu Chen Tao took out a single xun qi pill with his fingers and put it in his mouth. Suddenly, a portion of qi tried to invade his meridians in a flash and disappeared. Yes, this was the genuine xun qi pill.

Everything taking place right in front of Zhu Chen Tao made him unable to have any suspicion. There were no unique drug

ingredients, no mysterious pill furnace, not even a distinct and unique pill collecting skill. All that was different was Yang Chen's fire arts, that kind of skill can even be described as having reached perfection in the eyes of the JieDan stage expert Zhu Chen Tao.

“You! You!”

Pointing towards Yang Chen, Zhu Chen Tao spoke the same word twice, seemingly as if he had not thought what he had wanted to ask. This is Zhu Chen Tao's first time facing an outer disciple, but he was still feeling this way.

Yang Chen's spirit power was quite inferior, Zhu Chen Tao also didn't expect a first qi layer disciple to be more powerful. However just talking about his skill in fire arts, the skill he just showed, even Zhu Chen Tao himself wasn't able to achieve it when he was at the first qi layer. Although now, relying on his cultivation of JieDan stage, he was barely able to achieve it, but he was still unable to do it as effortlessly as Yang Chen.

It is important to know, that Yang Chen already had so much control over those two flames that he can lengthen them by pulling them to their limits. The thin flame of fire was so thin, that even in the eyes of a great master like Zhu Chen Tao they were like threads of natural silk. Even if it was Zhu Chen Tao, achieving such a feat was monstrously difficult for him and furthermore, during the processes required for concocting pills not even the smallest mistake was allowed.

As a master of pill concoction, Zhu Chen Tao clearly understood more than half of the principles behind this xun qi pill after

observing all the events during the concoction. All there is to it is that those spiral flames sealed inside the pill will instantly appear after consumption and when the spiral qi will bursts out, people will feel a kind of qi sensation being imposed externally, which will allow the new cultivators to become aware of this single thread and then rapidly enter into the state of sensing qi and that's all there is to it.

The important part of this xun qi pill are the two spiral threads of flame. They should never intersect and the more they can be pulled, the stronger the medicine's effect. In case, the two spirals of flame intersect, the qi sensation will be destroyed instantly and even the pill furnace will turn into a pile of scrap.

What shocked Zhu Chen Tao was that even if he understood the entire principle behind this xun qi pill if he himself tried to refine the xun qi pill this way, he did not dare to guarantee success every single time. However, Yang Chen in front of him, under the pressure of a JieDan stage practitioner, must be even more distracted when controlling the fire to refine the pills. Yet he had finished this serious refining quite easily. This one point even made Zhu Chen Tao feel inferior.

After thinking about this, Zhu Chen Tao suddenly felt ashamed of himself. He was a JieDan stage pill concocting master, even he himself could not count how many times more experienced he was than Yang Chen, but in face of such a furnace and those ordinary drug ingredients, even using the worn out furnace when concocting the pills. Unexpectedly even he was inferior to a first qi layer disciple. How can he endure this?



“This control over the fire of yours, where did you learn it?”

Zhu Chen Tao finally steadied his mind and found the focus to ask this question. He wanted to know who had guided Yang Chen so much in the control of his flames that it had turned him into such a freak, which can even make him feel inferior?

“When I was at the Ye Xiu Manor, Manager Shangguan Feng guided me once.”

Yang Chen had already thought of a proper excuse. Facing Zhu Chen Tao’s inquiry, he was not even a little bit flustered and frankly spoke:

“He had said that since I had fire spirit root, in the future when I cultivate, no matter whether it is fighting, refining tools or concocting pills, all are inseparably linked with my control over the fire. He had particularly warned me again and again that I must be able to proficiently control the flame. I obeyed Manager Shangguan’s advice and after reaching the first qi layer, I especially practiced controlling my flame for more than half a year.”

“When you cultivate you only circulate once in a day, yet you train to control fire for over half a year?”

Zhu Chen Tao was startled, he had indeed heard about Yang Chen’s experience: This disciple, after entering the Pure Yang Palace within a brief period of one and a half years, had already reached the first qi layer, the required criteria to become an outer

disciple. This kind of speed can already be regarded as equal to a person with extremely good comprehension. Unexpectedly he was actually training his control over fire for half of the year, in other words, he had already reached the first qi layer within a year.

Shen Da and the other servants standing on the side were just as stunned by this, but it also removed the doubt from their hearts. In the Ye Xiu Manor when Yang Chen had entered closed-door training, it was always these four servants serving him. During that time they had already sensed some spirit power fluctuations, but at that time he didn't reveal anything, so they had some doubts about this. Now they understood; Yang Chen was not just cultivating once in a day but rather he was practicing his skills to control fire.

Compared to Zhu Chen Tao's shock, within the hearts of Shen Da and the other servants even more stormy waves began to rise. Although the elders didn't know, they were all aware how difficult Yang Chen's cultivation road was. If the time when Yang Chen was learning letters and other basics was deducted, then from the time when Yang Chen began to cultivate to the time when he reached the first qi layer, would be the extremely short period of half a year. They were aware that even in the entire Pure Yang Palace, this would be an unprecedented achievement.

“Just because of Shangguan Feng's words, you were practicing by yourself to this extent?”

Seeing Yang Chen nod his head admittingly, only pleasant surprise and shock were left in Zhu Chen Tao's heart. This shock was different compared to Shen Da and the others. He was

terrified by this kind of cultivation comprehension of Yang Chen.

For a person to achieve success in cultivation, apart from his own innate root that is the attribute of the spiritual root, what mattered most were other things, like the person's own comprehension and meticulousness as well as the extent of assistance he received from others. Even if someone has a valuable spirit root but bad comprehension, then he can't even understand let alone cultivate.

Yang Chen did not have any kind of external assistance. Just based on a single piece of advice given by Shangguan Feng, that newly promoted outer disciple, he had practiced his control over fire to this extent. This made Zhu Chen Tao unable to find any words to describe him and could only use the word insane to perfectly describe this kind of ability.

Zhu Chen Tao had a sudden impulse: this kind of innately talented disciple, surely the palace master should know about him. This outer disciple who, even facing against the pressure of a JieDan stage expert, could speak frankly and while refining herbs didn't show the slightest amount of confusion. This kind of disciple has shown the highest potential for growth among the disciples recruited by the Pure Yang Palace in the past hundred years. If this kind of disciple is not carefully cultivated, then that would Pure Yang Palace's greatest loss.

“So, Yang Chen, I won't regard you as an outer disciple and you also shouldn't regard me as an elder. We will get rid of our status and simply probe your control over the fire. What do you say?”

The more he observed Yang Chen, the more he became fond of him. Zhu Chen Tao had a sudden urge to take him as a disciple, but he was aware that at present this was not possible. But he could still give him directions. He certainly did not wish for Yang Chen to take the wrong path.

Once these words came out of Zhu Chen Tao's mouth, Shen Da, Ting Yuan, Ho Lin, Gu Qin, all four people were dumbstruck. Who was Zhu Chen Tao? For these four people, he was a legendary existence! Even if any outer disciple sees him, he would immediately kowtow to the elder. What is he saying? To get rid of their identities? To investigate together equally? Have they misheard or is the world just going crazy?

“How can I deign the elder to trouble himself!”

However apparently as if Yang Chen had not realized Chu Zhen Tao's implied intentions he modestly replied. Then immediately spoke out: “I have somewhat not understood the situation, I request the elder to guide me!”

# Chapter 31 - I Owe You

It was not out of his expectations that Zhu Chen Tao would ask for collaborative testing and as he did Yang Chen like a snake that has been hit by a rod crawled up and asked for guidance. Yang Chen and Zhu Chen Tao were highly suitable for each other, like bread and butter.

This act alone made all of Yang Chen's servants, who were watching this forget the number of times they had their jaws dropped on the ground.

“Elder, I have always trained by myself, there's nothing special about it. I just want the flames to appear and they do.”

Yang Chen was not at all modest when facing Zhu Chen Tao and bluntly raised his problem

“But sometimes it doesn't achieve the shape I want and only appears similar to it. I don't know why, maybe you can look into it, Elder!”

While speaking, two balls of flame once again appeared on Yang Chen's hands and soon after began their performance which can dazzle other people.

Quietly, the two round flames seemingly mixed entirely with each other, forming a thin flame rod linking Yang Chen's both hands. The thin rod was long and circular, however it had

ordinary thickness. The red colored flame within the rod began to roll but wasn't able to escape the rod's reach.

Immediately following, the flame started to turn into a square shaped box with the flames smoothly flowing on its surface. If someone did not pay attention, maybe they would be under the impression that this was a real object and not some illusory flames.

Following this, the flame kept on changing shapes to more and more complicated figures. A part of the flame formed a double-edged sword, another portion of the flame turned into the Ghost Aspect Knife, even a sheet of flame turned into a table, a book, a piece of jade slip and then successfully changed into an ignited candle.

Shen Da and the other servants watching were already speechlessly standing, rooted to the ground, most of all Ho Lin and Gu Qin. Looking at the ignited candle, the lower part of the candle was motionless as if it was a concrete object, but on the candle's wick a faint flame was flickering and because of the red color, it seemed even more vivid and lifelike.

The changes weren't over yet! Within a flash, the flame again changed; this time into a tree, apart from the wrong color, the tree trunk and tree leaves were similar to a red jade carving, bearing a remarkable resemblance to reality. Even the creases on the tree trunk can be seen clearly. If one pays close attention, one is even able to find that on every tree leaf, it's entire venation can be seen clearly.

Zhu Chen Tao was worth of being called a JieDan stage expert.

With his formidable spiritual awareness, not a single leaf nor even a tiny portion of the flame on Yang Chen's hand was missed. When he discovered that all the leaves were like this, he could not help but jump in astonishment. This kind of method to control the fire, it's simply using the flame to create a world of its own.

The flame on Yang Chen's hand was still changing, while maintaining the tree for some time, it loudly dissipated and later on changed into a room. This room was exactly the same as Yang Chen's pill concocting room. So much so that even when Zhu Chen Tao used his spiritual awareness to sweep over the flame he just found that it corresponded one to one with each brick and each roof tile, the only difference being that they were much smaller. That's all.

The next change stunned Zhu Chen Tao even more. The room suddenly shrunk, following which a lot of things were formed in the surroundings. It was as if Yang Chen's small courtyard had shrunk by many folds and appeared within Yang Chen's hands.

By the time when everyone could clearly see all this, the courtyard became even smaller, following which everyone could look at Nine Earth Manor's corner, with ten more tiny courtyards. Because of everyone's good vision and spiritual awareness, they were still able to see everything very clearly.

After stabilizing for a while, the Manor shrunk once again, following which a miniature version of the Nine Earth Manor appeared in front of everyone. The real Nine Earth Manor covered an entire area with a circumference of 10 miles, however presently everything was clearly illustrated within Yang Chen's hands. If

everyone present were to use their spiritual awareness to sweep over the figure, they would discover that Nine Earth Manor's every piece of brick, every roof tile, even trees and pieces of stones all can be found within the square cun boundary in Yang Chen's hands (cun=3.5cm).

Watching all of this, the JieDan stage master Zhu Chen Tao, as well as Yang Chen's four servants Shen Da, Ho Lin, Gu Qin and Ting Yuan, were all thoroughly stupefied. What is this? Was this even flame? Using fire to construct an illusory Nine Earth Manor, furthermore with such detail, made people wonder if even more unbelievable circumstances could exist?

It didn't need to be said that Shen Da and the other servants turned foolish, as soon as the fire started changing into more and more complex shapes., Apart from opening their mouths and eyes widely and maintaining the stupefied and dumbstruck expression, they weren't doing anything else.

Even if Zhu Chen Tao could brag about having a cultivation of the JieDan stage, and having several hundred years of experience in the aspect of controlling fire during concocting pills, even he did not dare to pat his chest to boast being able to achieve the same level as Yang Chen.

What made all of this even more unbelievable was that all this was accomplished by a first qi layer outer disciple. When compared to the people present on the scene, including the servants, he had the lowest cultivation. Everything he achieved was certainly against all expectations and a miracle that could make anyone unable to believe their eyes.



Yes, that's right, apart from a miracle, those five people present on the scene could not use any other words to describe the current situation. If the current scenario had been caused by a Yuan Ying stage expert, perhaps it would not be all that surprising, but the fact was that it had appeared in the hands of a first qi layer outer disciple.

The sight of the Nine Earth Manor stayed for a while before dissipating with a loud sound. All of the scenery once again changed into two round, tiny, faltering flames, flickering beautifully on Yang Chen's hands, reinstating their true features.

Yang Chen didn't need to explain much, everyone present understood how he had accomplished this. First using the fire to imitate simple shapes like the rod, square and so on, afterward forming a little more complicated shapes, following which he increased the complexity of the shapes until it could evolve and the entire Nine Earth Manor could be produced. Yang Chen had revealed all the shapes one by one, precisely following the trajectory of his exercises, there was no need to ask.

This kind of perfectionist work, how could it be doubted? At least in the eyes of Shen Da, Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin, this was a perfect demonstration, they could absolutely not see anything wrong with it.

But a JieDan stage expert is a JieDan stage expert, Zhu Chen Tao nevertheless wrinkled his brows as he started pondering as if he had thought of something. It was just that he could not find a solution in this short time. Just recovering to serenity from his

shock was already pretty good.

“Elder, you have also looked, my flame can achieve all this.”

Yang Chen’s words aptly echoed, capturing everyone’s attention over to Zhu Chen Tao. Maybe Yang Chen wanted to ask some stuff which could make things difficult for him, but nothing came to his mind.

“My flame can also imitate complex structures, however, there is a little something which I am unable to accomplish.”

Yang Chen, at last, asked his question:

“I can only imitate motionless objects but can’t do anything about moving parts. Elder, do you have some method solve this?”

Once Yang Chen asked his question, Zhu Chen Tao’s face suddenly became blank, as if he was totally stunned. His eyes immediately brightened, following which he said heavily:

“Yang Chen, compared to your control over fire, my hundreds of years of cultivation is equal to dog shit!”

These words spoken by a JieDan stage expert immediately made Shen Da, Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin turn lifeless. If a JieDan stage expert, moreover a fire attributed JieDan expert, says that his hundreds of years of cultivation of fire arts are equal to dogshit, what does this make them? Even inferior to dog shit?

However hearing these words, Yang Chen's face revealed traces of a forced smile. He had aroused Zhu Chen Tao's interest in him just so that he can have a hidden protective layer within the Pure Yang Palace and at the same time have the other elders also pay more attention to him, but not in order to make Zhu Chen Tao evaluate himself this way. In case other people heard this, it would give rise to many unknown troubles.

The cultivation world is not completely formed from good natured people. Who knows how many people, envious and jealous of other's success, like Chu Heng, there are in the Pure Yang Palace? Who, to curry favor and make friends with disciples related to the Greatest Sky Sect, did everything he could. How can his temperament be proper?

Furthermore, not even within the sect does everyone live a tranquil and tempered life in harmony with everyone. At the moment, the cultivation resources are not at all enough to satisfy the extravagance of all cultivators. This means that everyone has to struggle over the resources within the sect. And in some sects, when a disciple brimming with talent appears and lets his guard down, he wouldn't even know why and when he suddenly died.

In the case that Zhu Chen Tao's assessment of Yang Chen was to spread, even if Yang Chen just stayed in his courtyard and never left, he would still not be able to ensure that he will not suffer any damage. After all with just the strength of a first qi layer disciple, he can at most handle an ordinary disciple of the fourth qi layer, like Shen Da or Sun Hai Jing, but if an expert appears, he would absolutely have to bear the consequences.

Even if he had defeated that assassin last time, that was just because he had underestimated Yang Cheng and didn't expect him to have this kind of killing intent. If the other party had used his full strength from the start, Yang Chen would have already died without leaving anything behind.

Nobody said anything. The whole scene had turned silent for a good while. Just then, Zhu Chen Tao seemingly managed to recover from his lament. Seeing Yang Chen's complexion, he immediately became aware that his recent words could cause those kinds of troubles for Yang Chen. Thinking about it, he immediately said heavily:

“You four people, you haven't heard anything recently and neither have you seen anything. You all wait outside for both of us, Ok?”

As soon as they heard these words, all four servants understood what needed to be done, if after being servants for several years, they still didn't have the ability to make discerning judgments like this, then all of their experience was in vain. All four servants loudly swore on their heart's devil, and not daring to stay at the side of these two people anymore, one by one asked to be excused.

Only when Yang Chen and Zhu Chen Tao were the two people remaining, Zhu Chen Tao excitedly said:

“So fire can actually be used as a toy like this, what do you think about it?”

Naturally Yang Chen did not inform him, that this fire of his was learned from a Heavenly Court's great character, ten thousand years in the future, and also that this had been the passed on experience of people specialized in playing with fire, including the fire attributed heavenly lord and the twenty-eight constellations, so he merely smilingly said:

"I was also not aware which way to cultivate, Manager Shangguan had said to train my control over fire, so I immediately used this kind of method to train my skills with fire. Still I didn't know whether this was correct or not. Hearing Elder's praise, it seems this training was not a mistake.

"Training was a mistake?"

Zhu Chen Tao glared at Yang Chen, then laughingly said:

"Originally, I believed that I would always remain at the JieDan stage, but as a result of this sort of display, I once again have hope to reach the realm of Yuan Ying. I am not your elder, you are my elder."

In his cheerful mood, Zhu Chen Tao spoke words not very well suiting him, no matter if he was a JieDan stage expert, he still couldn't help his attention from swaying under this astonishing find, entirely unfitting for the demeanour of a JieDan stage expert, and Yang Chen's words were already beginning to put aside their status as elder and junior.

Seeing Yang Chen's forced smile, Zhu Chen Tao patted Yang Chen's shoulder to soothe him:

“Be relieved. only the palace master and I are aware about you right now, all others don't know the exact details. In the future, your xun qi pill will be my Pure Yang Palace's secret weapon, you will refine them and the palace will receive them. Be at ease, if you demand crystal stones, you will get crystal stones, if you ask for contribution points, you will receive contribution points.”

“Furthermore, about that problem of yours, how to make the fire able to imitate animate objects, a short while ago I did not know how to answer you.” Even though Zhu Chen Tao was feeling complacent he hadn't forgotten the problem raised by Yang Chen:

“Based on my experience, there are two possibilities: one is that your magic power cultivation is not sufficient, the other is that your spiritual awareness is lacking. First you keep on practicing this way, when I return again, I will think about it and then answer you.”

“Many thanks, elder!”

Yang Chen nodded within his heart. In fact, Zhu Chen Tao's words showed precisely where his present problem was located. Zhu Chen Tao had proved his hundred years of experience of playing with fire, if just based on the experience he is able to discern these problems. Although this was not the crucial point of the problem but once Zhu Chen Tao goes back and researches about it, he will surely understand the mystery. There are many things which are just like paper tigers: once pierced through, there

will be no more secrets.

However, Zhu Chen Tao words about keeping everything a secret made him feel quite relieved. As long as he does not want to gain a reputation as a cultivation talent but rather as a pill concocting expert, his treatment will certainly be very different. People are not fond of offending a pill concocting master, even demons feel the same way. For the person who can probably save their lives or who can help in increasing their cultivation, the majority of the people in the cultivation world would like to curry favor with him. Who knows when would they have to seek his help?

“What are you thanking me for, I should thank a talented person like you!”

Zhu Chen Tao waved his hands strongly in disagreement, without showing even a bit of the airs of being a JieDan stage expert. While speaking, he creased his brows

“Only, how to thank you? En, how about this old man receives you as an apprentice, my own direct disciple, how about this?”

These words startled Yang Chen. He hadn't expected Zhu Chen Tao to provide him this kind of great gift. There were many benefits to becoming Zhu Chen Tao's own direct disciple. If such a thing were offered to any other person of Nine Earth Manor, to all of them this would be a happy occasion as if they had reached heaven in a single bound. But there is one problem: after his rebirth Yang Chen had only wished to pay his respects to his own beautiful master.

“Elder, this is not in compliance with the rules, you should not break Pure Yang Palace’s rules just for my sake.”

Yang Chen hastily thought of some excuses. However soon after he noticed that this can only stall for the time being. When he reaches foundation stage he will be faced with this question once again, so he honestly and sincerely said:

“Furthermore, this disciple also wants to learn a few things, other than concocting pills at the Pure Yang Palace.”

These words, are precisely a tactful rejection. Zhu Chen Tao had hundreds of years of experience, how could he not understand this. But forcing someone is not good. A JieDan stage expert still often needs to obtain permission. Laughingly he said

“Since this being the case, then I will owe you one, seek me if you need anything! Furthermore.....!”

While speaking, Zhu Chen Tao fished out a pill furnace from his qiankun pouch and placed it in front of Yang Chen.

“Your pill furnace is extremely inferior, this one, is a present for you!”



# Chapter 32 - Pill Furnace Magical Tool

“This was a furnace which I purchased in an auction, before reaching the JieDan stage, when I was traveling the world. Although it’s a low-quality furnace, it just so happens that it can handle your fire arts method and display it to the pinnacle.”

Zhu Chen Tao glanced at the furnace which he had presented with a satisfied look and said:

“I already have the highest quality furnaces, you, however, are roughly at the right stage to use this pill furnace and can improve your pill concocting skills.”

“Many thanks, elder, for your generous grant! To refuse would be impolite of this disciple!”

As soon as Yang Chen took a quick look at the furnace, his face immediately revealed a smiling expression, so without declining, he immediately exclaimed his gratitude.

Zhu Chen Tao seeing him accept it frankly became quite delighted. Compared to the help in finding the path to Yuan Ying cultivation, giving this low grade pill concocting furnace seemed almost too trivial. Luckily he had already granted a favor to Yang Chen, this had let his heart be a little more at ease.

“About the xun qi pill, you absolutely cannot tell others about it, particularly the refining method.”

Before he left, he repeatedly warned Yang Chen about this. He had just recently witnessed Yang Chen's perfect control over fire, so now he hurriedly returned to ponder over it and experiment. To stay until now was just to give face.

Waiting until Zhu Chen Tao could not be seen anymore and his silhouette had faded away, only then a smile appeared on Yang Chen's face as if he had gained the world's most precious treasure. He very carefully held the pill furnace which Zhu Chen Tao had left behind in his hands and began to inspect it from top to bottom. The more carefully he observed it, the brighter the smile on his face became.

Ho Lin had quietly come in, but just at that time she saw Yang Chen rejoicing while holding the pill furnace in his hands. She didn't dare to disturb him and instead quietly moved back and left the room. A pill furnace left behind by a JieDan stage expert can absolutely make a first qi layer disciple, who has the fire attribute, abnormally excited.

Other people were not aware, but Yang Chen had discovered something regarding the pill furnace, which made him so excited that he was even drooling incessantly. This pill furnace he had before his eyes, even if the color or shape was different, was quite similar to a specific pill furnace which he had heard about in his previous life. A pill furnace, which reportedly was discovered in this mortal world.

Profound Spirit Furnace. In his previous life, this was an extraordinary furnace even within the heavenly court, it wouldn't

be an exaggeration to say that it practically ranked within the top ten. From what Yang Chen had heard, all kinds of elixirs can be refined by this Profound Spirit Furnace. This is the only furnace apart from the eight divinity furnace of the Great Supreme Elder, which can accomplish this. Even the other furnaces ranked higher than this Profound Spirit Furnace have their limitations. Most are incapable of refining all types of elixirs..

The Profound Spirit Furnace, however, doesn't have this type of restriction, the reason being the unique characteristics of the Profound Spirit Furnace. Initially, this Profound Spirit Furnace was not a top notch furnace; rather it was just a furnace embryo. Only after being used for refining by thousands of masters, and seeing varieties of flames was it able to become a first rate furnace.

Frankly speaking, this Profound Spirit Furnace is a pill concocting furnace that can be upgraded. Only the things required to evolve it are comparatively extraordinary. Apart from the special materials required for a pill concocting furnace, this Profound Spirit Furnace still requires absorbing various sorts of flames. Only then it will be able to upgrade. Presently, within Yang Chen's hands, it was very possibly just the pill furnace embryo, yet to be discovered by the almighty pill concocting master from his previous life.

This Profound Spirit Furnace was made by an expert, but he only finished half of it, because he didn't even have the proper materials. Even the creator himself didn't knew whether his ideas were feasible or not, therefore, he roughly manufactured the furnace embryo and abandoned it afterwards. Even after this, this Profound Spirit Furnace's performance was still equivalent to a low grade spirit furnace.

Holding the furnace within his hands, Yang Chen scanned it with his spiritual awareness several times and put in his spirit power to check how closely it resembled that Profound Spirit Furnace. Yang Chen did not dare to believe that all of a sudden he would have the kind of good luck to receive this kind of legendary pill concocting furnace. Thinking about this, Yang Chen's hands begin to tremble a little, as if a large meat pie had fallen from the heavens and landed directly in his hands.

However, Yang Chen also realized that this Profound Spirit Furnace was at the earliest stage. If placed in the hands of someone who doesn't know what it is, it would only be a low grade furnace. Who would be willing to waste the highest quality materials just for a low grade pill furnace? Who would be willing to part with those precious flames, just to have them spoiled on a low grade pill furnace? No need to speak of regular people, didn't even the JieDan stage Zhu Chen Tao also just consider this Profound Spirit Furnace as a waste and directly give it to Yang Chen?

In any case, as long as Yang Chen has the opportunity to obtain the top notch materials or possibly obtain a precious flame source, he would directly use it on the furnace. Although he was not absolutely sure, Yang Chen had already recognized this pill concocting furnace's characteristics so he was at least eighty percent confident.

No matter what was said, this was still a low grade pill concocting furnace. Compared to Yang Chen current furnace without a grade, it was many folds better. Even if it was low grade, it could still be included within the ranks of magic tools. If only considering Yang Chen's strength of the first qi layer, he wouldn't even be able to to

obtain any kind of magic tool and could only use some talisman tools and talisman gems without any grade.

Taking advantage of his good spiritual awareness, which was already comparable to a mid level foundation stage expert, he could at least properly bind the Profound Spirit Furnace. Using his spiritual awareness to mark the furnace, he tried to bind it to himself.

If Yang Chen allowed the Profound Spirit Furnace in his hands to go to others, it would certainly be a truly foolish move. Therefore, without even the slightest hesitation, Yang Chen began to bind the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Formidable spirit power started to bind the Profound Spirit Furnace and began to carve its mark in the furnace's nucleus. Although his spiritual awareness was very formidable, his spirit power was still quite lacking; so to complete these affairs Yang Chen still spent an entire day's time.

Shen Da and other servants didn't dare to disturb him, they were aware, that Yang Chen was attempting to refine that pill furnace. Although they had little hope in their hearts, they still did not dare say anything only feeling a little dejection within their hearts, while waiting for Yang Chen to appear.

After spending an entire day and night, Yang Chen finally succeeded in marking the Profound Spirit Furnace. Until Yang Chen's formidable spiritual awareness had carved his own mark inside the Profound Spirit Furnace, he did not dare to believe that he was already in possession of one of future top ten furnaces of

the imperial court.

Carrying a perfectly satisfied smiling expression, Yang Chen happily walked out of the pill concocting room. He could not help but rejoice. Even in his previous life, when he was a Principal Golden Immortal, he wasn't even able to touch a magic tool of this status.

On the doorway, Shen Da, Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin all four people had formed a neat row of two people on each side, waiting for Yang Chen to come out. Seeing him come out, all four had a cheerful look and at the same time also had a faint hint of expectation in their eyes.

Yang Chen didn't say any nonsense, he was well aware what they wanted to know, so while smiling gently, he said:

“The pill furnace was not bad. Oh and by the way, whatever attribute you are, you all can train in accordance with my method to control any of the five phases. Moreover, it also has great advantages for tempering your spiritual awareness.”

The four servants were elated. They had been waiting here precisely to ask about whether a method similar to Yang Chen's could also be used for the cultivation of other attributes, aside from the fire attribute. Although they had some speculations regarding this, receiving a confirmation made them utterly delighted. The future path of cultivation for these few was immediately determined.

After resting for a moment, Yang Chen immediately ordered Ho Lin to come to the pill concocting room. At the moment Yang Chen's cultivation was quite lacking, so controlling the flame to refine herbs for concoction was impossible for him alone and he could only depend on Ho Lin for help. This was exactly the opportunity that Ho Lin had been looking for.

Having recently bound Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen could not resist using this furnace to refine the xun qi pill, so he first tested this pill furnace. Since it was already decided that he would use this Profound Spirit Furnace for the rest of his life, naturally Yang Chen would begin to take good care of it. Apart from using the best materials to refine it and to seek a flame to be absorbed, the other means to take good care also include raising the amount of medicinal qi.

How do you increase the medicinal qi? By concocting lots and lots of pills. Regardless of what sort of elixir it is, all elixirs use a variety of drug ingredients, the more these varieties of herbs are refined, the more medicinal qi they leave behind. The pill furnace is also able to balance these varieties of medicinal qi better and better, and only then can it achieve the purpose of any furnace which produces pills.

“Magic tool?”

When Ho Lin saw Yang Chen taking out the furnace, she recognized that it was a magic tool within the time it took for the pill furnace to reach the height of half a person from being palm sized, and didn't conceal the slightest bit of her envious expression.

“Cultivate properly, and in the future you will also get a chance to acquire one.”

Yang Chen smiled, without saying too much. He just indicated to Ho Lin to prepare the herbs for refining.

Such a large pill furnace naturally can make even more elixirs. Yang Chen asked Ho Lin to prepare ten times more herbs. Afterward, he held the two handles of the pill furnace and began to manipulate the flame. As his cultivation was very low, he had no way to use his spiritual awareness leisurely to control both the flame and the furnace at the same time, so he could only use his hands to grip the furnace.

As the flame appeared, Yang Chen immediately sensed the ferociousness of the Profound Spirit Furnace. Even if it was low grade magic tool, it was still a magic tool. Compared to Yang Chen's original worn out furnace, it was simply a difference of heaven and earth.

No matter whether it was manipulation of fire or the quantity of the flame, using this Profound Spirit Furnace was two to three times better, compared to his original pill furnace. Even Yang Chen had a sort of feeling that this pill furnace had a flesh and blood relation with him, it was as if the furnace was aware of what Yang Chen wanted to do.

All herbs were added in one by one, and within the blink of an eye, they turned into medicinal liquid. Soon, the medicinal liquid



started flowing along the spiral structure formed from the flames and began to solidify. Everything was same as in the previous refining session, without the least bit of difference. Only the quantity of herbs used was increased by ten times and also Yang Chen didn't feel as strained as before.

After one hour, a whole one thousand xun qi pills were successfully collected by Yang Chen using his pill collecting technique. The entire process was incomparably smooth.

Yang Chen also did not waste any time, previously he didn't have a very good method to earn the sect's contribution points, but now Zhu Chen Tao had already left behind orders to collect those pills in exchange for crystal stones or contribution points as he wishes. So Yang Chen directly went to Nine Earth Manor's Medicine Hall and asked the Medicine Hall's disciple to exchange them all for contribution points.

Either Zhu Chen Tao was very generous or maybe because it was related to the Palace Master, but Zhu Chen Tao directly allowed Yang Chen to get one contribution point for one xun qi pill when originally twelve low grade spirit stones could only be exchanged for one contribution point. It is important to know that the xun qi pill was made up of ordinary herbs so the cost of the production could be neglected.

Yang Chen didn't waste even a single point and directly handed it over to the Hidden Pavilion in exchange for reading time. The next day, apart from cultivating at the usual time, Yang Chen spent all day within the Hidden Pavilion.

In his previous life, Yang Chen's training in fire attributed cultivation had already reached the extent other people could not fathom, he didn't have a thorough understanding of the other elements, tho; only a few insights which he had gained during his fights, but they were totally unrelated to training. Yang Chen was also not able to achieve anything this way, so he could only depend on the sect's ancient records for assistance.

Although the Nine Earth Manor's Hidden Pavilion is only intended for qi layer disciples, it still possesses a lot of ancient records. Just the number of cultivation methods suitable for qi layer disciples alone would number several hundreds. Adding in many ancestors' cultivation experiences, lessons, the ancient records just in the field of cultivation, it would number over ten thousand jade slips.

If the knowledge and experience regarding pill concocting, refining tools, talismans, spell methods and other various sorts of classes were counted as well, the number of jade slips just in the Hidden Pavilion of Pure Yang Palace's Nine Earth Manor alone would reach into the hundreds of thousands.

In general, when the qi layer disciples enter the Hidden Pavilion, they are all divided and marked according to their requirements. Usually, they just wanted to find a suitable cultivation method, and then look for cultivation methods which were written with the ancestor's experiences and lessons. People like Yang Chen who pick up every jade slip and attentively read it once are truly unique.

Many people looked at Yang Chen acting this stupidly and shook

their heads without saying anything. Many were also delighted at his silliness, but no one called out to warn him. Apparently they were all waiting for Yang Chen to make a fool out of himself.

Chu Heng naturally heard of Yang Chen's activity in the Hidden Pavilion and instantly understood his aim. Yang Chen was certainly having some problems regarding cultivation, but he couldn't ask the Merit Transferring Disciple, who was Chu Heng, for guidance. As a result, he went to the Hidden Pavilion to find the solution.

However, Yang Chen's actions also allowed Chu Heng to lower his guard. A first qi layer disciple, who spent every day staying at Hidden Pavilion and was not properly cultivating, what kind of future prospects could he possibly have? There was absolutely no need to suppress him. Reading such a disordered mess of ancient records, he would surely destroy himself. At the first qi layer, he wants to master all them, who does Yang Chen think he is? A JieDan stage expert?

However without caring for other's opinions, Yang Chen eagerly read these ancestors experiences every day. Using his experience as a principal Golden Immortal, he could naturally differentiate the correct ones from the incorrect ones. Very quickly he gained an intuitive understanding towards the properties of the other attributes.

When he did not have sufficient contribution points for staying in the Hidden Pavilion, he would immediately concoct a furnace full of xun qi pills. This much was enough for him to stay within the Hidden Pavilion for several days. This kind of lifestyle lasted

for half a year and during this time, Yang Chen had read the greater part of jade slips within the Hidden Pavilion.

Just when Yang Chen had put down a jade slip and was about to pick up another one, a faint sigh of regret suddenly came from behind him:

“Younger disciple Yang, reading like this will have no use!”

# Chapter 33 - Finally Finished With The Hidden Pavilion

A lot of disciples came to the Hidden Pavilion, more than a hundred people every day, many of them didn't have any business here, but just wanted to look at Yang Chen's obsessed appearance and would roam in Yang Chen's surroundings daily.

Because this had become a habit for Yang Chen, the people close to him did not mind it much, in any case, everyone who entered the Hidden Pavilion was a servant or disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, so they were not allowed to exchange blows here. He also took no notice of other people, and thus, others also didn't try to look for him. Therefore, Yang Chen did not pay any attention to whoever was near him and was solely engrossed in scanning the jade slips, one by one, using his spiritual awareness.

However, the voice made Yang Chen sluggish, as he was recalling some warm memories from the bottom of his heart. In his previous life, when Yang Chen was in the Nine Earth Manor, this was the voice which cared for him, and after his rebirth, Yang Chen had thought only of his master and forgot the warm sensation he had initially sensed.

Turning his head, Yang Chen looked at the owner of that voice. And exactly as in Yang Chen's memories: well-fitted clothes with a finely crafted hem on her skirt, and a calm look in her eyes, with an exceptional complexion, similar to a fairy in a mythology, people stopped behind Yang Chen's body as if they were in a trance.

“Gongsun Senior apprentice sister!”

After addressing her loudly, all of a sudden Yang Chen was at a loss for words, not knowing what to say and just silently stood, rooted to the ground.

“Junior apprentice brother Yang, this kind of random, impure reading is likely going to affect your cultivation.”

Gongsun Ling, looking at the junior apprentice brother whose name she had constantly heard recently, advised with good intentions.

However at that moment, Yang Chen’s mind had already returned to his previous life and the memories of Gongsun Ling started appearing bit by bit.

In every sect, some genius disciples brimming with talent would appear and certainly Gongsun Ling was one of those genius disciples. Only the cultivation world was utterly cruel and under the fierce competition, a lot of these gifted disciples have perished due to various reasons. This was also the reason why Yang Chen did not want Zhu Chen Tao to reveal his talent.

And so in his previous life, Gongsun Ling was precisely a genius disciple who had died. However, the reason for her death was not because of other people, but rather when she was on the verge of ascending, she failed and ended up disappearing like scattered ashes and dispersed smoke. Yang Chen’s impression of her was not

as clear as that of Shi Qian Qian and Sun Qing Xue because of her premature death in the mortal world.

Still, during Yang Chen's cultivation in his previous life, Senior apprentice sister Gongsun Ling had guided him many times. At that time, Yang Chen had only been an ordinary disciple, but Gongsun Ling was a direct disciple\*. Even when Yang Chen was in trouble once, Gongsun Ling had saved him. At his master's sect, apart from his master, at least, half of the warmth Yang Chen had received within the sect was due to Gongsun Ling.

Saving his life and other favors, the affairs of those days, although they hadn't happened yet, naturally Yang Chen could not allow the disaster of those days to be repeated since he had already found Gongsun Ling.

Gongsun Ling had an excellent, earth attributed spirit root. As for how good, Yang Chen did not know the specifics, but he remembered that Gongsun Ling had become an outer disciple in one year, had reached foundation stage in ten years, later on in less than eighty years she had entered the ranks of JieDan experts, afterwards, within a hundred years, she had reached the YuanYing stage and within five hundred years the Da Cheng stage.

At that time, Yang Chen had merely stepped into the mid-JieDan stage. Even the matter of Yang Xi putting false charges on him had not happened yet. At the moment, it could be assumed that Gongsun Ling's natural talent is rather good, not the least inferior to Shi QianQian and Sun Qing Xue. Even Yang Chen had started to doubt whether Gongsun Ling really had an earth attributed spirit root.

“Junior apprentice brother Yang! Junior apprentice brother Yang!”

Gongsun Ling saw Yang Chen blankly staring at her without speaking and became somewhat angry. A lot of people were infatuated with her charm, Gongsun Ling understood this very clearly, however, she had good intentions when warning Yang Chen, but seeing him bluntly stare at her, she was really not pleased.

“Sorry, Senior apprentice sister Gongsun, I was thinking about some small matters and was a little absentminded!”

When Yang Chen heard Gongsun Ling’s voice, he managed to wake up. Based on Yang Chen’s temperament, only memories of the past could cause him to make such a mistake, otherwise, it was impossible for him to be so absent minded. Perhaps, Gongsun Ling had a place deep down in Yang Chen’s heart.

Hearing Yang Chen’s respectful reply, not trying to conceal his absentmindedness, made Gongsun Ling’s opinion of him a little more favorable. In a calm voice she started giving pointers to Yang Chen:

“Junior apprentice brother Yang, you’re looking at so many jade slips randomly, it won’t benefit your cultivation in any way.”

“Many Thanks, Senior apprentice sister, for thinking about me!”



Yang Chen hastily cupped his hands to express his thanks. At this point, he could clearly distinguish between his own good and bad.

However Gongsun Ling didn't say much, and seeing Yang Chen express his thanks, she bluntly turned around to leave, only leaving behind a single sentence:

“You better work hard!”

Watching Gongsun Ling's charming figure leave, as if obsessed, Yang Chen stayed at his current position without any movements.

On the following day, without restraining himself by following Gongsun Ling's advice, he once again went to the Hidden Pavilion and started reading the jade slips one by one. Spending two more months on this, at last, Yang Chen had finally gone through all of the jade slips once.

Yang Chen in his previous life would always assiduously cultivate to reach the foundation stage and would only go to the Hidden Pavilion, just to look for fire attributed cultivation methods, how could he have this kind of leisure to read all the jade slips in the Hidden Pavilion once? There were over a hundred thousand jade slips, reading an average of 500 jade slips every day took two hundred days of time from beginning to end.

Within these days, Yang Chen had unbeknownst to him acquired the nickname of a bookworm. Almost the entire Nine Earth Manor had become aware that Yang Chen had this kind of character.

Apart from 'third fire fourth fire' cultivation method, the rest of the 'first tree second tree fifth earth sixth earth seventh metal eighth metal ninth water tenth water' cultivation method had changed Yang Chen entirely already. The effects of changing were even better for the 'eight types of cultivation' method. Previously, to collect all of the bits to make the whole five phases of Yin and Yang, he could do nothing but collecting the cultivation methods of different types without thinking about the effects, but now, finally, he had found suitable cultivation methods.

The results could be seen immediately when the Yin and Yang five phases secrets began to move, when compared to those previous cultivation methods, the changed ones had a very smooth feeling to them. Additionally, because of these cultivation methods, Yang Chen's knowledge of other attributes' cultivation methods had also increased by a lot. Reading as many jade slips as he had, Yang Chen had naturally benefitted from them. Even at the qi layer, he had come to realize the spirit power of the five phases.

Adding to that Yang Chen's knowledge regarding the fire attribute, it was like removing the weeds and keeping the flower, Yang Chen had become even more knowledgeable towards the five phases' secrets. About the knowledge he could not gain, reading it again would be useless. He could only depend on himself to find the answers. After all, what's written in these books is other people's knowledge, Yang Chen must do is to grab it and convert it into his own.

The bookworm Yang Chen had come out of the Hidden Pavilion and was also not going in anymore. Suddenly, this news had

spread wildly across the whole Nine Earth Manor.

Every day when Yang Chen was reading, a group of people would be forming around the scene, looking at him like he was a clown, giving a performance. Wherever Yang Chen went, he found these kinds of looks. Occasionally, a few of them did not contain this kind of ridicule but were instead filled with regret or perhaps confusion. But the entire Nine Earth Manor wasn't able to find out what he wanted to do.

But Yang Chen did not pay any attention to that, instead, according to his old habits, apart from circulating the qi through his whole body once a day, he just stayed in his tiny courtyard, meditating, quietly pondering and digesting the large amount of information he had learned from the library of the Hidden Pavilion.

Perhaps in his past life, his knowledge was too much centralized around fire attributed cultivation. When Yang Chen's mind was submerged in concentrating on each and every aspect, even if he only had the experience of the first qi layer, it would still have broadened Yang Chen's horizons. With regards to the comprehension of the Yin and Yang five phases' secrets, it had increased even more.

One month later, just as Yang Chen came out of his half secluded pondering, he immediately saw Sun Hai Jing. On Sun Hai Jing's face was a clear expression of schadenfreude. He looked at Yang Chen as if he was watching a dead person.

“Junior apprentice brother Yang, congratulations!”

Sun Hai Jing looked at Yang Chen with a fake smile and said:

“Master says since Junior apprentice brother Yang has the status of a third qi layer disciple, in accordance with the rules, you can immediately go out to learn through experience!”

“Elder Disciple Sun is being considerate!”

Yang Chen paid absolutely no attention to Sun Hai Jing’s words, merely refuting them:

“May goes out to learn through experience, again it is not compulsory to go travel, perhaps Elder Disciple Sun wants to go very much?”

Sun Hai Jing sneered, as if he had known that Yang Chen would say this, after smiling sinisterly, he chuckled twice and then said:

“Not going out as if on the point of dying, Junior apprentice brother Yang, the order mentioned earlier demands that in the near future, Junior apprentice brother Yang will have to go out. Congratulations, Junior apprentice brother Yang, you’ll be like a fierce tiger in the mountains or a legendary flood-dragon within the sea, you have quite grand prospects, ah!”

Yang Chen’s brows slightly creased. Pure Yang Palace’s superiors have asked him to go out to train? What is this? Could it be arranged by Chu Heng? Thinking about it, Yang Chen slightly

shook his head, Chu Heng isn't bold enough to plan this kind of thing. Moreover, only the top notch people, like the hall masters and the palace master, have the ability to order this kind of things. What does this mean?

Seeing Yang Chen's expression, Sun Hai Jing felt so delighted within his heart, as if during the hottest of summers someone had given him a watermelon to eat. When Yang Chen was in Nine Earth Manor, there was no good method to deal with him, but so long as Yang Chen leaves the MeiQing Mountain, and leaves the territory under the influence of Pure Yang Palace, then certainly Yang Chen would not be so unbridled.

Taking his time to appreciate this moment, only then could Sun Hai Jing leave perfectly satisfied, but before leaving he did not forget to ridicule him, using a very sorry tone to say:

“Junior apprentice brother Yang, originally I intended to wait for the day when the sect's martial arts competition is held and propose a life and death challenge to you. Junior apprentice brother Yang, you are quite ferocious, surely you will not be scared of the difference between our realms. Unfortunately, the meticulously prepared talisman tools and talisman gems will be useless. Ah, what a pity!”

“Talisman tools, talisman gems?”

Yang Chen sneered:

“Senior apprentice brother Sun you seem to have forgotten that

reading at the Hidden Pavilion requires a number of sect's contribution points. These contribution points, if exchanged for crystal stones, would be a good amount. Senior apprentice brother Sun, if I return alive, then certainly at the time of the Sect's competition I will challenge Senior Brother Sun."

A flustered and exasperated expression appeared on Sun Hai Jing's face. Yang Chen reached out his hand to his neck, making a slashing motion. Indifferently releasing a portion of killing intent, he sarcastically said:

"At that time, you can at once clean this neck just wait! I will buy a countless number of talisman tools and talisman gems to crush you to death!"

This kind of person incessantly schemed against him within his master's sect, Yang Chen was already determined to kill him as he absolutely could not allow Sun Hai Jing to live.

Influenced by Yang Chen's killing intent, Sun Hai Jing was startled and his whole body shuddered, his complexion became pale in a flash, he could not help but withdraw by several steps, almost tripping on the courtyard's doorstep behind him. His figure almost stumbled and only then was he able to stand firmly. In the split second when Yang Chen's voice full of killing intent echoed in his ears, it seemed as if his soul itself had started shivering.

Perhaps this excessive show off just now had lost him too much face, so Sun Hai Jing stood firmly and after several deep breaths, his face regained a trace of color. However just like before, he was still endlessly scared. He stubbornly tried to regain his calm

expression, but the muscles of his face were involuntarily trembling, absolutely unable to stabilize.

Finally, he forcefully pushed down his fear, but this still took a good moment. Yang Chen did not even pay any more attention to him and had long ago started walking towards his own room. However to regain his lost face, Sun Hai Jing diffidently yelled towards Yang Chen:

“Say that again, once you come back alive!”

After hastily escaping Yang Chen’s small courtyard until he returned to his own room, Sun Hai Jing was covered with cold sweat incessantly flowing all over him. Only after a long time was he able to calm down. Both of his hands were involuntarily trembling and his mouth kept on mumbling:

“Must not come back, must not come back!”

He was still really frightened.

Yang Chen was certain that Sun Hai Jing had received this information from Chu Heng’s place. What Yang Chen could not understand was, why they wanted to send him, a disciple of the first qi layer, outside to train. It made no sense. Yang Chen was not anxious, however. He was sure that some people will come to notify him.

Sure enough, a few moments later, a person came to notify Yang

Chen and lead him to the Nine Earth Manor's main hall. Here, Yang Chen saw Du Qian whom he had not met for a long time. Furthermore, Chu Heng was also present, and to his surprise, even Gongsun Ling was there.

“Yang Chen, to successfully cultivate, it won't do, to build a cart behind closed doors.”

Chu Heng was speaking with an appearance of guiding him patiently and systematically, like a good teacher.

“It just so happens that a new period to go out and train has started, this time, you are also included. However, this time, there is a special arrangement planned for you, you must not refuse!”

Yang Chen looked over at Du Qian with suspicion. Of course, Du Qian was aware of Yang Chen's doubt, but he only smiled and nodded his head slightly without saying anything. Yang Chen was convinced that Du Qian would not harm him, so this was absolutely not planned by Chu Heng.

“Yes!”

Yang Chen responded without saying much. But Gongsun Ling, standing on the side, was baffled when looking at Yang Chen. For what reason could a disciple of the first qi layer be allowed to go outside to train. Not only Gongsun Ling but Yang Chen himself did not understand the reason. This affair was really quite surprising, he did not know what to think about these kinds of arrangements.



“Go back and pack, you will leave at once!”

Chu Heng opened his mouth again to remind him once:

“Yang Chen, you are a disciple whom even I think highly of, so by all means: you must not get in any accidents on the road!”

These words were very righteous, but Yang Chen was very clear about the meaning hidden within them.

“Be careful of everything when you move out!”

Standing on the side Du Qian amiably warned, then, waving his hand, he said:

“Go and prepare, you will set out during noon! Before the second half of the seventh month, you must reach the Floating Mountain!”

While speaking he handed a talisman to Yang Chen.

“If you encounter any danger on the road, then immediately unleash this talisman, your Senior apprentice sister Gongsun will immediately rush to your aid.”

# Chapter 34 - The Ancestor's Heritage

Originally Yang Chen was still suspicious about the previously mentioned request for him to go out and train, but after hearing that he would have to go up the Floating Mountain, all of his doubts were immediately dispelled. Actually, they asked him to go out to allow him to participate in the heavenly general assembly of the new disciples for every sect on the Floating Mountain.

Thinking carefully, Yang Chen immediately thought of a reason. Perhaps, when he had killed that assassin, he had incidentally told them that he had no fear of illusions and many other things, which made the elders who wanted to gain some face for the Pure Yang Palace, consider him.

This was not some major event, but for Yang Chen, this was a huge opportunity. Initially, he was under the impression, that he still had to stay in the Nine Earth Manor for next three years and only then would he be able to go out, but he hadn't anticipated that it would be so surprisingly easy.

After some casual packing, Yang Chen went towards the Manor's main hall to bid farewell to Chu Heng and Du Qian, and then immediately set off on his first trip to training outside, after entering the Pure Yang Palace.

Gongsun Ling was not present, supposedly she had already set off. Yang Chen was delighted that Du Qian and them hadn't asked him to journey together with Gongsun Ling, otherwise, it would have been quite troublesome.

The four servants Shen Da, Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin, were not allowed to leave, however. They were servants, thus before they would reach the sixth qi layer, they were not allowed to go out and train.

Free and easy by himself, when Yang Chen came out of the Nine Earth Manor, he suddenly felt like a fish who had jumped into the ocean or like a bird, flying high in the sky.

Because of their increased importance, every five or six days Yang Chen would refine a furnace of xun qi pills and deliver them to Medicine Hall. Previously in exchange for the sect's contribution points, but later he had exchanged them all for crystal stones. Presently within Yang Chen's hand, there were at least four to five hundred jin of crystal stones. After leaving the Nine Earth Manor, Yang Chen directly went to the city market at the foot of Meiqing Mountain.

Sun Hai Jing, that kind of nasty person, in no way would he give up this good opportunity to kill him and would definitely make some arrangements to kill him outside. Yang Chen had gone to the city market to purchase some stuff which he could use to defend himself.

Although Yang Chen was not afraid of trash like Sun Hai Jing, he was still only at the first qi layer and many higher level enemies also harbored grudges against him. At the moment Yang Chen had plenty of crystal stones with him, when he entered the city market, as long as he first looks for the crucial stuff and haggled slightly over the price, he could leisurely spend the money, after

all, he was an expert.

After staying in the city market for three days, until Yang Chen felt with his own spiritual awareness for certain that no one was spying on him, only then did he confidently leave the city market and start flying towards a direction other than Meiqing Mountain.

Below Yang Chen's body was only a paper crane. This was a type of talisman tool: the whole body of a paper crane consisted of magical symbols and was processed by the magical power of a foundation stage expert. As long as the user could input the magic power, he could urge the paper crane to fly. Even though its speed was not very high, compared to walking on foot it was a lot faster.

The cost of this paper crane was also quite high. Within the city market, it would cost at least around two hundred liangs of crystal stone. Yang Chen had bought it together with a pile of talismans and talisman gems, taking a discount from the seller for all purchases, absolutely cost effective. (liang=37.5 grams)

Yang Chen was flying along the foot of the Meiqing Mountain, following the signs of human habitation and avoiding all the regions which people are suspicious of. After flying on this route for two days, he had almost left the confines of the territory of influence of the Meiqing Mountain.

Only then did Yang Chen stop the paper crane and enter into the mountain road, disappearing without a trace.

Not long after Yang Chen's silhouette faded away, a secretive

group of four or five people appeared in the region where Yang Chen had gotten off of the paper crane. After looking everywhere, they conceded that they could not find him.

“What a crafty kid. We had come to the area of Pure Yang Palace’s influence to take care of him, but how could we expect that this guy would be so careful, even using a paper crane to escape.”

A middle aged man with a long scholarly beard turned around and said:

“Did you not say that you can find the whereabouts of this paper crane? Where is it?”

“I have pinned my Dark Stitch Tracking Spell on that paper crane, so even if he puts it in the qiankun pouch, it can still be found.”

Behind his body, a person dressed in black clothes with a shady vulture-like appearance coldly said:

“Causing me a loss of fifty liangs of crystal stones and only then cheaply purchasing it, don’t worry he won’t be able to escape.”

When the man in dark clothes finished speaking, he fished out a spell disk and started casting the spell he mentioned earlier. That spell disk was similar to a compass, within its center a pointer kept spinning round and round for a while without halting.

“What’s wrong?”

The person with the long, scholarly beard also looked at the strangely behaving spell disk and asked hastily.

“What happened?”

The person who looked like a vulture was also stunned for a moment. This type of condition could only occur in two types of situations: either Yang Chen was nearby or they had completely lost his trail. The first situation however was completely impossible.

Yang Chen could absolutely not leisurely cultivate in the presence of these five people of the seventh qi layer and these people would immediately sense him. They had already swept this region with their spiritual awareness several times and they were not able to find a trace of him. Yang Chen should’ve had destroyed that paper crane entirely, otherwise even if it was broken, the black clothed person’s tracing spell would have been able to find it.

This kind of situation certainly made all of them very suspicious. Taking the lead, the long bearded scholar looked all around and firmly commanded:

“Everyone separate, he is just a first qi layer disciple and doesn’t have the ability to fly. Everyone look around in an area of five hundred li and then slowly search for him before the meeting, I don’t believe that he could have escaped an area of five hundred li

within such a short amount of time!”

The other four quickly agreed and dispersed at lightening speed. These few people had only collaborated for this single business opportunity, if they succeeded, every one of them would have the chance to obtain a magic tool. This was the kind of opportunity which one would only come across rarely who would still let it slip by, so everyone put in all of their strength to fulfill this task. If they were not doing this within the territory of the Pure Yang Palace, then they would have made Yang Chen suffer the consequences already much earlier.

The long bearded scholar had the highest cultivation among them, so naturally he was the leader of these few people. Opening his spiritual awareness widely, he frantically swept the surroundings once but after he did not find anything, he started to become suspicious, so he began to carefully search the surroundings.

Yang Chen hadn't walked very far away and was within the region of the spell formation. As for that paper crane, he had already put it into the Achievements Ring. For the enemies to discover the whereabouts of the paper crane through the Achievement Ring was simply an impossible matter.

Looking at those dispersing people, Yang Chen sneered and without paying any attention he directly turned around. Using his fingers to do some sort of calculation he selected a path to follow and in accordance with some sort of odd pace he began to walk and soon completely disappeared within a spell formation.

Within the spell formation, Yang Chen walked the exact number of steps he had calculated and only after spending several hours worth of effort Yang Chen stopped on top of a large piece of empty land. On one side of the empty land was a very high cliff and below the cliff there was a conspicuous cave mouth, of which the insides were very dark, making it impossible to see what was inside.

“Fortunately, it still exists!”

Looking at this pitch black cave entrance, a smiling expression finally appeared on his face.

This cave or using a more accurate description, this dwelling was left behind by some ancestor of the Pure Yang Palace. Theoretically, this cave dwelling would be discovered sixty years in the future, including the huge illusionary spell formation on the outside.

This is the most remote part of the Meiqing Mountain, so most people believed that the spirit power here was quite deficient, but they were not aware, that this ancestor had discovered an underground spirit vein here and had constructed this simple cave dwelling to sit extremely close to it, in order to breakthrough to the JieDan stage, condensing his Yuanying. But in the end, he had suffered from failure and the dwelling was blocked due to a great spell, so not even the slightest bit of spirit power could leak out, so nobody discovered this far off place.

In the later generation some disciple of the Pure Yang Palace was seriously hurt and had fallen down into the illusionary spell and by lucky coincidence he studied the spell formation intensively and



only then, based on the experience of the sect teacher who had entered the illusion spell, the cave dwelling could be discovered. However, in this life, it was convenient for Yang Chen.

The spiritual influence was sealed off by that great spell and had no way to leak out, so once Yang Chen came in, he was immediately able to sense that kind of boundless spirit power. This enormous spirit power also provided the unending magic power needed by the source of the illusion spell, making the land of illusions more and more powerful and also hindered people from detecting it.

From the Achievement Ring Yang Chen took out the clean bottle containing the Medicine Garden of the Yang Mountain. Merely a line of that blue colored liquid was left over, appearing almost as if it had dried up, but when it came into contact with the rich spiritual influence, the bottle started radiating light magnificently and out of thin air it began producing a sudden attraction and started gathering the spirit power in the surroundings.

The blue liquid spot at the bottom of the bottle was, as far as Yang Chen was aware, indeed the spirit power absorbed and collected by the clean bottle and used to maintain the spirit power required for the Medicine Garden. For the herbs to grow, adequate spirit power is absolutely significant, however, it could not be too excessive, as, if it was excessive, the herbs would die. And so the clean bottle had this magical ability, to absorb and store all of the spirit power in the surroundings and then later slowly release it as required by the Medicine Garden.

Before that, the line of blue liquid at the bottom of the bottle

already contained enough spirit power to support the needs of Medicine Garden for several years. Originally Yang Chen had planned to come out to train after a few years and replenish the spirit power of the bottle, however at the moment he had this opportunity, both to hide from the assassins looking for him outside, as well as to collect the things left behind by the ancestor here, and at the same time he could also replenish the spirit power of the bottle.

To collect the spirit power, Yang Chen himself didn't need to do anything, as long as he exposes the clean bottle to the outside, it would do everything by itself. Yang Che tied the clean bottle to his waist and immediately entered the cave with large steps.

The cave was not deep at all. In those days after discovering the spirit vein that ancestor hadn't made any efforts to decorate the cave and had hastily placed the illusion spell to fool other people, whereas he immediately started to seal the mountain pass. Therefore, after Yang Chen entered, all he saw was a simple and crude cave.

At the highest point in the cave, a night pearl was embedded, which was twinkling with yellow colored light. This much brightness was sufficient for Yang Chen to see everything inside the cave.

When he went a few feet deeper into the cave entrance, he saw an enlarged cave with a circumference of several feet. There on the ground was a mat and on top of that mat, there was a middle aged man wearing Pure Yang Palace's apparel sitting motionlessly with both of his eyes closed. His surroundings didn't have the slightest

bit of liveliness, he had already died several years ago without noticing.

“Junior disciple Yang Chen kowtows to the ancestor!”

Yang Chen didn't dare to be neglectful and bowed his head to salute the skeleton on the mat. This is Pure Yang Palace's ancestor after all and Yang Chen was of the younger generation, so performing this salute as a courtesy was a must.

After paying his respects, Yang Chen carefully stood up, and only then did he move his feet forward and directly went to the middle of the area and used his earth attributed spirit power to excavate a big, square shaped pit. Soon after that, he fished a few gigantic pieces of wood out from his qiankun pouch. These were the good stuff prepared in the city market. Using his wood attributed spirit power, he trimmed the gigantic wood pieces and soon bound them successfully to manufacture a durable coffin.

After doing everything properly, Yang Chen very carefully moved the remains of that ancestor on the mat and placed them in the coffin. Before closing the lid of the coffin, he carefully took the qiankun pouch from the waist of the ancestor. Again kowtowing to pay his respects to the ancestor, he placed the coffin into the recently dug out pit and buried it.

Immediately in the very center of the cave, Yang Chen piled up a tombstone. From his qiankun pouch, Yang Chen took out a highest quality heavenly bluestone and, using it like a knife, from his own memory, carved down the name of the ancestor. After inscripting that the Junior disciple Yang Chen pays his respects, he stood in

front of the grave. After doing this properly, he once again paid his respects and only then did he begin to carefully examine his surroundings.

Actually, all of the stuff in the cave was obvious at a glance. In the center was that one black mat, in the most distant part of the cave there, hung a long sword in a sheath, on either side were wooden desks. Apart from this, there was nothing else in the cave.

However, Yang Chen was aware that all these ordinary looking things, apart from the two wooden desks, were not all that simple.

That black mat in itself was a complete piece of obsidian jade, carved in the shape of a mat. Placed just right at the exit of the spirit vein. The obsidian jade was always covered in moisture and it was not only able to coagulate spirit power, but also prevented the spirit power from coming out too vigorously and cause harm to meridians.

At the moment, the obsidian jade would help Yang Chen's effort in cultivation. Regarding the objects left behind by the ancestor, Yang Chen did not feel even a little guilty in his heart. A person who cultivates the immortal path has to understand the way of karma and since Yang Chen had come in, these items now belonged to Yang Chen.

As he moved the obsidian jade aside, an absolutely rich spirit power, compared to surrounding spiritual influence, rushed forth from where it previously lay. Earlier it was controlled by the obsidian jade, but now it immediately rushed out. Yang Chen was calm, however, and without hurry, he immediately place the bottle

on the vein's exit. The spirit power rushing forth was then directly absorbed by the bottle.

A short while later Yang Chen walked forward a few steps towards one side of the sheath hanging with the sword. Yang Chen only looked at it, though, and didn't move to take it off. His mind began to recall some memories pertaining to the sword, it had a very strange appearance.

The long sword in the scabbard was actually not a sword at all, rather was a sword box, which can be treated both as a flying sword and simultaneously the tool containing a flying sword, a very good item. However if Yang Chen tried to forcefully retrieve it without using any secret way to bind this sword box and just relied on his cultivation, he would be lucky to escape with his life. In the previous life, the Pure Yang Palace even had to pay the price of a JieDan stage master to collect it.

After a good moment, Yang Chen released a long sigh. He had no choice but to abandon the idea of collecting this sword for the time being. Even though this thing was important, his life was even more important. He had already gotten the obsidian jade so he was already satisfied. Moreover, according to his experience from his previous life, this cave would remain peaceful for the next ten years and afterward he would still have the opportunity to collect it.

Bringing his greed under control, Yang Chen sat on the obsidian jade mat and opened the ancestor's qiankun pouch and began to inspect the items inside.

# Chapter 35 - Breakthrough And Binding

## The Sword Box

This ancestor of the Pure Yang Palace who had died while meditating here was a peak JieDan stage expert, however he was not able to find a way to reach the YuanYing stage and thus he slowly exhausted his vitality until he had no option but to die, sitting cross-legged on this spirit vein.

Within the qiankun pouch there were no great magical potions. But this was understandable since he had died while meditating, he had used all of them to strengthen his cultivation base and assist in reaching the next realm, so using up all the magic potions was very normal.

The ancestor was a sword cultivator. All of his accomplishments in cultivation, were precisely contained in that sword box, that is hanging on the outer wall: A scabbard with a long sword. Within the qiankun pouch were actually a lot of cold metal essences like gold and many others, such as refining tools and materials, only, unfortunately, seeing all of these good items, Yang Chen could only sigh helplessly, because, with his current cultivation he was completely unable to make use of these.

What caught Yang Chen's interest were a few jade slips in the qiankun pouch. Picking them up one by one, he began to inspect them.

Cultivating the Dao of sword, Yang Chen did not think about it

for the time being, also, the Dao of sword was quite fierce, but definitely not as fierce as the methods passed down by the members of the Heavenly Court he had executed. Yang Chen merely swept through this jade slip with his spiritual awareness once, remembered it in his heart and for the time being placed it to the side, and then picking up another slip.

To be exact, Refining tools are actually refined swords. The ones within the qiankun pouch were almost all reserved to be used for the next step in refining the sword box. After observing them, Yang Chen treated them the similar way.

The next few jade slips were all related to cultivation. Included among them was also a jade slip which contained all of the experiences the ancestor had made from the beginning until he entered the JieDan stage, which was extremely hard to come by. This piece, Yang Chen was most carefully examining it, merely looking that ancestor's experience through only once before he put it down.

The last remaining item was a jade slip, however, it caused Yang Chen to be pleasantly surprised. This was the most significant cultivation method within the sect, the method to cultivate and bind the sword box.

After very carefully reading each and every word and line within, a smile was finally revealed on Yang Chen's face. Previously he was quite anxious that he wouldn't be able to collect the sword box for the time being, but now this problem had been resolved.

The spiritual influence of the underground spirit vein was

abundant and the clean bottle had already absorbed a lot of it. That single trace of the blue colored liquid had already become much denser, however, the time required for the bottle to absorb the spirit power was very long. It was just enough time to practice the skill for binding the sword box.

An enormous amount of spirit power was required to collect the sword box, and based on Yang Chen's cultivation of the first qi layer it was absolutely impossible for him. But since he had acquired this trick for binding, the problem became manageable.

To be prepared for all eventualities, Yang Chen took out his Profound Spirit Furnace and began to refine a simple yang qi pill to supplement his spirit power. This kind of elixir was utterly simple, so long as one had the strength of the second qi layer one could manufacture it. At the moment Yang Chen had the Profound Spirit Furnace, adding to his ability of almost perfect fire control, this was basically not an issue.

Previously, when Yang Chen had consumed the thousand year Profound Yang Fruits, he had stored two peels in his Achievement Ring, so, this time, they could be used to refine the yang qi pill. The medicinal strength of the Profound Yang Fruit was too fierce, so although its effect for supplementing the spirit power was quite outstanding, it would require Yang Chen to use the reverse Yin and Yang five phases secrets and meditate to keep it under control, which is not as good as the steady replenishment of a yang qi pill.

In the cave, Yang Chen was unhurriedly making preparations for concocting his pills, outside, however, the five people looking for Yang Chen were very agitated. The long bearded scholar had



determined that Yang Chen had not left this area and he had stationed his comrades on the road ahead to monitor, but they weren't able to discover even a trace of Yang Chen's silhouette. That Yang Chen had to have gone into hiding in this area.

“If the Pure Yang Palace discovers that we are at the Meiqing Mountain's edge and chasing to kill a disciple of theirs, we won't even be able to run!”

The long-bearded scholar was anxious in his heart, but his face did not show even a hint of nervousness, he was merely using some sort of communication with other people, using their spiritual awareness to pass on these words.

In fact, he didn't even need to stress the importance of this issue, as the others also knew about the seriousness of this affair. Every one of them was very alert and observant, afraid to leave out any one region. However, it was as if Yang Chen had disappeared without any intention of returning. In front of everyone's eyes, he had disappeared without any trace. That guy who had claimed that he could trace the paper crane was facing even more blame for this reason.

When concocting the pill, Yang Chen sat on the obsidian jade mat, and the jade mat was on top of the mouth of the spirit vein, which just so happened to restrain the clean bottle. Despite a portion of spirit power being extracted already by the bottle, what was left for Yang Chen was just right to allow him to replenish, neither too slow nor too fast.

This underground spirit vein which was enough to supply a

JieDan stage expert until death, while sitting in closed door training, was naturally able to support Yang Chen in binding the sword box and provide him with the required spirit power. He had concocted the pills just to guard against any unexpected eventualities after all Yang Chen's current cultivation realm was very low. Even if he increased his spirit power by means of the five phases engendering each other, compared to a JieDan stage expert, the difference would be like a drop of water in the ocean.

The peel of the thousand year Pure Yang Fruit dissolved under the heat of Yang Chen's flames and turned into a medicinal liquid. The yang qi pill was different from the xun qi pill: The xun qi pill required Yang Chen to make his flame move like air, whereas the yang qi pill could be properly manufactured with just one hand, as long as he has the spirit power to purify the drug ingredients.

Yang Chen had eaten one Profound Yang Fruit every day, thus, he had collected many Profound Yang peels. One peel could be used to manufacture ten yang qi pills, so even if Yang Chen would refine two hundred yang qi pills in his furnace, refining all of these peels and making the yang qi pills would require at least a day and two nights time.

At the time when all of the profound yang peels were used up, Yang Chen was left with two thousand yang qi pills. This amount of yang qi pills, in addition to the support provided by the underground spirit vein, would definitely allow Yang Chen to bind the sword box.

However just when Yang Chen started to put away the Profound Spirit Furnace, he unexpectedly found that there was some kind of

change in the furnace, its medicinal qi had become a little more plentiful. Apparently it accumulates a little bit of the spiritual influence from the elixirs refined and thus becomes a little better. This Profound Spirit Furnace, the higher the number of elixirs refined, the better its quality would become.

In his last life, this sword box had become the property of Pure Yang Palace's Luminous Moon Hall's hall master, after those several YuanYing masters had cooperated to subdue this sword box, and he had become very famous, but unfortunately he ultimately betrayed Yang Chen's master. In this life, Yang Chen would not help the tyrant in his evil ways and set it aside for him.

After practicing the technique several hundred times, so that he wouldn't make a mistake while collecting the sword box, Yang Chen began his preparations for the job. The spirit power absorption rate of the clean bottle was changed by Yang Chen, so that it was a little bit slower so that he could increase the speed of his replenishment of spirit power by two to three times with the help of obsidian jade mat.

All of the yang qi pills were placed into the qiankun pouch within his hand. This qiankun pouch contained nothing apart from the yang qi pills. After all the preparations were done he adjusted his condition to the best he could, then he finally sat upright on the obsidian jade and began to circulate his qi.

The very first thing Yang Chen had to do, was to unleash his Yin and Yang five phases secrets and raise his own spirit power to the maximum. The underground spirit vein's spirit power was steadily replenishing Yang Chen's meridians. The gentle spirit power

allowed Yang Chen to not worry about whether the spirit power would be too much and he would have to take control of it. When he was circulating the qi, he started mobilizing the spirit power to the limit, while he sat a few steps away from the sword box to start the binding according to the secret method.

The long sword which hung on the wall in its scabbard had apparently been attracted towards Yang Chen and slowly started flying away from the wall, floating to a region a few metres away from Yang Chen. As it was hanging in the air, it began to rotate.

All of this looked very effortless, but Yang Chen did not dare to relax even a little.

To properly use the secret method to bind it smoothly was Yang Chen's sole desire. He was very doubtful, since he had found the jade slip of the secret method within the qiankun pouch of that ancestor, how come that the JieDan stage expert from his previous life hadn't discovered it? Perhaps, after looking at the sword box, he had at once set out to bind the sword box but, on the contrary, was devoured and killed. Yang Chen would not make that same mistake.

The secret method was very complicated and had, at least, two hundred consecutive motions, where he could not make an error even on his first try. With every movement a portion of spirit power would enter the sword box and at the same time it was invaded by Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, slowly replacing the original spiritual awareness.

Yang Chen's present realm was very low, so he could only use

lukewarm water to boil the frog, like grinding or other laborious methods, to slowly remove the spiritual awareness of the ancestor from the sword box, and brand his own spiritual awareness on top of it, to turn this magical tool into his own property.

Every time spirit power would enter the sword box, it would exhaust all the spirit power Yang Chen had available. If it were not for the steady replenishment from the underground spirit vein and also those yang qi pills which Yang Chen took every time after the spirit power entered the sword box, perhaps Yang Chen would only be able to persist for a short time, before exhausting all of his spirit power and getting devoured by the sword box.

Every time the spirit power entered the sword box, it flickered with a bright light once. Every time, Yang Chen would include all of the ten types of spirit power of the five phases of Yin Yang and every time the sword box would twinkle with five types of rays of light.

Within the small cave, a colorless light began to flicker incessantly, as if the sword box had turned into a light show.

Yang Chen's movements were neither very fast, nor too slow, but had a constant speed. The time gaps in between were, by lucky coincidence, sufficient for him to replenish all of his spirit power and afterwards exhaust all of it once again. Under Yang Chen's precise control, all of this had become a constant cycle.

The Yin and Yang five phases secrets were as effective as never before, it was as if the spirit power was completely exhausted within one breath and then replenished entirely within the next.

All of his meridians were continuously waxing and waning under these kinds of circumstances and at the same time they were also getting tempered by themselves.

He had a lot of luck: to have the spirit vein, sufficient yang qi pills and at the same time to have the crazy Yin and Yang five phases secrets. When Yang Chen had spent nearly one thousand yang qi pills, his body's spirit power had gone through the cycle of replenishment and exhaustion of spirit power one thousand times, suddenly all of the meridians in his body were jolted and began to expand.

It was as if his body had broken a seal: The limits on spirit power in his body had disappeared in a flash. Yang Chen thought of something and directly touched the clean bottle on the ground and once again controlled the speed to absorb the spirit power a little slower, allowing the obsidian jade to receive even more spirit power replenishment.

According to his experience, Yang Chen knew that this was an indication of him entering the second qi layer. Ascending a realm does not only affect the spirit power but also the increases the upper boundary of spirit power the meridians can hold by a little, as well as the comprehension of all kinds of laws. The later part was not a problem for Yang Chen, but even if his body was refined by an immeasurable amount of immortal blood, the boundaries could still only increase in a breakthrough, step by step.

After entering the second qi layer, not only did the speed of the Yin and Yang five phases increased but so did the replenishment of spirit power. The upper boundary of the spirit power had also

frantically risen. Apart from just adjusting the rate of the replenishment of spirit power from the spirit vein, he could now put even more spirit power into the sword box with this secret method.

The results were quite obvious, the rays the sword box sent out started to become more and more clear, the speed at which it was revolving also started to slow down and the distance to Yang Chen started to decrease.

Finally, after another one thousand yang qi pills were consumed, the long sword and its scabbard calmly halted on top of Yang Chen's hands. All the rays of light vigorously flickered once before they disappeared completely. In Yang Chen's spiritual awareness he had the feeling as if he was able to completely possess this sheathed longsword before his eyes.

After replenishing his own spirit power, he halted all of the movements and stood up with a happy look across his entire face and both of his hands gently caressing and stroking the sword as if it were his lover. Only after having taken possession of this sword box did Yang Chen discover, that this sword box had many wonderful uses.

This sword box was both a flying sword as well as a receptacle at the same time and could hold hundreds and thousands of flying swords. The sword box's appearance could also change according to the owner's wishes. The previous owner was fond of the sheathed longsword appearance, therefore, it currently had the appearance of a sheathed longsword. However, Yang Chen right now was not very fond of this shape.

Under Yang Chen's gentle caressing and stroking, a change started to appear on the sheathed longsword. Soon, it changed its appearance to that of the exceptionally fearful blade which he had used at the Xiantai platform.

Proficiently brandishing the immortal blade, a delighted expression lit up his face. This sword box was only a flying sword and a sword box which was not very complicated, but the most significant thing was, that it could fuse the sword spirit with the formidable power of the flying sword, and turn them into his own firepower.

The sword spirit could be one or many, however Yang Chen was required to have total control over them. Even the sword box itself could still, at the time of refinement, make a few sword spell formations, when the time came to attack the sword spell would directly draw the formidable power required from the sword spirit.

At the moment, there were at least ten flying swords which had all kinds of attributes within the sword box, however, their quality was, overall, very common. To refine a magical flying sword tool was not an easy task, even if it was that JieDan stage ancestor, he also was not able to manufacture hundreds of flying swords into the sword box.

For Yang Chen this was not a big issue, at the time when he was at the Xiantai platform, a lot of people had told him about the magical tool flying swords which they had left in the mortal world, so as long as he was able to find them he could fill the entire sword



box.

However the sword spirit would not be easy to find, based on Yang Chen's present knowledge and experiences since he had obtained this unique and unmatched sword box, it was certain that he could not randomly use some ordinary flying swords to make up the number. Only if Yang Chen's sword spirit was among the highest quality of items, then and only then would it be of the highest quality.

Naturally it was too early to think about these things. When Yang Chen was stroking the sword box with the ghost blade's appearance admiringly, he thought within his heart about sharpening the edge of the blade. The edge of the blade of the Imperial court's executioner should stay sharp, so as to be able to chop off people's heads with ease.

# Chapter 36 - I Give You The Opportunity To Speak

On the outside the five assassins were still looking for him as anxiously as before. A youngster of the first qi layer can not suddenly disappear without leaving any trace. It wasn't that currently there were no proper techniques to hide one's breath, but rather that this kind of technique could definitely not be used by a kid at the first qi layer.

Yang Chen was still patiently waiting for an opportunity. He had to wait at least until these people got impatient and frivolous while looking for him and then he would dispose of them. Regardless of the number of people on both sides, the difference between their realms was too great, if he met force with force, he would not be their match in any way.

Having recently entered the second qi layer and having obtained that sword box, he was very happy. The thing that made him the happiest was that he had been able to intercept the most difficult to deal with magic tool of Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master, who had betrayed his teacher. That should stop him from becoming as rampant as in Yang Chen's previous life.

Furthermore, Yang Chen did not intend to let go of this underground spirit vein, wishing to fulfill the requirements for spirit power to be absorbed by the clean bottle. On one hand, it could be used to grow the the herbs of the Medicine Garden in the clean bottle, which would require large amounts of spirit power. On the other hand it would prevent strife in the sect if the vein

disappeared before it could be found in the future.

Here at the very edge of the MeiQing Mountain, which could be considered as the region where the influence of the Pure Yang Palace was the weakest, while just ahead there was the territory of another sect. In the cultivation world there was no lack of disputes to plunder natural resources. Even in Yang Chen's previous life, after the Pure Yang Palace had taken the magic weapon, they still had to talk things over with the neighboring sect and leave this underground spirit vein for them.

Since for the time being this cave was in Yang Chen's possession, he intended to keep all the things inside of it entirely for himself, including this spirit vein. Rather than another sect, it would be better if he set it aside for himself. The unrestricted clean bottle was frantically absorbing the spirit power. Usually it could completely draw out the spirit power from a circumference of five hundred meters, so just concentrating on the mouth of this spirit vein was absolutely not an issue.

Although Yang Chen could not refine the magic weapon at the moment, the Universal Treasure Raising Secret could be used anywhere and anytime. In addition to that, the Great Supreme Elder had said, that there were no limits on the use of this Universal Treasure Raising Secret. In short: the more his cultivation would increase, the more frequently it could be used and the higher would be the increase in the grade of the magic weapon. At the moment he had nothing to do, so it was the perfect time to improve the treasure.

There was roughly half a year of time left before the agreed time

of the mid of the seventh month, so he also didn't need to be anxious about hurrying on his journey, as there was no lack of time. Anyway, as long as the Yin and Yang five phases secrets were circulated once that would be enough, for the rest of the time, apart from the Three Purities Secrets there was only the Universal Treasure Raising Secret.

For the whole next month, he was safely hidden inside the ancestor's illusion spell and was honing his strength. On the outside however, those five assassins had almost gone mad.

“This youngster's presence has not been found in any other region, so surely he must be here!”

The long bearded scholar had already used a paper crane to write a letter to connect with his friend far away to confirm that Yang Chen had not appeared anywhere else.

“We cannot go on like this!”

“We are not able to find even his trace, what can we do?”

Since the black clothed man had failed in finding the trail of that paper crane, he complained agitatedly. Even he himself did not know where the problem was, so he could only obediently listen to the instructions of the long bearded scholar and now that the scholar had said so, he also immediately declared his own views.

“We should look for that person from the Pure Yang Palace and

ask him to think of a way for us.”

The long bearded scholar coldly groaned and finally no longer showing any restraint he said:

“We can’t find him, but could it be that the Pure Yang Palace can not even find their own disciple? Which sect would allocate a qiankun pouch to a disciple without a trace seeking spell formation? We should ask him to find his own disciple and inform us!”

“If he decides to go back on our deal and raises the price what can we do?”

The black clothed person immediately asked.

“If he still has the nerve to raise the price, for a younger disciple at first qi layer, unless someone gave him a life protecting item how could he escape from our pursuit? He already gave us false information, yet he would still dare to argue over the price with us?”

The long bearded scholar had a malevolent complexion:

“If he dares to go too far, at worst we can separate and expose his plans to kill a disciple of same sect and pretty soon he would be even more scared than us!”

This time, no one said anything. After finishing the discussion

about this business some of them rapidly departed to look for their client in the Pure Yang Palace. The rest were still monitoring the surroundings, even if they couldn't find Yang Chen, they could still not allow him to escape.

The clean bottle did not have any problems with extracting the spirit power from the underground spirit vein, finally exhausting it. Within the clean bottle, the trace of the blue colored liquid had already turned into four or five big chunks of the liquid. This much spirit power was enough for those herbs in the medicine garden to use for even a hundred years or more.

After putting away the clean bottle with satisfaction in his heart, Yang Chen walked towards the mouth of the cave with a pleased expression. Cautiously thinking about something, he jumped directly from the mouth of the tunnel onto the mountain wall and settled down. Then he cast down a rock, tightly sealing the entrance to the cave, such that not even a trace of the cave mouth could be seen. He was convinced that after ten years, when someone would charge into the illusion spell, he would also only be able to find an empty levelled ground and would absolutely not be able to discover that ancestor's tomb.

He believed that the ancestor also wouldn't want the later generations to incessantly disturb his eternal rest. Naturally, Yang Chen was not afraid that someone would discover that he had already received that ancestor's legacy.

After taking a last look and confirming that everything was flawless, he started moving away from the illusion spell with his fierce looking blade in his hands.

His luck was very good, when Yang Chen had barely walked a short distance away from the illusion spell, he discovered that at a place not very far away, some guy was indifferently spreading his spiritual awareness to look for Yang Chen. Sensing that Yang Chen had suddenly appeared, this person was apparently not able to believe his eyes, so he stared blankly at him, so stupified that he wasn't even able to move.

It was a very good opportunity. Yang Chen's killing intent emerged from his body and directly closed in on the other person's body. At the same time his body also pressed towards the enemy like an arrow, fiercely brandishing the ferocious blade within his hands at the other person in order to behead him.

Even though the ferocious blade was Yang Chen's own magic tool, he did not currently have the strength to make the sword fly to kill him, after all magic weapons could only be as good as the person using them. But even so a magic weapon was a magic weapon, simply talking about the measure of sharpness, it could chop down any person with the strength of the foundation stage or below.

As soon as he was pierced by Yang Chen's murderous spirit, the originally stunned enemy became despondent for an instant. Even though it was merely a split second, it was enough for Yang Chen to charge towards him and slash with his blade.

Ka Cha!

The assassin's head flew high and blood rushed out from the cavity formed in his neck, the headless corpse still making a few gestures with its hands and feet, but then, together with the blood rushing out of the neck, a hissing sound was heard and it fell down to the ground.

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, if you want to blame someone, you can only blame your desire to continue the business of killing me!” Yang Chen put that fierce blade on his back and said this while looking at the corpse. Soon afterwards he lifted the head and glimpsing at a certain direction, suddenly picked up and threw the body towards the direction of the illusion spell.

The long bearded scholar had his senses spread in a diameter of ten miles, so when this person had met his fate, he immediately noticed that something had happened, so in an instant his figure disappeared from where he was originally and appeared again, hundreds of meters away. Thus with a few flickers he appeared at the side of his companion's corpse.

The scholar had come over very quickly, but another one of his companion was even quicker. Yang Chen had finished speaking after killing the person and immediately afterwards he started turning, but before he could even turn his head, he immediately jumped towards the illusion spell. Within a second his figure disappeared between rocks and immediately after that, someone else appeared, only to look after the disappearing Yang Chen.

However, just this glimpse already determined the position where Yang Chen had hidden. At the entrance of illusion spell, in a



diameter of ten meters around it, five people had exhaustively searched this place, using their spiritual awareness to scan, but they were basically unable to find anything. As the traces Yang Chen left behind when he dodged were fading, the assassin suddenly appeared at that spot. When the middle aged scholar appeared, he looked at his companion, made a hand gesture and afterwards immediately disappeared.

Not only was the cultivation of the long bearded scholar the highest, but his thinking was also very deliberate. He clearly understood his comrade's signal, so, after giving the signal, the comrade spotted Yang Chen's silhouette and went inside to chase and kill him.

His biggest worry at the moment was to find the trace of Yang Chen, as long as he was able to find him, he did not worry about getting rid of him. An assassin at the seventh qi layer with ample experience could easily get rid of a first qi layer disciple, right?

Right after his comrade had gone inside to chase after Yang Chen, the complexion of the scholar suddenly changed greatly. Under his foot was his comrade's corpse. How could he be so careless? Since people disappear once they enter, surely it had to be an illusion spell. If Yang Chen could move around freely in that illusionary spell and furthermore could also hide himself from the collective spiritual awareness of the five people and get rid of their companion, then what would happen to his companion who had hastily charged into that illusion spell?

As if to confirm the thoughts of the scholar, his thoughts were about to come true, because suddenly a bloody head without a

body appeared, seemingly thrown highly towards his direction falling a few meters away from him. With a bang sound it dropped to the ground with a few rolls, his two eyes still widely open, a shocked expression spread across his entire face.

This act made the long bearded scholar feel a chill across his entire body. Who could have imagined that of four seventh qi layer and an eighth qi layer assassin chasing to kill a first qi layer disciple, two of them had unexpectedly been killed already and furthermore within a few breaths of each other. Even though the other person was shielded by an illusion spell, it was still too shocking.

The second comrade who was killed had a three sun gown on his body, which had been processed through a foundation stage master's refining tool. Although it was lacking compared to a magic tool, it was still a gown that had the defence of the foundation stage, but to be unable to bear this person's attack in such a short time, what kind of weapon had Yang Chen used?

A flying sword? That was absolutely impossible! If a cultivator at the first qi layer could use flying sword, then all the higher qi layer cultivators in the whole world should hit themselves on head. Even if it was a foundation stage expert, could he guarantee that he definitely possessed a flying sword? Naturally a flying sword is not a talisman tool, so apart from those outstanding disciples of the great sects who can have their master bestow them a flying sword, how could ordinary disciples obtain a flying sword without heaven defying luck?

Surely Yang Chen had a weapon with powerful attack. It was

very possibly a talisman tool or a talisman gem., After a momentary shock, this is what the scholar thought of. Once he killed Yang Chen, he could obtain that talisman gem. As soon as he thought of this, the long bearded scholar suddenly formed some expectations as he even urgently looked forward to killing Yang Chen, regardless of anything and charged directly in the direction in front of him.

The black clothed person had also promptly managed to come over, only he was quite far so he arrived even later, taking even more time, only to come across a headless corpse and the two heads of his companions, as well as the long bearded scholar, standing some distance away from the corpse. Looking at this, black clothed man originally thought to say something, but he only opened his mouth and didn't say anything.

“Come out youngster, I will cut your body into ten thousand different parts!”

The long bearded scholar calmly waited for a moment, but nothing happened, so he attacked at last. At the same time, gold colored rays radiated from both of his hands and charged towards the region where Yang Chen had disappeared.

That was an illusionary spell laid out by a JieDan stage expert, it was impossible for an attack by a trifling qi layer disciple to shake it. The golden rays started shining even more brightly and attacked but all of the attacks disappeared like a clay ox entering the sea, without making any great waves.

The black clothed person vigilantly rose to the sky and slowly

neared the top of the spell formation, hovering in the sky to monitor what was happening below. He was a very clever person, to take away an enemy's strength: a disciple of the first qi layer would surely not have the ability to fly. Moreover, looking at the two heads on the ground, it was clear that the enemy had closed in on them before getting rid of them, so in other words as long as he was in the sky he was invincible.

The long bearded scholar saw what the black clothed scholar was doing and clearly understood what he was thinking. Subsequently his body also rose into the air, still in the same place as before, but somewhere above and not too close to the ground.

Nothing happened at this side of the illusion spell, but those two did not dare to relax and were constantly on alert , gazing fixedly towards that one place, as if facing a great enemy. Already prepared with their most powerful talisman tools within their hands, so as soon as Yang Chen appeared, a thunderous sound rang out immediately.

Suddenly, something flashed at the edge of the illusion spell and a lone figure came out, that was precisely Yang Chen. The black clothed man was elated and was just about to launch his attack, when suddenly the scenery before his eyes changed into the inside of a large hall with a circular, domed roof.

The black clothed person was distracted for a moment but immediately realized that he had fallen into the illusion spell. Unexpectedly this Yang Chen, in spite of everything, still had this kind of skill with spell formation, but he felt that apart from this illusion spell, Yang Chen did not have any powerful killing spell,

and thus recklessly moved forward two steps, only to hear a whooshing sound over the top of his head, but before he could manage to respond to that sound, forty nine raised flying swords dismembered his entire body.

Seeing the viciousness of the guarding spell of the medicine garden made Yang Chen feel pity for him. The long bearded scholar was quite far from him however, so he had no way to reach him with the spell.

The long bearded scholar could see Yang Chen's figure clearly and was just about to say something, when he suddenly heard the sounds of repeated crashing, after which a batch of flesh came falling down from the sky. He turned pale with fright and was just about to flee, but when he saw Yang Chen standing motionlessly, rooted to the same place, the scholar understood the crux of the situation in a flash. Yang Chen had surely used some secret formation. To kill a seventh qi layer cultivator, he would absolutely have to pay some considerable cost. While he was thinking this, blood spouted from Yang Chen's mouth. This was the best opportunity for him to kill Yang Chen.

“Do you still have anything to say?”

Long bearded scholar laughed maliciously.

“I will give you the opportunity to speak!”

“Really?”

Yang Chen suddenly drew back the corners of his mouth and smiled, without a care about the bloodstain at the edge of his mouth.

“Then I will certainly speak!”

“You! Speak! I am all ears!”

The long bearded scholar approached him while sneering repeatedly.

“Every debt has a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred...”

# Chapter 37 - Killed Instead

Just as Yang Chen finished saying his typical phrase, hundreds of Inflammation Talismans suddenly burst out of the ground around the long bearded scholar. One explosion from an Inflammation Talisman would be absolutely unable to injure the scholar, the explosions of a hundred inflammation talismans, which were furthermore enhanced by the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, however, would naturally change the outcome.

When he killed the first opponent, Yang Chen immediately became aware that these guys would certainly find the corpse in an instant, so he rapidly placed hundreds talisman papers in different places underground and now, affected by his spiritual awareness, they immediately exploded.

Just a moment ago, he had forcefully used all of the spirit power in his body and he was just barely able to move the great defensive spell of the Medicine Garden, but he was too weak to fully control it, so he was injured and had to suffer the backlash. The enemy, however, had surprisingly miscalculated when Yang Chen was speaking and did try to make Yang Chen flee into the maze again. One yang qi pill which Yang Chen had long ago put into his mouth timely entered his stomach and then he frantically unleashed those Inflammation Talismans he deployed long ago.

Apart from the Inflammation Talismans, there were also a dozen Thousand Jin Talismans as well as many tens of Gigantic Wood Talismans. With using wood to make fire, the Inflammation Talismans' might increased even more, to the maximum. At the same time, tens of huge trees, thick enough one would have to

wrap one's arm around it, suddenly appeared in the sky, crashing towards the long bearded scholar.

In the time it takes for an eye to blink, the long bearded scholar's entire body was buried under the pile of flames and huge trees and his presence could not be seen anymore. The fearful blade within Yang Chen's hand slashed out once and was just about to go up when he suddenly heard a mad roar.

From within the lighted huge trees, suddenly a huge and very long haired claw appeared, this claw emitted a majestic pressure onto the surrounding flames and unexpectedly not even a single flame was able to channel through.

However, only the flames were blocked, those huge trees were sturdily smashing into the huge claw and immediately the owner of the claw issued a loud howl. After a moment, a shadow like a leopard flew out from within the flames and directly pounced towards Yang Chen.

Yang Chen's blade was already horizontal in front of his chest, so upon seeing this he loudly shouted, raising the fierce blade within his hand to the top of his head and with strength enough to split open mountains he chopped the blade towards the leopard flying at him.

As quick as a spark from flint and steel, one human, one beast, within a blink, the distance between them had already closed to less than a meter. The momentum of Yang Chen's blade was very quick: from raising the blade to chopping down, he didn't waste any time. The bright and beautiful tip of the blade flashed through



the sky so fast, the rest of the blade wasn't even visible anymore.

The charging leopard's body was going to hit Yang Chen, but as if it had suddenly lost all of its strength, its body stopped in the sky and following a breaking sound, it split into two pieces in front of Yang Chen., the cut was smooth as a mirror.

However Yang Chen was not checking up on the leopard's body, rather scouting the left hand side, he took out tens of both Inflammation Talismans and great tree talismans and he detonated all of them to mask up the evidence of the attack in the area and went away.

Boom Boom

From within the sounds of explosions and ramming, suddenly a leisurely voice was heard:

“Good blade! I want it!”

Following which, the long bearded scholar's pensive silhouette suddenly appeared outside the flames. From head to toe, he had not taken the least bit of damage and still had the same elegant appearance as before.

Hearing his voice and seeing his image, Yang Chen's whole body suddenly trembled, as if he had too shocked. The fierce blade within his hand subconsciously shot towards the scholar and indeed the blade was thrown to give it to him, rather than with the

wish to injure him.

Yang Chen's sorry-looking figure was not missed by the scholar's eyes so he slightly smiled when Yang Chen's blade already had reached him. The long bearded scholar merely reached out his hand to grab the fierce blade with his hand.

Once it entered his hand, the long bearded scholar at once sensed something strange about the fierce blade and suddenly madly shouted:

“Magic weapon?”

His voice was brimming with pleasant surprise as if he had received a hundred million treasures.

From the start he had been lusting after Yang Chen's weapon, that blade which had easily killed and beheaded three of his comrades, he even suspected that this was a talisman gem. He had personally seen Yang Chen kill his spirit pet, which confirmed that the fierce blade in Yang Chen's hand was, at least, a talisman gem, thinking this he had reached out his hand to catch it but he never anticipated that this blade was actually a magic weapon.

To think that a magic weapon could become his, the long bearded scholar laughed until he almost fainted. Just because a kid of the first qi layer didn't know what was that, did not mean that he would also not know what was that. However, when he had barely discovered that it was a magic weapon, a sword intent suddenly appeared from the blade within his hand and attempted to devour

him.

“Magic weapon!”

His voice had immediately changed flavour, he shouted the same words as before, but the meaning was now entirely different, this time his voice was full of alarm and shock.

If it really was a flying sword magic weapon, then because of his cultivation at the eighth qi layer he may not be able to bind it at once. A cultivator of the first qi layer could remain unscathed after coming in contact with it, so surely it had to be a magic weapon which hadn't passed through refining. This kind of magic weapon, he was holding its the handle in his hand. But he hadn't expected that this magic weapon would be so surly and unreasonable like this.

The long bearded scholar sensed something queer and immediately wanted to get away from the blade within his hand, however, he did not have enough time. The violently surging sword intent entered his body and directly reached for the core of his spiritual awareness.

Chi!

The scholar's body was like a hedgehog, illusory images of needles appeared all over him, and in a flash, the scholar's whole body was filled with holes and turned into a huge leaking sieve. Soon his whole body, from top to bottom, appeared as if it did not have any bones and fell down flexibly like a puddle of mire.

“If you had had the strength of a JieDan stage expert, then I would have agreed with you!”

Yang Chen slowly walked forward and leaned in to pick up the fierce blade inserted into the ground, and placed it into his Achievement Ring. Shaking his head towards the muddy paste on ground said:

“But unfortunately, you did not have that!”

From the beginning, Yang Chen never intended to use his own talisman papers to repel the enemy. The talisman papers were refined at the time he was at the first qi layer, even if they were processed through the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, and used in large quantities, they could not injure a master of the refine qi eighth level. The detonation of so many talisman papers was just to cover this final strike by throwing the blade.

Yang Chen getting stunned and throwing his blade to attack him was all a part of his plan. His killer weapon was precisely this fierce blade. In his previous life, this blade had taken the life of a JieDan stage expert who didn't know the secret way to refine it. This long bearded scholar had a cultivation of the eighth qi layer, to forcefully try to bind the blade, death was the only possible outcome.

There ought to be one more enemy, but Yang Chen was unable to find his whereabouts using his spiritual awareness. Furthermore, after this kind of fierce fighting, the sound of the explosion of the

Inflammation Talismans was so loud, but still the enemy hadn't appeared, it could only be assumed that he was not there. Yang Chen would no longer look for him and began to slowly collect his spoils of war.

Apart from the long bearded scholar, no other enemy had an intact corpse. Facing the enemy, Yang Chen was naturally not modest, those four still intact qiankun pouches, naturally they were now Yang Chen's property.

Three people of the seventh qi layer and one eighth qi layer master were chasing to kill him, even if Yang Chen was benevolent, he could still not contain his bottomless fury. This affair was surely Sun Hai Jing and Chu Heng's idea, otherwise, Sun Hai Jing would not have said those words before he left. However based on Sun Hai Jing's background, he did not have the ability to hire these experts.

This situation, it's not yet over! In his previous life, Yang Chen had suffered these kinds of attacks, but he would not this time. The recent chase to kill him made him experience the feeling of a stray dog that he had felt throughout his previous life. If it were not for the rule that disciples of the same sect could not kill each other, Yang Chen would have already taken care of Sun Hai Jing at the Nine Earth Manor. The other party was not willing to spare him though so it seems that after he returns this time, at the day of sect's martial art competition, he would have to get rid of Sun Hai Jing and vent his heart's anger.

All along he had not fired back when they chased to kill him, in this life Yang Chen did not intend to take such an attitude. To

invite seventh and eighth qi layer masters, ordinary spirit stones were not enough, only if one were to offer talisman gems suitable for their use, would one have a chance to hire them.

At that moment, Yang Chen was searching for such gems in the qiankun pouches these assassins had left behind. Maybe he could find traces of Chu Heng's creation skill among these items. Even if he was not able to find them, Yang Chen still wanted to spread the news. Chu Heng could not directly deal with Yang Chen, as he was the Merit Transferring Disciple, this was a well known secret in the Ye Xiu Manor and the Nine Earth Manor, but these baseless rumours could still get Chu Heng in trouble for some time.

What about hiring assassins himself? Yang Chen didn't want to, since he had crossed over, even the jade emperor had turned into a departed spirit under his blade, so no matter what sort of enemy it was, Yang Chen wanted to use the edge of his own blade, like how he had gotten rid of these few just recently.

Yang Chen threw these few corpses into the illusion spell and within this brief period, he would not have to worry about them being discovered. If it went in accordance with his past life's development, these few corpses would only be found after ten years.

Under the cover of the illusion spell, Yang Chen spent almost ten days recovering from the injuries he had received when the defensive spell of the Medicine Garden tried to devour him. He was lucky that this time the clean bottle had absorbed enough spirit power, this has saved Yang Chen's spirit power from suffering devastating damage.

However it was convenient this way because Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was already comparable to that of the mid foundation stage, still, forcefully stimulating the array had lead to his spiritual awareness being harmed. Luckily Yang Chen had already bound the medicine garden, so even if he were to be devoured, it would not be fatal, he would merely lose a portion of his spiritual awareness. The Three Purities Secret was matchlessly wondrous: within a few days, it had already restored Yang Chen's lost spiritual awareness.

When he emerged again, he went to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion in the city market at MeiQing mountain. This was originally a shop run by Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen casually entered and when anyone saw that there hung a qiankun pouch with the sign of the Pure Yang Palace at his waist, nobody stopped him and allowed him to directly go up to the hall above.

Bang!

Yang Chen threw a bundle wrapped in layers of cotton cloth on the table, the cold frost across his entire face made Yang Chen look very fierce and violent. He intentionally leaked some killing intent which made Yang Chen look like he surely wanted to attack. If he had not been a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, perhaps someone would have already thrown him out.

“Younger Disciple Yang, what is this?”

A fat shopkeeper noiselessly appeared in front of Yang Chen,

since he was one of them, it was natural for the shopkeeper to come out and receive him. This shopkeeper was a cultivator at the sixth qi layer, merely was he was previously a servant and only after reaching the fifth qi layer was he picked to go out and take care of sect's business. He was very respectful towards the Pure Yang Palace's disciples which had come out to train. Yang Chen had come here last time, so the shopkeeper naturally recognized him.

Yang Chen immediately opened the wrapped up cloth, exposing three and a half severed heads and a talisman tool in very good condition inside. The reason why there were three and a half heads, was because of that guy, who had been minced by the sword spell, only half of his head could be found, however, this could probably still be used to determine his identity.

“These things were found on their bodies, they resemble my Pure Yang Palaces' creation skills quite closely.”

Yang Chen bitterly smiled.

“When did my Pure Yang Palace's people start colluding with outsiders to kill the sect's disciples?”

The shopkeeper was greatly shocked hearing this. Previously when Yang Chen was coming to the Nine Earth Manor he had been attacked by an assassin, this affair had already caused almost all of the loose cultivators in the surroundings of the MeiQing mountain to be interrogated. It was just like the previous matter had occurred yesterday, and today Yang Chen was attacked by assassins once again once again, in addition to that, even disciples



of the Pure Yang Palace were implicated by this. For the shopkeeper, these words were like a lightning bolt from the sky.

Seeing these people's heads, the shopkeeper immediately recognized them: these few were famous loose cultivators, they formed a group and would frequently come and go in the city market. However these cultivators had a pretty good cultivation while Yang Chen was merely a disciple of the first qi layer, yet unexpectedly he had killed would be killers. This stunned the shopkeeper even more and he felt endless admiration for Yang Chen.

“These guys also had one more companion, go and find his whereabouts, maybe you can find who is responsible for this.”

Yang Chen pointed this out and then immediately got up to leave.

“I am still occupied with my mission, so I will have to trouble senior brother to deal with this affair. Surprisingly during the time when the Pure Yang Palace's disciples go outside to train, I still haven't crossed the MeiQing Mountain and have already been chased by people with murderous intentions!”

Yang Chen had not even left the building and the news was already sent back to the Pure Yang Palace. Immediately the higher ups became furious again. The whole nest of the Law Enforcement Hall once again came out and once again started a big investigation, turning the sky and earth upside down in the surroundings of MeiQing Mountain.

Hearing the news about this investigation, Sun Hai Jing became very alarmed and desperate and finally he was unable to hold back the fear in his heart. In the name of seeking advice, he once again appeared in front of Chu Heng.

“Master, what should we do? If the Law Enforcement Hall’s investigation reaches us, we will be ruined!”

Sun Hai almost started weeping while saying these words, trying to kill disciples of the same sect, this was a huge crime, in case they were found out, the consequences would be too horrible to imagine.

“Why are you losing your head?”

Chu Heng was also somewhat fearful, but he ultimately didn’t let it show on his face. First he used a formation to seal the surroundings and then he said:

“That guy who is still alive, haven’t you given him the spell method for finding Yang Chen’s qiankun pouch?”

“I did, Master!”

What Sun Hai Jing was afraid of, was the severe punishment he would receive, if the guy who was alive was found, he will die without a burial site.

“Don’t worry, I have left a tracking formation on that spell

method scroll.”

Chu Heng stood up, calmly tidying his clothes as he said:

“He will not survive tomorrow’s sunrise! You have to return for the time being if others ask you something, just say that you don’t know anything.”

“Yes, master!”

When Sun Hai Jing heard Chu Heng’s further plans, he felt very relieved and returned to his own courtyard and immediately began a closed door training session, without paying any more attention to outside affairs.

As soon as Sun Hai Jing had walked far enough, Chu Heng came out and started cursing in the direction Sun Hai Jing had disappeared to.

“You wastrel! Can’t even take care of such a trivial matter, still needs me to take care of it, humph! If killing you wouldn’t leave obvious traces to me, I would have immediately killed you to silence you!”

After finishing his cursing, his figure disappeared in a flash.

# Chapter 38 - Spreading His Reputation

Currently, Chu Heng was facing very embarrassing and dangerous circumstances, if he was not able to promptly eliminate the guy who had come to ask for the tracking formation or he was discovered first by disciples of the Law Enforcement Hall, he would have to face the punishment for trying to cause harm to a disciple of the same sect. Even if he was already an inner disciple at foundation stage and Yang Chen was only a disciple of the first qi layer, the sect rules are the sect rules, and they would not be changed based on someone's cultivation.

In addition to that, Du Qian had admired Yang Chen from the beginning, as for those guys at the Law Enforcement Hall, Yang Chen, who had the background of an executioner, gave them a familiar feeling, which made them identify with him. In case they were to investigate and find that he had been the cause of this, then the only way, apart from admitting guilt and being executed, would be to desert the sect and flee.

What made Chu Heng most furious, was that it was all due to a minor outer disciple, furthermore just a first qi layer disciple. If he had been the disciple of another school, even if he was a member of the sect, he wouldn't even have the qualifications to go out and train. Not to mention his fighting strength, at this point, most of the disciples with similar cultivation would have at most learned how to draw some talisman papers. Even the lowest levelled magic requires the strength of the second qi layer, then how was Yang Chen able to defeat people many layers above him?

Could it be that a foundation stage disciple was with him? Du

Qian had pretty good relations with Yang Chen. Could it be that Du Qian had appeared at that time? Chu Heng did not doubt this much, if Du Qian had really appeared, then Yang Chen would definitely not have carried their heads to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion afterward, they would have been directly taken to the Law Enforcement Hall's disciples.

However, Chu Heng was convinced that this could in no way have been achieved by Yang Chen alone. Who was Yang Chen? A person who cultivated for at most one hour and at most circulated the qi two times in a day, a kid who had done nothing, except reading in the Hidden Pavilion, a guy who never properly attended to his own tasks. If it was a matter regarding the concoction of pills, perhaps Chu Heng could have believed it, but as for fighting, Chu Heng did not trust it at all!

The strength to defeat a group of cultivators? To defeat Sun Hai Jing, a third qi layer disciple, was still possible, however having the strength to defeat an enemy with a six or seven layer discrepancy, moreover, when the enemy was attacking in a group, Chu Heng would not believe this even if he was beaten to death. The only possible explanation was that Yang Chen had a powerful figure behind him, this gave Chu Heng some confidence. On the basis of this logic, Yang Chen's reason for entering the Pure Yang Palace was not purehearted.

Unfortunately, he was not able to get rid of Yang Chen, neither was he able to find any evidence that Yang Chen had bad intentions, so presently Chu Heng could only get rid of that assassin to take care of the current pressure. Just to scratch an itch on Yang Chen's foot, he would have to sacrifice his whole body.

Naturally when this news was sent back to Nine Earth Manor, the self-confidence of all the outer disciples in the manor increased by a lot. A first qi layer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace had unexpectedly managed to get rid of seventh and eighth layer loose cultivators. If this did not demonstrate their sect's superiority, then what would? Compared to the usual, all of them were somewhat inspired.

Shen Da and other three were even more exceptionally excited: the more Yang Chen's reputation increased, the more their status would increase in the future. If only they remained completely devoted to him, Yang Chen would surely guide them. Compared to the smug confidence other disciples had, She Da and the others possessed a deep understanding of their strength. For Yang Chen to kill seventh and eighth qi layer assassins was naturally his own strength, which had no relation to them.

The one who was incessantly terrified was only Sun Hai Jing. During this time he could not eat at day or sleep at night, every second he was living under immense fear. If he had the option to choose again, he would have never made those cynical remarks to Yang Chen before he had left.

Other people may find it exaggerated, but Sun Hai Jing was very clear about it: those cultivators surely had the strength of the seventh or eighth qi layer, while Yang Chen did not have anyone to help him. Uncle Master Du Qian had directly returned to the Pure Yang Palace after leaving the Nine Earth Manor and hadn't come out afterward. Chu Heng had paid careful attention to this point, so he was sure, that he wasn't wrong. Yang Chen certainly had indeed gotten rid of those four assassins by himself.

Three of the seventh qi layer, one of the eighth qi layer. Even if Sun Hai Jing gave his all this time at most he would reach the fourth qi layer. Even if he also counted those talisman tools and talisman gems bestowed to him by Chu Heng, he was sure that his power would be comparable to the fifth qi layer. Even against a sixth qi layer disciple, he could still have one or two opportunities. But fighting with a seventh qi layer disciple? He did not even dare to think about it.

Yang Chen had surprisingly gotten rid of three seventh qi layer cultivators and an eighth qi layer cultivator by himself and based on Sun Hai Jing's familiarity with those people, they had probably attacked together, yet they were still killed by Yang Chen. This way, at the day of the sect's great contest, even if Yang Chen did not buy any talisman tools or talisman gems, his strength would still be sufficient to get rid of Sun Hai Jing.

Sun Hai Jing was now counting the days he had left by scratching them into the skin of his forearm. To die, after having been a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace for several years, having directly become the Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng's hip bone, to Sun Hai Jing, whose future prospects were supposed to be immeasurable, this was more painful than death.

He often thought about how he had become so obsessed, at the time when Yang Chen was entering the sect, he had tried to make things difficult for Yang Chen. His whole body noiselessly shuddered, as if still regretting the option he chose at that time.

Yang Chen was not anxious about the accomplice of those assassins, believing that Chu Heng would want him dead even

more than Yang Chen did. Anyway, he had already disclosed the matter to the higher ups and the Law Enforcement Hall had already sent out disciples. If the accomplice would still dare to appear and had not fled for his life, he really would be doing a service to those guys.

At least now Yang Chen could leisurely ride the paper crane made by that black clothed man and fly calmly. He was convinced that after this news had spread, it would be unlikely that anyone with good eyesight would come and attack him.

Yang Chen had only thrown down a few heads in the Thousand Autumn Pavilion, however, it had given rise to a huge earthquake within the Pure Yang Palace. Almost all of the loose cultivators were interrogated, one by one and at the same time the entire lives of these few assassins were completely dug up.

Because those people had already died, many people spoke without any worry and immediately countless affairs of these people acting tyrannically and not shrinking away from doing any imaginable crime came out. In addition to that, everyone was most interested in how these few people had died.

“A first qi layer outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace got rid of them? Three seventh qi layer, one-eighth qi layer cultivator? How is this possible?”

After hearing this, countless people had this thought in their mind.



People weren't convinced at all that a first qi layer cultivator could kill seventh and eighth qi layer masters. Perhaps a person with a lot of talent at a time when he is at a low level could kill an enemy at a higher level than him, but that was only limited to two or three stages above, like a first qi layer cultivator could kill a second qi layer cultivator, this was entirely possible. But, with a difference of six or seven stages, and facing several people together, this was totally ridiculous.

Has the Pure Yang Palace gone mad, wanting to promote this disciple? The news slowly spread and finally came to the ears of people from other sects. Those people's first reaction was precise that the Pure Yang Palace wanted to cultivate this disciple. Hearing that previously Yang Chen had been an executioner, numerous people's mouths twitched, expressing their disdain. Even though they were cultivators and shouldn't have these kinds of thoughts, this was too much for even them. When the time came, they had to humiliate this arrogant youngster and the Pure Yang Palace!

Yang Chen was not aware of this and even if he knew, he was unlikely to care about it. On the whole journey, Yang Chen had never ridden on the paper crane, but rather walked slowly and unhurriedly on the road, enjoying the scenery, feasting his eyes on the nearby landscape. When passing by mountains and rivers his eyes turned almost every time to look around.

On this whole journey, Yang Chen didn't squander, but rather paid careful attention to everything. Man reflects the earth, the earth reflects the heaven, the heaven reflects the dao and the dao reflects its own nature. In his previous life, Yang Chen was only proficient in fire attributed magic and not at all in any other kinds of magic.

Even though he had read about many ancestors' cultivation experiences inside the Hidden Pavilion, they were all different people. Yang Chen was able to comprehend some of it, but some others he still could not comprehend, but it just so happens that by means of observation during the journey, combined with his own understanding, he could master these things by comprehensively studying his surroundings.

This experience of the way of the earth was not just sufficient for cultivators of foundation stage and below, but even up to the Da Cheng stage. As for the way of heaven, the way of dao and the way of nature, these needed an even higher level of cultivation, only then could they be pursued.

No matter whether it was the mountains, the earth, rivers, flowers and plants, all were targets for Yang Chen's careful observation. Yang Chen remembered that in his previous life the heavenly imperial court had an expert who said: 'One flower one world. One grain of sand, a newly grown leave and a vast forest under a mountain', they were not so different at all. Yang Chen pondered over this argument as much as he liked, leisurely spending the time.

As for learning through experiencing human society, it was unnecessary for Yang Chen, as he had already been a Great Principal Golden Immortal. As long as Yang Chen acted in accordance with his own needs it would be fine. Even if it was like this, once Yang Chen started hurrying to Floating Mountain, the distance just took four five days to cover.

When he had come to the foot of the Floating Mountain, but not yet entered the city market of that small town, Yang Chen saw Gongsun Ling's figure in a roadside pavilion.

Gongsun Ling still was dressed in a yellow colored dress, covering her whole body, deeply impressing Yang Chen with its delicate patterns and designs. Yang Chen was aware that Gongsun Ling had made all of it by herself, even though she was at the sixth qi layer she was still not able to refine magic tools, when Gongsun Ling had made these clothes, however, she had always created them very delicately. Her thin legs and slender waist were emphasized by her well-fitted clothes, further increasing the unwillingness in people to avert their eyes.

At that time, Gongsun Ling who was pondering over a jade slip in her hands with an earnest expression on her face appeared as if she was matchlessly devoted to her task. From Yang Chen's direction, only half the side of her face could be seen, but that quiet and elegant demeanor still made Yang Chen lose his breath for a split second.

Yang Chen had not seen many beautiful women, but the few he had met were all peerless and magnificent beauties. Chang'e, Xuan Nue, Zhi Nu and other female immortals, any of whom had a unique manner and appearance. They held no attraction for Yang Chen however. When he was humiliated all day long and by himself, who would still have the time to think about them.

The only woman who had left a profound impression on Yang Chen's mind in that life was his own beautiful master. Other people, even if they were the cool elegant and magnificent Shi

Shan Shan, or the beautiful woman Sun Qing Xue would become, none has left any deep impression in Yang Chen's heart. But in this one moment, Yang Chen was attracted towards Gongsun Ling.

Perhaps it was because of the good intentioned warning she had given him at the Hidden Pavilion or perhaps because she was indifferent, meticulously studying here. In short, Yang Chen had suddenly become very fond of looking at this half of a face. As if, by looking at her, he could allow himself to have a moment of content in his heart.

After he blankly stared at her for a moment, Gongsun Ling's attention finally changed from the jade slip to Yang Chen. When Yang Chen was still very far, she had already become aware of him. However, she was thinking about a difficult problem at that time, so only now did she pay attention to Yang Chen. Nevertheless, not being rude, she raised her head, exposing an indifferent, smiling expression and faintly nodded:

“You have come, Younger Brother Yang!”

That smiling expression and slight nod made Yang Chen suddenly feel a sense of belonging and even if Du Qian had shown such consideration for him, Yang Chen wouldn't feel this sensation. Gongsun Ling had only spoken five words with him, from the beginning to the end, yet Yang Chen suddenly had this kind of feeling.

“I have arrived, Senior Apprentice Sister!”

In this split second, Yang Chen resolved himself, that, in this life, he would not allow the tragedy of his past life to be repeated. Such a capable person with absolutely splendid talent, can and must not be allowed to die at the instant of ascending to the next realm.

Having resolved himself to this a moment ago, before Yang Chen could say anything, Gongsun Ling, who was sitting opposite to him, watching him, had a change in her complexion, suddenly pointing towards Yang Chen, alarmed, she asked:

“Younger Brother Yang, what’s going on with the spirit power in your body? How can it be so chaotic?”

Actually, Gongsun Ling had surprisingly discovered the different attributed spirit power in Yang Chen’s body, it was not at all pure, wouldn’t that mean that the cultivation is destroying itself?

Originally when Yang Chen was at the first qi layer, he had fire attributed spirit power, the other types of spirit power were suppressed by the Reverse Yin and Yang five phases, which kept the energy unmixed and at the same time also made it difficult to be discovered by other people, therefore regardless of whether it was Chu Heng or Du Qian, even Zhu Chen Tao wasn’t able to detect it. At this time Yang Chen’s Yin and Yang five phases secrets had already entered the second qi layer and his spirit power had greatly expanded, naturally this was sensed by Gongsun Ling.

Yang Chen had a fire-star spirit root, naturally he would cultivate fire attributed spirit power, but suddenly in his body, there was spirit power of many other attributes, how could that not make people concerned. This ‘chaotic’ spirit power, could it be that Yang

Chen had come across some problems?

“It is just spirit power of the five phases, it is nothing to be alarmed at.”

Yang Chen felt warm in his heart and at the same time exposed a smiling expression on his face:

“I merely wanted to experience for myself how to use my fire attributed spirit power to imitate the spirit power of other attributes, that’s all. Therefore, I was trying to practice cultivation methods of other attributes, to learn and comprehend.”

Gongsun Ling’s expression became colorful again in a flash. This Younger Brother Yang is good at surprising people. Staying inside of the Hidden Pavilion for half a year, reading all of the ancient records. Then he also wants to practice the cultivation methods of other attributes of the five phases to understand the other attributes, this kind of thinking would simply make people dumbfounded.

Since Yang Chen’s present cultivation had greatly increased when compared to the time at the Hidden Pavilion, however, at least as far as Gongsun Ling could see, for the time being it’s fine to assume that there are no issues. She could only warn him again:

“Then you must be careful and by no means should you neglect the root to pursue the tip.”

“Senior Apprentice Sister, be at ease, I know how to take care of myself.”

Yang Chen gave a Gongsun Ling a smile to make her feel relieved and then asked:

“Senior Sister, were you waiting for me here?”

“Are you Yang Chen?”

Before Gongsun Ling could reply, a stranger’s voice could be heard from the side:

“Known as the first qi layer disciple who can kill seventh and eighth qi layer assassins, on whom the Pure Yang Palace is focusing all of its resources?”

The voice had a tone which made people feel uncomfortable as if uncovering a swindler hidden within the crowd.

# Chapter 39 - Just Comparing Notes Won't Do

In the direction the voice came from, the figures of several people appeared, all of them in the air, rapidly flying towards them.

The people flying over included both male and female cultivators and apparently while flying, they hadn't used any kind of talisman tools, so they were obviously all at the sixth qi layer or above. Yang Chen's eyebrows wrinkled, it was a rare occasion for him and his Senior Sister to speak, but all of a sudden a heap of garbage had come to interrupt them? Seeing Gongsun Ling, who was frowning resentfully, he immediately thought of a plan within his heart.

"Who says that? Complete nonsense!"

Yang Chen surprisingly refuted without taking the time to think.

"Who is spreading this rumor? You must not spread falsehoods, there is no reason to throw away your dignity as cultivators!"

The other party was approaching with great momentum, but they hadn't expected that Yang Chen would declare it as untrue. Suddenly the cultivator who had earlier taken the lead to talk had gotten caught up in an awkward situation. Originally he had thought to use this rumor to ridicule Yang Chen, but how could he expect that Yang Chen would immediately deny it Yang Chen had outrightly denied it, What did he mean by flaring up the rumor? In addition to that, Yang Chen's tone was unforgiving, denying what



he had said and directly putting the label of a person who spreads falsehoods on him, actually making him appear like someone who is reckless to everyone.

“Fellow Daoist Gongsun Ling of the Pure Yang Palace is also here, why don’t you say something, this Fellow Daoist Yang Chen, could it be that he is not that Yang Chen of those mad rumors, who had killed those assassins?”

Under the lead of the male youth, these people landed and started raising difficult questions for Gongsun Ling. Yang Chen had immediately denied it, without using any kind of excuse, however being defeated by Yang Chen, left all of them inwardly sulking so they could not avoid asking the higher level disciple of the Pure Yang Palace.

“This is my younger apprentice brother Yang!”

Gongsun Ling put on an icy expression, and rudely asked back:

“However, what relation does this have with you? Could it be those assassins were sent by you?”

“Not at all, we had no grudges with this Younger Brother Yang, nor any recent hatred. Why would we look for assassins?”

The leading youth, without paying the slightest attention to Gongsun Ling’s questions, continued as before and smiling happily said:

“Moreover, if we really had any disagreement, could we not take care of it by ourselves? To ask other people to take care of this, truly ridiculous. Unless, like some people we were afraid to injure the disciples of the same sect and not dare do it by ourselves?”

Within his words, mockery for Pure Yang Palace’s internal strife was evident.

“In that case, does Fellow Daoist Han intend to replace me now and clean house in the sect?”

Although Gongsun Ling was usually very good natured, when facing this kind of provocation, she would absolutely counterattack severely regardless. Even though Yang Chen was on her side, she was also his Senior. This time, she wanted to help Yang Chen out of the predicament.

“I dare not, I dare not!”

This male, surnamed Han was known as Han Jian De, he was an outer disciple of TianQuan sect and similar to Gongsun Ling he was a sixth qi layer disciple. Today he had received the information that Yang Chen was coming over, so he had intentionally rushed over to ridicule him, however, he hadn’t anticipated meeting Gongsun Ling.

Facing Gongsun Ling, whose cultivation level was similar to him, Han Jian De did not dare to taunt Yang Chen with that kind of tone. Saying ‘I dare not’ few times afterward, Han Jian De

immediately turned his sight towards Yang Chen and, laughing happily, said:

“Younger Disciple Yang, since it is just a rumor, whether it is true or not, Younger Disciple Yang should not deny it in front of everyone, so as to avoid influencing Pure Yang Palace’s reputation, alright!”

“Naturally, naturally!”

Under Gongsun Ling’s astonished gaze, Yang Chen took a step forward and very affirmatively said:

“I don’t know which bastard had spread this rumor to create confusion, but if it attracts, even more, senseless people, who are depraved enough to kill their mothers and fathers, running to come here, how can it be alright if I do not deny the rumor?”

It was like a buddhist monk cursing a bald donkey. If Han Jiande and the group of people who had come with him could have restrained themselves, they would not have come to trouble Yang Chen just because of some rumors. Even in this life there was no lack of such laughably annoying people among cultivators, who couldn’t tolerate it if other people’s reputation was stronger than theirs.

“Does Fellow Daoist Yang have any way to disprove this rumor? Do you want to kowtow and apologize to all the people who have heard the rumor?”

Han Jiande sneered and rudely said. All the people behind him were same type of people and Yang Chen's earlier words had evoked their rage, but now naturally they all had heard what was said and burst into laughter, trying to make fun of him.

“Oh? So Fellow Daoist Han's sect's rule to disprove a rumor, is to kowtow to all the people who had heard the rumor from the person who the rumor was about!”

Yang Chen opened his mouth and in a flash turned around towards Gongsun Ling and said:

“Senior Apprentice Sister, when I was on my way here, I heard a few rumors pertaining to Fellow Daoist Han's sect leader, we must not allow Fellow Daoist Han to take this message, otherwise, wouldn't his sect's leader have to come to me to refute the rumor?”

Gongsun Ling started laughing without saying anything. However hearing this, Han Jiande's lungs almost exploded. What kind of words? What could make his sect leader come and kowtow to Yang Chen to refute them?

“You dare to humiliate my sect leader? To dishonor Tian Quan Sect's sect master?”

Han Jiande was greatly angered and shouted towards Yang Chen in his fury.

“Eh?”

Yang Chen was standing right next to him, but without the slightest amount of fear he said:

“In accordance with Han Fellow Daoist’s way of thinking, wouldn’t refuting the rumor be insulting your sect leader, Tian Quan sect’s sect master? Then I cannot understand how can you insult my Pure Yang Palace’s Palace Master?”

“You!”

Han Jiande pointed his fingers towards Yang Chen, suddenly finding himself at a loss for words. Yang Chen had just a moment ago had certainly said that his sect master would have to come to refute the rumor, however, he hadn’t said his sect master must kowtow and apologize, but what he said before was clearly implying this. But, regardless of the words used, he was unable to find any fault with Yang Chen, because whatever Yang Chen had said was all in accordance with his own opinion, using his own words to counterattack. If he said that Yang Chen was wrong, then it would be like beating his own face.

“Then it seems it was just that Fellow Daoist Yang had stated the facts, we just misunderstood!”

Han Jiande was just about to say something but was obstructed by a female standing behind him. After stopping Han Jiande, the female turned towards Yang Chen and said to him with a smiling expression.

“We are also not aware which bastard had spread this rumor!”

Yang Chen started cursing fiercely and then said:

“The words that were passed on were only half of the truth, is he not aware that this can cause misunderstandings?”

As soon as he opened his mouth to start talking, even Gongsun Ling was turning around somewhat astonishedly. What did he mean by ‘half of the truth’? Could it be that Yang Chen actually had killed more than three seventh qi layer and one-eighth qi layer assassin? And was even doubling the number?

The people sitting opposite to him, including Han Jiande, had almost gone silly listening to this. Not because of shock, though, the shock was already over at an earlier time, what they were amazed by was where Yang Chen could get this kind of guts, actually daring to talk rubbish like this? He had already denied the rumor, wouldn’t anything else he bragged about immediately be considered as a lie?

“Could it be that Fellow Daoist Yang meant that the rumor was missing half the information? Are you saying that Fellow Daoist Yang killed six seventh qi layer and two eighth qi layer masters?”

With such an opportunity, Han Jiande had to open his mouth and ask this with sinister intentions.

“What I am saying is that I have the strength of the second qi layer and not the first qi layer!”

Yang Chen looked at the group like he was looking at a group of idiots, then softly mumbling to himself:

“Damn, I have finally realized who had spread these rumors, what the heck!”

Although Yang Chen mumbled in a very soft voice, all the people present at the scene were cultivators, so each and everyone clearly heard Yang Chen’s words. Yang Chen started cursing even more, which could be heard very clearly, without missing a word.

However after hearing Yang Chen’s words, Gongsun Ling slightly laughed within her heart, the coldness on her face decreasing by a little. This Younger Disciple Yang was not someone easy to deal with.

Han Jiande almost exploded with anger, the group had come to make Pure Yang Palace lose face, but, in the end, were being abused by Yang Chen’s vagueness and without any opportunity to fight back, how could they not to be furious at him?

“I do not know if Fellow Daoist Yang will be interested, but how about we compare notes with each other?”

Within his anger Han Jiande was unable to deal with the fact that he had the strength of the sixth qi layer while the opponent was

merely at the second qi layer and as soon as he opened his mouth, he issued a challenge.

“Compare notes?”

Yang Chen shook his head.

“I am not a worthy opponent for you to compare notes with, let it pass ok!”

“Why, does Younger Disciple Yang not have the guts?”

Hearing Yang Chen admit defeat just like that, everyone, including Gongsun Ling, were all somewhat astonished. Han Jiande had nearly coughed up a mouthful of blood, as he had so lightly and elegantly avoided him, it was as if he, Han Jiande, had used his full strength to launch a punch but was only able to hit empty air, that kind of uncomfortable feeling.

He wanted to provoke him, but the opponent had already admitted defeat, how could he be provoked now? Even worse, Yang Chen was a second qi layer cultivator, for him to be defeated by a sixth qi layer cultivator was not a matter for which he would lose his face.

“This has nothing to do with guts.”

Yang Chen shook his head and walked behind Gongsun Ling:



“There are a lot of rules when comparing notes in a contest, so I will not be your opponent. However, if Fellow Daoist Han is really interested, he might as well find me anytime and issue a life and death duel!”

After he finished speaking, he did not pay any more attention to Han Jiande, and directly turned towards Gongsun Ling and said:

“Has Senior Apprentice Sister not come here to receive me? Surely the elders of the sect will be anxious, we must leave at once!”

Gongsun Ling nodded without speaking and immediately started walking. Yang Chen followed suit started following her closely, directly arriving in front those people. However these people did not dare to stop them, and their bodies moved sideways, letting the two go by. Walking a few steps ahead, Yang Chen then came back and said:

“There are only a few days left until the assembly ends, I will be here the entire time, Fellow Daoist Han must not delay!”

He walked a few steps again, but Yang Chen once again turned back and left behind this sentence:

“Fellow Daoist Han, by all means, don’t tell me, you don’t have the guts!”

Just a moment ago Han Jiande had ridiculed Yang Chen, but Yang Chen had returned his words to him. Even if Han Jiande was considering to not initiate this challenge again, this time, he could not help himself. However Yang Chen's last words, to find him anytime, clearly did not allow him any reasons to settle the dispute in private, Han Jiande was forced into a corner.

Watching Gongsun Ling and Yang Chen enter the small town, Han Jiande and the people together with him looked at each other in dismay, soon they started blaming each other and rapidly left to go to look for their own sect's elder.

“Younger Disciple, you should not have forced him like that a moment ago.”

After Gongsun Ling entered the small town, she suddenly gasped and said:

“If you keep on making enemies for no reason at all, the gains will not make up for your losses!”

“If I hadn't provoked him, then would he not still come knocking on my door?”

Yang Chen laughed.

“Anyway they had already come to my door, so making them understand the consequences is not bad, otherwise others would take me for a pushover!”

Gongsun Ling had thought of saying something, but hearing Yang Chen's words in the end she didn't say anything, merely rapidly leading Yang Chen to the branch of the Thousand Autumn Pavilion here. It was a stronghold of the Pure Yang Palace, every year at the assembly at Floating Mountain, it was their responsibility to take care of the Pure Yang Palace's disciples' everyday life.

The Pure Yang Palace also had a JieDan stage expert hurry to come here, but he was not a person who Yang Chen was familiar with. Yang Chen merely paid a formal routine visit once and then went to the room arranged for him to rest in, no longer caring about others. Gongsun Ling however was not as free and easy as Yang Chen and had to report the incident to the elder.

“This youngster, he is quite resolute, contrary to what one might assume!”

This JinDan stage expert, the Hall Master Xu Chengxin of the Foreign Affairs Hall in the Pure Yang Palace, he seemed to have more foresight than other people.

“To use a petty guy and to make other people no longer look at Pure Yang Palace with skepticism was a good trick. As long as he wins this time, I will handle the remaining ones, our Pure Young Palace has not had such an interesting disciple in a long time!”

Hearing Xu Cheng Xin's words, Gongsun Ling also let go of the worries in her heart. Merely in her heart she was still somewhat

uneasy, if Han Jiande insisted on having a Life and death challenge, how would Yang Chen be able to continue? She could only hope that Yang Chen had received a genuine killer weapon when killing those assassins.

Han Jiande quickly returned to Tuan Qing sect's encampment and hurriedly reported the incident to his own sect's elder. The elder in charge of Tian Quan sect's affairs in this town, was the master of Tian Quan sect's Foreign Affairs Hall, and the same as Pure Yang Palace's elder, a JieDan stage expert. In front of his own Hall Master, Han Jiande didn't conceal the slightest bit of truth, he was aware that if he told lies, his hall master could determine even the smallest of lies so he basically did not dare.

“You have made enemies with the Pure Yang Palace?”

The foreign affair hall's hall master wrinkled his brows while listening and asked with a frown.

“I have not!”

Han Jiande hastily replied, what a joke, he was an outer disciple, why would he make enemies with the Pure Yang Palace, even if the Pure Yang Palace was a small sect it still had a few YuanYing experts to keep a watch and he wasn't arrogant enough to dare to challenge Pure Yang Palace.

“Then do you have an enmity with that Yang Chen?”

The Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master again asked wrinkling his brows.

“No, I don't!”

Han Jiande, not daring to hide anything, shook his head again.

“You had no grievance or enmity with Pure Yang Palace, neither do you have any grievance or enmity with that Yang Chen, but hearing some rumors that someone has killed few people above his realm you immediately go to seek that person to trouble him?”

The Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master could not help but ask this question. His voice contained extreme dissatisfaction.

“Disciple, disciple.....”

Han Jiande did not know what he should say at that time and could only make a few mumbling noises, he was unable to say any other words.

“A sixth qi layer cultivator challenging a second qi layer cultivator, you also really said it and did it, still you merely dared to challenge him to compete with him to learn by interaction, but did not dare to challenge him to life and death duel, you really did give my Tian Quan sect great face!”

The Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master did not know what to say to Han Jiande.

“Will your win be honorable? Would his loss give you any benefits? Don’t tell me you have never used your head before?”

The color of Han Jiande’s face turned ashen, only then he noticed how pointless and stupid his previous actions had been. If Yang Chen was unable to defeat him, the faults in Pure Yang Palace’s rumors could be easily exposed, but he would make himself the target of Pure Yang Palace’s hatred. Has the lard gotten to his head at the time that he insisted on troubling this person?

“He has already invited you to fight a life and death challenge if you don’t dare then immediately admit defeat and return and enter seclusion for ten years!”

The Hall Master of the Foreign Affairs Hall instructed him to do as he wished.

“And if you dare, then tomorrow you have to challenge him at once and must not lose face for my Tian Quan sect!”

# Chapter 40 - You Won't Do In A Life And Death Duel

Before the assembly at Floating Mountain could begin, many people heard about some interesting news. Tian Quan Sect's outer disciple Han Jiande had initiated a Life or Death Challenge against Pure Yang Palace's outer disciple Yang Chen, and Yang Chen had immediately accepted that challenge. Both sides had agreed on the time and a vacant land for the Life and Death duel.

For the outer disciples of two sects to partake in a life and death challenge, this was the correct way for cultivators to resolve their hatred and enmity without any tricks. No matter what the outcome is, both parties must let go of all the resentments. Naturally since it was life and death challenge, often one of the parties died in the end. Since the person had already died what kind of resentments wouldn't he let go?

But in this duel, there was large disparity in the strength of both parties, one was at the sixth qi layer, the other was at the second qi layer. However, this was precisely the reason for this life and death challenge. Although Han Jiande already somewhat regretted it, Yang Chen had forced him into that position, he was also not a person who would refuse to face reality and not dare to challenge Yang Chen.

Although the parties concerned hadn't appeared, a lot of people had already filled the surroundings of the area where the duel was supposed to be held. The majority of them were disciples who were below the foundation stage, the main participants of the assembly

at the Floating Mountain. As for the masters with a strength of the foundation stage or above, would two youngsters in qi realm fighting be worth it, for them to specifically come over?

Han Jiande had not come late but compared to Yang Chen he was still early. When he appeared, there was not a person from Pure Yang Palace present. Han Jiande was also unexpectedly distracted at that time, so he found a place and sat down in meditation, to wait and to meditate.

From left to right everyone was waiting, but still nobody from Pure Yang Palace had appeared yet, so gradually the surrounding people started commenting.

“What is the matter? The people of Pure Yang Palace should not be afraid!”

“Strange, have they not negotiated the arrangements of the life and death challenge? The agreed upon time is already here, yet they still haven’t come?”

“They are really clever, a second qi layer cultivator against a sixth qi layer cultivator, isn’t that simply throwing away one’s life?”

“That is not completely correct, that disciple of Pure Yang Palace is known as Yang Chen, reportedly he had already fought and killed three seventh qi layer and an eighth qi layer assassins, a sixth qi layer cultivator is a mere trifle for him!”



“How do you know that is really true? Maybe the Pure Yang Palace has spread this, just to increase his reputation.”

...

“What is the Tian Quan sect doing? A sixth qi layer disciple issuing a life and death challenge against a second qi layer cultivator, isn't this simply bullying? The Tian Quan Sect and the Pure Yang Palace are not known to have any great disagreements!”

“I have heard that it was Tian Quan Sect's disciple Han Jiande who had taken the initiative to issue this challenge. It is said that Fellow Daoist Han had demanded a contest to learn by interaction, but Pure Yang Palace's disciple Fellow Daoist Yang had immediately admitted defeat saying that he is not his opponent, if it was a life and death challenge than maybe they could fight. Fellow Daoist Han couldn't just decline, if only to not put the label of a person who bullies the weak on himself. It would be fine if he won, but if he lost he would have to compensate with his life and fall from grace, alas!”

...

Discussing all of this and what not, everyone standing on the side of Tian Quan sect or the Pure Yang Palace, each were making their own theories at that time. Luckily the Floating Mountain assembly was considered an important event in the cultivation world, so numerous sects participated in it. However everyone was polite with each other, so everyone just talked with each other, but didn't make any aggressive actions or comments.

Naturally Han Jiande also heard the discussions, but the more everyone was calmly discussing about it, the more depressed Han Jiande was getting. To escalate to a Life and Death duel from a mere quarrel over a minor issue, their words were not entirely false, he had forced himself into the current situation. If he could get another opportunity, he would absolutely not run around and try to trouble Yang Chen again.

Feeling gloomy enough to vomit blood, Han Jiande could not help but reach his hand for that talisman gem given to him by his Foreign Affairs Hall's Master. The JieDan stage expert had only given him a bracelet, refined by the elder personally. As long as he feeds enough spirit power into it, it will immediately launch a devastating strike, which people below the foundation stage could at most barely survive with heavy injuries, if not die altogether.

His opponent Yang Chen only had the strength of the second qi layer, as long as he was hit by this attack, he would die without any doubt. Unfortunately, the Foreign Affairs Hall's Master had refined this for a female disciple, so Han Jiande could only conceal it within his qiankun pouch, otherwise if he wore it on his wrist, it would be impossible to defend effectively.

With this he could certainly kill Yang Chen. Only because it would produce hatred and desire for revenge within the Pure Yang Palace, was Han Jiande very anxious. However, compared to his life, this future inconvenience could be resolved afterwards, at least for now he needed to live. Thinking this, Han Jiande calmed his mind, while an expression of confidence bloomed on his face.

The people observing him naturally understood what was going on and sighed for Yang Chen, who had yet to appear. A disciple who was brought to the Floating Mountain Assembly by their sect is one, whom the sect thinks highly of. Unfortunately he is going to die at the life and death challenge.

Yang Chen was running a little late. After a quarter of an hour had passed, beyond the agreed time, he and Gongsun Ling appeared on the scene. Gongsun Ling had a look of watching passively, simply without any intention to help. Actually even if Gongsun Ling wanted to she couldn't help: if someone breaks the custom in a life and death challenge between two people by saving one of them, it is seen as a provocation to everybody present on the scene.

“I was thinking that you are afraid of death so you wouldn't come!”

Han Jiande coldly laughed while getting up. He had a great killing tool within his hand, he was not afraid in the least.

“The arrangements were to come at this time, I am not late!”

Yang Chen replied indifferently, then he turned towards the arbitrator and asked:

“Can we begin?”

The arbitrator was some other sect's foundation stage disciple. In

a life and death duel, the arbitrator is only responsible for making sure that both parties have nobody secretly assisting them, however, he has nothing to do with the other rules.

In response to Yang Chen's question, the arbitrator looked towards Han Jiande, who faintly nodded. The arbitrator did not immediately begin, but instead asked both of them:

“This is a life and death duel, it will not stop till someone dies, before the duel, does anyone of you have anything to say?”

“No!”

Han Jiande shook his head, in any case the one to die will not be him, so why speak so much rubbish?

“And you?”

The arbitrator looked at Yang Chen.

“For every debt there is a debtor, you and I have no past grudges, nor recent hatred, you took the initiative to initiate a life and death duel, which won't stop until death, so on the road to the underworld, don't blame the gods and accuse anyone, be at ease and on your way!”

Yang Chen expressionlessly finished speaking these words and did not speak anything again.

The arbitrator took a look at the left and right, then calmly waved his hand downwards.

“Begin!”

Right after that he rapidly retreated, immediately withdrawing from the circle between both parties.

A sinister smile appeared on Han Jiande's face: he did not intend to bring out the great killing weapon in the beginning. At least, until Yang Chen died, he wanted to pretend to give him honourable death in response to the recent humiliating words.

But before Han Jiande could even move, he sensed something directly before his eyes. Greatly alarmed, his throat started tightening, as if his entire person had been frozen.

With the support of two agility talismans strengthened by the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets, Yang Chen's speed increased almost two to three times. The distance between the two was not that far, so Yang Chen merely took a step using some strength, and immediately arrived in front of Han Jiande.

In Han Jiande's eyes, Yang Chen's figure appeared at his side instantly. This kind of speed was just like that of a demon, so Han Jiande made a timely decision, he could not delay using his killer weapon anymore, it was just that he was already somewhat late coming to this conclusion.

A mountainous pressure enveloped him, to him it was like he was in hell. This kind of frightening aura destroyed all of his determination to resist, his whole body had gone rigid, incapable of moving anymore.

Even those immortals of the Heavenly Court felt scared when Yang Chen released his killing intent to the greatest extent, let alone a mere sixth qi layer ordinary disciple. In the eyes of everyone watching, Han Jiande had turned into a fool, merely reaching his hand to the edge of his qiankun pouch but unable to take the next action.

“Spare my life!”

These two simple words which he could speak effortlessly on a normal day, at this moment they were forcibly stuck in his throat, he wanted to shout but was not able to do it, and he could only stare helplessly as Yang Chen was nearing him. Desperation filled Han Jiande's entire body.

Within Yang Chen's hand, appeared an absolutely ferocious blade, and with just a slash, the long blade streaked across Han Jiande's neck. Under the gaze of many eyes, Han Jiande's head flew high in the sky and blood squirted from his neck. Meanwhile, the culprit of this, Yang Chen, had already stored the long blade and returned back to his original position and did not care to glance towards Han Jiande again. He was only looking at the arbitrator, waiting for him to announce the result.

All of his actions were too simple, rushing out, slashing the blade once, storing the blade and withdrawing, so simple, that it left no suspicion that he cheated. After a moment, Han Jiande's body softly fell onto the ground, but Yang Chen's body was quite clean right now as if he had just taken a bath. There was not a single blood stain on his body.

Shocking, startling, unimaginable, unfathomable, various kinds of expressions appeared on the faces of everyone watching. At this moment, everyone present had lost the proper bearing of cultivators, such an unbelievably majestic victory, without even a change in his complexion, it was a vivid performance in front of everyone.

Who could have imagined, that in a duel between a second qi layer cultivator and a sixth qi layer cultivator, a gap of four realms, the conclusion of the Life and Death duel would be as unexpected as this? After countless people had witnessed all of this, everyone felt their hearts go cold, as if that blade which Yang Chen had used to chop off Han Jiande's head was above their heads. Previously, if it had not been for Han Jiande, who had already appeared first, maybe they would have been the first ones to go to taunt and provoke Yang Chen.

Countless people rejoiced within their hearts, glad that they had not been impatient like that and also glad that Han Jiande had jumped out early, providing them a real example.

Not only Gongsun Ling, who did not dare to believe this result that had taken place, everyone else also had stupefied expressions for a long time. Even if Gongsun Ling had believed Yang Chen's

previous words without any doubt, she still hadn't expected that Yang Chen's response to a cultivator of the sixth qi layer, Han Jiande, would be so simple. The area was filled with a deathly silence, which continued until Yang Chen started speaking again.

"I am not your opponent in comparing notes!"

Yang Chen's voice was not loud, but apparently it had woken up everyone and simultaneously warning all of them.

"But, in a Life and Death challenge, it looks as if you are not my rival!"

Right now everyone clearly understood the reason why previously Yang Chen had admitted that he was not his opponent when comparing notes, but who would think of questioning this outcome. The severed head and body of Han Jiande clearly illustrated everything, most of all even after his death, he was still tightly clutching that bracelet in his hand and with just one look anyone could determine that it was a first rate treasure gem. He did not even have the time to use the treasure gem before dying, even if these people didn't want to believe it, seeing the current circumstances, everyone firmly believed the news that Yang Chen had killed three seventh qi layer and an eighth qi layer assassin by himself.

The arbitrator finally managed to respond, bowing his head to look at the headless corpse of Han Jiande, and said with an expressionless face:



“Pure Yang Palace’s Yang Chen wins!”

And then he became quiet again. To him, a third party at the foundation stage, it did not matter who won or lost in a life and death duel between two qi layer youngers. Although he was surprised at Yang Chen’s blade’s fierceness, it was still only at the level of surprise. Challenging cultivators above his realm, was Yang Chen alone like that in this world?

At this point, the curtain for the Life and Death duel had fallen. The headless corpse of Han Jiande was naturally taken by Tian Quan Sect’s people and Yang Chen also did not pay any more attention to the people present on the scene.

Following immediately after the smiling Gongsun Ling, who was providing support from the side, two people, one in the front and one in the back, as if nobody was watching, walking rather than riding, they calmly returned to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion.

Only after the silhouettes of these two people had completely disappeared, did discussion started among the people present on the scene, one after another.

“Did you see that? That guy had the confidence of a killer!”

“Alas, poor Fellow Daoist Han was unable to take a lighter view, insisting on going to a Life and Death challenge with this horrible man. Was it worth the price?”

“Looking down on another, just to trouble someone, thinking himself to be extraordinary. The other guy had already accepted defeat, but he still had to go after him, the fault is his own!”

...

There were also many people who had heard Yang Chen’s remark before the battle and were interested, so they asked.

“Pure Yang Palace’s Fellow Daoist Yang, he said something like debts have a debtor and past grudges, what was that?”

“Are you not aware? This Fellow Daoist Yang was an executioner within the mortal world before becoming an apprentice and every time before he beheaded someone, he would say those words. You should take care and not make him say those kinds of words to you, haha!”

“Executioners can also cultivate?”

“That guy had already killed several masters when he was just at the second qi layer and right now we looked at him beheading a sixth qi layer master, and you ask if he can cultivate?”

...

“Pretty good, youngster!”

Seeing Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling return to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion, Xu Cheng Xin burst out into loud laughter and praised him:

“One blade made all of the doubtful people shut up, save your strength and don’t worry about anything, I think highly of you!”

“Many thanks, Uncle Master!”

In response to Xu Cheng Xin’s praises, Yang Chen merely bowed slightly and expressed his thanks.

“Thank who? I have not done anything!”

Xu Cheng Xin waved his hand, and kept on gently laughing while talking about it:

“This kind of outcome has enhanced my Pure Yang Palace’s reputation by a lot, you are just a second qi layer cultivator, so you should not have any method of flying. This is a bamboo falcon, which used to be my means of transportation in those days, this is a prize for you!”

While he spoke, a black light already flew towards Yang Chen’s body and hovered in front of his eyes.

“Many thanks, Uncle Master!”

Yang Chen reached out with his hand and grabbed that bamboo crane and the crane directly lied down on his hand. Truly considerate. Yang Chen only had a paper crane which was imbued with a tracking formation, the bamboo crane was the perfect solution to this problem. Xu Cheng Xin always paid close attention to people and this time, Yang Chen genuinely and sincerely expressed his thanks!

“Rest for a few days, until the Heavenly Stairs opens!”

Xu Chen Xin instructed, beaming with smiles.

“I also wish to know just how many steps of the Heavenly Stairs you can climb.”

# Chapter 41 - The Fraud Of Pure Yang Palace

The most important part of the Floating Mountain Assembly was precisely each and every sect's rookies, which were sent out to receive the test of the Illusionary lands' Heavenly Stairs, but everyone jokingly called it the Heavenly Stairs.

On the way from the foot of The Floating Mountain to its peak, there were hundreds of steps carved into the stone. This narrow mountain path, filled with stairs, was precisely that Heavenly Stairs. On each step of this Heavenly Stairs there was an extremely strong hallucinatory spell formation, which was set up by a very strong elder, only to be aimed at qi layer disciples. On this Heavenly Stairs, every single step was for improving the innermost being. Therefore the stairway was sometimes also known as Heart Finding Path.

To open the Heavenly Stairs, at least ten JieDan stage experts were required to cooperate, moreover it could only be opened at the same time every year. In addition to that, the time it was open was very limited, therefore every sect would only send the disciples whom the sect focused on the most. Generally speaking, the higher a disciples could climb up the Heavenly Stairs, the more likely he was to have high achievements later, with some exceptions. Thus every sect would attach the highest importance to each year's Heavenly Stairs assembly.

Every sect could only choose their two most outstanding disciples and in general all of the chosen were at least at the fifth qi layer or

above, disciples who were allowed to go on training, to be refined by dangers. And this year Pure Yang Palace had chosen precisely Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling. In his previous life, Yang Chen's aptitude was common, so he basically didn't have the opportunity to participate in the ceremony for the Heavenly Stairs, but unexpectedly while he was only at the second qi layer in this life, he was still sent by the palace master.

Every year, ten sects are appointed to put forth ten JieDan stage experts to take charge of the Heavenly Stairs ceremony. There were already pre-made spell formations, so as long as these JieDan stage experts pushed their spirit power into them in the pre-ordained way, that would be enough. Certainly, if those JieDan stage experts wanted to, they could naturally cause some trouble in the exam.

The Life and Death duel was merely an appetizer at the Floating Mountain Assembly, all of the people still put their entire minds to the Heavenly Stairs. In the past, as long as they could climb up to twenty steps or above, they would be energetically cultivated by their sect. This was an opportunity for everyone, so every participant had rolled up their sleeves to prepare, fighting to get a good outcome.

Even if they couldn't excel among their peers, the Heavenly Stairs was also known as Heart Finding Path, so for all of the disciples who were able to set foot on the stairs, this was still also a rare opportunity to temper their self discipline, more or less. There would always be great benefits. If one was chosen to climb, anyone would definitely treasure this opportunity. Only one person, Yang Chen, had never, from start to finish, hoped to get selected.

The Heavenly Stairs would open on this day, so following along the surroundings of the Heavenly Stairs, almost everything which could be used to sit and observe was occupied by disciples from every single sect. A large variety of talisman tools and talisman gems hovered over in the sky, but there were also many people flying in the air with the help of their own cultivation. Who would want to miss the opportunity of witnessing the most marvelous sight in the world.

Those disciples who were preparing to climb the stairway the heavens were really eager to try their luck and skill. Among them, there were more than ten new talents with a high reputation who were already planned to showcase their ability at the Heavenly Stairs to receive attention. Looking at their expressions, almost all of them exuded a lot of confidence.

The previous records of the Heavenly Stairs, were actually created by Shi Shan Shan of the Blue Jade Immortal Island. At the Heavenly Stairs, she had climbed over a full sixty three heavenly steps, which had surpassed all other cultivators before and since then. And now Shi Shan Shan is widely accepted as a cultivation genius, there were countless smart and elegant youngsters who looked forward to gain Shi Shan Shan's favor, maybe they would have an opportunity to join the records, but that was simply wishful thinking.

The ten JieDan experts sat at their positions and soon, from the originally mediocre mountain steps, a feeble radiance began to twinkle. Looking at this, the rookies who were waiting to climb the Heavenly Stairs, all grew serious. These flickering mountain steps could only then genuinely be called Heavenly Stairs.

The first person to go up was a seventh qi layer disciple of the Fengyun Palace Hall. Everyone blankly stared at him while he was climbing steadily up to the third step of the Heavenly Stairs, reaching the third grade heavenly rank. Soon afterwards his steps began to become disordered, suddenly quickening, then suddenly slowing he climbed up until the fourteenth stair, after which he was not able to support himself anymore and a moment later the Heavenly Stairs shone brightly, as this disciple of the Fengyun Palace Hall was directly sent to the foot of the mountain.

Only after emerging at the foot of the mountain did the disciple of the Fengyun Palace Hall become aware of the fact that he had already been pushed out of the Heavenly Stairs. As he was unable to go and check the rank of Heavenly Stairs he was able to reach, he immediately sat down on the spot and began to meditate, as if he had entered the mode of sudden enlightenment.

These kinds of circumstances were apparently a common thing, as everyone was aware of what was going on, but nevertheless nobody disturbed that disciple of Fengyun Hall. Everyone's vision started focusing on the second person to climb up the Heavenly Stairs. And at the same time many people began to talk.

“Fengyun Palace Hall's Fellow Daoist Xie was only able to climb fourteen steps of the Heavenly Stairs, what a pity! I'm curious about what sort of enlightenment he gained!”

“Nevertheless, we must look at the disciples of the Greatest Sky Sect, Universal Sect, Five Phases Sect, Clearsky Sect and Blue Jade Immortal Islands, the disciples of these big sects will surely be



interesting!”

...

While everyone was discussing, this year's new rookie disciples stepped forward one by one and in turn began to ascend onto the Heavenly Stairs. The radiance within the Heavenly Stairs continuously flickered, as if it wouldn't dim.

In continuous turns, one climbed seventeen steps, another climbed twenty three stairs. These two disciples had a great reputation were both renowned rookies, especially that disciple who had ascended twenty three heavenly stairs, he was even more famous in the whole world. Everyone gasped in admiration when they saw this outcome, his reputation was not for nothing.

The two rookies of the Moyun Sect both went up fifteen steps or lower. Apparently these two rookie disciples had come with the purpose of cherishing this opportunity to temper themselves, so they did not care about this outcome. So when these two disciples went up and returned, their faces actually had a cheerful expression, as if they had profited quite a bit.

The Blue Jade Immortal Island sent a male disciple this time and when he managed to cross over the twenty eighth Heavenly Stair step, he immediately recited something. This was already the highest achievement within the ten disciples who had ascended the Heavenly Stairs today. After coming down from the Heavenly Stairs, this disciple of the Blue Jade Immortal Island didn't immediately sit down in meditation to gain enlightenment, like the others, instead calmly sat at his original position, looking back

at the performance of those disciples at the Heavenly Stairs, as if he was completely relaxed.

However, just as that male disciple had barely come into the limelight, immediately a female disciple of the Blue Jade Immortal Island snatched away all of the attention. A seventh qi layer disciple, the younger generation of Shi Shan Shan, climbed up to the thirty fifth step of the Heavenly Stairs. Apart from not being able to reach the level of Shi Shan Shan, she would be a talented and promising disciple for sure at any time in future.

This year the two rookie disciples of the Blue Jade Immortal Islands had both demonstrated extraordinary skill, these two rays shined exactly at the same time.

Very quickly, it was the turn of Pure Yang Palace's two disciples to ascend the Heavenly Stairs.

Due to Yang Chen's duel earlier, the Pure Yang Palace had left a deep impression on everyone's mind. Yang Chen beheading Han Jiande with one slash of his blade had left an impression on the hearts of the other sects, even though they did not speak about it.

Everyone had always thought, that since both of them were from famous and upright sects, they had no need to fight each other to the death. Merely this Yang Chen from Pure Yang Palace was quite clever, he directly refused to compare notes, everyone knew about this. In addition to that, Yang Chen had made it clear beforehand, that he immediately conceded to comparing notes in order to experience his real strength, so he immediately asked for a life and death duel.

In order to save face, Han Jiande had initiated the life and death challenge towards Yang Chen. Many people selectively overlooked this little point, however. Perhaps Yang Chen defeating the sixth qi layer Han Jiande with the strength of the second qi layer made people feel that he was provoking their prestige as seniors, adding to that Yang Chen's background as an executioner, made them not very fond of Yang Chen. By association, they had similar feelings towards the other disciple of Pure Yang Palace Gongsun Ling.

“Senior Apprentice Sister, the Heavenly Stairway illusionary spell is probably different from any illusionary spells you have studied.”

Just before Gongsun Ling was going to climb the Heavenly Stairs, Yang Chen called out to her and softly said:

“Sometimes, it will possibly attack the weak points in your nature. Senior Apprentice Sister, at the critical time you must be like the sound of thunder and hit like lightning, not just staying passive, but actively fighting back.

Gongsun Ling was astonished before Yang Chen had told her this, she absolutely hadn't thought about it. Moreover, Yang Chen's words were filled with total confidence, as if Yang Chen understood this Heavenly Stairs Illusionary Spell very clearly. This made Gongsun Ling helplessly amazed. Fortunately, Gongsun Ling was confident that Yang Chen would never harm her, so she faintly nodded and smiled towards Yang Chen, then she stepped onto the first Heavenly Stair step.

Among the ten JieDan stage experts, only Xu Cheng Xin was from the Pure Yang Palace, the other nine were holding back on restraining the excessive energy, wanting to shame the Pure Yang Palace by increasing the difficulty. As Gongsun Ling stepped on the first Heavenly Stair step, she immediately felt that mountainous pressure.

“Pure Yang Palace’s a second qi layer disciple was in the limelight a few days before, I do not know what this female disciple can show.”

“Humph, you are making things unnecessarily complicated, when have you ever seen a second qi layer disciple kill a sixth qi layer disciple? There is a difference of four realms between these two, or where have you ever seen a second qi layer disciple who can use a talisman gem? Pure Yang Palace certainly wants to mislead us this time with deceptions and deliberate falsehoods. If it were not that only qi layer disciples could ascend the Heavenly Stairs, maybe the Pure Yang Palace would have brought foundation stage disciples from the sect! Hahaha .....

Among the numerous comments, this voice was absolutely unique, the volume was also very high. At least all of the spectators heard it very clearly. Originally everyone was astonished that Yang Chen was able to kill Han Jiande, but having heard this voice, all of them came to the realization that it actually was like this.

A blade who could behead a disciple of the sixth qi layer in one slash, if that blade was said to be ordinary, who would believe it? That blade was a first rate talisman tool, or even a talisman gem for certain. And controlling a talisman gem was an ability only

people above sixth and seventh qi layer possessed. For a sixth or even seventh layer cultivator with a talisman tool to surpass a sixth qi layer cultivator was not worthy to be bragged about.

Yang Chen was at second qi layer, these claims were Pure Yang Palace's words and were also Yang Chen's words, other people were naturally unable to test whether they were true or false, only if Yang Chen agreed to let these people's spirit power enter his body and do as they please. Naturally Yang Chen could not allow this kind of thing and those other people were also not senseless enough to demand this kind of authentication of Yang Chen's cultivation.

That person who said this had precisely used this one point to increase the suspicion of other people, so immediately a majority of people looked at Yang Chen with disdain, at the same time their looks toward Gongsun Ling had also turned somewhat abnormal. If Pure Yang Palace was using this kind of method, spreading obscure facts to win favors, that was really very low kind of thing to do.

All of these people were apparently under the impression, that their own discoveries within their hearts were the truth, also all of them were expecting that this time the Pure Yang Palace would not receive anything from the Heavenly Stairs. Obviously Gongsun Ling was already at the tenth Heavenly Stair step, but these meddlesome people had already started commenting, that Gongsun Ling could still walk only a few more steps, after that she would be immediately pushed out by the Heavenly Stairs.

Gongsun Ling was walking neither too slow, nor too fast on the

Heavenly Stairs, but absolutely steady. So far she had shown no signs of any hurriedness. Under the people's expecting gazes, she calmly and steadily ascended ten more steps and as before still did not show any signs of panic or instability.

“This Fellow Daoist Gongsun is a spell formation expert.”

Someone seemed to have realized something and loudly shouted.

Hearing this, everyone immediately felt contempt again. The Pure Yang Palace obviously knew that these Heavenly Stairs were an illusionary spell, so they actually sent a spell formation expert of the sect to go in. This Fellow Daoist Gongsun's reputation was not prominent, so she must have been painstakingly studying the spell formations. If she achieved a good ranking this year by doing this, then it would surely mean that the Pure Yang Palace was committing all manners of crimes to gain fame and reputation.

What a pity, this Gongsun Ling was such a fine and beautiful woman, perhaps she had become the sect's rookie by herself, there had to be some strength, surely. Merely under these sort of plans of the Pure Yang Palace, she had landed the label of a trickster as a good person, what a pity! Most people looking at Gongsun Ling's elegant figure and dainty appearance, released a sigh within their hearts.

Regardless of what everyone was thinking, Gongsun Ling had steadily stepped onto the thirtieth step of the Heavenly Stairs at the same pace as before. After this step, even those people who held her in contempt, thinking that she was a formation expert, also could not help but feel admiration. To be able to climb up to

the thirtieth step of the Heavenly Stairs signified an absolutely good talent. Spell formation experts are also cultivators, there was no rule that spell formation experts could not try to ascend the Heavenly Stairs.

Even in this situation, Gongsun Ling's steps were as stable as before, merely her speed had slowed a little bit. Thirty first, thirty second, thirty third, thirty fourth, thirty fifth, when she had reached the thirty fifth step, Gongsun Ling had already equalled the record of that female disciple from the Green Jade Immortal Island.

But she was still not finished, as before she still firmly moved upwards, only the expression on her face had become very solemn, as if she was facing a very strong enemy. Sparkling and translucent beads of sweat appeared on her snow white skin.

Fortieth, Forty fifth, fiftieth, the spectators had already thrown away those scornful remarks beyond the topmost clouds. To be able to reach the fiftieth step of the Heavenly Stairs, required absolute talent within talent, this time, the Pure Yang Palace had picked up a gem.

On the fifty third step, Gongsun Ling's figure began to shake. It seemed as if she had to face an immense pressure with every forward. She was a delicate woman with a feeble appearance, but her willpower did not lose to any of the men present on the scene. Gongsun Ling's performance had already obtained everyone's approval.

Fifty eight, fifty nine, sixtieth, sixty first, under the gazes of all of

those nervous people, many of whom had even started counting, Gongsun Ling finally couldn't persevere anymore. After she stepped on the sixty second step, her figure shook and she disappeared, emerging at the foot of the mountain.

Bang!

As if there had been a huge explosion, an enormous noise flared up.



# Chapter 42 - Let's See How Many Can You Execute

After this, the people who were watching the Heavenly Stairs suddenly remembered that the record of the Heavenly Stairs belonged to Green Jade Immortal Island's Shi Shan Shan for climbing sixty three steps. Now, an unknown female disciple from the Pure Yang Palace had surprisingly climbed sixty two steps, chasing directly behind the Shi Shan Shan of back then. Although it was slightly worse, when compared to Shi Fairy, it was still a surprising record that made people astonished.

This was definitely the best record in this year's assembly to climb the Heavenly Stairs, and the people standing there and watching had, from the beginning to the end witnessed this valiant new record being born. And comparing this record of the sixty second step of the Heavenly Stairs, the previous record of thirty five steps of the Heavenly Stairs by that female disciple of the Green Jade Immortal Island was just a joke.

At this time the people had stopped spouting nonsense like calling her Spell Formation Expert and other ridiculous talks, even if she were a Formation Expert, Gongsun Ling had climbed up to the sixty second step of the Heavenly Stairs under the eyes of numerous people. Even if someone could still not accept this, but facing these kinds of circumstances, apart from being shocked he could not help but feel admiration. As for the other people who were spreading false words, like 'she cheated', they were absolutely speechless.

Especially those JieDan stage experts in charge of the Heavenly Stairs this year. Apart from Xu Cheng Xin, each and everyone knew what was going on. At the time when Gongsun Ling was climbing the Heavenly Stairs, they had a silent agreement and exerted a lot of pressure on Gongsun Ling. One has to know that these few JieDan experts had joined together to bully a disciple at the qi layer, but even under these kinds of circumstances, Gongsun Ling unexpectedly still climbed to the sixty second step of Heavenly Stair, which, when compared to Shi Shan Shan, was not a large difference.

Xu Cheng Xin almost exploded with happiness, in this year's Floating Mountain Assembly the Pure Yang Palace was simply in a league of its own, which no other sect could compare to.

Leaving aside Yang Chen, who had chopped off the head of Tian Quan Sect's Han Jinade, only Gongsun Ling climbing to the sixty second step of the Heavenly Stairs was sufficient to make people acknowledge that Pure Yang Palace had a talent comparable to Shi Fairy of the Green Jade Immortal Island. The faint ridicule by these Fellow Daoists of other sects, due to the sect's disciples' lame performances in the past would also disappear. Once he thought of this point, Xu Cheng Xin felt pleasure, as if he had gotten a watermelon in the midst of summer.

In the future who would dare to talk arrogantly in front of him? Aside from the Green Jade Immortal Island, even the insufferably arrogant disciples of the Greatest Sky Sect wouldn't dare to say half a word in the face of such an achievement by Gongsun Ling. Just one disciple, Gongsun Ling, was sufficient to allow Pure Yang Palace to blow off all of the steam.

Remembering what happened so far, when Xu Cheng Xin looked in the other directions where the nine other JieDan stage experts were sitting, although he did not yet dare to boast, he was also no longer lowering his head.

Because the shock brought by Gongsun Ling was too great, the other JieDan stage experts stayed their hand. When Xu Cheng Xin saw the other nine, the pride on his face was hardly concealed. Facing Gongsun Ling's record, the other nine JieDan experts had to silently tolerate this kind of proudness shown by Xu Cheng Xin. Despite not feeling well about it within their hearts, they had no way of doing anything about it, as they had no such outstanding disciples in their own sects!

After being pushed down by the Heavenly Stairs, Gongsun Ling appeared at the foot of the mountain, but due to the enormous effort spent at the Heavenly Stairs, she could barely take a step. Surprisingly feeling a softness in her foot, she couldn't help but fall down.

From the beginning, Yang Chen had seen everything, so he swiftly moved forward and reached out his hand to support Gongsun Ling's delicate body. At the time his hand had touched Gongsun Ling's waist, her skin was so smooth that Yang Chen couldn't help but feel a shiver within his heart.

When Gongsun Ling came in contact with Yang Chen's hand, trying to help her, the colour of her face turned red and she was just about to push it away, however, she sensed that in the region where Yang Chen had caught her, there was a portion of earth attributed spirit power. Just a moment later, this spirit power

forced itself into more than half of Gongsun Ling's body, which replenished her exhausted spirit power a little.

By means of this portion of spirit power, Gongsun Ling was able to stabilize herself. She showed a smile to Yang Chen and said:

“Many thanks, Younger Brother Yang!”

Other people thought Gongsun Ling was thanking Yang Chen for supporting her when falling down, but Gongsun Ling was very clearly thanking him for the advice Yang Chen had given her, before she walked up the Heavenly Stairs. If it were not for those words, perhaps she would have been unable to support herself after the fiftieth step. Reaching the sixty second step was only because of the Yang Chen's warning.

Everything that happened on the Heavenly Stairs was still fresh in her memory, especially those last few steps simply exhausted all the energy in her body. However, it also allowed Gongsun Ling to gain some deeper benefits. The later attacks of the illusionary land were completely based on those weaknesses in her temperament, which are impossible to defend against. If it were not for Yang Chen's warning, she would not have known how to deal with it.

Of the people who climbed the Heavenly Stairs, almost all of them would immediately sit and meditate to comprehend the insights they have gained. Gongsun Ling, however, didn't sit down at once, rather she rested a little and sat down after that on the side, where she calmly started meditating. She very much wanted to know how many steps Yang Chen, who had given her direction, would be able to climb.

After the brief shock and discussion, the ten JieDan stage experts again entered the state of mind to power the stairs. The Heavenly Stairs started issuing a faint radiance again, declaring publicly that the next person could set foot on the Heavenly Stairs.

Next, after Gongsun Ling was precisely Yang Chen. Yang Chen looked at the faint radiance emitted by the Heavenly Stairs as if he was not facing the Heavenly Stairs, but rather some common lane. He casually lifted his foot and without making any decent preparatory actions, he immediately stepped to go up.

Just a moment ago they had seen an exceptional talent both carefully and cautiously ascend the Heavenly Stairs, but now suddenly in front of them was a guy who was so sloppy, that even Pure Yang Palace's Xu Cheng Xin felt some dissatisfaction. Even if he did not care about this, shouldn't he still make a proper appearance? Acting so casual, compared to a genius disciple such as Gongsun Ling, he was simply losing face for Pure Yang Palace.

The other Nine JieDan stage experts were even more dissatisfied. And at exactly this time, from within the other people who were watching, someone said, aiming at Yang Chen:

“Oh dear, an executioner always remains an executioner, it is impossible for him to show any elegance!”

In short, this resonated with the feelings within everyone's hearts. The bystanders didn't need to say anything, the Nine JieDan stage experts had once again formed a silent agreement

since Yang Chen did not value this experience much, they had to teach him an unforgettable lesson. His background was that of an executioner, that alone already made him a hot topic for discussion.

“Humph, an executioner who kills without any regards!”

Tian Quan Sect’s Foreign Affair Hall felt a lot of resentment at him in his heart. Han Jiande had died under Yang Chen’s hands, even if what Han Jiande did was not correct, he was still Tian Quan Sect’s disciple. For him to be killed by Yang Chen, that had made the Tian Quan Sect lose face. Thinking this, the Hall Master made the resolve:

‘Let’s see how many you can kill!’

The ten JieDan experts managing the Heavenly Stairs, every one of them can add their own imaginations to the illusions of the Heavenly Stairs, this was the unique feature of the illusionary land of the Heavenly Stairs and was also the most difficult part of the Heart Finding Path. The most serious trouble was that the ten JieDan Stage experts responsible for the spell formation could even communicate with each other freely, using their spirit power, and harmonize their coordination.

When Gongsun Ling was climbing the Heavenly Stairs, apart from Xu Cheng Xin, the other nine trifled with her by using this skill, cooperating with each other to create obstructions for Gongsun Ling. Now when Yang Chen had stepped on the Heavenly Stairs, everyone still used this same trick. Only this time it was due to the initiation by Tian Quan Sect’s Hall Master, that’s all.

As soon as he stepped on the first step of the Heavenly Stairs, Yang Chen felt as if he had been transported to the execution grounds, in front of him were ten prisoner properly bound and ready to be executed, while he was already wearing his red silk girdle, and his upper body exposed, carrying within his hand the executioner's blade, dressed as an executioner. It was just that the executioner's blade had the appearance of the fearful blade which he had at the XianTai stage, which was also similar to the sword box which Yang Chen had kept within the Achievement Ring.

Illusions are born in the mind, everything could still only use the knowledge within Yang Chen's mind as the foundation, only then it was able to draw support from spell formation's power and form the illusionary land. Seeing this, Yang Chen just smiled in contempt. Wanting to embarrass Yang Chen? Was this not just walking right into their own trap?

He waved the fearful blade within his hand and within a moment, all of the ten prisoners lost their heads. The scene before his eyes had a slight change and the ten people changed into a hundred. The hundred then again changed into one thousand.

No matter the number of people, generally speaking, the only issue for Yang Chen was the number of times he had to slash his blade, not to spend time pondering. Every time he waved his blade, there would be no hesitation, one blade, one person. Only one slash of the blade was required to remove a head, there would never be a second slash.

After finishing with chopping down a thousand heads, the

prisoners present before he finally changed. Originally, the prisoners consisted of some strong men, but this time they consisted of female convicts. The group consisted of many varieties of females, some were very charming, some frail, elegant and soft, some had a haughty appearance, some however had an extremely gentle appearance. Every one of them had different characteristics.

Ten women, some were shouting of false accusations, some were weeping endlessly, some were full of tender feelings and some of them were glaring at him. But Yang Chen did not hesitate in the least bit, as before, one slash, one head, and he killed these women.

Following which were one hundred women, then one thousand women, pleading, enticing, bawling out, respectful, various sorts of women appeared here, and the figures of them became more and more wonderful and elegant, their faces also became increasingly beautiful, appearing as if, so long as Yang Chen was willing, they were ready to warm the bed for him, if only Yang Chen did not swing the blade.

No matter what sort of woman he was facing, Yang Chen slashed his blade without feeling any tenderness. After the women, the prisoners turned into old and grey-haired elderly men, ten, a hundred, a thousand.

Yang Chen spent a very long time within the illusionary land, cutting so many heads, but in reality, everyone only saw Yang Chen climbing step by step, up to the ninth step.

“Does he really have a heart of stone?”



Tian Quan Sect's Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master felt gloomy within his heart, who could behead several thousand people without hesitating in the least. He however not given up at this point, instead, it aroused his aroused his fighting spirit.

“I don't believe, you can behead any person with your hands!”

Before Yang Chen's appeared ten young children, including both girls and boys. However, Yang Chen basically did not care about them, and like a machine, he slashed his blade and in a flash one hundred young children, then one thousand young children were all beheaded by Yang Chen.

‘Wa! Wa! Wa!’

This sound came from the ten infants crying piteously for food, their small bodies wrapped within swaddling clothes, who had appeared on the execution grounds.

“This Heart Finding Path, since I have decided to walk the road of an executioner, I don't care about the identity of the convict!”

Yang Chen resolutely replied to himself and within his hand the fearful blade appeared, not at all hesitating to behead the ten infants still wrapped within their swaddling clothes. Soon afterwards there were once again a hundred and then a thousand infants.

After the infants, there were ferocious animals, evil spirits, fierce devils and other mythical monsters. Facing these, Yang Chen hesitated even less, no matter how great the enticement, the threats by devils and monsters, the pitiful pleas to confuse him or even the magical attacks used by demons and ghouls, they had absolutely no effect on him. It was as if Yang Chen had turned a blind eye in response to those, merely beheading them one by one, using his blade.

After he finished beheading those monsters and demons, in front of Yang Chen appeared the people he knew.

Sun Hai Jing, beheaded!

Chu Heng, beheaded!

Han Jiande, beheaded!

His four servants, Shen Da, Ho Lin, Gu Qin and Yuan Ting, respectfully saluting Yang Chen, as before were still greeted with a beheading in response. After these four servants, Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan appeared in succession, and Yang Chen beheaded them without hesitation.

Xu Cheng Xin, beheaded!

Sun Qing Xue, beheaded!

Shi Shan Shan, beheaded!

Du Qian, beheaded!

Zhu Chen Tao, beheaded!

Gongsun Ling, beheaded!

Father and mother, beheaded!

Master, beheaded!

The people appearing had more and more importance in Yang Chen's heart, but Yang Chen just did not care who the person appearing before him was, as if his only intention was to temper himself in this illusionary land, hardly hesitating before beheading these individuals one by one. It didn't even raise any great waves within his heart. All of them were entirely within this illusionary land, so it didn't put any mental burden on Yang Chen.

“Disciple, you have finally reached the end of the Heavenly Stairs!”

Yang Chen stopped waving the blade like a machine and suddenly the whole scenario changed. He had already been transported to the foot of Floating Mountain. On the side, the exhausted Gongsun Ling had already recovered by much, cheerfully talking while looking at Yang Chen, pride and arrogance on her face.

His ears were suddenly filled with a burst of noise: shock, questions, frantic, various sorts of yelling noises flooded Yang Chen's ears. A second disciple of the qi layer had unexpectedly ascended all the steps of the Heavenly Stairs, this was simply an impossible matter.

Xu Chen Xin's voice came through distantly and within his voice was a hearty laugh, as if flaunting to all people:

“Ha ha ha ha, my Pure Yang Palace's disciple Yang Chen has climbed all the steps of Heavenly Stairs, which has not happened from the time immemorial and will never happen again, who still dares not to acknowledge him?”

The feeling of pride was exhibited in his speech, his words shook the heavens itself.

After the initial doubt and shock, all of the spectators no longer had that sort of disdain in their eyes, rather it changed to adoration, envy and unacceptance, all mixed. The more it played out like this, the more Yang Chen questioned the coherence of what was happening, as he seemed to convince the enemy even more thoroughly than the people on his own side.

“Fellow Daoist Yang, at the beginning I had assumed that you were a seventh qi layer expert pretending to be at the second qi layer and it seems that I was wrong. I apologize to Fellow Daoist Yang and ask Fellow Daoist Yang to forgive me!”

That guy, who had called Yang Chen's big mouth into question

earlier, appeared and admitted defeat in front of Yang Chen:

“Fellow Daoist Yang’s determination is very firm, myself admires him!”

“It is a pity that these pleasant words are also only an illusion and nothing more!”

Yang Chen’s eyes suddenly shone clearly and the fearful blade appeared within his hands suddenly and slashed directly towards the person who was speaking after which he suddenly turned and directly slashed towards Gongsun Ling’s neck.

# Chapter 43 - Setting Foot On The Peak

Two slashes, two heads rolling over. Blood splattered everywhere and a great disorder spread among the surrounding people.

“You monster, what are you doing?”

“Disciples of the same sect killing each other, betraying the teacher and exterminating the ancestor!”

...

After reprimanding him countless times, some of them became very impatient, even already taking out talisman gems. But as soon as the JieDan stage experts in charge of the Heavenly Stairs issued the command, all the others immediately flocked around him, desiring to dismember Yang Chen's body into a thousand pieces.

“Humph!”

Yang Chen coldly humphed and disdainfully said:

“Even if you illusions pretend to be real, in my eyes, you are still just illusions for me to destroy!”

Shua!

Suddenly everything disappeared and now in Yang Chen's eyes, only a Stairway which was limitless and leading to the ends of the earth was left. One could not even see the ends of this stairway. On every step, a single person was stationed, looking coldly at Yang Chen.

“Willfully slaughtering the innocent, you will die without a burial ground!”

When Yang Chen was setting foot on the first step of the stairs, on the step, a disciple of Ye Xiu Manor of the Pure Yang Palace was stationed, these words were flung at Yang Chen.

Ka Cha!

As soon as he finished speaking, Yang Chen extended his hand and slashed once, soon directly stepping onto the second step of the stairs.

“To the one who kills without any regards, be careful of karmic judgement!”

On the second step, another disciple of the Ye Xiu Manor was stationed similarly and also spoke a similar phrase about the wrongness of killing a living creature. Yang Chen's way to respond, however, was absolutely simple: Just one slash, no matter who the other person was, he just simply slashed and afterwards moved on to the next step.

All of the people gave an identical reason, a hundred people, a thousand people, ten thousand people, Yang Chen himself did not know how many had he killed nor how many reasons had he listened to.

Yang Chen recognized those disciples of the Pure Yang Palace. All of these long dead people announced their identities when they appeared. Greatest Sky Sect, Universal Sect, Clear Sky Sect, Five Phases Sect, Green Jade Immortal Island and Tian Quan Sect's countless disciples, all were killed and beheaded by Yang Chen, one by one. Apart from these, there were also those prisoners who were killed by Yang Chen just a moment ago, including the old, the feeble, the sick as well as those infants.

The words they said, were told to Yang Chen, at least, a thousand or ten thousand, and every time he heard them, he would consult his own heart.

Three people are enough to make a tiger (Ed. note: We're not sure about this idiom), hearing the same thing many times can convince a person that these words are the truth, this was increased by the fact that all of these thousands of people here were all repeating the same arguments, again and again, just wanting to denounce Yang Chen's conduct and deeds.

The Heavenly Stairs were also known as Heart Finding Path and the words of all of these people were almost entirely aiming at Yang Chen's identity as an executioner. Adding to that, the people he killed earlier, all of the people who appeared had the aim of making Yang Chen waver by using the people he had killed previously.



Yang Chen was aware that as long as he was to waver even a little bit due to the words of these people, it would immediately destabilize his foundation and he would be pushed out of the Heavenly Stairs. In the end, all this didn't have any effect on Yang Chen, he just kept on slashing his blade like a machine, killing, one by one, stepping onto the next step.

The cultivation bases of the people appearing became greater and greater: Foundation stage disciples, JieDan stage masters, these disciple with great cultivation were not only using words to disturb Yang Chen, but they were also trying to oppress Yang Chen with their imposing auras, to make Yang Chen yield.

But unfortunately, no matter what sort of ways these people used, Yang Chen would always remain unmoved. However, before every slash Yang Chen carried out, he would always ask himself if he would feel regret for the people he killed and those he would still kill, or not. Then, in a brief moment, Yang Chen would take care of them and would not feel even the least bit of regret.

Originally when he was at the XianTai Stage, the will of the fearful blade, had already entered Yang Chen's body and after Yang Chen left the XianTai Stage, that fierce will didn't disappear from within Yang Chen's body, rather it went into hibernation. Perhaps it was because it had killed too many immortals, so when facing ordinary people that killing intent didn't rise.

However at that time due to these hundreds and thousands of words, all asking the same question, the killing intent was finally roused. Under Yang Chen's incessant questioning of his inner

being and the beheading of people without the slightest hesitation, this portion of killing intent began to slowly rise.

The Yang Chen from before would kill just to kill and have never before thought whether the killing was right or wrong, or whether it was right to kill like this, however now, walking every step, he would think over this question. And every time Yang Chen came to a conclusion, his innermost being was tempered.

Having no regret was precisely his true feeling, when his conviction became more and more steady, then no matter what he would do, he would do it fearlessly. Because he truly felt no regret, the will of the XianTai Stage started fusing with Yang Chen's true feelings bit by bit.

While he was harshly examining his innermost being, it had apparently sped up this mixing process and every time he questioned his innermost being, a trace was fused together. After few ten thousand times, Yang Chen had already completed almost half of the mixing process.

The complexion of the JieDan stage experts who were responsible for maintaining the spell formation became more and more earnest. Initially, they believed that they could easily suppress this minor second qi layer disciple, however, the present circumstances were anything but encouraging.

By now Yang Chen had already stepped on the fiftieth rank of the Heavenly Stairs, and he still hadn't shown any signs of stopping. These few JieDan stage experts had prepared this kind of 'examining the heart' hurdle for Yang Chen, however, it had

instead begun to influence them.

The loftiness of these JieDan experts was not only unable to suppress Yang Chen, rather it had increased the killing intent on his body to the extreme. Even if it were these JieDan stage experts, just now coming in contact with this will, they couldn't help but shudder. Even if it was a unique and fearful devil, they wouldn't have this kind of fear which had emerged from their innermost being. However, one minor second qi layer disciple of the younger generation had made them feel this kind of sensation.

Only, at the moment, they were responsible for maintaining the spell formation so they could not leave. Of the ten JieDan stage experts, at least, those nine were not able to endure this kind of killing intent, which nobody could confront, coming from Yang Chen's body, but they were also unable to stop him.

Most of these JieDan stage experts were secretly cursing that Tian Quan Sect's Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master, in order to avenge his sect's Han Jiande and to vent his frustration, he had absolutely insisted on making use of Yang Chen's identity as an executioner, to test him. If you ride a tiger, it's hard to get off, the outcome of that was the current situation. Yang Chen's killing intent became more and more vigorous, they were even unaware that after his improvement by being minced and ground by the Heavenly Stairs, Yang Chen's killing intent had transformed by that much.

Only at the moment, they could not afford to care about this, what they were concerned about was how long Yang Chen would be able to support himself because they almost could not support

him going on!

On the outside, the spectators were all entirely dumbstruck. With Gongsun Ling climbing to the sixty second step, she was indeed a talent. However, currently, Pure Yang Palace's second qi layer disciple, could surprisingly also climb up to the fiftieth step of Heavenly Stairs. What is this? Had the talent of the Pure Yang Sect suddenly exploded this year?

Tian Quan Sect's JieDan expert was complaining endlessly in his heart, how could he have known, he couldn't possibly have known, that just because he was incited by Gongsun Ling demonstrating her extraordinary talent, it had created disequilibrium within his heart. Adding to that the affair of Yang Chen beheading Han Jiande, his heart had suddenly exploded, and just because of this curious coincidence he wanted to exploit Yang Chen's background of being an executioner to suppress him and destroy Yang Chen's Dao Foundation, but now it had evolved into this kind of situation.

To use the guilt of killing incessantly to torture Yang Chen's heart, Tian Qian Sect's JieDan stage expert's intention was also not so simple and without maliciousness. In case Yang Chen had wavered over the fact that he had killed, the outcome would not be as simple as him being thrown out of the Heavenly Stairs, rather these countless torturous questions were sufficient to stab a thorn into Yang Chen's most innermost being.

Any time Yang Chen would want to advance his cultivation, because of wavering in his conviction, this thorn could evolve and turn into an enormous Heart's Devil. Then when the time came,

not to mention breaking through to the next realm, just being able to live his life without being haunted by the terror of the Heart's Devil would already be the best possible outcome.

Illusions are born in the mind, other people wouldn't know what Yang Chen's illusions were about. And these JieDan stage experts responsible for maintaining the spell formation were merely acting in accordance with the reflection of weak points of the person climbing the Heavenly Stairs. The purpose of doing this was so that they could provide their own imagination to attack, so that they could adapt to the illusions coming further ahead on the Heavenly Stairs, so that, when they were thrown out of the Heavenly Stairs, the tested person could gain some benefits and also learn of their own weak points.

Yang Chen had faced the plans formed together by these JieDan Stage experts and absolutely didn't have the opportunity to adapt to it, and had directly withstood the incessant questions directed at his identity as an executioner. But now, not only did Yang Chen not withdraw, instead of being dragged down by these people, he became even more determined to not give up.

All of the spirit power in the bodies of these JieDans stage experts was already entirely absorbed by the spell formation, under this situation they had no other choice but to begin taking magic potions incessantly, to be able to keep the spell formation working. Even under this situation they did not dare to give up, in case they let down their guard, the spell formation would, in turn, devour them. Compared to the exhaustion of their spirit power, that outcome was far more dreadful.

“I don’t believe, that Yuan Ying and Da Cheng stage experts would also be unable to suppress him!”

A JieDan expert shouted within his heart.

Pu!

He spat out a mouthful of blood and it blended within the spell formation.

Bang

In front of Yang Chen, another expert appeared, his power and might incomparable to anyone before. Under this enormous pressure, Yang Chen even felt himself being forced to kneel on the ground. However, the surging killing intent within his mind did not in the least want to lose to this pressure and made him choose the option of slashing at the great expert.

Every time he ascended one more step, it became incomparably more difficult. To the outsiders, Yang Chen’s steps had already appeared to be slowing, little by little. Every step was getting matchlessly difficult, it appeared as if he would lose at any moment now.

Fifty seventh, fifty eighth, fifty ninth, in a moment Yang Chen was going to step on the sixtieth step. The countless people watching outside were already thoroughly dumbstruck. Both of Pure Yang Palace’s qi layer disciples were simply monsters. One

was at the sixth qi layer and the other only at the second qi layer. These people did not know any other way to describe them.

Yang Chen's footsteps had still not stopped, however, and as before he was steadily continuing forward. Despite being slow, they hadn't stopped even once since the beginning.

Ka Cha

As if after he had stepped into another space, Yang Chen suddenly felt all of the pressure around him disperse. In front of Yang Chen, the people he remembered from the spiritual world appeared and no matter whether they had a good or bad relationship with him, facing Yang Chen, they would merely incessantly ask him the same questions. Now, on every step, two more people appeared.

The original pressure however, didn't have any increase in quality. Yang Chen had realized that these JieDan experts were making Yuan Ying and Da Cheng stage experts appear, but were only barely able to imitate their imposing manner. However the experts had already expended most of their energy, so they were basically not in any position to be able to imitate that sort of imposing manner and state, but, on the contrary, it made Yang Chen feel like the pressure had lessened.

The will of the XianTai Stage was fusing itself with Yang Chen. Apparently the more people Yang Chen killed, the higher its approval of him became, fusing with him even more.

As Yang Chen moved upward step by step on the Heavenly Stairs, the JieDan experts on the outside were already incapable of persisting. Apart from Xu Cheng Xin, who was providing just enough spirit power for the spell formation to work, the others were already becoming more and more desperate.

“He even dared to behead those seniors who have already ascended to the spiritual world? Who could possibly still create problems for him?”

Yang Chen had already reached the step which had neither predecessors nor will ever have successors.

The Eightieth Step.

This had led to all of the other nine JieDan stage experts to feel despair in their hearts. All of them had already contributed a mouthful of their blood essence. Their consciousness was almost unable to resist now.

If the illusionary space was broken, that would mean that the cultivators responsible would be devoured instead. The Tian Quan Sect's Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master clenched his teeth and formed a resolution.

Pu! Pu!

Two mouthfuls of blood essence sprayed above the center of the spell formation, he greatly regretted what had happened within his



heart.

“I refuse to believe! You dare to behead in the spiritual world, but are you also daring enough to behead immortals of the Heavenly Court?”

After an exchange with their spiritual awareness, the other JieDan experts responsible for the spell formation also agreed with this decision and all of them coughed up two mouthfuls of blood essence and began the final duel between them and Yang Chen.

All of them were delighted in their hearts, but they were not in the least aware, that when Yang Chen faced the people from the Heavenly Court, even that last little bit of pressure had completely faded away. These guys had all already died at his hand, so while Yang Chen still met with their questions, how could he admit that killing them was wrong?

On the later steps, Yang Chen was able to increase his pace again, first walking rapidly until he was running as fast as the wind when he finally reached that last, one-hundredth step of the Heavenly Stairs. As Yang Chen had reached this step, the emotions of the entire crowd at the Floating Mountain began to boil.

Since the time Heavenly Stairs had been created, never before had anyone been able to climb to the top. However now, everyone was witnessing a legend being born before their eyes. Pure Yang Palace's second qi layer disciple Yang Chen had unexpectedly reached the apex of the Heavenly Stairs. This... This was just miraculous. Countless talismans flew into the sky around the Floating Mountain and in a flash, the sky was hidden from view.

At the instant when Yang Chen ascended the peak, all of the ten JieDan stage experts simultaneously coughed up blood. But Xu Cheng Xin was merely supporting the spell so for him, it was only his spiritual influence's wear and tear, so long as he would recuperate for three to five days, he would recover very quickly. Xu Cheng was very ecstatic within his heart, a Pure Yang Palace's disciple had ascended the entire Heavenly Stairs, the Pure Yang Palace had never before shone like this.

Indeed, the other JieDan experts hadn't been as lucky as that. Even before they had already coughed up few mouthfuls of blood essence, but after this mouthful, even their internal organs started shaking. Even if they had the best elixirs, they couldn't recover to their earlier prowess within a short time, even if they were able to recuperate to their current state within half a year, they would already be fortunate.

Only who would take notice of what was happening here, as everyone's vision was entirely fixed on that radiant and lofty figure standing at the peak of the Heavenly Stairs. All of them wanted to know what kind of benefits one would receive after ascending to the top of the Heavenly Stairs.

At that time, Yang Chen was stuck in the final process of the fusion of his killing intent and was unable to move at all for the time being. The Heavenly Stairs under his foot, however, had begun to make spirit power rush forth and enter his body as if the Heavenly Stairs were trying to assist him.

# Chapter 44 - Surely He Cheated

The will of the XianTai Stage had almost fused together with Yang Chen, with only three tenths left unfused. But when Yang Chen had reached the top of Heavenly Stairs, the fusion had started to rapidly slow down. It seemed that the excitement of the slaughter in the later part of the Heavenly Stairs was already enough to make the fierce will interested. The process of fusion finally halted slowly, a moment after Yang Chen had ascended the peak.

Even so, Yang Chen who was standing tall and straight at the top of the Heavenly Stairs was still emitting a killing intent, which could make everyone tremble and shudder, from head to toe. When those JieDan experts who were sitting nearest to him absorbed this intent, the nine of them who had sustained rather heavy injuries groaned and then, soon afterward, fainted. Only one person, Xu Cheng Xin, was conscious and although a fear had emerged from within his heart, he was still extremely delighted, because, after all was said and done, Yang Chen was still a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace and this was magnificent feat, which would add to the face of his sect.

Within Yang Chen's body, a portion of spirit power that was valiant to the extreme rushed in. It had the strength of the blood essence, spat out by those JieDan experts in the final moment. Ten portions of spirit energy rapidly circulated within Yang Chen's meridians, attempting to facilitate the complete fusion of Yang Chen with the will of the XianTai Stage.

After this fusion had stopped, the leftover spirit power began to

crazily restore Yang Chen's body. Ten JieDan stage experts, even if they had reached the state where the oil in the lamp had dried up, the blood essence they had released with their last spirit power was still far better, when compared to the medicinal strength of ten Profound Yang Fruits, moreover, this portion of spirit power had passed through the Heavenly Stairs and had been transformed into pure spirit power by this formation, which even rendered the need to purify the medicinal power unnecessary.

The Reverse Yin and Yang five phases crazily revolved, using this gigantic amount of spirit power it began to compress and refine it to the extreme. Fortunately, the Heavenly Stair's spell formation had already slowly stopped working after losing the people responsible for managing the spell formation, otherwise, Yang Chen would not be able to endure this enormous spirit power.

His meridians expanded at an unprecedented pace. Luckily Yang Chen's body has been transformed by the life essence of countless immortals, and had become incomparably strong, so although it had already been pushed to the extreme, it was still able to support him.

It was Yang Chen's luck that the Heavenly Stairs' sensory spell formation had discovered that a large amount of spirit power was required for the fusion of Yang Chen's will and the will of the XianTai Stage, which was then pulled out from these ten JieDan experts. Currently, the fusion was still not complete, but if there were still people ready to take care of the spell formation, Yang Chen would absolutely explode, due to overflowing spirit power. If he were to be allowed to once again face the barrier, where the pressure had suddenly increased, the remaining spirit power was nothing he would be worried about.

Finally, someone discovered the current circumstances of the JieDan experts. Greatly alarmed, the people watching were unable to pay any more attention to him. Soon, Yang Chen began to have a moment of realization at the peak of the Heavenly Stairway. Thereupon, flustered people started appearing to support the ten JieDan experts and soon they started using their own magic potions to help them, trying to outdo one another. This time, could be used to sow good karma with JieDan stage experts. Compared to a few magic potions, this was far more valuable.

Gongsun Ling raised her head to look at the figure of that person sitting upright at the peak of the Heavenly Stairs and satisfaction flashed within her eyes, however she discovered, that within her heart, she was not all that amazed, as if it was a natural affair for Yang Chen to ascend to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs. This sensation was similar to the one that she had felt when she met Yang Chen for the first time, merely at that time she had not discovered this.

The people of the Thousand Autumn Pavilion very rapidly arranged a good place for Xu Cheng Xin to rest and Gongsun Ling also didn't need to be worried about receiving any surprise attacks at this time, so she was simply sitting at the same place and began to comprehend what she had gained at the Heavenly Stairs bit by bit, very quickly entering the state of enlightenment.

Yang Chen at the peak of the Heavenly Stairs had to worry about someone approaching him with harmful intentions even less. Not to mention the many people who were attentively watching him, just the imposing manner emitted by his body could make people develop a sense of fear from far away and make their soul shudder,

so there had been no one daring to approach within a radius of one hundred meters around his body.

An unconvinced and evil person launched a talisman gem. His intention was to probe Yang Chen's breath, however as soon as the talisman gem had barely approached the circle of a hundred meter radius, that middle grade talisman gem immediately began to shudder as if trying to break itself free from its master's control. Scared, the master of the talisman gem hurriedly withdrew the talisman gem. Just this one moment of effort had already caused the talisman gem to drop half a grade, making the talisman gem's owner extremely regretful.

Seeing this example, naturally any other person did not have any thoughts either, everyone could only look at Yang Chen with a gaze which contained extreme envy, sighing in their hearts about the good luck of the Pure Yang Palace. Two disciples, one had reached the sixty second step, another had directly climbed to the top, could it be that from now on the Pure Yang Palace would greatly flourish?

The Reverse Yin and Yang five phases were operating automatically within Yang Chen's mind, however, this time, it was unprecedentedly relaxed and steady. If the previous him had still not approved of becoming Heavenly Court's executioner and seizing all sorts of opportunities, he had now completely approved of his previous decision.

The Heavenly Stairs were a Heart Finding Path, it made Yang Chen's will even more resolute, and furthermore gave him a sense of direction. The fusion with the will of the XianTai Stage had

already made him aware of what sort of road should he choose. At the time of his rebirth, Yang Chen had merely decided to not be the previous benevolent Yang Chen, but at this moment, Yang Chen had decided to become a Yang Chen who could face countless untold dangers and cut a bloody path through them.

The spirit power passed on from the Heavenly Stairway, like a gentle and unending stream, which made it relatively simple for Yang Chen to refine these ten portions of spirit power one by one. When Yang Chen had thrown himself wholeheartedly into refining this spirit power, the efficiency of the Reverse Yin and Yang five phases had greatly increased in the process, the speed of absorbing the spirit power had also increased somewhat.

The violent will of the XianTai Stage reflected its stubbornness abundantly at this time. The spirit power entering into Yang Chen's body was immediately constrained by this will, not daring in the least to rush disorderly and create upheaval, allowing Yang Chen to be able to make steady progress in compressing and refining this spirit power, bit by bit.

The surrounding people had not idea what Yang Chen was doing, but seeing Yang Chen sit in meditation they all believed he has gained some enlightenment. The Heavenly Stairs suddenly emitted multicolored rays of light, as if, even without JieDan experts, it could still operate as before. No one was aware of what was happening, however, they did understand that they should not move recklessly. Countless messages were sent to each and every sect.

Those disciples of different sects meditating and comprehending

at the foot of the Heavenly Stairs continuously began to wake up. Only Yang Chen was left sitting motionlessly at the top. In the next few days, these circumstances stayed the same and the sects near the Floating Mountain already sent many experts, while the injured JieDan stage experts also all woke up and began to heal.

Finally, Yang Chen awoke from this state. When he opened his eyes, he immediately began to check his body from top to bottom, he felt a relaxation which couldn't be described in words. Within all of his body's meridians, a portion of overflowing spirit power was incessantly migrating and this sensation made him extremely delighted.

After careful examination, Yang Chen jumped on the spot, scared by the change in his body.

The yin and yang five phases of spirit power within his body, which had been compressed and was refined, had already broken through the criterion of reaching the third qi layer. In other words, Yang Chen had unconsciously broken through the second qi layer and reached the third qi layer, after climbing the Heavenly Mountain.

Previously it had cost Yang Chen one year to break through from the first qi layer to the second qi layer: the first eight months he was burdened by the Hidden Pavilion, then he went through three months of bitter cultivation and finally, after just setting out he spent time at the ancestor's place, where, while he was trying to collect the sword box by borrowing spirit power from the underground spirit vein, he had broken through to the second qi layer.



From that breakthrough until now, merely half a year had passed at most. This half year Yang Chen had leisurely followed a routine to cultivate and didn't try to painstakingly upgrade his strength. Who could have thought that with the assistance from the Heavenly Stairs, he would surprisingly make a breakthrough to the third qi layer?

It was not that his total spirit power had increased and he had broken through to the third qi layer because of that, but rather, after using the Reverse Yin and Yang Method, the spirit power had become highly condensed and compacted, and at the same time it not only consisted of just a single phase of spirit power, but rather all of the five phases. Furthermore the five phases have both yin and yang spirit power, which would absolutely surpass an average third qi layer disciple.

What made Yang Chen even more surprised was that, because of the fusion with the will of the XianTai stage, his body had seemingly began to emit killing intent which was visible to the naked eye again, it was only because of the multicolored light reflected by Heavenly Stairs that the other people did not clearly notice it. Moreover, this killing intent was condensed to the extreme, it only appeared in a radius of a hundred meters around him, outside of this region other people could barely sense some fear, but it couldn't make their souls shudder as if they were in front of a killing god.

This kind of killing intent, was the best result of Three Purities Secret, thinking about this, Yang Chen opened his eyes after sensing the changes within his body, and immediately closed them again, beginning to cultivate the second stage of Three Purities

Secret.

The killing intent covering the surroundings of his body slowly began to get absorbed, this was the killing intent that the XianTai Stage had accumulated over countless years, condensed over thousands and tens of thousands of years, perhaps an immortal could utilize it with more power than Yang Chen, but it was still better than ordinary cultivators. Even under the crazy absorption of the Three Purities Secret, it still took a day and night worth hard work to transform everything into spiritual awareness.

With the assistance of this killing intent, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness finally reached the level of an expert at the peak of the foundation stage. The spiritual influence completely scattered and as it did, it directly enveloped an area of several hundred meters and each and every moment in the surroundings seemingly started to be monitored by Yang Chen.

After spending seven or eight days of time, Yang Chen had increased his understanding of the Heavenly Stairs to the maximum. Apart from the people of the Pure Yang Palace, Thousand Autumn Pavilion and Gongsun Ling, nobody else was watching. Yang Chen's waking up hadn't given rise to a great many people's attention.

Nevertheless, for someone to reach the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, this had already caused a ruckus in the entire cultivation world. In those days when Shi Shan Shan climbed to the sixty third step of the Heavenly Stairs it had already caused a great commotion and anyone who had eyes could see how rapidly Shi Shan Shan's cultivation had improved afterwards and everyone in

the cultivation world had tried to gain Shi Fairy's favour. In association with this, even the ranking of the Green Jade Immortal Islands had increased among the sects of the cultivation world.

At that moment Pure Yang Palace showed off two talented disciples, one person climbing to the sixty second step, Gongsun Ling, and the other person was Yang Chen, who had directly climbed to the peak of Heavenly Stairs. To what sort of change this would lead, no one knew.

The only thing that was certain was that, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling would definitely spread their names under the heavens as cultivation geniuses and Pure Yang Palace would possibly shine in the future because of these two extraordinary talents.

Shi Shan Shan and Gongsun Ling had a difference of just a single step. Thanks to her graceful and elegant bearing, as long as she does not make any large blunder, maybe not long ago in the future the name of Gongsun Fairy would also be heard.

As for Yang Chen, no one dared to judge anything. Actually, no one had thought highly of Yang Chen's potential or rather they were just unsure to what extent Yang Chen's future will become better. As for the reason, Yang Chen's spirit root was very common, his will however was pretty firm, rarely seen in one's life. Everyone who had seen him ascend the Heavenly Stairs had already admitted to this point.

However, a person with a firm will but common aptitude, was still not equal to Shi Shan Shan or Gongsun Ling's natural talent

whose wills were also pretty good. With regards to the cultivation world, people who were wholeheartedly cultivating but not having any advancements were many, like a river of garbage, but there were not many who could stick out. After all, cultivation was a thing dominated by talent.

Xu Cheng Xin had recovered by quite a lot in the past few days, the wear and tear of his spirit power should be recovered within one month according to his estimates. These past few days were also the proudest days for Xu Cheng Xin, in the past all of the other sect's dispatched disciples would climb over thirty, forty or fifty steps of the Heavenly Stairs, and afterwards brag in front of Xu Cheng Xin, but this time, at last it was his turn to stand out among his peers.

But unfortunately, the other nine JieDan experts were still getting healed. Their injuries were at least ten times more serious than his, even having their cultivation fall down one level, originally they were at JieDan fifth stage but now they were at JieDan fourth stage. Although this was only a small difference of one realm, but this could not be recovered with just cultivating for ten days or half a month, at the JieDan stage it would take at least five to ten years to be able to advance again. This was a huge loss, but it was too late for regret for these people.

If they had known earlier, they would not have followed that guy from the Tian Quan Sect and make things difficult for Yang Chen. A disciple at the second qi layer, how could he threaten them? They immediately came up with attacks on Yang Chen's identity as an executioner, however they hadn't anticipated that for the other party this was not a weak point at all, but on the contrary had helped Yang Chen succeed in climbing the Heavenly Stairs. If they

had known about this earlier, maybe they would have just followed the routine. If they had stopped using this as his weak point after he had climbed the first few steps maybe he wouldn't have been able to climb to the peak.

However regretting now had no use, they could only accept this fact. Suddenly falling down one level and even getting seriously injured, now, at least, they would not have to see Xu Cheng Xin show off, so he couldn't annoy them, maybe this was a very small compensation by the heavens for them!

Even if these JieDan experts who had ulterior motives didn't speak much, the same did not apply to other people. To step to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, what great honor was this, how could a second qi layer disciple with mediocre talent achieve this, moreover before he had started with his cultivation, this guy was an executioner who killed people without consideration, so his hands were dyed red with blood.

“How could it be that Pure Yang Palace's Xu Cheng Xin just had his spirit power exhausted, while the other JieDan stage experts had a drop in level?”

There were plenty of people who were not convinced, so finally, when the experts of other sects arrived, they raised this objection.

Even Xu Cheng Xin didn't know the reason, he was only sincerely controlling the spell formation and the other nine JieDan experts found it embarrassing to speak out about their thoughts. Nine JieDan experts trying to suppress a second qi layer disciple, declaring this would not suppress Yang Chen but rather would add

to his splendor.

“That Pure Yang Palace’s Yang Chen, surely he is a fraud!”

When people raised these questions, immediately someone raised even bigger questions, Greatest Sky Sect’s JieDan stage expert Cheng Wen Cai, after listening to the words of his sect’s younger generation, immediately started talking as if he was giving a verdict:

“That guy, must be killed!”

# Chapter 45 - So Let's Repeat It

At any time, there was no lack of people who would envy or be jealous of other people's success, it was the same in the cultivation world. This JieDan expert of the Greatest Sky Sect raised this opinion after he showed up in response to the questions by the crowd. Who would want a second rate sect's second qi layer disciple to obtain the honor of setting foot on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs? Furthermore, among the ten JieDan experts managing the spell formation, apart from Xu Cheng Xin of the Pure Yang Palace the other nine were all seriously injured and had fallen a level, it would be a miracle if this did not make people suspicious.

“Who practiced fraud? Cheng Wen Cai, you dare accuse me of practicing fraud!?”

Xu Cheng Xin was the Hall Master of the Foreign Affairs Hall. Although he was smooth and evasive in dealing with affairs, he was neither timid nor a coward and once he heard that surprisingly there was still someone who did not want to admit that Yang Chen was the first one to set foot on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs and wanted to put him to ground, how could he be polite.

“Go! You yourself can go find ten JieDan experts and ask your Greatest Sky Sect's disciple to reach the top and let me have a look whether they cheated or not!”

Although the Heavenly Stairs ceremony was not a significant

affair, Xu Cheng Xin had managed it for many years, so he immediately got angry. Seizing this opportunity, the JieDan stage expert immediately denounced Cheng Wen Cai's argument.

“Have you all gone mute? My Pure Yang Palace's disciples haven't cheated, are you all still unclear about it? Do you dare to swear on your Heart's Devil that my Pure Yang Palace's disciple has cheated?”

After ordering the clamor, Xu Cheng Xin at once directed his fury towards the other JieDan experts who were responsible for maintaining the spell formation together with him.

These JieDan experts were very ashamed within their hearts, so naturally they did not dare to face Xu Cheng Xin's rage and, even more, could not dare to swear a big oath on their Heart's Devil. Facing Xu Cheng Xin's angry gaze, the nine JieDan experts were so embarrassed that they were unable to say anything.

“Fellow Daoist Xu and other fellow daoists, if they would know of it, then what kind of fraud is it?”

Cheng Wen Cai faintly smiled, immediately resolving the awkwardness of the other people, helping these guys who had already fallen a level and also providing them an escape from swearing a big oath on their Heart's Devil. According to Cheng Wan Cai's words, they could not know if Pure Yang Palace had committed fraud, therefore, in the end, they were unclear about whether Yang Chen had cheated or not.



“You!”

Xu Cheng Xin hadn't foreseen that Cheng Wan Cai would speak in this way and as soon as he opened his mouth, people began to suspect that Xu Cheng Xin had joined with Yang Chen to cheat. One cannot argue with a hundred mouths. Even if they didn't have any evidence nor could they find the method, but if asked, they could directly deny, by saying that they wouldn't know what kind of method he would have used.

Indeed this time, Pure Yang Palace was really very strange with their choice of disciples. Gongsun Ling could still be considered as a normal sixth qi layer talent. But Yang Chen was a trifling second qi layer cultivator, who had just barely grasped the principle of making talisman papers, but he could still use a talisman tool to kill the sixth qi layer Han Jiande of Tian Quan Sect, this itself was absolutely unimaginable. Moreover, to allow a second qi layer disciple to participate in the Heavenly Stairs Assembly was very abnormal.

“Humph! Yang Chen of my Pure Yang Palace, before entering the sect had killed many, even his baleful aura is very heavy, he was naturally not afraid of any illusionary space. To climb to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs was not any alarming thing.”

Seeing how things went so far, Xu Cheng Xin had no choice but putting forward his own reasons.

“If this is regarded as cheating, I have nothing to say!”

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, who could have thought it was unexpectedly because of this reason. Most of those nine JieDan experts almost spat out blood after hearing this. They had their long and exhausting conspiracy to aim towards his weak point to torture him, using his identity as an executioner, but the target just did not care about it. No wonder they were injured in the end. There was a thing about the illusionary spell, in case the spell was broken, then those responsible for managing the spell formation would surely be devoured in return. They used so much spirit power to plot against Yang Chen, so naturally the backlash would be difficult to deal with, falling down one level, after all, was said and done, they had indeed attacked themselves.

After seeing how everything had developed, these nine JieDan experts were extremely regretful, especially those eight JieDan experts who had followed after the Tian Quan Sect's expert, they were so regretful that their intestines turned green. Towards a person on whom illusionary spells had no effect, they had smugly tried to attack him for a long time but had instead ended up attacking themselves. Their insides were heavily injured and they had regressed one level, for what reason did they decide to do this?

“This is just your argument, Fellow Daoist Xu, that's all, your whole Pure Yang Palace cannot be trusted!”

Cheng Wen Cai again faintly smiled.

“I will oversee it, if Pure Yang Palace was aware of any way to cheat the Heavenly Stairs, it would only be proper if everyone jointly attended to this, so that after the fraud is exposed they can not ridicule it as a baseless lie.”

“Cheng Wen Cai, aren’t you determined to prove that my sect’s disciple is a fraud?”

Xu Cheng Xin spoke this slowly and unhurriedly while looking at Cheng Wen Cai with hatred, not even not using the title of Fellow Daoist to address him and directly addressing him with his name.

“Pure Yang Palace is considered to be an upright sect, even if you have produced this kind of degenerate disciple, Fellow Daoist Xu should not shield him.”

Cheng Wen Cai still had a smile on his face but his words were fixated on killing Yang Chen, using them to force Xu Cheng Xin.

“These words, Cheng Wan Cai you still suspect that I was also involved in fraud, yes or no?”

Xu Cheng Xin asked Cheng Wan Cai, throwing an angry look at him while stubbornly trying to press down his anger.

“Whether you have cheated or not, Fellow Daoist Xu you yourself should be clear about this within your heart!”

Cheng Wen Cai gave an ambiguous answer with a smile.

“You!”

Xu Cheng Xin was extremely angry, yet he smiled, speechlessly pointing at Cheng Wen Cai for a good moment, finally forcing his complexion to become normal, he said: “Fine, I, Xu Cheng Xin, pledge on my Heart’s Devil, if I had practiced fraud in the affair of Yang Chen reaching the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, then my soul shall be shattered by thunder and I shall die without a proper burial site.”

After swearing the big oath on his Heart’s Devil Xu Cheng Xin looked at Cheng Wan Cai and asked:

“Cheng Wen Cai, what do you say now?”

“What can I say now!”

Cheng Wan Cai innocently said:

“Dare not, dare not, why bother swearing the big oath on your Heart’s Devil? I have complete trust that Fellow Daoist Xu hasn’t practiced fraud. But that, Yang Chen.....”

“How about making him also swear the oath on his Heart’s Devil?”

Cheng Wan Cai asked while sneering.

“He is a second qi layer disciple, who knows whether he will be able to build his foundation or not, to swear the big oath on his Heart’s Devil, for him this is still distant.”

Cheng Wan Cai, however, did not want to let Yang Chen slip by:

“Maybe he has found some way to cheat, I have never before seen a person who doesn’t fear illusionary spells.”

After all was said and done, he just wanted to prove that Yang Chen was a fraud.

“Fellow Daoist Xu, you should not be crazy about it, if Fellow Daoist Xu does not make up his mind to clean the sect, I will have to do it in his place.”

“This matter of cleaning up the sect, bring that up after a disciple of the Greatest Sky Sect climbs up over the fiftieth step of the Heavenly Stairs, Ok!”

Xu Cheng Xin answered sneeringly. Everyone who heard this clearly understood that so long as next time there was a disciple of Greatest Sky Sect who would ascend past the fiftieth step of the Heavenly Stair, Xu Cheng Xin would immediately jump out to blame him of fraud.

“As for your claim, Fellow Daoist Cheng, that my Pure Yang Palace’s disciple Yang Chen cheated, then how about Fellow Daoist Cheng gathers ten JieDan stage experts and make Yang Chen climb up the Heavenly Stairs again?”

Xu Cheng Xin had confidence in Yang Chen, so he immediately

raised the challenge and provokingly said:

“At that time, Fellow Daoist Cheng would surely be sincerely convinced, right?”

To this condition, Cheng Wen Cai neither agreed nor disagreed, however. The former only wanted to uncover Yang Chen’s fraud and afterward compel the Pure Yang Palace to clean their sect. But at that time, Xu Cheng Xin had sworn an oath on his Heart’s Devil, that this was certainly not his own doing.

Although the Pure Yang Palace was a second rate sect, it would still not tolerate someone spouting nonsense to tarnish its reputation. If someone would question their people, they had to take out the evidence, if they had no evidence, then even if it was the sect leader of Greatest Sky Sect, he still could not tarnish Pure Yang Palace as he wished. Perhaps if Greatest Sky Sect’s sect master himself had personally appeared, then he would be able to ask for Yang Chen’s life, but unfortunately, a minor Heavenly Stairs Assembly and a second qi layer disciple were not worthy for the Greatest Sky Sect’s Sect Leader to appear personally and Cheng Wan Cai wouldn’t dare dream of such a situation.

Just a mere Cheng Wen Cai’s position was not enough to make Pure Yang Palace, who also had several Yuan Ying experts to keep watch, yield. At present, he had only one option and that was to uncover Yang Chen’s fraud, otherwise, he would have to carry the label of a person who speaks without thinking. Apart from having to give an apology to the Pure Yang Palace, perhaps in the future his words, as a JieDan Stage expert, would be considered as a joke by other people. If a JieDan expert could be bothered by a qi layer

outer disciple, who would still show respect to him?

Cheng Wen Cai somewhat repented when believing Li Qing Chen's words, as he could not raise any evidence to determine that Yang Chen was a fraud. In addition, he also detested those Nine JieDan experts, whether he had cheated or not, they had to be well aware, yet they had taken a dubious stance and were making him decide whether he had done that or not. In this kind of situation, he could not stop halfway and could only force himself to go and gather the other nine JieDan stage experts, and once again start the Heavenly Stairs spell formation.

Nevertheless, Xu Cheng Xin immediately found Yang Chen who had just barely come down from the peak of the Heavenly Stairs and had directly gone to meet with Gongsun Ling to discuss what she had run across within the illusionary space. Hearing Xu Cheng Xin's words, he immediately smiled.

“Isn't this is a fine thing indeed?”

Yang Chen asked, feeling pleasantly surprised. He had not only climbed to the peak, but had also made his will firm and persistent, and in addition to that he had also directly broken through to the third qi layer. Ascending the Heavenly Stairs once more, wouldn't this mean that his spirit power would rise immensely again? Maybe the will of the XianTai Stage would also fuse even more. If it were not for the supervision of numerous sects that one disciple of one sect could only climb once, Yang Chen would already have taken a few more rounds to the peak. At the moment, such a great opportunity had directly fallen into Yang Chen's lap, so Yang Chen was naturally exceptionally pleased.

This time, Xu Cheng Xin seemingly discovered something on Yang Chen's body and feeling alarmed he asked:

“You surprisingly made a breakthrough?”

Immediately his complexion changed.

“On your body, there is the spirit power of all of the five phases? This way is not pure, isn't it to invert the roots and branches?”

Gongsun Ling had asked a similar question before. Merely, seeing that Yang Chen had made a breakthrough at that time, she didn't ask anymore about this. But now seeing that Xu Cheng Xin had asked the same question, Gongsun Ling also said:

“Yang Younger Disciple, you should not take any wrong path!”

Regardless of how their expressions were, both of them were concerned for Yang Chen, he was naturally aware of that and didn't hide anything and answered to Xu Cheng Xin:

“Elder, this disciple merely wanted to know, how the spirit power of other five phases is, that's all.”

“Concentrate on cultivating your own fire attributed spirit power. How could you even cultivate other spirit power?”



Xu Cheng Xin appeared resentful towards Yang Chen for failing to meet his expectations. He was able to step onto the peak of the Heavenly Stairs with great difficulty, if such gifted person bit off more than he could chew and destroyed himself, it would really be unfortunate.

Yang Chen did not use words to reply. He stretched both of his hands, one hand high and the other hand low, stretching in front of his body. Soon after, from the hand he had stretched upwards a red colored liquid bubbled out and started falling like a waterfall onto the hand stretched out below.

This waterfall had the form of a real waterfall but compacted by a hundred times. Muddy waves raged, rising upwards and then falling down, even many drops of liquid splashed, like a genuine waterfall.

However when Xu Cheng Xin and Gongsun Ling looked at it, it made them stand there, rooted to the ground, dumbstruck and flabbergasted. Within Yang Chen's hand was definitely water, but its color and temperature clearly showed that the waterfall they were looking at was completely made up of flame. Control fire as if it was water, this kind of trick with fire, made even Xu Cheng Xin unable to believe it, let alone Gongsun Ling.

Both of their expressions were nearly identical with no difference, they weren't even able to speak half a word, their gaze attentively fixed on that waterfall in Yang Chen's hands, which was rolling over and over. Afterward, under their gaze the waterfall turned into an orange colored desert with huge sand dunes, all of the small granules were moving because of the wind,

empty and desolate, even the temperature gave them the feeling that it was a genuine desert.

Soon after that, Yang Chen flipped over his hands and the scenery disappeared without a trace and in the ears of these two people Yang Chen's voice echoed:

“Sorry, at the moment I am only able to achieve this, and for the time being couldn't imitate the metal and wood attributes.”

Since his spiritual awareness had greatly increased, Yang Chen was already able to imitate both the metal and wood attributes, but he concealed them under the guise of clumsiness. It was not that he believed that these two people would harm him, but rather because he did not want them to unexpectedly make people aware of his greatest secret.

Looking at this scenery, controlling fire as water, controlling fire as earth, Xu Cheng Xin, who was a knowledgeable person, naturally determined the level of Yang Chen's control over fire. Finally he gasped in admiration and began to praise him:

“No wonder Zhu Chen Tao boasted to me about you, your fire arts are unprecedented. I used to think he wanted to train the younger generation, unexpectedly, that guy was still being modest.”

As for Gongsun Ling, she was looking at him with her beautiful eyes overflowing with praise, the expression of pleasant surprise on her face couldn't be concealed. When she looked at Yang Chen,

it was as if another layer of depth had been added to his character.

Now Yang Chen didn't need to say anything, both of them were aware of what Yang Chen wanted to achieve by cultivating the spirit power of attributes. Xu Cheng Xin patted Yang Chen's shoulder and then encouraged him:

“Apparently you really will surpass us in future! Only bear in mind, only use the differently attributed spirit power for reference, don't throw yourself too deeply into it so as to not neglect the root and pursue the tip. Based on your fire controlling ability, as soon as you are able to build your foundation, below YuanYing you will be the number one person in controlling fire. Do your best!”

“Many thanks Elder, for your encouragement!”

Yang Chen slightly bowed and thanked him. These were priceless advices, even if they were of no use to him, but these intentions demand appreciation.

“Yang Chen, do you have certainty that you can climb the Heavenly Stairs again?”

Xu Cheng Xin wanted to confirm this again. If Yang Chen did not have confidence, it would certainly be difficult for him.

“No problem.”

Yang Chen nodded assuringly, this kind of charity, he was ready to accept it many times, however Yang Chen could not know the impossible, so he somewhat hesitatingly asked:

“However...”

“However what?”

Xu Cheng Xin rushed the words and asked.

“Elder, Heavenly Stairs are in the end an illusionary spell and if the illusionary spell is broken, the people responsible will certainly suffer from backlash.”

Yang Chen somewhat worriedly asked.

“If at that time the JieDan experts have some kind of issue again, this disciple is afraid he will have to bear the responsibility.”

The backlash of an illusionary spell is determined by its power, the more formidable the illusionary spell is, the more difficult its backlash would be to deal with, Yang Chen had to discuss this before he would start to climb the stairs. If he did not do it then, at that time he would be investigated again, which would make Yang Chen feel vexed.

“Hahahaha!”

Xu Cheng Xin was delighted at Yang Chen's words.

“Good, I will go and immediately ask them. If they get injured it is their own fault and they must not come and blame us!”

# Chapter 46 - Setting Foot On The Peak Again

Xu Cheng Xin had already sworn the oath on his Heart's Devil publicly, how could Cheng Wen Cai give up halfway after pressuring Xu Cheng Xin? Thus, the affair of Yang Chen being made to climb the Heavenly Stairs once again to check whether he had cheated or not, began to spread with a large commotion.

But no matter what was said, Cheng Wen Cai of the Greatest Sky Sect was jealous of the younger generation and he did not want any other sect to gain such a glory, if not, why hadn't the other people questioned Yang Chen's fraud and only he had raised that objection? Furthermore, he had not questioned those people who had climbed to the thirtieth step but absolutely insisted on Yang Chen, who had stepped on the peak. Regardless of whether Yang Chen had really committed fraud or not, Cheng Wen Cai certainly wanted to examine him because of his jealousy.

It was one of Greatest Sky Sect's JieDan expert's words against the reputation of the entire Pure Yang Palace, everyone was very clear about that. This time, Cheng Wen Cai could not get cold feet.

Merely, when Xu Cheng Xin discussed Yang Chen's words with him, Cheng Wen Cai also began to hesitate when looking for nine other Fellow Daoists from other sects. Pure Yang Palace had demanded that Yang Chen should be allowed to climb up the Heavenly Stairs again, so surely they had a lot of confidence. That meant those JieDan experts who would be responsible for the spell formation would surely become worn out, for some of them this

would mean getting devoured, for sure.

Previously, Yang Chen had already made the Nine JieDan experts fall down a level. Every JieDan expert was a shrewd person, who among them would not know that in an Illusionary spell, the more one exerted themselves the greater the backlash would be? At most Xu Cheng Xin hadn't gone all out, but he had already sworn on his Heart's Devil that he hadn't committed fraud. But for the other experts to have such an outcome... This forced these experts to think about this again and two of the JieDan experts right there withdrew immediately.

Under these sorts of circumstances, Cheng Wen Cai had no other option but to look for two JieDan experts from the Greatest Sky Sect. In addition to that, he had to promise all of them a lot of advantages as compensation, only then could the other people feel at ease and they began the preparations to make Yang Chen climb the Heavenly Stairs again.

Because Yang Chen had reached the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, leading to the ten JieDan experts getting injured, the assembly had to be halted and these newly appointed JieDan experts had to allow those disciples who were not able to go up before, climb the Heavenly Stairs, one by one, both to complete this year's assembly and at the same time to allow these ten JieDan experts get proficient in the Heavenly Stairs spell formation. This process had continued for three days and three nights, and only then did all of the disciples, who were originally expected to climb the Heavenly Stairs, finish. Following them, Yang Chen's turn to climb the Heavenly Stairs had come for the second time.

For insurance purposes, this time Cheng Wen Cai even found a disciple with the same cultivation level as Yang Chen, the second qi layer, who would climb up before Yang Chen, to check whether the Heavenly Stairs had some difference for lower layer disciples.

Under everyone's attentive stares, that second qi layer disciple of the Greatest Sky Sect stepped foot on the first step of the Heavenly Stairs and immediately his figure started shaking fiercely, he was barely able to set foot on the second step, when his figure disappeared in a flash and he was pushed out of the Heavenly Stairs. And this was when the JieDan experts in charge had just started the spell formation and hadn't even exerted any great influence.

Soon after that, Yang Chen appeared at the bottom of Heavenly Stairs, waiting for Cheng Wen Cai and the other nine to properly prepare. The surroundings of the Heavenly Stairs were once again covered with people and compared to the first time, there were at least two to three times more people, now also including all of those who had rushed over to witness this.

When they truly controlled the Heavenly Stairs spell formation, these JieDan experts discovered, that it was nearly impossible to cheat this illusionary spell. They could increase the difficulty of the Heavenly Stairs, but they could not allow a person to easily cross the barrier. Cheng Wen Cai denouncing Yang Chen as a fraud was just ridiculous.

However the arrow had already left the bow and now they could not shrink back, most of all Cheng Wen Cai. There was only one option left now and that was to use any means available, whether



fair or foul and not allow Yang Chen to climb to the top. As long as Yang Chen was not able to climb to the peak this time, they would have an excuse, because why wouldn't he be able to do it again? If Yang Chen could climb to the peak once again, though, Cheng Wen Cai would be considered as a fool within the Greatest Sky Sect.

At the same time, the two JieDan experts from the Greatest Sky Sect would naturally support Cheng Wen Cai, as for the other seven, Cheng Wen Cai had already secretly promised to give them benefits, if, when the time came, they would help to increase the Heavenly Stairs spell formation's difficulty. At that moment they had already stopped trying to examine whether Yang Chen had cheated or not, but rather were striving hard to save their face.

As soon as Yang Chen stepped onto the first step of the Heavenly Stairs, the scenery in front of him changed completely and he found himself within a bewildering spell. A bewildering spell was different from an illusionary spell. It could make people move in circles and never be able to find the exit. The people who created the spell were all very superior JieDan experts. For them to use a bewildering spell on the first step was already giving great face to Yang Chen.

Unfortunately, all of the ten JieDan experts, including Cheng Wen Cai were making the same mistake as the last time and that was to believe that they could restrict Yang Chen within the spell.

Perhaps if he were replaced with other people, this bewildering spell would be enough to make them go crazy, but for Yang Chen, who had been a Great Principal Golden Immortal, even if this spell had been set by experts who had ascended to the spiritual world,

instead of mere JieDan experts, it would still be insufficient.

With ease, Yang Chen didn't even stop temporarily and directly followed the correct path of the bewildering spell and came out. The following spell became a killing spell formation.

There were some spell formations, which the JieDan stage experts were able to arrange, as long as they could imagine it, they could lay any spell within the Heavenly Stairs to trap Yang Chen. As long as Yang Chen was unable to break the spell or got killed by the killing spell formation, there was only one consequence: that he would be pushed out of the Heavenly Stairs immediately, this was after all still arranged using the Heavenly Stairs spell formation as the foundation.

However, since it was like this, Yang Chen would face it even more lightly. All of the spells arranged with the Heavenly Stairs illusionary spell as the foundation would still contain their innate character, however, it was also still an illusionary spell, this was a thing they were still unable to change. No matter what kind of spell they laid, it could not escape Yang Chen's watchful eyes.

The most simple way for Yang Chen was that he could forcefully move away from the spell formation, regardless of the illusions, and if his speed was very quick, both parties involved would be most safe. However, Yang Chen certainly did not want Cheng Wen Cai and the others to be able to withdraw so easily.

Yang Chen used the most complicated method to break the spell, that was to use his own cultivation to forcefully break the spell. The ten JieDan experts quickly discovered that, no matter what

kind of formation they laid, Yang Chen would always use the most violent method to break the spell formation and rush out. They had arranged the killing spell with utmost care, but not to mention hurting Yang Chen, it was not even able to obstruct him. Fortunately, it was a spell that was prepared for only one person and its destruction only caused a small fluctuation in their spirit power, not even affecting the JieDan experts in the least.

For the spell formation, which was meticulously arranged by them to be broken this easily by someone else, just as if it was made out of clay, left these experts feeling angry. Only, regardless of the ten JieDan experts taking out the works they were most proud of, they were still not able to stop Yang Chen in the least.

Yang Chen was delighted at this moment, Cheng Wen Cai and the others had arranged spell formations of all five phases to deal with him. No matter whether if it was a single attribute or double attribute, in fact, they even included the Yin and Yang of the phases. To Yang Chen, the five phases spell formation were like simply sending him a refreshing tonic. Under the coordinated work of the Yin and Yang five phases secret, no matter what kind of spell formation it was, he could easily break it.

On the outside, maybe he could die because of lacking spirit power or injuries, but within the Illusionary space, he would not have to worry about any kind of injury. Even after the JieDan experts had laid formations one after another several times, Yang Chen not only hadn't stopped but rather had already reached the thirtieth step.

Yang Chen could not be allowed to just beat their face so easily.

Thinking this, Cheng Wen Cai and all of the other experts finally began to act together. A spell formation laid by ten JieDan experts would naturally be out of the ordinary, so Yang Chen's speed suddenly started to slow down.

As soon as the pressure doubled, Yang Chen immediately sensed an abnormality, as the formation laid by ten people was finally put to full use, and was not as weak as the individually assembled formations. He was no longer able to just rely on the Yin and Yang five phases secrets to resolve this situation.

Under these kinds of circumstances, Yang Chen deployed another method, that was to use a spell to break a spell. Adopting the same strategy as the other party, Yang Chen also arranged his own spell formations, to see which one could destroy the spell of the other first. Under the condition that the spell formations were evenly matched, Yang Chen would not feel his spirit power and spiritual awareness being suppressed, but on the contrary, would be relaxed by a lot.

Within the illusionary space, for Yang Chen to lay a spell would only need some imagination, that's all. But when Yang Chen had just begun to arrange the formation to break the spell, one of the ten JieDan experts immediately also tried to trap Yang Chen within the spell, both sides testing which side could break the spell formation arranged by the other first.

Cheng Wen Cai and the other nine JieDan stage experts were doomed for tragedy. Although Yang Chen was not a spell formation expert in his previous life, for better or for worse, he was still a Principal Golden Immortal who had ascended to the

spiritual world and then to the world of immortals, who had learned many difficult to deal with spell formations. Even if he were to randomly take out a spell formation, a mere JieDan stage expert would still find it incomprehensible. Let alone destroying it, they may not even see it.

Yang Chen was different, when he didn't need to face the combined pressure of the ten JieDan experts, breaking a spell formation was as easy as lifting a finger. Often, when he walked away from within a broken spell formation, the other party would still be within his formation, at their wits end.

Shu!

After he broke the spell, Yang Chen immediately sensed a familiar spirit power entering his body. As the other party's jointly formed spell formation released the spirit power, the entire amount of it had entered into his body after he had broken the formation.

At the place where the Heavenly Stairs was controlled from, that JieDan expert who had trapped Yang Chen in the spell formation, involuntarily spat a mouthful of blood, since the spell formation was forced, he immediately had to suffer from the backlash. The power of ten JieDan experts was already sufficient to injure him.

However since Yang Chen was still incessantly moving upwards, the Heavenly Stairs spell formation could only continue and as a result, a second JieDan expert entered Yang Chen's spell formation. Yang Chen once again broke the spell and absorbed the spirit power, as the second JieDan expert also spat blood and

sustained injuries.

The people standing on the outside, in the surroundings of the Heavenly Stairs, naturally could not look at what was happening at the center of the Heavenly Stairs, but Cheng Wen Cai knew what was happening, and soon, all of the ten JieDan experts had coughed up blood in quick succession, one by one, but they were not able to stop the Heavenly Stairs, so at last he tasted the pain suffered by the nine JieDan experts from last time. At the moment, Yang Chen had only stepped on the thirtieth step of the Heavenly Stairs and to the peak there were still seventy more steps left.

If someone could look at the center of the Heavenly Stairs, one would discover a very interesting phenomenon occurring. Every time when Yang Chen climbed and set foot on the next step, on the outside, at the same time, in the center, one expert would spit out one mouthful of blood. This was occurring, again and again, extremely interesting.

When Yang Chen had stepped onto the sixtieth step, the ten JieDan experts had already spat three mouthfuls of blood each and sustained heavy injuries. They could only make do with magic potions, as they were unable to stop the spell. Once the Heavenly Stairs' spell formations would start, it would only stop, if the person within the spell were to withdraw or the spell was broken. Others would be unable to stop it, so the ten experts were very painfully persisting, complaining endlessly within their hearts.

From start to finish, Yang Chen had only used one kind of spell formation, three times for each expert, but not even one JieDan expert was able to make out even an inkling. What was most

lamentable was that from the start till then, the ten experts had already used sixty types of formations, yet none were able to trap Yang Chen. And Yang Chen had only used one queer spell formation, which had made these experts experience a disastrous defeat for thirty times, the ten experts were thoroughly cursing at Yang Chen the entire time.

“Use Magic weapons!”

Cheng Wen Cai thought of something, and using his spiritual awareness passed it on to the other nine. At the same time, within his mind, he imagined a legend grade magic weapon attacking Yang Chen within the spell formation.

Seeing ten different magic weapons flying in the sky, Yang Chen immediately understood Cheng Wen Cai and the other nine experts' intentions. However, Cheng Wen Cai had only heard of such magic weapons, so even the imagined appearance was not close to the truth. If a common qi layer disciple was bombarded with this magic weapon, he would immediately be pushed out of the Heavenly Stairs. Unfortunately, for them, when Yang Chen was in the Heavenly Court, he had seen genuine legend grade magic weapons.

Since it was only imagination, how could it compare to the magic weapon imagined by Yang Chen, which had the body and soul of a real legend grade magic weapon?

Without any trouble, with a wave of his hand a legend grade magic weapon immediately rushed towards the magic weapons imagined by Cheng Wen Cai and crushed them. Cheng Wen Cai's

spiritual awareness jolted and was only restored after a good moment.

With just this light effort, Yang Chen had crushed the magic weapons of the nine experts one by one and once again climbed the next ten steps.

The shock of spiritual awareness immediately made Cheng Wen Cai realize his mistake. Imagined things were after all imagined things, so the real and imagined magic weapons were completely different. Once he realized that Yang Chen's magic weapon was even more difficult to deal with than his own imagined magic weapon, he immediately notified the other nine experts, who had been using the magic weapons they had seen, to attack within the illusionary space.

This time, what Cheng Wen Cai gambled at, was that he could control his own magic weapon with ease, and compared to that, the legend grade magic weapon would be more difficult to deal with by at least two to three fold. Thanks to the illusionary spell, he was able to display the power of a YuanYing expert to obstruct Yang Chen.

Suddenly, the pressure doubled again. Yang Chen's feet stopped moving, when facing the attack by ten JieDan experts acting together with the magic weapon, Yang Chen had no option but to give his all. Suddenly, within the illusionary spell, the Medicine Garden's dome appeared.

At that moment, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was at the level of a peak foundation stage practitioner, as long as he made a



breakthrough, it would reach the level of a JieDan stage, so even using the Seven Steps enchanting Deadly Spell within the illusionary spell was not a big issue. Once the spell formation emerged, the ten experts immediately sensed a turn of events. His body had moved just a moment ago and seven by seven, forty nine raised flying swords immediately attacked like fiends and demons.

Even YuanYing stage experts could be taken care of with this powerful spell, so the ten JieDan stage experts were directly dismembered. Naturally, this was all within the illusionary spell.

Including Cheng Wen Cai, all of the experts started spitting blood, mouthful after mouthful without stopping. At the same time as the magic weapon and their bodies were chopped to fragments, their spiritual awareness violently shook, causing them to become stunned, becoming unable to carry on already and they directly lost consciousness.

The Heavenly Stairs' spell formation had suddenly lost the control of all of the ten JieDan experts, but still it did not stop, rather it kept on drawing out spirit power from their bodies in accordance with the requirements of the illusionary spell and began attacking Yang Chen regularly.

The remaining twenty steps, considered to be the authentic Heavenly Stairs Finding Heart Path were no trouble for Yang Chen, he very quickly reached the peak of the Heavenly Stairs again.

Bang!

A great clamor spread through the crowd again. Ascending to the peak two times, no one needed to say anything now, everyone possessed the ability to tell right from wrong. After witnessing this, the spectators, because of having seen the miracle of someone ascending to the top of the Heavenly Stairs, burst into cheers.

Yang Chen halted at the peak again, as if he had gained another insight, but nobody was surprised at that. However since the ten experts responsible for the spell hadn't responded, immediately someone went to probe.

The sight within the center made all of the experts from different sects who had hurried over open their mouths in shock.

# Chapter 47 - How Do You Want To Die?

In the center of the Heavenly Stairs spell formation, instead of the figures of ten JieDan experts, there were merely ten old and gray haired men, whose chests were all covered with blood, as if they had been in a slaughter chamber. All of these ten people were unconscious and on the ground, their breath extremely feeble, as if they would stop breathing at any moment now.

Everyone at the scene turned pale with fright upon seeing this, not daring to be neglectful, they hurriedly carried all of these JieDan experts and came out. After that, magic potions of every sect were stuffed into their mouths and immediately someone began to put spirit power into their body, to assist with dissolving the medicine at the same time, so that they could replenish their bodily functions.

Looking at the appearances of Cheng Wen Cai and the other experts, it seemed that their cultivation realm had fallen by a lot. Those few cultivators at the back had already sensed that most of the meridians of the victims in front of them had already snapped, exhausting the spirit power in their bodies.

Too much of their life essence had been extracted and this had caused their bodies to age in this way. Even if they were cured, let alone JieDan stage, just to be able to preserve at the middle of the foundation stage could already be considered as being blessed by their ancestors.

After the great upheaval, finally the ten JieDan experts were

rescued at their last breath, only then did someone among them remember to seek responsibility from Yang Chen, who was sitting on the peak. All of the ten JieDan experts became like this, but Yang Chen had escaped without taking any responsibility.

“Fellow Daoists, what is the matter?”

Xu Cheng Xin stopped in front of the ten JieDan experts, headed by Cheng Wen Cai, and leisurely asked, using the tone which Cheng Wen Cai had used when he had accused Yang Chen.

Even if Xu Cheng Xin was no good, he was still a JieDan expert and everyone who wanted to make a move on Yang Chen would have to cross the mountain named Xu Cheng Xin. However Xu Cheng Xin, without giving them any chances, asked with Schadenfreude:

“Could it be that everyone wanted to violate the commandment of the Heavenly Stairs?”

All of the people present turned expressionless and only after a good moment did everyone manage to respond. After the Heavenly Stairs spell formation had been discovered, there really was one such strange commandment, it was said that if someone violated it, the consequences would be grave.

That one commandment, was precisely that the people who were managing the Heavenly Stairs spell formation were absolutely not allowed to exploit the spell formation to attack the people on the Heavenly Stairs, otherwise, not only would it cause their spirit

power to be devoured instead, but it was also very possible that their cultivation would fall down by a few realms and even their life force could be seriously damaged. The appearance of the ten JieDan experts in front of them, wasn't that the exact outcome stated in the commandment of dropping the cultivation and damaging the life force?

“Nobody should be blamed for this, even I, who had managed the Heavenly Stairs for more than ten years, also only remembered just a moment ago, that the Heavenly Stairs still had this kind of commandment.”

Xu Cheng Xin had only just a moment ago remembered this and this made him immediately realize why the cultivation of the nine JieDan experts who had sat with him had fallen. As it turned out, it was due to this. But the tone was such that Cheng Wen Cai and the others wanted to weep but could not find any tears.

“On top of that, this commandment has not also been concealed from anyone, therefore nobody should neglect it!”

“It seems that this is not my Pure Yang Palace's disciple's fraud, but rather a violation of the rules by the group of experts claiming to be JieDan stage elders, who were controlling the spell formation and acting together to take care of a second qi layer disciple.”

Xu Cheng Xin shook his head like a rattle. Clicking his tongue, he started speaking again:

“They should just grow up! At last the eyes of an old man like me

have opened, I have seen shamelessness, but never this much! Ten JieDan experts, in addition to the previous nine JieDan experts, a total of nineteen experts, all joining hands to deal with my Pure Yang Palace's second qi layer disciple... All of their sects have indeed.....indeed.....brought light to my humble dwelling! What a splendor!"

For a while Xu Cheng Xin did not find any suitable words to say, so he had used this kind of expression to display his opinions. No one could blame Xu Cheng Xin for mocking and ridiculing, because when Yang Chen had first climbed the Heavenly Stairs, Xu Cheng Xin was also one of those who were managing the spell, he had just recovered and barely restored some spirit power, when Cheng Wen Cai and others had already hurried over and begun to accuse Yang Chen of cheating.

The other party at that time had precisely used this kind of intonation to ridicule, bullying Xu Cheng Xin without having any evidence, forcing him to take the big oath on his Heart's Devil and even forcing Yang Chen to climb the Heavenly Stairs again to prove his innocence. Now, after finding the truth about this affair at last, how could he not return those disgusting taunts, to which he had been subjected to at that time.

Cheng Wen Cai and the others were so ashamed and resentful, that they started to spit blood on the spot again. Although there was this commandment, but who would take it seriously? There had been one or two JieDan experts who had secretly used some methods to torment some disciples and forced them out of the Heavenly Stairs, but these JieDan experts had remained unscathed. This kind of affair had happened many times, so who would still care about the commandment, which had never been

enforced.

But when it was time for Yang Chen, this commandment had surprisingly turned out to be true twice in a row. The first group of nine JieDan experts had merely fallen by a level and were seriously hurt, but they had still maintained the cultivation of the JieDan stage. But the second time, for the group of experts led by Cheng Wen Cai, the losses were disastrous. Not only had they received serious injuries, but they also had their cultivation fall by an entire realm, descending to the foundation stage. Even their life force had been damaged by an unknown amount. Paying the price of ten JieDan experts just in order to make things difficult for a second qi layer disciple, the words: 'The losses don't make up for the gains' perfectly describe the situation.

Apart from these immediate losses, the reputation of the sects of these JieDan experts, would also suffer from serious damage. This was not an affair which could be smoothed out overnight. Even when these cultivators would return to their home sects, they would have to suffer from serious punishments.

Of the two groups of JieDan experts who controlled the spell formation, only Xu Cheng Xin strictly complied with the commandment and was thus able to escape with just an exhaustion of his spirit power, which needed only three to five days to recover.

This time the losses of the Greatest Sky Sect were the largest. Even if it was a big sect, still, losing three JieDan experts in a single day was something it was not able to support. But right now, not only were the losses this big already, but they still had to make an

apology.

Not to mention that, at that time, Cheng Wen Cai had also promised good benefits to the seven other JieDan experts of the other sects and he still had to honor his commitments one by one and furthermore he even had to double the compensation. Once he thought of this point, Cheng Wen Cai was unable to remain calm. His eyes rolled up into his head and he again lost consciousness.

“My Pure Yang Palace’s disciple Yang Chen, has climbed to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs for a second time.”

Xu Cheng Xin however, regardless of the recent accusations, directly asked all of the people present on the scene:

“If anyone still has doubts, I invite you to come out!”

Who among the cultivators would be so foolish? After this kind of situation had come to pass, who would be willing to offend Pure Yang Palace? Still wanting to taunt like that batch of sects headed by Greatest Sky Sect? Even if someone had thought about this within their head, they did not dare to say anything.

Yang Chen had climbed to the peak two times, while receiving attacks both times. This was not at all the usual level of difficulty for the Heavenly Stairs. When this thought flashed through someone’s mind, they immediately pushed it down. If he was able to climb to the peak under such circumstances, then wouldn’t it be no problem at all under normal circumstances?



Only after Xu Cheng Xin asked this three times and there was nobody who had any objections, did he declare, with a proud voice that Pure Yang Palace's disciple Yang Chen, had climbed to the peak again and once again nobody voiced any objections.

“Fellow Daoist Cheng, do you remember at that time when you had blamed my Pure Yang Palace's disciple of fraud, Fellow Daoist Cheng had judged that he should be killed.”

Xu Cheng Xin looked at Cheng Wen Cai who had managed to sober up again, and took a few steps towards him, one after another.

“My Pure Yang Palace's fraud disciple should be killed, but then, I wonder, how should a fraud JieDan expert of the Greatest Sky Sect be treated. I think, the Greatest Sky Sect should clean the sect!”

After he said those words, thoroughly venting his hate, Xu Cheng Xin, without paying any more attention to anyone else, disappeared and within a moment reappeared at the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, opposite of Yang Chen.

The most dazzling person at this moment on the Floating Mountain was none other than Yang Chen. He was a second qi layer disciple, but setting foot on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs was already a pioneering achievement, which had never been accomplished since ancient times, but adding onto that, he by himself, facing against nineteen JieDan experts, and this so called ‘outcome’ had already surpassed all of the others of its kind, before that and ever since.

At this moment Yang Chen had already slowly opened his eyes. This time, by climbing to the peak he had not received a great amount of spirit power again, nor did he receive the spirit power of the ten different attributes he had received last time, which was already purified as if it were circulating within the Heavenly Stairs itself and so this time was not in the least helpful towards his cultivation. The Heavenly Stairs, were only effective for the first time.

But the spirit power of the ten JieDan experts still allowed the spirit power in Yang Chen's body to become even stronger and more solid to some degree, so this time had at least saved Yang Chen one month of hard work. He had already obtained enough benefits and he has also got the chance to teach a lesson to people who had wanted to harm him, like killing two birds with one stone, so Yang Chen was very happy within his heart.

Although he had achieved an overwhelming victory, he was also very frightened at every step, as facing against the thousands and millions of questions to his innermost being for most of the first time, if Yang Chen had hesitated even a little bit, it would have wasted all of his previous efforts and would have had his his future prospects destroyed. That was a very ruthless attack, no less than a life and death battle. The second time was even more difficult, as he was faced with battles over victory and defeat at all times. Even the spectators such as Gongsun Ling, when seeing Yang Chen in this situation, she had also broken out in cold sweat.

The victorious person was Yang Chen, and the most victorious sect was naturally Pure Yang Palace without any competitor. Two disciples, one who had stepped onto the peak and other one had

climbed to the sixty second step of the Heavenly Stairs. Whichever one you chose, both of them were talented disciples worth fighting over. This class of talent would only come out once in a century, the Pure Yang Palace should be grateful to their ancestors for these two talented disciples. Their flourishing luck made people drool with desire.

The farce led by the Greatest Sky Sect had finally come to an end. So far, this year's Floating Mountain Assembly had been the most perfect one.

Apart from the Pure Yang Palace, which had returned from a rewarding journey, those who had participated in the assembly were also not without any gains. The Heavenly Stairs, no matter how many steps one climbs, one would still have some benefits. Even those who were just watching had seen a marvelous show, which had satisfied their craving.

When the news was sent back to Pure Yang Palace, it caused a sensation from top to bottom. For the last several hundred years, not even a single talented disciple had appeared in the Pure Yang Palace, but this year there were two geniuses within the outer disciples, how could this not make the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace elated.

When the Palace Master thought about Yang Chen researching the xun qi pill, which would increase the amount of outer disciples and cut down the time to become a outer disciple, the Palace Master shouted in rejoice. At the time when Yang Chen was entering the sect, because of his identity of an executioner, he had faced difficulty from some people within the sect, thinking about

this even now it still gave the Palace Master a chill. If at that time Yang Chen had been repelled from outside the door, then where would Pure Yang Palace's current glory be? How could he desire the hope to revive the sect again?

“Reward! A great reward!”

The Palace Master was extremely happy within his heart and as soon as Yang Chen had returned to the Nine Earth Manor, he had already made a promise to reward him.

“Gongsun Ling and Yang Chen, when they are at the peak of the qi layer, they will receive as many foundation stage pills as they need, until they are at the foundation stage. In addition to that, as long as they successfully build their foundation, they will immediately receive magic weapon flying swords in accordance with their respective attributes and within the MeiQing Mountain they may construct their immortal cave anywhere.”

After promising these benefits, the Palace Master suddenly realized that these were all just benefits which could be given in future but not now. For a moment, he deeply pondered about things which could give them immediate assistance and after thinking about it for a good moment, he added:

“Gongsun Ling will receive two thousand contribution points and Yang Chen will receive three thousand. In addition to that, in the future within the Nine Earth Manor, the Hidden Pavilion will be open to them free of cost and if they have any questions, they should be guided with great care!”

The rewards had been recorded one by one, but just as those two had turned around, the Palace Master stated, as if he recalled something:

“This year at the outer disciples’ sect’s great martial arts contest, I will personally come to look how outstanding these two are!”

In any case, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling, were still mere outer disciples, still unworthy of the Palace Master to personally carry out the reward. However, this was already an unprecedented reward, most of all the foundation stage pills. Receiving as many as they wanted, this had already ensured that they would successfully reach the foundation stage.

Pure Yang Palace was filled with joy from top to bottom, only Chu Heng and Sun Hai Jing were upset within their hearts. Most of all Sun Hai Jing, because Yang Chen had indeed invited him to a life and death duel. Others may not dare to accept it, but Yang Chen killing Han Jiande at the sixth qi layer under so many eyes had already been established as a fact, and he currently was only at the fourth qi layer, so basically it was only a matter of time until he would have to walk the road of death.

“Master, save me!”

The more Sun Hai Jing thought, the more frightened he became.

Bang!

He kneeled in front of Chu Heng. At the moment the only chance he had, was that Che Heng would take care of it, else he did not have any way out. He did not have the confidence to betray the Pure Yang Palace but he also did not have the confidence to face Yang Chen.

“In the last half year, you have received another first rate talisman tool, but you are still not his opponent.”

Finally at this moment, Chu Heng and Sun Hai Jing were like a grasshopper on a rope, killing him to silence him was very troublesome, so to calm down Sun Hai Jing he said:

“Only, if...”

Chu Heng’s hesitation however gave Sun Hai Jing a hope to live, so he hastily kowtowed and asked:

“Please save me, Master!”

“Okay, okay!”

To Sun Hai Jing he offered the choice, that within half a year he would certainly die if he could not reach the peak of the qi layer realm, although if he used a secret method, he could reach the peak of qi realm, but then it would take him between two to three hundred years to reach the foundation stage. Between these two choices, Sun Hai Jing did not even need to consider which option

he would to pick.

“If you choose this, then within the Hidden Pavilion read the jade slip in the final row of the fourth layer cultivation methods!”

Chu Heng said in a single breath, providing directions to Sun Hai Jing.

# Chapter 48 - What A Big Mouth

The Floating Mountain Assembly had already been extended for five more days, due to the events with Yang Chen. On the final day, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling arrived at the market of the Floating Mountain together.

The Floating Assembly was a once in a year event, so the market also opened only once a year, and would immediately fall apart after the assembly was successfully completed. If they are not able to find any good things now, they could only wait for it to open again next year.

When the two people appeared in the street, the people in the surroundings looked at them with admiration in their gazes. This year's number one and number two people in the Heavenly Stairs, their future prospects couldn't be measured, so naturally, if anyone managed to form a bond with them, it would sow good karma.

Yang Chen was accompanying Gongsun Ling, who had wanted to look for some materials for an unusual spell formation, and she was also aware that Yang Chen had learned everything in the Hidden Pavilion so she had pulled him with her to get advice.

On the whole journey, there were various sorts of talisman papers, talismans, talisman tools and talisman gems, all of these were extremely suitable for the qi layer disciples of all sects. Originally the Floating Mountain Assembly was started mainly for qi layer disciples, so as a result most of the items here were aimed



at qi layer disciples.

Naturally there were bound to be varieties of raw materials here, however most of them were low levelled and there were also Pure Yang Fruits that could be used to refine foundation stage pills, but they were very rare, and all of them were marked with very high prices, which intimidated people at the first sight. However, the higher the number of booths, the higher the number of ninth qi layer or even peak qi layer cultivators haggling over the prices.

However for these, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling were not interested in the least, as nearly all these materials were of no use to them. After walking a few steps, they finally came across a booth where the raw materials for spell formations were being sold. Yang Chen swept his eyes over the former, and unexpectedly even found two items of decent quality, it seemed that the seller did not care about them a lot, so the price was not so high, thus Yang Chen silently nudged Gongsun Ling with his hand and silently pointed to it.

Somehow, Gongsun Ling had absolute confidence in Yang Chen's gaze, perhaps it was because of the repeated warnings he had given her before she began to climb the Heavenly Stairs. At that moment she didn't bat an eyelid, but rather moved to the seller and began to point out some cheap raw materials and started haggling over the prices.

Yang Chen approved within his heart, encountering top notch items but still not losing her calm and using good negotiation skills. He and Gongsun Ling were now very famous, perhaps those sellers will open their mouths wide like lions but like this Gongsun

Ling would also decrease the damage a little bit.

While waiting for the process to be over, Yang Chen examined all of the sellers nearby, when he had just finished examining a seller and was moving to the next one, suddenly something on the booth caught Yang Chen's attention.

It was indeed a blue-green fruit with the size of a clenched fist and the shape resembling a pomegranate. Although it was still blue-green, it had already matured. Yang Chen was aware that under the wrapping of this blue-green colored peel, there was a seed. The whole fruit was so bright that it was dazzling to one's eyes. Only one glance was enough to force people's attention to this fruit.

“Thunder Pomegranate?”

Yang Chen's whole body was rooted to the ground, he really hadn't anticipated, that at this temporary market on the Floating Mountain, he would be able to see this kind of a great thing.

Thunder Pomegranate was absolutely a great item, this kind of pomegranate would absorb lightning to mature, but it could only absorb lightning to mature, so in ordinary areas it could not survive.

A matured fruit could be used to refine a kind of thunder absorbing sphere, this kind of sphere, when possessed by someone was able to absorb all of the thunder and lightening in the surroundings of the user's body on its own accord. An ordinary

Thunder Pomegranate could only absorb very little, but, a thunder absorbing sphere refined from a Thunder Pomegranate, matured to a given year, could even assist cultivators by absorbing the lightening calamity from the lightning cloud.

Although it could not absorb it completely, it could still absorb a majority, which could allow the cultivator to pass the tribulation very easily. When a JieDan expert wants to become a YuanYing stage expert, apart from comprehending the laws of the world, he would also have to face the first of the three tribulations. With the assistance of a Thunder Pomegranate it would become extremely easy.

But unfortunately, a matured Thunder Pomegranate could only be obtained by chance and not by looking for it. This was an extremely scarce item which countless cultivators would fight for.

Yang Chen's shout gave rise to Gongsun Ling's interest, she turned her body and looked towards the side where Yang Chen was looking and very quickly discovered the Thunder Pomegranate. After inspecting it for a few seconds, she could not help but crease her brows.

“Younger Disciple, this is a Thunder Pomegranate that had already matured long ago, it has no medicinal efficacy.”

Gongsun Ling feared that Yang Chen couldn't see the problem within and hastily reminded him.

“Although it is a large fruit, the only thing inside is seeds, this is

only a seed fruit, which is produced by pomegranate trees every year, but only one fruit of all of the fruits is a seed fruit, you should not be fooled.”

Yang Chen naturally nodded, accepting Gongsun Ling’s good intentions. He naturally wanted to obtain the seed of this Thunder Pomegranate, but he didn’t have any extravagant hope that it would be a mature Thunder Pomegranate. To others it was just a seed fruit, but to him it was a very rare opportunity.

In his previous life, two thousand years from now, an exceptional genius had discovered a method to grow the Thunder Pomegranate, afterwards mature Thunder Pomegranates did not remain such unusually precious and uncommon objects. Although that method had been a secret, after he had ascended to the world of immortals, Yang Chen had the opportunity to obtain this kind of method. This fruit could allow him to test that method.

“Many thanks Senior Sister for your warning!”

Yang Chen said, still advancing towards the seller he asked

“This Thunder Pomegranate, how many spirit stones does it cost?”

Originally when the seller had seen Yang Chen’s interest in the Thunder Pomegranate, he had thought of making a large profit, but Gongsun Ling’s warning had dashed all of his hopes. However he also could not blame Gongsun Ling, these guys were senior and junior apprentice disciples, so her warning him was must. Seeing

Yang Chen approaching to ask him, the seller speculating on the price within his mind and asked with a smile

“Fellow Daoist Yang since you desire it, I also will not ask much, how about one hundred jin worth of spirit stones?”

The Thunder Pomegranate seeds, although they would be available every year, they were still not easily obtained. Even the seller had only obtained it incidentally and hadn't spent anything. So when Yang Chen asked for the value, he didn't opened his mouth like a lion but rather directly told him an honest price.

“Hiss!”

On the side Gongsun Ling took a deep breath. Calmly thinking within her heart, these hundred jin worth of spirit stones were not that expensive, even if they used just one contribution point in exchange, they would directly get a thousand jin. But Gongsun Ling did not have a hundred spirit stones with her at the time. She was just about to step forward and haggle over the price, when Yang Chen imposingly said:

“Good, let's complete the deal!”

Once he opened his mouth, the seller was exalted, while Gongsun Ling jumped with astonishment, and blurted out:

“From where did you come up with hundred jin worth of spirit stones?”

“After killing that many people, I have gathered it!”

After Yang Chen carelessly said that, Gongsun Ling immediately realized, that this was from those assassins whom Yang Chen had killed. However she still asked with curiosity:

“Why have you bought this Thunder Pomegranate seed?”

“Senior Apprentice Sister, if I were to tell you that I want to check a method to grow these Thunder Pomegranates, would you or would you not believe me, Senior Sister?”

Yang Chen smilingly asked.

“I trust you!”

Which made Yang Chen flabbergasted, as Gongsun Ling nodded without the slightest hesitation.

“Haha haha!”

Gongsun Ling’s words had barely left her mouth, when immediately from the surroundings a wild laugh appeared, including even the seller with whom the recent deal was completed, everyone issued a similar laughter.

“Fellow Daoist Yang, this is your Thunder Pomegranate seed.”

After he finished laughing, the seller realized that this was still inappropriate as the business had not even finished yet, how could he jeer at the customer. He hastily squeezed the Thunder Pomegranate into Yang Chen's hands and afterwards waited expectantly for Yang Chen to hand over the spirit stones.

Yang Chen also didn't go back on the promise and from the qiankun pouch he put forth a piece of spirit stone. After both sides were done with the transaction, this Thunder Pomegranate was now the property of Yang Chen.

After climbing to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling were already the target for thorough scrutiny, every word and every action of theirs was being attentively observed by an unknown number of people. The recent dialog between Gongsun Ling and Yang Chen had also reached the ears of all the people present in the surroundings.

Talking about overestimating one's abilities, no one had ever seen a guy like Yang Chen who had overestimated his abilities this much. A method to grow the Thunder Pomegranate, countless number of YuanYing experts had researched this, but the end result of this was that each and every one of them failed. Even peak YuanYing stage experts were included among these, they were barely a step away from reaching Da Cheng stage, yet in front of this problem they were still unable to do anything, not to mention Yang Chen, who was merely at the second qi layer. Even if Yang Chen had been a foundation stage expert or a JieDan stage expert, if he had said these kinds of words people would still have surely laughed at him.

“Quite a big mouth! Fellow Daoist Gongsun, Fellow Daoist Yang, you have cultivated for a very short time and are still not aware of many affairs, only, Fellow Daoist Gongsun you still shouldn’t say things like this!”

Immediately someone, wanting to flaunt his seniority, began to pretend to be speak heartfelt and meaningful words.

“Fellow Daoist Yang was just joking, still Fellow Daoist Gong believed it so easily, really the feelings between disciples of the same sect are quite serious!”

These words gave rise to wild laughter again.

“If you had also set foot on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs and said these words, I would have believed you!”

Gongsun Ling’s complexion sunk as she said this.

Immediately, all the laughter became stuck within the throats of the people, some even had to cough, because they were choking when trying to control it. Gongsun Ling’s words seemingly made it difficult for the people to laugh at them. Everyone started pondering over it, since Yang Chen was able to step on the peak of Heavenly Stairs which had been impossible for many worthy talents in the past, then again who could guarantee, that he could not find a method to grow the seed of the Thunder Pomegranate?



However, the astonishment lasted only for a split second, very quickly the sound of laughter overshadowed everything again. Was there a scarcity of talents in this world? But certainly there was no one who could succeed in growing the Thunder Pomegranate. Admittedly Yang Chen climbing the peak of Heavenly Stairs was a feat which everyone admired, but this achievement had also incurred the jealousy of many people, having this opportunity, it would be a miracle if everyone did not seize this opportunity and frantically tried to suppress him.

Soon, Yang Chen's words were spread around the whole market, even passing into the ears of some JieDan experts. Immediately one of them commented without restraint:

“Humph, he surely can overestimate his own ability! The mouth of this minor, mad disciple is indeed not small!”

The one speaking was a JieDan expert from the Greatest Sky Sect, only now he was at the middle of the foundation stage, he had recently woken up after healing and hearing the news, he couldn't help but open his mouth.

“This is also good!”

On the side Cheng Wen Cai did not have a taunting look because of Yang Chen's words, rather he had spoken as if this news was pleasant to hear, which made the fellow JieDan experts very puzzled.

“You don't need to look at me like this!”

Cheng Wen Cai sneered.

“Since he is fond of researching the method to grow the Thunder Pomegranate, then have this news spread, everyone will say that the Pure Yang Palace has already started boasting that their disciple Yang Chen can successfully research a method to grow the Thunder Pomegranate. All sects must be made aware of this, let’s see how the Pure Yang Palace can dispute a hundred mouths.”

“Senior apprentice brother, what does this mean?”

On the side another younger JieDan expert who had fallen to the foundation stage asked:

“This Pure Yang Palace disciple who had stepped on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, is he not a genius among geniuses?”

Cheng Wen Cai again sneered.

“I just want to know, such an exceptional talent, researching something which even countless numbers of YuanYing stage experts haven’t been able to discover in two hundred years. So after two hundred year, how much more talented will he have become?”

The eyes of the two JieDan expert who had fallen an entire realm began to shine brightly when they heard Cheng Wen Cai’s words. They immediately began to gather the disciples of the Greatest Sky

Sect, by secretly sending voice transmissions to them. The disciples were very confused when they came in, but the more they heard, the more they nodded, then ran out and began to arrange the matter at lightening speed.

Even before Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling had finished purchasing the things Gongsun Ling needed, the rumor had already widely spread in the entire Floating Mountain, even countless number of summoning talismans have already started flying out of the Floating Mountain. By the time when Xu Cheng Xin was informed and he could deny the rumor, it was already too late.

Xu Cheng Xin immediately guessed the whole truth of the matter, two out disciples purchasing things, wanting to give it a try. Initially, these words were said as a joke, but they were deliberately exploited by someone, who had made a solemn vow that this was Pure Yang Palace's arrangement. Because of becoming famous at the Heavenly Stairs, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling had allegedly become arrogant, but in fact the Pure Yang Palace was supposedly already aware of such a method from an earlier time, but they kept the method secret, this and other kinds of rumors were spread. These rumors were reasonable and fair, forcing people to believe them.

“Reckless!”

The affair had already reached a stage where Xu Cheng Xin could find no way to deal with it anymore and could only rapidly inform the Palace Master to make the decisions.

However this affair had no effect on Yang Chen, who was leisurely accompanying Gongsun Ling to purchase the things she needed, afterwards they walked all around the place, spending all of the spirit stones on their hands, purchasing a medicine garden space. (Ed. note: A spacial item)

This medicine garden space was similar to the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden, only the difference in level between the two was too much, it had barely enough space to grow a single plant that was all. However, even if it was like this, it was still an item of the magic weapon grade. However the seller seemingly wanted to help Yang Chen intentionally, even when the spirit stones on him were not sufficient, he still accepted all of the spirit stones which Yang Chen had and gave the medicinal garden space to Yang Chen.

The fact that Yang Chen had purchased a medicinal space, all of this, was already entirely confirmed. Even if the Pure Yang Palace wanted to refute, it still should have sufficient reasons for that. Why would a minor second qi layer disciple have several hundred jins worth of spirit stones on his body? If this was not the sect supporting him, then what was it?

Certainly, Yang Chen had bought this medicine garden space as a cover-up, otherwise he would not have any proper explanation of what he was doing inside the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden.

During the stroll through the market, Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling weren't very careful and attentive. When they returned to the Thousand Autumn Pavilion, they saw Xu Cheng Xin with a worried expression on his face.

“Both of you have performed exceptionally at the Heavenly Stairs, but now you are the target of intense scrutiny, each of your words and actions should be carefully measured, if you keep on speaking casually, it could be used against you by someone.”

After Xu Cheng Xin had informed Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling of the current affair, he could not help but shake his head.

“As for how it should be handled, as soon as we return to the Pure Yang Palace it is for the Palace Master to make the decision!”

“Yes!”

Both of them bowed in response.

“Ah!”

Xu Cheng Xin again sighed with a deep breath.

“Yang Chen, especially you, in the future you must always be careful. This time after we return, as punishment you will have to enter closed door training for three months and will single mindedly concentrate and only come out for the Sect’s Martial Arts contest! This time’s affair, I will make a report to the Palace Master, for now, our Pure Yang Palace will have to keep our shoulders down!”

# Chapter 49 - Why Should I Hand It Over?

The reason why Yang Chen had decided to enter Pure Yang Palace after his rebirth again, apart from his master, was precisely Pure Yang Palace's willingness to defend its disciples.

In the previous life, when Yang Chen had met with an accident, four YuanYing experts of the Greatest Sky Sect had dropped in to fight with him, but Pure Yang Palace, aside from the Luminous Moon Hall the branch which had broken away with the help of the Greatest Sky Sect, the whole Pure Yang Palace sect had been exterminated just to save a falsely accused disciple.

At the moment it was the same with this affair, Xu Cheng Xin had clearly realized the merits and demerits and afterwards had immediately said for Yang Chen's benefit that in this matter, the Pure Yang Palace will bow down. Even if he had punished him to enter seclusion because of this matter, that could still be considered a method to defend him.

This sentence made Yang Chen suddenly feel a warm sensation within his heart. After being extremely moved, Yang Chen did not forget to ask Xu Cheng Xin:

“Uncle Master, who started this rumor?”

“It was some loose cultivators, who have already left the Floating Mountains, we are not aware of where have they gone.”

Xu Cheng Xin knew why Yang Chen had wanted to ask this, shaking his head he said:

“No matter who it is that wants to deal with you, he will not let anyone catch any information about himself. You have stepped on the peak of Heavenly Stairs, which has offended many people, and even made nineteen JieDan experts sustain injuries, there are a great number of people who will have hostility towards you. But you need not worry, after we return, just be well behaved and enter into closed door training, this affair, the sect will settle it for you.”

“Yes, Uncle Master!”

Yang Chen was also aware that it was impossible to have any readily available information, even when the foundation stage disciple Chu Heng had tried to deal with him, he could get no evidence against him, let alone against the number of JieDan experts and sects whom he had offended.

For the time being, this matter remained a rumor as before, which did not require Yang Chen to take any unusual steps to deal with it. Because of this affair, Xu Cheng Xin had to personally lead Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling back to the Pure Yang Palace. After all they were two talented disciples, if they ran into some mishap while on the return journey from the Floating Mountain, that certainly will be a great and sorrowful joke.

Gongsun Ling had broken through the sixth qi layer, so she could certainly fly by herself, relying on her own power, but her speed would be very slow and Yang Chen did not have the ability to fly at

all. This would make the return journey very slow, in addition to that, there were a lot of variables in the journey. But JieDan experts were JieDan experts, so Xu Cheng Xin enveloped both of them in a transparent light and within a flash appeared more than fifty kilometers away.

This flying magic weapon, was something which Xu Cheng Xin was proud of. Seeing the rays of envy flash through Gongsun Ling's eyes, Xu Cheng Xin smilingly encouraged her:

“Don't be anxious, just based on both of your innate skills, just wait until you reach the foundation stage and you will be able to refine an even better magic weapon than this!”

Gongsun Ling nodded, but Yang Chen didn't express anything. With regards to this, he already possessed quite a few magic weapons which he could not use, the difference when compared to Xu Cheng Xin's magic weapon was not big, so he basically didn't feel anything within his heart.

The whole journey was fast as lightening, to cover this route Yang Chen had hurried, but even so it still took him six months to cover, but it did not take Xu Cheng Xin even a single day to bring them back. This time Xu Cheng Xin did not return to Nine Earth Manor, but rather directly led these two to the Pure Yang Palace.

Together with their return, with them also arrived the summoning notices from several regions, and also few inquiries by nearby sects, the tone of those notices was hinting on blaming the Pure Yang Palace for hiding this information.



The person responsible for handling these affairs, apart from Xu Cheng Xin, was another acquaintance of Yang Chen, Medicine Hall's Hall Master Zhu Chen Tao, as well as this month's Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master, Chu Heng's Master, Liang Shao Ming, who was also a JieDan expert. The person who had been trying to force Yang Chen into meeting with an accident, Chu Heng, was surprisingly also present therein, naturally there was bound to be a Law Enforcement Hall's disciple, he was Du Qian, who was Yang Chen's acquaintance.

Du Qian was the one who had recommended that Yang Chen should participate in the Floating Mountain Assembly just to see how many steps of the Heavenly Stairs he could climb, but that had indeed led to an outcome which stunned people. With regards to the person recommended by Du Qian, it was not known whether or not he had any achievements or not. However since Du Qian had recommended the person, and he was also a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall, who was also the one handling Yang Chen's matter this time, naturally he also needed to be present..

Chu Heng however was only allowed, because he had been the Merit Transferring Disciple for the past few years, so if any outer disciple had an accident, naturally he was required to be notified. Looking at the angry scowl spread across Chu Heng's whole face, anyone could guess that he was in a very bad mood.

“Yang Chen, you are clearly at fault!”

At the moment he saw Yang Chen, without waiting for the JieDan experts to open their mouths, Chu Heng immediately

shouted in a loud voice.

Chu Heng's expressions were as if he was eager to ask for Yang Chen to be immediately punished, but Yang Chen just cast a sidelong glance at Chu Heng and without paying him any more attention, he advanced forward and, together with Gongsun Ling, bowed towards all of the JieDan experts, performing the proper courtesy. Paying respects to the elder generation, even Chu Heng did not dare to say anything, he did not want these JieDan experts to think that replying to his question was more important than paying respects to them.

Chu Heng was met with a cold shoulder and stood on the side, waiting for Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling to finish the ceremony successively, only then did they turn to Chu Heng's side and paid him respect as Uncle Master. In the presence of the elders, Chu Heng could only acknowledge the greetings according to rules and only then he opened his mouth again to ask:

“Yang Chen, you surely are at fault!”

However this time his loftiness was not as great as it was previously, only his voice was loud, that's all.

“I don't know where I'm supposed to be at fault!”

Compared to Chu Heng, Yang Chen was certainly a lot calmer, directly shaking his head.

“You still dare to quibble!”

Chu Heng became angry, but in front of these JieDan experts, he could not dare to be excessively impudent, but these people hadn't said anything, as if they already had a mutual understanding, as if tacitly accepting this sort of behaviour of his, so Chu Heng also enlarged his voice, and immediately began to rebuke him.

“I really don't know.”

An innocent expression was on Yang Chen's face, looking at Chu Heng he slowly stated:

”I request Uncle Master Chu to provide me with some guidance.”

“The big words you said at the Floating Mountain Assembly, have already spread widely, to each and every sect.”

Chu Heng glared at Yang Chen, when he slowly and clearly said:

“Currently all of the big sects have already notified my Pure Yang Palace, blaming us of hiding from fellow cultivators. After losing so much of my Pure Yang Palace's face, how can you still dare to say you do not know your wrongs?”

“What has my Pure Yang Palace concealed from these fellow cultivators, which has led to such a great loss in our reputation?”

Yang Chen laughed instead, looking at Chu Heng's gaze and clearly ridiculing him a little bit.

“Humph, you don't even dare to acknowledge it? I ask you, the method to grow the thunder pomegranate, are you not the one who had bragged about it?”

Chu Heng asked while sneering, his expression was as if Yang Chen had already pleaded guilty.

“Right now, all of the cultivators are pressuring the Palace Master, requesting the Palace Master to hand over the method to grow it. If it were not for these big words of yours, how would such a thing happen?”

“I only said that I wanted to try to find a method to grow the thunder pomegranate, Senior Sister Gongsun here can be my witness.”

Without changing the smiling expression on his face he continued:

“Other things have no relation to me.”

“Precisely because of this, the other sects are thinking that it is certain that my Pure Yang Palace is helping to increase your reputation and surely must be withholding the information about the method to grow the thunder pomegranate and that's why they are exerting pressure on my Pure Yang Palace.”

Chu Heng coldly snorted and asked:

“You are a trifling qi layer disciple, how can you make such a big commitment?”

“Uncle Master Chu!”

Suddenly Yang Chen addressed Chu Heng very seriously:

“Is there a rule in the sect that outer disciples cannot research a method for growing the thunder pomegranate? Or is there any such clause in the cultivation world, stating that any sect’s outer disciple cannot research the method to grow a thunder pomegranate?”

“This!”

Yang Chen’s question had made Chu Heng speechless, naturally there was no such rule within the sect or in the cultivation world, it was only that it was expected by everyone that people with a lower cultivation would surely not be able to do it, that was all. Yang Chen had said that he wanted to do it, but what he said was not wrong at all.

However Chu Heng quickly adjusted to the situation and asked in a loud voice:

“This news has already spread widely in all of the sects, that within two hundred years you would be able to research the way to grow the thunder pomegranate, how should the sect deliver on it?”

“Didn’t they say I have two hundred years?”

Yang Chen suddenly laughed and looking at Chu Heng he said:

“If they want to pick a quarrel, they can come again after two hundred years, currently the sect should not bother with them.”

Hearing Yang Chen’s sloppy answer, Du Qian, who was sitting behind him, burst into laughter. Yang Chen’s reply was simply too roguish.

Du Qian’s laughter made Chu Heng bubble up with anger.

“If they come after two hundred years and you, Younger Disciple, still haven’t researched the method, then how will we deliver it?”

“If the research wasn’t successful, then it wasn’t successful, countless numbers of YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts have also tried, but were not successful. I am a mere qi layer disciple who wasn’t successful so, again, we will not lose face.”

Yang Chen again shook his head, unable to control his laugh:

“Could it be that if the research isn’t successful, it would be an

enormous crime which can't be punished even by beheading? However I do remember that there is a YuanYing expert of the Greatest Sky Sect as well as a Da Cheng expert of Green Jade Immortal Islands who are still kicking and are also researching the method to grow the thunder pomegranate, as for beheading, first behead these two seniors, then I will accept your punishment.”

Those JieDan experts sitting behind him, although they hadn't opened their mouths to say anything they also hadn't missed a word in Chu Heng and Yang Chen's conversation. Apparently Yang Chen's response had allowed everyone to think of a solution to resolve this situation, only they were refusing to acknowledge it, however Yang Chen had already said that there were many great experts whose research hadn't been successful, so if he, a trifling qi layer disciple, wasn't that effective, it would also not lose any face. Who would dare to say that Yang Chen would lose face, as that would mean unconditionally offending this large number of YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts.

“Indeed.....”

Suddenly Chu Heng found himself at a loss for words. It was clearly a very good opportunity to get Yang Chen severely punished, but right then, according to Yang Chen, it was not a perilous situation at all, so how could he not lose hope? Only, without waiting for Chu Heng to finish with his words, Yang Chen immediately began to question him intensely:

“Moreover, Uncle Master Chu, why should my Pure Yang Palace hand it over? Hand it over to whom? What do we owe to them?”

After saying these words, Yang Chen's voice became even colder.

“Why is Uncle Master Chu not supporting my Pure Yang Palace, but rather the other cultivation sects or for what reason are you doing this?”

After saying all of this in a single breath, Yang Chen did not wait for anyone to interrupt him and continued to speak:

“Does my Pure Yang Palace owe anything to other people? Or is it that my Pure Yang Palace, when compared to other sects has to lower its head, if not why must we hand anything over? Simply saying, even if my research is successful, I am a disciple of Pure Yang Palace who works for the sect, neither have I killed anybody's parents nor have I wiped out people's sect, it is my own research, so for what reason must I hand it over to others? Uncle Master Chu, why don't you tell me the reasons for doing so!”

Yang Chen's words already made the complexions of these JieDan experts turn solemn. Especially those last words catered even more to the worry in everyone's minds. ‘Our Pure Yang Palace does not owe anything to others, nor it is a head shorter when compared to other sects! Our own research, why should we hand it over to others?’

“This.....”

Chu Heng was at loss for words again when facing Yang Chen's repeated questions and for a short while he did not know how to reply. Luckily he was quite quick with his thoughts and he



immediately thought of a pompous reason, so after hesitating for a moment, he quickly replied:

“The method to grow the thunder pomegranate concerns the tribulations of JieDan experts, this is a matter which would benefit all cultivators, so when the time comes, all cultivation sects would use this reason to suppress us, then how should my Pure Yang Palace deal with this?”

“So, if the research is successful, why must our Pure Yang Palace still make it public?”

A smile spread on Yang Chen’s face again, but any person with eyes could see the anger hidden within the smile.

“I remember that the Greatest Sky Sect had a type of Hua Ying Pill prescription which was very precious and was refined only for the sect’s people, it could assist JieDan experts in producing their Ying, this would have equally benefited the other cultivation sects, but why don’t I see Uncle Master Chu advising the Greatest Sky Sect, but on the contrary, you want to sell our sect’s benefits. Uncle Master Chu, what kind of profit have you received from other people, that you surprisingly want to betray the sect and cheat your master?”

“You, you, you venomous slanderer!”

Chu Heng was already unable to answer Yang Chen’s questions and could only shout: ‘you, you’ pointing at him before he could speak out a complete sentence. Betraying the sect and cheating the

master was an absolutely unpardonable accusation, Chu Heng was very arrogant, but still he did not dare to admit to this crime.

However Yang Chen did not want to let Chu Heng slip by, so, advancing to one step before Chu Heng's finger, he continued to question:

“Uncle Master Chu, our Pure Yang Palace also has many cultivation methods which would also benefit fellow cultivators of other sects, don't you think they should also be made public? I am not aware who the fellow cultivators which Uncle Master Chu is talking about are, but Uncle Master might as well tell us who they are, we, in front of all the people under the heavens should ask him whether or not we, the Pure Yang Palace, must handle these matters in such a way.”

Yang Chen advanced one step, but Chu Heng, as if forced by Yang Chen, took a step back. Yang Chen again took a step forward and Chu Heng again took a step back, as if not daring to confront Yang Chen. As for Yang Chen's questions, Chu Heng was still not able to reply, so apart from withdrawing, it seemed like there was no other alternative for him.

However, after he took two steps, Chu Heng's back lightly pushed against someone and from behind his body came Du Qian's voice:

“Fellow disciple Chu, reply to the question, there is no need for you to retreat or withdraw!”

The Schadenfreude within his voice was hardly concealed.

Chu Heng's body turned stiff and was forced to stop at that position, Yang Chen also no longer closed in step by step and stopped at the same place, smiling faintly and saying:

“Fortunately all of this was merely spoken within our Pure Yang Palace, if it would spread to the outside that Uncle Master Chu has cheated the master and betrayed the sect, this would only bring shame to our Pure Yang Palace and would cause a great damage to our reputation!”

If it were not for the several JieDan present there, Chu Heng would have even killed Yang Chen before he spoke his thoughts. But now he could only stand there, rooted to the ground in this dilemma, unable to say anything.

At this moment, Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master Liang Shao Ming who hadn't said anything until now, coughed and said:

“This was just a rumor, there is no need to make such a fuss about it. Chu Heng, you still need to temper this sort of nature of yours, after this year's sect's martial art competition, you will go out to train yourself! Yang Chen, you, in accordance with Hall Master Xu's punishment will enter closed-door training.

Once he opened his mouth, this affair was concluded and nobody had any objections. After he finished handing out punishments, Liang Shao Ming started speaking about another matter:

“Gongsun Ling, Yang Chen, in this year’s Floating Mountain Assembly you both have increased the glory of our sect, so the Palace Master has decided to reward you. You must guard against pride and impatience and put great effort in your cultivation and must not fail to meet the expectations of the entire Pure Yang Palace!”

# Chapter 50 - Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets

Strictly speaking, Liang Meng Shao's punishment could be considered fair, since he hadn't raised the any accusation against Yang Chen nor raised his punishment, as the punishment for closed door training was decided by Xu Cheng Xin, which also could not be considered to be on Liang Meng Shao's head. Regarding Chu Heng's case, although there was a small suspicion of favoritism, Chu Heng's temperament was certainly a problem and everyone present could see this point. And the best way to transform one's nature was to go out to train to temper it, so he couldn't be held accountable for this.

The rewards were given and the punishment was declared, this affair did not need to be discussed anymore. Yang Chen had already said that this was Pure Yang Palace's affair and neither had they obstructed or injured anyone, so they did not need to hand over anything to anyone. Although the Pure Yang Palace was a second rate sect, the people of the Pure Yang Palace were still not something which could be taken advantage off.

But before Yang Chen could enter closed door training, he was stopped and interrogated by Zhu Chen Tao.

“You want to experiment with methods to grow thunder pomegranate? How much certainty do you have?”

Zhu Chen Tao didn't have the as much confidence in Yang Chen

as Gongsun Ling, but was instead somewhat anxious.

“Otherwise, you better concentrate on cultivation first and wait until you start refining pills at foundation stage, until then it will also not be too late.”

“Many thanks for your concern, Elder!”

After Yang Chen expressed his thanks, he said with a smiling expression:

“I don’t have any certainty, I merely wanted to try, that’s all, who could be so bored, so as to play up such an affair to get this much of a fanfare!”

“Whatever other people say, you don’t have to pay any attention to them, just relax and train!”

Zhu Chen Tao thought of something and did not say too many words:

“I still want to look at your performance in the sect’s martial arts competition, so by all means, don’t disappoint me!”

“Be relieved elder!”

After Yang Chen finished his exchange with Zhu Chen Tao, Du Qian immediately took him away to the forbidden rooms where

the punished disciples would have to enter closed door training within the Pure Yang Palace.

The forbidden rooms were very small rooms which could only be opened from the outside. On the door there was a small opening to the outside, so that food and water could be delivered from the outside. From the inside however, the door could never be opened, but this was necessary, to control the punished disciples. But one could still enjoy some food and water. After all although the fasting pills were good, they didn't satisfy the need for good food. Cultivators also could not put away all of their feelings and emotions, otherwise why would the Heavenly Court's jade emperor feast every day and drink every night, countless immortals still enjoyed something and never got tired of it.

Since it was closed door training, naturally it was to help people in cultivation. Inside the forbidden rooms there was the exit of a spirit vein which was linked with all of the spirit veins of the MeiQing mountains. On top of every exit, there was a very small praying mat, made of straw, for the use of disciples in closed door training. After Yang Chen entered the forbidden room, he immediately replaced it with the piece of obsidian jade.

All of this time for closed door training was exactly what Yang Chen had been looking for. Originally he was still anxious that people would find out about him growing the thunder pomegranate in the Medicine Garden, but within the forbidden rooms this was not a problem at all, and it was just enough time for Yang Chen.

After settling down properly and checking everything, Yang

Chen first inspected his own body. The spirit power in his body was already above the third qi layer and he was convinced that he would break through to the fourth qi layer very quickly. Due to climbing the Heavenly Stairs two times, Yang Chen had already broken through to one more level, which had saved him at least one year of hard work.

The increase in the spiritual awareness made Yang Chen even happier, because if he had continued with the normal routine, even if the Three Purities Secrets was quite wonderful, still, to increase the spiritual awareness from middle foundation stage to late foundation stage would still have taken him at least ten years of hard work. But thanks to the fusion with the will of the XianTai Stage, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had already become comparable to late foundation stage.

Despite the vast difference in the realm of spirit power, due to the reverse Yin and Yang five phases secrets, the ten attributes of condensed power were not worse than those of a sixth qi layer disciple. The frantic increase of spiritual awareness also made up for his lacking spirit power. So at the moment Yang Chen already had the minimum requirements to use a magic weapon.

This does not mean using a magic weapon while brandishing it in his hand, but rather using sword techniques to control it and use it to fly. Compared with previous way of fighting, his battle prowess had already improved by much. Comparing killing, by slashing with his blade, with one strike of a flying sword, there was a difference of earth and heaven between them.

Unfortunately, the insufficient spirit power had been a big



problem from the beginning. When attacking with sword techniques, Yang Chen could only use it for two strikes, before his spirit power was almost used up. Though Yang Chen had somewhat less spirit power, but even the disciples at the peak of the qi realm could only use treasure gems, so for them Yang Chen was already an existence which could make them so envious that they would be fuming with rage.

What made Yang Chen most surprised was the ability to genuinely control magic weapons, this also implied that Yang Chen could now officially begin to refine magic weapons. Previously, no matter whether it was the Profound Spirit Furnace or the sword box, Yang Chen had only forcefully left his spirit imprint on them, so strictly speaking as long as a person had a cultivation base higher than Yang Chen and was at least a foundation stage master, if he tried, he could immediately remove Yang Chen's spiritual awareness.

But refining a magic weapon was different, it could be forcefully taken back if captured by someone and the labor required would also be much lower, compared to the original requirement. It could only be obtained if the master had already died and his spiritual awareness had already disappeared. But some high grade magic weapons would still require some special kind of methods, like the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden and the Sword Box.

Every cultivator and every sect had their own unique methods, similar to their own refining method to control the magic weapon. If this was his previous life, Yang Chen would have surely used the method which he was good at in his previous life, the Great Sun Fierce Heart method, fitting with the Pure Yang Palace's controlling skill to refine the magic weapon. However, in this life,

Yang Chen had even more alternatives.

The Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, this was a god level refining method, passed on from the thirty six principal heavenly stars gods, Yang Chen was getting itchy to test the effects of this refining method's secrets.

As the name implies, since it was used by the heavenly gods, these Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets had thirty six layers. Every layer also had three minor layers within it, closely fitting and imitating the heavenly stars to tighten it. The happiest thing for Yang Chen was that, not only did this method not have any restrictions regarding the attribute of spirit power, it also did not limit how many types of spirit power were used, due to this, every time he would use the Yin and Yang five phases spirit power, adding onto the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, the effects would double.

Wanting to try it, Yang Chen immediately took out the Profound Spirit Furnace. The current Profound Spirit Furnace was merely the lowest levelled magic tool, relatively speaking, the refining would also be somewhat easy. It was even easier, since Yang Chen was familiar with the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets.

Even if it was the first layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, based on Yang Chen's strength, it would still require at least ten days of time, only then could the Profound Spirit Furnace be considered as refined to the first layer.

The Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets were, as expected, the Heavenly Court's principal gods' secret way for binding, so

with just the refining to the first layer, Yang Chen had already achieved a level of control which he would have had achieved at the foundation stage in his previous life.

And what made Yang Chen even happier was that after passing through the refining process, not only was the Profound Spirit Furnace upgraded to the first rate, his Yin and Yang five phases secrets had also become somewhat concentrated, as if this Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secret was not just refining the Profound Spirit Furnace, but also refining Yang Chen himself.

While the Profound Spirit Furnace was within his hands, the palm sized cauldron shaped furnace's body in a flash turned thick enough that he could wrap his arms around it. With just a slight movement of his hand, two threads of flame rushed into the furnace from his hands and soared within the Profound Spirit Furnace.

This was Yang Chen's technique to manage the tool and not just to manage the fire, every reaction from the Profound Spirit Furnace made Yang Chen get the feeling that what his heart wished, his hands could accomplish. Under the perfect control of his spirit power, even a single speck of dust in the Profound Spirit Furnace could be sensed clearly.

Having used the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secret for the first time, although merely to the first layer, it still allowed Yang Chen to have an even deeper understanding regarding the refining of magic weapons and tools. When Yang Chen was at the XianTai Stage, he had firmly remembered all of these methods without thinking too much and only after he had begun to cultivate did he

discover the profound mysteries inside them one by one.

This was only the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets, if he waited until the spirit power was sufficient and his cultivation was enough, all of these methods could be used on these magic treasures by use of the terminating spell formation to refine them, afterwards the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets could be used on all of the magic weapons to strengthen them. Yang Chen had already started imagining that, by the time when all of these things were completed, not only would his Yin and Yang five phases secrets become top notch, but he also wondered what kind of an appearance his strong magic weapons would have by that time.

The Yin and Yang Five Phases Secret's spirit power within Yang Chen's body also had a few variations because of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets. Within the spirit power of every attribute, apparently many types of new branches appeared.

Yang Chen noticed that, because of cultivating the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secret, each type of spirit power within his body had been transformed into thirty six tiny paths of spirit power, this thirty six tiny paths of spirit power had condensed together in accordance with the directions of the Heavenly Stars and together with his own ten types of spirit power, in total there were three hundred and sixty threads. Passing through this kind of combination of spirit power, it became even more concentrated and even more stable.

At the same time, this would also mean that every time he did something, whether it be attack, defend or even refining pills or tools, every time he would naturally use the Yin and Yang five

phases secrets spell and on every branches' spirit power, a Heavenly Stars spell would emerge. This spell within a spell, just this one tiny change allowed Yang Chen's attack and defense to increase by a lot.

His spiritual awareness had also somewhat changed. Originally it was just frantically expanding, but, now it had even started to sense even the most minute changes in Yang Chen's body. The thirty six threads of spirit power constituting the Heavenly Stars Spell were converging into one type of spirit power, he had precisely this kind of sensation. Yang Chen had a premonition, as long as these thirty six threads of spirit power grew more and more powerful, the spirit power in his body would also become more and more powerful.

The increasingly acute spiritual awareness even discovered, that within the thirty six threads of spirit power, there was one spirit power thread that was thicker compared to the others. After mulling over this for some time, he understood that this was because he had only cultivated to the first layer of the thirty six layers of the Heavenly Treasure Refining Secrets. The present Heavenly Stars Spell, when compared to the complete Heavenly Stars spell was still too distant.

However just the first layer had already allowed Yang Chen's senses to sharpen, his spiritual awareness and in this situation his attack power had also increased by three times. It was still unknown to which extent he could become strong, if the Heavenly Stars spell had been completely intact.

Similarly, what made him look forward to the future was that,

together with the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets a terminating spell formation had appeared. Whether or not this would allow his spirit power to segment again into spirit paths identical to these, terminated in the Heavenly Stars spell. (Ed. Note: We're very confused by the raws here and couldn't figure this sentence out) Thinking about the time when it would reach the second layer was making him go crazy.

The Profound Spirit Furnace was a pill concocting furnace, in the future it would require various sorts of Yin and Yang five phases attributes, therefore Yang Chen had used the Yin and Yang five phases spirit power to refine it, which had only benefits and no harm. However, to refine the sword box, Yang Chen had run into trouble, which type should he use to achieve the best results?

Before he could resolve this issue, Yang Chen had no option but to consider what his primary weapon should be from now on. The sword box was after all only a sword box, even if it was very high grade, it was merely one sword box. If he wanted to display the formidable power of the sword box, he needed to replenish it with strong flying swords. And in the future what kind of flying swords would he use?

This problem, Yang Chen previously only had a vague idea but hadn't considered this problem seriously. However, now the situation had changed, when confronted with the problem of deciding the direction for his future development, Yang Chen also wanted to calmly and diligently think about it.

Fortunately, this problem couldn't confuse Yang Chen for long. Since he had already picked the great Yin and Yang five phases

secrets, when the time came he could only choose to make use of the universal Yin and Yang five phases qi to refine the flying swords for the sword box, like that, the sword box would require the spirit power of five phases of Yin and Yang to advance as before with the refining.

Presently the sword box was of a much higher grade than the Profound Spirit Furnace, so Yang Chen had to spend two to three times more labour than for the Profound Spirit Furnace. Just to refine the sword box, he had to spend two entire months.

The first layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets had also become more and more advanced and the sword box also began to appear more and more sharp, it still had the look of the XianTai Stage's blade within his hand, but from time to time it flashed a cutting edge, appearing to people like a unique blade. Only, looking at this kind of situation, Yang Chen could not help but shake his head.

A truly strong magic weapon would not reveal its cutting edge like this. This was a point which the greatest cultivators could easily see through. Clean jade bottles, a bunch of immortal ropes, a palm leaf fan which could even cut diamonds and many others, were all unremarkable in looks, but based on how one wished to make them appear they would still be considered as high quality weapons in the immortal realm.

These exceptionally famous tools have all been improved and baptized by blood countless times, only then were they able to become genuinely outstanding and magnificent. Magic weapons and people were actually the same. Therefore Yang Chen's

understanding of this was that, because he could reveal the cutting edge of the sword box, the magic weapon could also reflect his cultivation in the future. Perhaps, after the martial art competition, Yang Chen had to choose somewhere to go to train himself.

He let it be for the time being, there were still several days before he could come out of seclusion. Yang Chen just took out the clean bottle of the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden. Since Yang Chen's cultivation was lower previously, he could only brand it with his own spirit power. But the Medicine Garden was of an even higher grade than the sword box, so Yang Chen did not have any expectations of being able to refine it for the time being. He had taken out the Medicine Garden only to resolve the affair of the thunder pomegranate.

The thunder pomegranate required extreme conditions to grow, but that was not the only problem, previously countless number of elders had only failed, because dealing with the seed required too much skill.

The thunder pomegranate not only required to be planted in regions with lightning from the beginning, but it's seed, although looked as if had abundant spirit power, was nevertheless empty on the inside. For the seed to survive, it had to be planted in a region thick with First Tree spirit power, only after absorbing enough could it grow, otherwise it would not even be able to germinate or produce roots. Not only that, at the time of absorbing spirit power it should not be polluted by other kinds of spirit power and only then could it grow.



Within the Medicine Garden, some First Tree type of plants were growing, so fortunately the spirit power was absolutely abundant. Yang Chen carefully used a wooden knife to split open the thunder pomegranate and after planting the seeds in a satisfactory place, he withdrew from the medicine garden. For now he had to wait until they had absorbed enough spirit power.

After completing these tasks, Yang Chen finished everything and adjusted his whole body to its peak condition, as finally the time had come to come out of closed door training. After he came out of closed door training, on the next day was the sect's martial arts competition.

# Chapter 51 - Read The Warning Before Cultivating

When coming out of the room after his closed door training, the instant he saw the sunshine again, Yang Chen had a sudden urge to jump, as if it was an instinct of his body, but also because of his excitement for the Sect's Martial Arts Competition starting from tomorrow.

In the Sect's Martial Arts Competition, contestants were divided according to their realms. Generally speaking, fights between disciples of different realms was utterly dangerous, even if someone with a high cultivation was acting as guard, it was still a very risky affair. Usually, only disciples with the same cultivation would fight with each other, so naturally, it was a competition between disciples of the same stage.

According to the rules of the Martial Arts Competition, the disciples at the lower realms would accumulate points depending on their victory or defeat and later, according to these points, their rankings would change. Those who were ranked higher would enjoy an even better status and treatment, while those ranked behind would have to spend more contribution points to receive the same resources. These kinds of rules motivated all of the disciples to cultivate even more meticulously.

Naturally, someone challenging a disciple above their realm would receive more advantages and bonus points, only, this kind of thing was seen very rarely. Generally speaking, the teachers did not recommend their disciples to challenge someone above their

realm, not to mention the danger, it could severely dampen one's confidence, so the gains really didn't make up for the losses.

The one in which Yang Chen would participate was naturally the qi realm martial arts contest. All of the qi realm disciples could, within the first day, challenge other disciples to fight or could instead be challenged by others. The location of this competition was naturally the Nine Earth Manor.

Because of Yang Chen and Gong Sun Ling's performance at the Heavenly Stairs this year, at this qi layer Martial Arts Competition the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace himself would personally come to watch. This made all of the disciples incomparably excited and eager to fight. As long as one could leave a profound impression on the Palace Master, then would one still have to worry about their future cultivation?

The Merit Transferring Disciple, Chu Heng, was responsible to act as arbitrator for the competition this time and at the same time he was also responsible for saving disciples if they were in danger. With him there were also more than a dozen foundation stage disciples, including Du Qian of the Law Enforcement Hall.

Yang Chen was not very interested in challenging these disciples of the Nine Earth Manor and seizing their cultivation resources. His sole desire was to learn by interaction and that was also just with Gongsun Ling and no one else. As for Sun Hai Jing, indeed he was Yang Chen target for a life and death challenge, their relationship had already sank to the point of being mortal enemies.

Gongsun Ling also hadn't wasted these three months, with just

one look, Yang Chen became aware that she had certainly broken through within these three months and had entered the seventh qi layer. Compared to the Gongsun Ling before she had climbed the Heavenly Stairs, the present Gongsun Ling was even more energetic and had even more fighting spirit, her attitude was as if she could fight with anyone below the heavens.

Because this kind of fighting spirit would bring about changes in one's personality, it became visible to everyone. Originally Gongsun Ling was just a beautiful woman, who was hard to come by, but now she also had a hint of confidence and aggressiveness. She had also been in secluded training for the past three months and appeared in public for the first time since then, but even if it was the first time, she had immediately attracted the sight of all the qi realm disciples. Even Chu Heng had fixed his gaze on Gongsun Ling, but he had an indescribable expression.

Although Gongsun Ling had been good natured previously, this was not towards everyone. Her present attitude made her seem unapproachable. Although almost everyone's gaze was fixed on her, no one dared to go and talk to her.

A smile spread on Yang Chen's face and he immediately greeted Gongsun Ling from a distance. Looking at Yang Chen, Gongsun Ling immediately smiled towards him. Only, with just this faint smile, she made everyone feel as if the sky had fallen onto their heads.

Just this greeting between these two people made the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace, who had rushed over here, but had not yet appeared in front of everyone, sense the exceptionality of

Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling. One person could make the people not dare to approach her, but when she smiled, it could make them feel as if the sun had peeked through between the clouds. The other, regardless of the situation, could always preserve his calmness, such a disciple was really hard to come by.

It had to be known that at that moment all disciples in the Nine Earth Manor were in fear that their performance was deemed as no good by the Palace Master, therefore all of the disciples were very careful. Even those foundation stage disciples, who were in charge of arbitrating and defending disciples, had the same thoughts. Apart from Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling, only two or three foundation stage disciples were able to show this type of calmness.

Gongsun Ling had entered the seventh qi layer, so her strength had increased and her mental state had also made a breakthrough, so this was not unexpected for most people. But for a third qi layer outer disciple to be able to cultivate this kind of strong mind, it was no wonder that he could climb to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs two times, and could still cripple nineteen JieDan experts. For such a person, this was not something out of the ordinary.

Even though the sect leader had only appeared in front of everyone and had not said anything, this still inspired all of the people present. Hearing about him was just one thing, but truly seeing him was a whole different thing.

Sun Hai Jing stood on one side at the corner with a profound smile on his face. He had learned from Chu Heng why the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace had appeared here. Looking at Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling greeting each other, Sun Hai Jing

suddenly had a very ridiculous thought. If Yang Chen, for whom the Palace Master had high hopes, was eliminated from the Martial Arts Competition, what would he feel if that happened?

Not only the Pure Yang Palace, but all other sects also allowed life and death duels between their disciples. This was the most just and honourable method to settle disputes, and after the event it was unlikely for anyone to investigate it. Naturally this was just a theory, as for whether or not it was looked into, only the parties involved would be clear about. However with just this condition, what would Sun Hai Jing have to fear? As for choosing between killing Yang Chen honorably during the duel, and killing Yang Chen at some other time, but at the same time being investigated afterwards, and losing his ability to break through, even an idiot would know what to pick.

Chu Heng announced the start of the martial arts competition and immediately, in the training grounds of the Nine Earth Manor, the crowd began to boil with excitement and many disciples began to look for other disciples of the same layer, to begin challenging them and very quickly within the training grounds, an image of a blade appeared.

Yang Chen hadn't moved and Gongsun Ling also didn't make a move, but in the corner, Sun hai Jing had issued a challenge towards a peak qi layer disciple. This one move of his immediately raised a huge clamor among many people. Sun Hai Jing was merely a minor fourth qi layer disciple, how could he dare to challenge a peak qi layer master? Furthermore, he had not only just challenged any peak qi layer disciple, but also the one acknowledged as the number one outer disciple.

Challenging someone above one's realm was allowed at the martial competition and at the same time it would also reward the most points. However for the challenged people it was a troublesome event, because they would later be blamed of being the strong, taking unfair advantage of the weak, or that they had an unfair advantage in that battle, while being defeated would lose even more face. Even if it was a challenge above one's realm, it was usually a third qi layer disciple challenging a fourth qi layer disciple, or a fourth qi layer disciple challenging fifth qi layer disciple, but challenging someone with a differences of more than five layers was unprecedented.

“Younger Disciple Sun, you can still change your decision!”

The challenged disciple was known as Zhou Zihe, he was not very old, only thirty years or so.

From the time he had started cultivating, to reaching the peak of the qi layer, he had only taken fifteen years of time, he was just one step away from the foundation stage. Within a few years he had become the number one disciple among the outer disciples, so he would not be cowardly when facing Sun Hai Jing's challenge, rather he had just indifferently warned him once.

Sun Hai Jing burst into loud laughter and opened his hand and from within his hand, the figure of a sword flew out and started rotating around his body in the air.

“A magic weapon?”

The people watching the battle did not dare to believe their own eyes, the sword that flew out from Sun Hai Jing's body was glowing magnificently and exerted a great pressure, which clearly proved that it was a magic flying sword! He was just a minor qi layer disciple, how did he get a magic weapon? How was he able to control it?

A lot of of doubt immediately appeared in the minds of spectators. When Yang Chen looked at this, his brows creased deeply. This looked very similar to something he knew. Sun Hai Jing's situation resembled exactly an evil cultivation accelerating method. And the Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor was in possession of this cultivation method. However, the cost of cultivating this kind of cultivation method was extremely high, so nearly nobody cultivated this kind of method.

'Almost nobody' is not equal to 'exactly nobody'. That Sun Hai Jing before his eyes was a clear example of this, in the brief period of a few months, his cultivation had increased by leaps and bounds, even surpassing a peak qi layer disciple, reaching nearly to the standard of the foundation stage. The flying sword, which he had, was obtained from a loose cultivator at the early foundation stage, whom he had fought a few days ago to test his strength.

Not all people were like Yang Chen and had read all of the jade slips in the Hidden Pavilion. Regarding Sun Hai Jing's circumstances, more than ninety percent of people were not aware what was going on. Everyone only thought that the fourth qi layer disciple Sun Hai Jing had hidden his true strength, but still, seeing him suddenly reveal the strength of the foundation stage, how could they not cry out in surprise?



The Pure Yang Palace had already discovered two talented disciples at the Heavenly Stairs this year, could it be that one more individual had appeared silently again? This year, the popularity of the Pure Yang Palace would burst out of all seams, due to all these talents appearing.

Everyone's bewildered voices made Sun Hai Jin extremely satisfied, the looks of everyone not daring to believe, made Sun Hai Jing feel as if he was bathing in a soft spring wind, his whole self had become elated. The feeling of losing all of his face when he was thoroughly humiliated by Yang Chen in front of numerous people, was completely removed. Immense satisfaction flooded Sun Hai Jing's mind, which was increased even more by the flying sword he controlled to revolve around him.

Zhou Zihe, opposite of Sun Hai Jing, revealed an earnest expression on his face. Although the other party had suddenly revealed a flying magic sword, as a peak qi layer disciple, this was not a strength which would force him to risk his life. Sun Hai Jing's expressions were also making people feel suspicious of him, his odds for succeeding were not that great and Zhou Zihe was unlikely to give up immediately.

Facing the magical weapon, Zhou Zihe also took out the talisman gem in his control. It was also a sword, but the difference in grade was too much. It was merely a talisman sword after all.(Tl.note-talisman gem) However still it radiated power which would shock people's souls. Suddenly a cold sword qi appeared, Zhou Zihe also emitted a pressure that did not lose out to Sun Hai Jing. All of a sudden, Sun Hai Jing's sword shone brightly.

“Don’t shed tears at the sight of the coffin!”

Sun Hai Jing sneered and took the initiative to attack. In his opinion, since he had already taken out his magic flying sword, the other party should have immediately admitted defeat and bowed before him, making way for his victory, what was the need to go through with the fight? Wouldn’t this enormously lower his heroic victory?

Against this Zhou Zihe, who could not show any understanding of the situation, Sun Hai Jing used his killing move and launched the flying sword to attack him with a decisive blow. But Zhou Zihe also lived up to his reputation as the number one peak qi layer disciple, neither dodging nor avoiding he controlled his talisman sword to face against it.

Bang!

With an exceptionally clear and melodious sound that rang in everyone’s ears, two brilliant rays flew out on each side and returned to their own masters.

After Zhou Zihe firmly resisted this blow, he discovered a small problem with the talisman sword in his hand. Bowing his head to look, he astonishingly discovered a grain sized nick at the edge of his talisman sword. In the recent blow, he had already suffered a defeat.

Seeing this one move, the palace master standing behind could not help but sigh with a long breath. Although Sun Hai Jing’s

strength had increased, it was only caused by cultivating an evil cultivation method. Talent? Absolutely not! Originally he thought that he could find an unexpected pleasant surprise, but now it seems that was only his wishful thinking.

The Palace Master shook his head and glanced resentfully at the Merit Transferring Disciple, Chu Heng. How could a qi layer disciple be allowed to cultivate this kind of method? This Merit Transferring Disciple, was greatly unsuited for his position. This one glance scared Chu Heng so much, that even soul trembled and cold drops of sweat appeared on his head. Lowering his head, he did not even dare to breathe loudly. He suddenly felt his knees go soft and he fell on the ground to beg for forgiveness.

Fortunately, the Palace Master had merely glanced at him, but not said anything. He closed his eyes again and continued to observe the circumstances below, in the Martial Arts Competition, with his spiritual awareness.

When all was said and done, he had just recently acquired his strength and at the same time also the flying sword, so Sun Hai Jing only looked impressive on the surface, but his method of controlling the flying sword was far inferior. Compared to Zhou Zihe, who had trained for a much longer time, the difference was a lot more than a level. But, presently Sun Hai Jing had no other option, but the quality of the sword in his hand was better than Zhou Zihe's. All of his attacks were aiming to kill the enemy, a method which would end in mutual destruction, forcing both his and Zhou Zihe's swords to clash.

After going through this again and again, the talisman sword in

Zhou Zihe's hands were badly worn, with several holes. If this continued for one more strike, this talisman sword would be completely destroyed. Thinking about this again and again, Zhou Zihe no longer insisted on continuing this. The Foundation Stage was in his sight, he had carried this talisman sword for many years and had invested much in it. Once he would reach the foundation stage and refined it, it would turn into a magic flying sword, if it was destroyed now, the gains would not make up for the losses. Finding an opportunity to come out of the fight, he cupped his hands towards Sun Hai Jing and said:

“Younger Disciple Sun's flying sword is really difficult to deal with, I admit defeat!”

After saying this, he immediately turned around and walked away, without looking back.

The victorious Sun Hai Jing, after hearing the burst of surprised voices coming from the audience, was extremely satisfied. After smugly listening to it for a long time, he turned to Yang Chen and shouted:

“Younger Disciple Yang, regarding the life and death challenge between us, you will not surely run away, right? Younger Disciple Yang, do you dare to accept the challenge?”

Once these words came out, it gave rise to surprised comments from the audience.

According to the rules of the martial arts competition, a disciple

of a lower realm could decide not to accept a life and death challenge. If Yang Chen did not accept the challenge, Sun Hai Jing would have to look for another opportunity to take care of Yang Chen. He had asked in this way, clearly because he was trying to force Yang Chen to accept.

However Yang Chen laughed out loudly and immediately entered the stage. His movement gave rise to even more astonished looks. Sun Hai Jing had right now showed the strength of the foundation stage, but Yang Chen was just a third qi layer disciple, how could he be so stupid to throw away his life like this?

After moving in front of Sun Hai Jing, Yang Chen looked at the smug Sun Hai Jing and suddenly asked:

“Senior Disciple Sun, when you found this cultivation method, did you look at the jade slip on the side explaining about it? Are you aware that cultivating this kind of cultivation method, you will live for only half a year?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s question, Sun Hai Jing’s complexion drastically changed.

# Chapter 52 - I Don't Need A Magic Weapon To Beat You To Death

Yang Chen had looked at the jade slips in the Hidden Pavilion for more than half a year, this was not a secret at Nine Earth Manor. Sun Hai Jing did not find it strange at all, that Yang Chen knew the cultivation method in which he trained, but he had said something about an explanatory jade slip on the side, but Sun Hai Jing had never seen it, he basically wasn't even aware of any explanatory jade slip.

This was precisely the cause for the huge changes in his complexion, this moment he suddenly sensed a dread evolve from his heart. The Uncle Master who had always unconditionally supported him, had at this moment become the source of his dread.

This cultivation method of the sect had such great backlash, then why didn't Chu Heng tell him about this earlier? At this point, Sun Hai Jing could only imagine one reason, but he absolutely did not want to believe that reason. With no way out of this dilemma, Sun Hai Jing stood there stunned, rooted to the ground.

Although the words of these two people were very low and concealed from the ears of the spectators, hearing Yang Chen just use a few words to make Sun Hai Jing lose his self control in this way, apparently everyone realized some parts of the truth.

Sun Hai Jing had for some reason surprisingly cultivated an evil

cultivation method, although it would quickly increase his strength, the cost he had to pay was using up his life force. Only due to this forceful increase in his strength could he defeat Zhou Zihe. But, he was not aware that this cultivation method had this kind of fatal flaw, thus he was in the current situation.

There was no one who was not aware that Yang Chen and Sun Hai Jing were on bad terms. Since the time when Yang Chen had wanted to join the Pure Yang Palace, both of them had some conflicts. At that time, Sun Hai Jing was beaten so badly by Yang Chen, that he had to spend a long time in bed, recuperating. So now, Sun Hai Jing initiating a life and death duel towards Yang Chen was quite normal.

However, even after watching Sun Hai Jing easily defeat Zhou Zihe, who was at the peak of the qi layer, Yang Chen unexpectedly still agreed to the life and death challenge. This made everyone very confused. Could it be that Yang Chen already had the strength of a peak qi layer cultivator or even an initial foundation stage expert?

The shocked Sun Hai Jing finally sobered up from his dazed state. Facing Yang Chen, with a sinister expression he shouted:

“If you think that you can make me lose the will to fight with a single lie, then you are mistaken!”

Shouting these words, he immediately restored his raging will to fight and with blood filling his eyes, his eyes had turned so red that they could make anyone shudder. Those two eyes were like a hunter choosing prey to devour.

“Even if it was false, for you it already has no more meaning!”

Yang Chen faintly shook his head, with regret spreading across his face. For a dead man like Sun Hai Jing, whether Yang Chen’s words were true or not, they would not have any meaning.

“Humph, trying to deliberately mislead me!”

However, Sun Hai Jing did not think this way, just a moment ago when he had heard Yang Chen’s speech, he had certainly become low spirited, however very quickly he realized, that this was perhaps some sort of mental attack by Yang Chen, so as to make him lose the will to fight. After realizing this point, Sun Hai Jing became very angry and at the same time he relaxed in his heart.

Regardless of whether Yang Chen’s words were true or false, for Sun Hai Jing the timber had already been turned into a boat, wanting to convert it back was impossible. To determine whether it was true or not, after he killed Yang Chen in this life and death battle, he could only go back to the Hidden Pavilion and look for the explanatory jade slip and check on the jade slip whether there really was such a description or not.

But if he wanted to check whether or not it was true, Sun Hai Jing first had to survive. The more important thing right now was the fight in front of him.

“Younger Disciple Yang, did you not say that you would use a countless number of talisman gems to crush me to death?”



On one side of Sun Hai Jing's body, the flying sword light began to rise again and started rotating around Sun Hai Jing's body. This further increased the radiance of Sun Hai Jing's body and at the same time also gave him an unlimited confidence. With grand theatrics he looked at Yang Chen and asked:

“Actually I wanted to test, Younger Disciple Yang what sort of talisman gems you would wish to use against my flying sword.”

“About those talisman gems which can deal with your flying sword, I don't really have that many.”

Hearing Sun Hai Jing's question, Yang Chen smilingly said:

“On the journey I haven't bought many talisman gems, I will have to disappoint Senior Disciple Sun!”

“Since Younger Disciple Yang has promised for a life and death duel, then you must not blame this senior disciple for being heartless!”

A malicious laugh found its way onto Sun Hai Jing's face again, most of all hearing that Yang Chen had no talisman gems, it got even more mixed up and turned into an evil smile.

“To die under this magic flying sword is Younger Disciple Yang's good fortune!”

Yang Chen once again smiled and said:

“This kind of honorable act, Senior Disciple, set it aside for yourself!”

Following Yang Chen’s words, a sheath was raised in air and started hovering in front of Yang Chen, it was simple and unadorned without any sort of awe inspiring radiance.

“Senior disciple has his own flying sword and by some lucky coincidence, Younger Disciple has obtained a sheath, though I do not know whether it can encompass Senior Disciple’s flying sword.”

Yang Chen calmly said, facing the endlessly stunned Sun Hai Jing.

Once the sword sheath appeared, everyone present in the surroundings sensed a different sort of pressure, naturally Sun Hai Jing who was standing on the stage also sensed the silent pressure caused by the sheath and his face thickened.

The Pure Yang Palace’s Palace Master who was observing from behind with his spiritual awareness had his expression turn pleasant, opening his eyes, he said:

“What a good item!”

These words, made a silent flame burn in the eyes of Chu Heng,

who was serving on the side.

“Humph, what a coincidence, as soon as I obtained a flying sword, you also obtained a sword sheath? Thinking to put my flying sword into it? Dream on!”

Sun Hai Jing had also sensed that Yang Chen’s sword sheath was a very good item, but even if it was better, in the end it was still a sword sheath and nothing more, he had never before heard of any expert who had used the sheath of a sword as a weapon, or even further, refined a sword sheath into a magic weapon. Nowadays there were flying swords, which were stored in one’s body below the navel, where the qi resided, and did not require incessant refining, so where was the need for a sword sheath?

“Whether I am dreaming or not, Senior Disciple will realize after trying!”

But Yang Chen only said this, rather than talking a lot.

“You are courting death!”

Sun Hai Jing was furious, both new and old hatred all rushed forth in his heart, as the flying sword rotating around his body suddenly turned into a ray and swiftly flew towards Yang Chen. It moved noiselessly, only leaving behind a rainbow shaped image, its speed was really beyond compare.

However, what left everyone who was watching flabbergasted,

was that, when the afterimage left by the flying sword was flying close to Yang Chen, that sword sheath which had been hanging in the air in front of Yang Chen, suddenly became exceptionally huge and opened up an enormous hole, resembling a hungry dragon in the sky.

Ah!

At once the flying sword was swallowed.

No matter how much Sun Hai Jing tried to get control over the flying sword, the flying sword which had been swallowed by the sheath did not show any response. It seemed that the connection of spiritual awareness between Sun Hai Jing and his flying sword had been cut off, which raised a thought of despair in Sun Hai Jing's mind.

“Impossible! Impossible!”

It seemed that Sun Hai Jing had gone mad after losing his flying sword, he started shouting and screaming:

“You are a trifling third qi layer disciple, how can you control a magic weapon? How can you wrest away the control over my flying sword?!”

The other people had only seen Yang Chen's sword sheath for a single moment, but Sun Hai Jing's flying sword had lost all of its presence, they hadn't anticipated that the flying sword would have

been seized by Yang Chen. Hearing Sun Hai Jing shouting in a loud voice, everyone was overwhelmed with shock.

Taking control over the flying sword just before it could be used, what level of skill was this? Although the majority of qi layer disciples hadn't had the opportunity to come in contact with a magic weapon, this didn't mean that none of the qi layer disciples had a magic weapon. Not to mention Yang Chen, even inside the Nine Earth Manor, there were a few peak qi layer disciples who owned their own magic weapons. Yang Chen was not the only genius.

These people had similarly refined their own magic weapons, refined their own flying swords and even had similar control over their swords, so they naturally knew, how much of a frightening ability it was to seize control of a flying sword which was being used by someone else.

“Senior Brother Sun, your luck isn't very good, this sheath of mine, as it turns can easily collect your flying sword, which hasn't been refined.”

On Yang Chen's face was a dishonest smile, as if he had received a great deal, but still wanted more, so he giddily said:

“Many thanks, Senior Disciple, now I don't have to look for a flying sword to be stored inside of the sheath!”

Sun Hai Jing almost spat out blood listening to Yang Chen's ridicule. Seizing someone's magic weapon and then going as far as

to ridicule him in such a way, no one would be able to stand this kind of mockery.

However Yang Chen's words were a relief to a lot of people. That the sword sheath could only collect unrefined flying swords would also imply that afterwards, Yang Chen could not just go and capture anyone's magic weapons. Sometimes, just having the ability to cause fear in other people could be the cause of misfortune. Since Yang Chen had used this method only to deal with Sun Hai Jing, others did not need to be very anxious.

This recent act had even shocked the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace so much, that he had opened both his eyes. Only after hearing Yang Chen's words did he nod slightly and close his eyes again. Yang Chen's words were quite reasonable though, if it was not properly refined and was just marked with a sign of Spiritual Awareness on it, then anyone with a higher cultivation could easily take control of it. Although Yang Chen's cultivation was lacking, with the help of the sword sheath it was all very normal.

Sun Hai Jing presently did not have that any of his previous arrogance, shock was written all over his face as he had been spooked out of his mind, even his tone began to soften:

“Younger Disciple Yang, you and I don't have a hatred which cannot be resolved, Younger Disciple must not ruthlessly eliminate me like this, OK?”

Hearing his voice, both of them had stopped their actions, each stationed at the side of the stage. There was already a hint of desperation in Sun Hai Jing's voice.

“This life and death challenge, wasn’t it initiated by you, Senior Disciple Sun?”

Although Yang Chen hadn’t attacked him, within his tone there was not even a hint of letting off Sun Hai Jing.

“I remember, when I was leaving the Nine Earth Manor, Senior Disciple Sun had said that unfortunately I would not get the opportunity to challenge you, I would never dare to forget!”

Once these words came out of his mouth, everyone looked at Sun Hai Jing, but not with the same look anymore. Who did not know that when Yang Chen had left the Nine Earth Manor, he was immediately attacked by a few assassins? Although he had killed them instead, using some unknown method, everyone clearly realized that this was a premeditated attack with the collaboration of someone from the inside to kill a disciple of the same sect.

After Yang Chen had said these words, the greatest suspicion had naturally fallen on Sun Hai Jing. Killing disciples of the same sect, this was an offence second only to betraying the sect, apart from some sect which cultivated evil cultivation methods, no matter which sect it was, even the great major sects which cultivated evil cultivation methods, all would not tolerate this kind of matter happening.

Suddenly, Sun Hai Jing had successfully become the target of all the attention. At that moment he was not only on the fighting stage, but also in front of the Pure Yang Palace’s Palace Master,

who was watching the fight, even some people from the crowd had jumped up to punish him. Even more, a countless number of people were still reprimanding him. This time he had already left a deep impression of being evil and filled with hatred on the Palace Master, what more was required to deal with him?

Chu Heng's heart was jumping even more inside of his chest, if, under this kind of pressure, Sun Hai Jing said something carelessly which could implicate him, then, with the Palace Master present, he would not even have the chance to escape. Presently he had an infinite number of regrets within his heart, if he had known earlier about what would happen today, then he would have already taken care of Sun Hai Jing earlier, but instead he had racked his brains to search for a flying sword to make him stronger.

Sun Hai Jing also seemed to realize the anger that a lot of people were pointing towards him, within his heart he was sure that he would die, so he immediately stopped worrying about anything else and started laughing in loud voice:

“HaHaHaHa! Yes I did, so what? You are an executioner who kills without any regards, but you still want to stand by the side of us hard working cultivators? I want to kill you! My only regret is that those people were not good enough, otherwise you would already be on your way to the netherworld!”

After he had taken all of the responsibility for the matter, Chu Heng's jumping heart finally calmed down. With the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace on his side, he did not dare to release a sigh of relief, but he still felt a sort of comfort. However, he hadn't looked towards the of the Palace Master, whose eyes, which Chu



Heng thought to be closed, slanted towards his direction and then quickly returned to normal.

“You admit it, good!”

Yang Chen coldly humphed.

“Since you have already accepted, then receive your punishment!”

The sword sheath in the air disappeared and Yang Chen quickly moved towards Sun Hai Jing.

Since even the Palace Master hadn't said anything, the other people also did not dare to interfere lightly. Right away, Yang Chen surprisingly threw away the magic weapon and started fighting with his bare hands, which made everyone present on the scene crease their brows, but at the same time feel anxious for him. The other party had the strength of the initial foundation stage, going against him like this, does he just want to throw his life away?

“You are courting death, let me help you!”

Sun Hai Jing was even more exalted, Yang Chen, this thorn on his flesh, had unexpectedly decided to let go of his magic weapon and fight directly with his cultivation. Wasn't this just delivering the prey to his door? In this moment, he had already given up any hopes of finding an opportunity of trying to escape, his last wish was to kill Yang Chen before he died. Thinking this, he directly

flew towards Yang Chen to attack him.

Within an instant, the bodies of those two people came close to each other, everyone opened their eyes widely, afraid to miss a moment. Only, the thing that they found most unbelievable was that, even with Sun Hai Jing's current speed, his attacking fist, like before was still not able to hit Yang Chen. Yang Chen had instead stopped Sun Hai Jing's fist and had easily swung him, by using it as a handle.

A few great circles were formed in the sky.

Bang! Bang!

Sun Hai Jing was flung onto the ground by Yang Chen again and again. With a sound from Yang Chen's wrist, his bones were broken. Together with the pain of broken bones, the dizziness made him lose all ability to resist. At that moment he was only seeing the ground coming closer and closer to him, and afterwards he was thrown, again and again. He resolutely lifted his head, only to find a huge clenched fist appearing in front of him.

Slam! Slam!

Continuous banging, accompanied with the occasional breaking sound, echoed in everyone's ears. Yang Chen's clenched fist was continuously smashing on Sun Hai Jing's head, soon Sun Hai Jing's head was smashed into a bloody gourd.

“Do you really think that without a magic weapon, I would be unable to defeat you?”

Yang Chen stopped his ferocious smashing and pulled Sun Hai Jing’s mutilated head and twisted it.

Kacha!

Sun Hai Jing’s head turned in a complete circle, he was still facing in the original direction, but his vitality had been severed.

# Chapter 53 - Request To Leave For The Immortal Falling Well

Being affected by the five phases of Yin and Yang secrets, the spirit power leaving Yang Chen's body, almost immediately began to rise dramatically under the effect of the five phases rousing each other. Although his cultivation was merely at the third qi layer, because of his vigorous and extremely pure spirit power, he was not that much weaker than peak qi layer cultivators.

The five phases also contained the Ten Heavenly Stars spell, this resulted in even more formidable power. Although Sun Hai Jing already had the strength of a foundation stage cultivator, under the continuous and unceasing attacks, because he had not yet proficiently practiced his body protecting spell formation, it had been scattered with just a few attacks. Soon after that, one strike thoroughly took care of him.

His badly beaten and utterly mutilated head, as well as his corpse, which had already lost its vitality, had illustrated a fact to all of the people present, the fact that Yang Chen had gotten rid of Sun Hai Jin.

Sun Hai Jing had unexpectedly been killed by Yang Chen!

That Sun Hai Jing who possessed the strength of an initial foundation stage cultivator and in addition to that had a flying sword, had surprisingly been killed by an outer disciple at the third qi layer, Yang Chen!

The number one outer disciple expert, Zhou Zihe, had already admitted defeat, adding on to that Sun Hai Jing's savageness, everyone had already acknowledged that he possessed the strength of the initial foundation stage. Just by using his flying sword, he had forced the peak qi layer disciple Zhou Zihe to admit defeat, so his strength could be judged from that. But Sun Hai Jing's life and duel against Yang Chen was even more surprising.

That was the most surprising thing. Who could even imagine that the third qi layer disciple Yang Chen, had unexpectedly killed Sun Hai Jing with just his fists on the stage?

Although Sun Hai Jing had already been killed, within this short amount of time, these thousand outer disciples were not able to accept this great of a discrepancy. Could it be that the number one expert among the outer disciples was not a peak qi layer disciple, but rather a third qi layer disciple?

“Interesting!”

Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master, who had closed his eyes to regain his composure said this and soon after that, he raised his finger in the direction of Yang Chen, who was on the stage and lightly shot forth a fragment of spirit power.

No one in the training grounds sensed anything, but Yang Chen on the stage suddenly became alert, his body moved at lightening speed, and both of his arms came forward to defend and directly adjusted to a guarding position. At the same time, ten earth wall

talismans flew out of his qiankun pouch and in a flash, ten thick and deep earth walls rose in front of Yang Chen.

This method of using the talismans without any movements, stunned everyone even more. But everyone in the surroundings was absolutely baffled, Yang Chen had already won, why was he suddenly doing this kind of thing?

Yang Chen already didn't have any more time to explain, just after he had stopped moving, an extremely strong force struck at the recently raised earth walls.

Bang!

These ten deep earth walls were blown away like paper before this powerful force. With incredible ease the spirit power turned the earth walls into dust to fly off, as soon as it came in contact with an earth wall.

But this was still not over, after damaging all of the earth walls, the remainder of the spirit power knocked against Yang Chen's crossed arms. Yang Chen's whole body was pushed back by the enormous spirit power, but his legs didn't leave the ground, so his whole person was pushed away by at least a few meters, which left two foot marks in a perfectly straight line.

This tyrannical strength, not only had it struck Yang Chen, but a very small portion of spirit power had also entered Yang Chen's body through his arms and had firmly clashed against Yang Chen's own spirit power. It had an imposing attitude, as if wanting to

overcome all obstacles, and trying to thoroughly crush Yang Chen.

Once this portion of spirit power had entered Yang Chen's body, his own spirit power had already transformed into reverse five phases of yin and yang qi, and without sparing any efforts it began to resist this portion of invading spirit power.

With his arms, one as yin and one as yang, the reverse five phases of yin and yang were like two huge millstones, frantically beginning to consume this invading spirit power. The five phases spirit power circulated within Yang Chen's body and started to resist.

To the surrounding people, the only thing that was visible, was after Yang Chen had recoiled from being hit, a sparkling and translucent blue color had appeared on Yang Chen's arms. It was as if this blue color had turned alive and started spreading from his arms to his shoulders at lightening speed, as if it would immediately reach it. Suddenly, at that time, a red colored light appeared from Yang Chen's body and started moving towards his arms, starting to resist the blue color which was spreading through his arms.

“You really overestimate yourself!”

Chu Heng, standing near Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master, had seen the movements of the Palace Master. Seeing that Yang Chen had used his own spirit power to resist against the Palace Master, Chu Heng could not help but coldly snort and pass an assessment like this. The Palace Master had clearly used this to test Yang Chen's strength, but even with Chu Heng's current realm he would

not dare to say that he could continue to resist the Palace Master's strike. But a trifling third qi layer disciple unexpectedly kept on resisting, like he did not know the height of the heavens and the depth of the earth. He really was impossibly stupid.

Only, just as this cold snort came out of Chu Heng's throat, the situation of Yang Chen on the training grounds stage felt like one slap after another on his face.

The red colored light had unexpectedly stopped at the region below Yang Chen's shoulder. Although in the beginning it had begun to retreat, but after retreating to the region below the shoulder it did not withdraw anymore and was in a deadlock with the blue color.

“What happened?”

Chu Heng almost suspected that he had seen wrongly with his spiritual awareness, but with the Palace Master at his side, he did not dare to leave and check personally and could only keep these kind of thoughts in his mind, but he began to increasingly concentrate on the training grounds stage to observe everything that was happening there.

The deadlock between the red light and the blue color lasted only for a short moment and then it began to strike back. Slowly the blue color began to be pressed down, little by little, it even rapidly increased in speed, starting with a speed of one hair by one hair, then very quickly turning into one centimeter by one centimeter and then quickly turning into one inch by one inch. Under the numerous stares, the region the blue color had spread to was



pushed down to the region where it had first occurred, changing into one small region. After a moment, the blue color began to faint slowly and at last disappeared entirely, while the faint red light on Yang Chen's body also began to slowly wane.

At the same time, sweat was pouring down from Yang Chen's whole body like rivers, his clothes were entirely drenched and his ragged breath betrayed the hardships he had faced a moment ago. Nobody knew just how immense the pressure was that he had faced just a moment ago and how difficult it was to take.

The tightly closed eyes of Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master finally opened. A mysterious smile could be seen on his face. The movements of his mouth seemed as if he was talking to himself, but the few disciples serving him heard what he was saying:

"Third qi layer, but unexpectedly he can block my sharp spirit pressure even without using a magic weapon, interesting!"

After he said this, he suddenly raised his voice and the sound penetrated the area and was heard by everyone present in the Nine Earth Manor:

"Yang Chen, you have cleaned house in my Pure Yang Palace, which is indeed a great service, I allow you to put forth any request that is not too excessive, to reward you for your great achievement!"

All of the thousand people present were startled about where the attack had come from, but the sudden voice of Pure Yang Palace's

Palace Master caused a sensation in the Nine Earth Manor.

As the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace and a YuanYing expert, just in regards of seniority, even compared to the Hall Masters of the Pure Yang Palace, he was higher by one level. Foundation stage inner disciples like Chu Heng and Du Qian also had to address him as elder. Even if they were already formal inner disciples, usually wanting to see the Palace Master's face was just an extravagant hope for them, apart from some important events or some other major affair, these disciples basically didn't have any opportunity to get in contact with the palace master.

Just by his identity as the Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master, even showing concern for an outer disciple was already huge, this was already an unimaginable affair, let alone showing himself personally, the Nine Earth Manor's situation could be perfectly described by the words: 'Your presence brings light to my humble dwelling'. But right now, the Palace Master had surprisingly promised to fulfill any request, how could this not stun people?

This Yang Chen, what a lucky bastard he was! Everyone thought the same thing in their hearts. The Palace Master had agreed to fulfil a request, even though he had said that the request could not be too excessive, it still made all of the people there extremely frantic.

Even if his status as the Palace Master was not taken into account, just speaking of his cultivation, he was still a YuanYing stage expert. Regardless of whether it was a cultivation method, an elixir, a magic weapon or even asking to become his own direct disciple, none of these were truly excessive requests. It could easily

be said that Yang Chen had leaped to the heavens in a single bound.

There were some who were jealous, some who had mixed emotions and still more with many other kinds of emotions, but after seeing Yang Chen's performance, the inner disciples Chu Heng and Du Qian, clearly belonged to the latter. The Palace Master's one finger consonance was his method to send and receive messages from the mind. Even though he only attacked with his finger, Du Qian, Chu Heng and the other foundation disciples like them recognized that, if they were in Yang Chen's place, they would have never gotten off that lightly.

But Yang Chen was only at the third qi layer, he was one whole realm lower, yet he managed it 'easily', just like that. As long as one thought of what this implied, that the Palace Master had personally forced Yang Chen's movement, this was not too shocking.

Everyone was looking at Yang Chen with an envious expressions, as long as Yang Chen opened his mouth to ask for anything, be it a cultivation method, elixirs, a magic weapon, heavenly materials and treasures, spell formations, or even asked to increase his cultivation, he just needed to say one word. Everyone was secretly pondering within their hearts, what they would ask for, if they were in his position. So naturally, they were even more curious about Yang Chen's choice.

"Disciple Yang Chen pays his respect to the Palace Master for permitting disciple to go to the Immortal Falling Well!" Yang Chen had naturally heard the Palace Master's voice, so in accordance

with the Palace Master's words, Yang Chen freely spoke out his request.

Once Yang Chen's words came out, it immediately gave rise to huge clamor. He had not asked for a magic weapon or a cultivation method, not even any other kind of treasures, only to visit the Immortal Falling Well? The majority of people in the Nine Earth Manor hadn't even heard this name before. The first thing that flashed through everyone's mind was just that the Immortal Falling Well was some kind of treasure house which held something which Yang Chen cared about, that's why he did not even hesitate when asking the Palace Master.

But those who knew about the Immortal Falling Well, sucked in a breath of cold air. The Immortal Falling Well, hearing the name immediately anyone would see that it was not a very safe area, Yang Chen unexpectedly wanted to go there, this was really out of people's expectations.

Even the Palace Master, when hearing Yang Chen's request, could not help but wrinkle his brows. The few foundation disciples had an even more disbelieving look, but with the Palace Master at the side, they didn't dare to say anything.

But the Palace Master was still the Palace Master, he quickly overcame his astonishment and faintly laughed, then he opened his mouth to respond:

“Since you could resist an attack from my finger, you also have the qualifications to enter the Immortal Falling Well. This time, I will make an exception for you.”

He flipped his hand and a small white jade tile appeared within his hand, he lightly threw the tile and as if it was being carried by some invisible force, the tile flew away from the room towards Yang Chen on the training grounds.

“Go and prepare properly!”

Just as Yang Chen reached out to catch that white jade tile, he heard the Palace Master’s voice and hastily replied in loud voice:

“Yes!”

The following martial competition did not hold anymore great surprises, with the sole exception of Gongsun Ling, who was at the seventh qi layer but challenged three eighth-, and two ninth qi layer senior disciples, and had obtained victory in all of those challenges, making people gasp in admiration towards her skill.

After giving the tile to Yang Chen, the Palace Master did not say anything else until the martial arts competition ended, afterwards he praised Gongsun Ling with a few words and departed. The Palace Master’s departure also allowed the Nine Earth Manor, which had been tense for two days, to relax. Nobody could do anything about it, in the presence of the Palace Master, even the Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng did not dare to breathe heavily, let alone other people. Other than Yang Chen, the performance was very ordinary.

After getting loosened up, people began to make discreet

inquiries about what kind of place the Immortal Falling Well was and why Yang Chen would ask for a visit to the Immortal Falling Well. But after receiving the information about it, everyone was gobsmacked.

The Immortal Falling Well was the region which provided the disciples of every sect with a strength of the foundation stage or higher, an opportunity to temper themselves and at the same time it was also the sole exit for underground spirit beasts to come above the ground. It was both a place for cultivation and a hub to subdue underground spirit beasts, while at the same time it was a good location to acquire spirit essence. Underground spirit beasts concerned the safety of the whole world, whereas the spirit essence was relevant to any sect's spirit vein, therefore Immortal Falling Well was an extremely important region, so much so, that every sect would send at least one YuanYing expert to keep watch.

The population of underground spirit beasts was enormous, furthermore they were born from the universe and had absolutely no wisdom and acted only on instinct. Regardless of what kind of things were used to obstruct them, huge flocks of underground spirit beasts would always find a way to swarm around and annihilate everything. 'Immortal Falling' these two words were actually a warning. The Immortal Falling Well was a very well known deadly region within the cultivation world.

Everyone was shocked at this, if someone wanted to go to the Immortal Falling Well, they had to have a strength of at least the foundation stage, otherwise their sect would not issue the jade tile. If someone didn't have the command tile, they would not even be able to come in contact with the Immortal Falling Well's door, let alone going in. Although Yang Chen was at the third qi layer, he

had asked the Palace Master to agree to let him enter the Immortal Falling Well. Though he had defeated Sun Hai Jing, but when all was said and done, Sun Hai Jing was still only a peak qi layer cultivator, even if he was infinitely close to the foundation stage's true strength, he had nevertheless not achieved it. Did Yang Chen intend to throw away his life?

The only outer disciple who was not surprised by Yang Chen's decision was precisely Gongsun Ling. After the sect's martial arts competition, Gongsun Ling had immediately looked for Yang Chen to warn him to be careful, but she also did not forget to issue a challenge to Yang Chen:

“Younger Disciple Yang, you are going to the Immortal Falling Well ahead of me, but just watch me, I will soon overtake you!”

Yang Chen was extremely happy by Gongsun Ling's challenge. This implied that Gongsun Ling was not going to immerse herself in painful cultivation and would not become a cultivation lunatic who did not know what was happening in the world, at that time she had instead become even more active.

“Very well!”

Yang Chen responded to Gongsun Ling's challenge.

“I will be waiting for you at the Immortal Falling Well!”

# Chapter 54 - Second Grade Pill

## Concocting Master

“Do you really have to go to the Immortal Falling Well?”

Raising this question, was Du Qian, who had always been considerate towards Yang Chen. He could not understand it, Yang Chen was a qi layer disciple, but in the Immortal Falling Well, even with the help of a flying sword, would he be able to obstruct or kill any underground spirit beasts? This kind of unwise action basically did not seem like Yang Chen's usual way of doing things.

“Naturally!”

Yang Chen smiled, holding out his hand in an inviting position to ask Du Qian to sit down in front of him and at the same time he smilingly said:

“After asking for a request from the Palace Master, I cannot go back on it, right?”

“Do you even know how dangerous the Immortal Falling Well is?”

Du Qian was a disciple of the Law Enforcement Hall and at the same time also had a cultivation of the peak foundation stage, yet until now he hadn't gone to the Immortal Falling Well even once. Not everyone was fond of going to that kind of dangerous place to



temper themselves.

“Uncle Master, I have already learned everything that is available in Nine Earth Manor’s Hidden Pavilion, yet you ask whether I know or not?”

Du Qian was only concerned about him, for which Yang Chen appreciated him a lot, thus he was very respectful towards him and so he rapidly replied:

“Anyway, the Palace Master said to prepare properly and I also think that it would not be too late to go after I am genuinely prepared, previously I had just fought for the qualifications, that’s all.”

Yang Chen’s words eased the worry in Du Qian’s heart, Yang Chen thought that his idea of going against expectations by taking a step back was also a good move sometimes. It had to be known that, although the Immortal Falling Well was a dangerous place, the advantages were quite plentiful, so, as long as he had trained therein for a few years and did not die, he would basically become a rich and powerful person and therefore the qualifications to enter the Immortal Falling Well was also a goal for which everyone competed. Yang Chen had obtained one place when he was still in the qi realm, he had a lot of foresight indeed.

“This is also good, first snatching this qualification, then when you are at the foundation stage, it won’t be too late to go!”

Du Qian nodded slightly and was appreciating his words, but

soon afterwards, he saw Yang Chen's strange expression and suddenly his heart was jolted, so he hastily asked:

“You don't plan to go there before reaching the foundation stage, right?”

“Actually, Uncle Master, I had planned to leave after two months.”

Yang Chen told all of his plans to Du Qian without hiding anything with a smile. Hearing this, Du Qian didn't know whether to laugh or to cry.

“Even if you go with your current cultivation, you will not be able to pass the examination for new people, then what will be the point?”

Du Qian did not know what to say, only restraining the smile on his face, he sternly asked:

“You won't even be able to withstand the most low levelled underground spirit beasts! Why do you want to throw your life away?”

“I may not necessarily be throwing my life away, Uncle Master have you forgotten, I still have the ability to concoct pills.”

Yang Chen didn't tell him all of his plans, he merely said the most reassuring words to Du Qian.

“Within the Immortal Falling Well, even if there were only second grade yang qi pills, many people would still appreciate them, if I have sufficient herbs, I will be able to exchange them for a lot of benefits.”

“Second grade yang qi pills?”

When Du Qian heard this name, he was greatly astonished.

“You can refine second grade yang qi pills? Are you a second grade pill concocting master now?”

Du Qian could not help but become shocked, even a majority of the foundation stage pill concocting masters could not refine second grade yang qi pills, yet Yang Chen, who was just a minor qi layer disciple, surprisingly already had the ability to refine second grade yang qi pills. If this news was spread outside, then countless pill concocting masters would go mad.

The first grade of concocting implied the ability to refine a pill one time, while the second grade meant that the pill could be refined twice, the effects would just double. The strongest pill concocting master could refine a pill nine times. Generally speaking, refining a pill nine times was considered the limit for the pill.

Every improvement of one level would mean that the level of the pill would be increased by a huge margin, but unfortunately, this kind of increase was not all that easy. Even though Yang Chen had

been a Great Principal Golden Immortal in his previous life, when he was at death's door, he was still just a minor sixth grade pill concocting master. How rare high grade pill concocting masters were could easily be seen from this.

Even in this life, Zhu Chen Tao was the Hall Master of the Medicine Hall, but he was only a third grade pill concocting master, and he had reached this realm just recently. But this was already an achievement which people could look up to. Countless people admired Zhu Chen Tao's pill concocting skills, he was an existence which could be called a genius.

But at the moment, Du Qian was forced to admit that in a matter such as pill concocting, Zhu Chen Tao was just a nobody who was beyond redemption in front of Yang Chen. Of course, Du Qian did not dare to say this out loudly, but he was greatly startled and he unexpectedly even forgot Zhu Chen Tao's reputation in his mind.

A second grade elixir, especially an elixir like the yang qi pill did not require Yang Chen to spend much energy. With the help of his Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen could easily accomplish this. If it were not that a third grade elixir would shock the whole world, Yang Chen would have already started to refine it.

Certainly, being a second grade pill concocting master was the perfect shield for Yang Chen. Perhaps making his name at Heavenly Stairs would allow him to resist malicious outside influences for the time he remained within the Pure Yang Palace, but the reputation of a second grade pill concocting master was far more dazzling when compared to any kind of cultivation talent, moreover it was also more secure. Experts of a sect may be willing

to kill cultivation geniuses of another sect, but they would not easily offend a pill concocting master, even if he was merely a common first grade pill concocting expert.

Du Qian departed hurriedly after confirming this. He had to inform the higher ups of the sect about these world shocking news. At the same time, he also felt grateful towards Yang Chen for telling only him about this. It was clearly a huge gift by Yang Chen to him.

Within the Nine Earth Manor and the Ye Xiu Manor, Du Qian had defended Yang Chen's name, he even did not hesitate to confront the Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng, this had made the higher ups somewhat resentful towards him. Only after Yang Chen was able to produce the xun qi pill did the higher ups realize Yang Chen's worth. Now that Yang Chen had been able to become a second grade pill concocting expert, after Du Qian would report it to the higher ups, he would be thought of highly, as a person with foresight who works hard for the sect, the benefits would be tremendous.

Within his own small courtyard, after giving pointers to his four servants, just as he had sat down to prepare and taken out the Profound Spirit Furnace to maintain it, he immediately saw that on top of the peak of Meiqin Mountain, a few rays of light were rising and flying towards him at lightning speed. With a smile on his face, Yang Chen put away the Profound Spirit Furnace and afterwards calmly waited for them, while keeping an eye on those rays of light.

Soon, those rays of light appeared above the Nine Earth Manor,

they appeared to be sword shaped rays. As soon as those sword rays dropped down, within Yang Chen's small courtyard, the silhouettes of a few people could be seen. Before Yang Chen could clearly see who they were, Zhu Chen Tao's voice reached his ears:

“Yang Chen, can you refine a second grade pill?”

“Yes, Uncle Master!”

Yang Chen hastily bowed and replied and soon after that slowly raised his head. Only then did he discover that apart from Du Qian and Medicine Hall's Hall Master, Zhu Chen Tao, surprisingly Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master himself had also come to his small courtyard.

Zhu Chen Tao had a very impatient nature, so hearing Yang Chen's words, he immediately fished out a great pile of herbs from his qiankun pouch and piled them up in the courtyard and eagerly commanded:

“Immediately refine them in front of my eyes!”

His voice was full of expectation and delight, as if he had never thought Yang Chen would lie.

During the long time he had not met Yang Chen, it seemed as if Zhu Chen Tao's breath had grown even stronger. Although Yang Chen was not able to tell Zhu Chen Tao's current realm, he was certain that he had recently increased his strength. It could be said

that Yang Chen's fire controlling skill had allowed him to have an even deeper comprehension, only then could he have this kind of increase in strength.

Although the Palace Master hadn't said anything, his gaze also contained a similar expectant look with strong praise. Yang Chen, this outer disciple had already given him too many pleasant surprises.

Apart from Medicine Hall's Hall Master and Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master, Yang Chen also saw one more acquaintance, the Hall Master of the Foreign Affairs Hall, Xu Cheng Xin. Meeting Yang Chen's gaze, Xu Cheng Xin also slightly nodded as if he was extremely delighted.

Although the herbs were not equal to Yang Chen's Profound Yang Fruit in effect, but compared to ordinary materials used to refine yang qi pills, they were far superior. Yang Chen did not argue and took out the Profound Spirit Furnace from his qiankun pouch again, restored it to its ordinary dimensions and placed it within the courtyard. He had intended to start the concoction on the spot, on one hand, Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master could also watch and on the other hand, Yang Chen was absolutely not worried about any kind of mishaps.

Looking at Yang Chen's Profound Spirit Furnace, the Palace Master's and Zhu Chen Tao's eyes shone brightly. This had also confirmed to the Palace Master that Yang Chen did indeed have the strength to control and refine magic weapons, as this Profound Spirit Furnace was precisely a magic weapon which had been refined. Moreover, it could only be refined by Yang Chen,

otherwise it would not allow him to use it.

The Profound Spirit Furnace was a gift to Yang Chen by Zhu Chen Tao, so he naturally was aware about its appearance at that time. Zhu Chen Tao naturally knew that at that time the quality of this Profound Spirit Furnace had increased, he could tell this with just a glance. Regarding this change produced by Yang Chen in the short period of a year, Zhu Chen Tao was greatly regretful that he had become so old.

Yang qi pill was a very low level elixir, a normal first grade yang qi pill, is suited for the use of qi realm disciples, moreover refining it was very easy, even Yang Chen's servant Ho Lin who did not have any great talent in concocting had also refined a yang qi pill previously. Foundation stage experts have no interest in this kind of low levelled pill.

However a second grade yang qi pill was something entirely different, after being passed through refining once again, it was not any inferior to the yuan cultivation pill used by foundation stage experts. Even the cost of production was lower and the efficacy was higher, when compared to the yuan cultivation pill.

Under the attentive gazes of the Palace Master and the two Hall Masters, Yang Chen was absolutely relaxed. After dealing with the pile of herbs, he entered them into the Profound Spirit Furnace and started refining.

In his previous life, Yang Chen had not refined a yang qi pill, but in this life he had already refined dozens of them. With the experience of two lifetimes, he knew it extremely well. The people



who were standing on the side, watched as Yang Chen held the Profound Spirit Furnace with one hand and controlled the flames with the other hand, as he was skillfully adding the herbs one by one. Seeing him work so calmly under such great pressure, all of the spectators nodded inwardly.

It was the first time for the Palace Master to see Yang Chen's almost perfect control over fire. Zhu Chen Tao and Xu Cheng Xin had already experienced this and were not all that amazed, but the Palace Master was watching with an earnest expression on his face, nobody knew what he was thinking.

In less than an hour, Yang Chen had already successfully refined the yang qi pill. The raw material prepared by Zhu Chen Tao were just enough for him refine a furnace worth of first grade yang qi pills. With his unique pill collecting skill, he took out those hundred yang qi pills from the furnace and after cleaning the residual waste left in the furnace, he once again returned those already refined first grade yang qi pills into the furnace.

This time, Yang Chen did not add any extra herbs, rather he used both hands to hold the handles of the Profound Spirit Furnace, and began to control the intensity of the flames. Slowly, the first grade yang qi pills started to purify.

Purifying the medicines was an extremely meticulous work, as long as one was even the least bit inattentive, the powerful flames could immediately burn down the herbs to ashes. Yang Chen had shown an unprecedented concentration. The spectators were all aware that this moment was very important, so they all held their breath for fear of disturbing Yang Chen. After all, Yang Chen was

just a qi layer disciple, but he had already accomplished a feat which not even a foundation stage expert could be certain about accomplishing, naturally they were all very careful.

Yang Chen had required eight hours for purification. Everyone present was a cultivator, so they didn't make many movements and accompanied Yang Chen from the beginning to the end.

The extremely slender flames were nimbly rolling on the surface of the pills and the spirit power that was circulated to enter into the furnace was leading these extremely small impurities out of the furnace. This process needed a whole eight hours until it was completely finished. At that moment, Yang Chen used his usual technique to take out the pills and pull all of them out of the furnace, and placed them properly within a good jade bottle.

After the refining had ended, Zhu Chen Tao impatiently rushed over to take the jade bottle from Yang Chen's hands, he popped out a few pills and gave one to the Palace Master and Xu Cheng Xin each, while fiddling with another pill in his own hands from the large amount of pills he had in his hands.

After being refined twice, the yang qi pill had shrunken in size, but its outer surface appeared extremely smooth and round, which gave quite a pleasant sensation when touched. On the pill's outer surface, two thin, clear veins formed a circle coiling around the pill. The medicinal fragrance on the outside of the pill had decreased quite a bit, but that was actually because the outstanding and flowery smell was restrained to the inside.

Zhu Chen Tao's method to test a pill was to throw it into his

mouth. After consuming a second grade yang qi pill, Zhu Chen Tao closed his eyes and began to carefully sense its medicinal strength. The Palace Master and Xu Chen Xin also stopped inspecting the pill and attentively watched Zhu Chen Tao, waiting for him to open his eyes.

“Plentiful spirit power and also rapidly spreading, I’m sure, this is a second grade yang qi pill!”

After a short moment, Zhu Chen Tao opened his eyes and gave his judgement. Hearing this, a delighted look immediately appeared on the faces of Palace Master and Xu Cheng Xin.

“Yang Chen, what kind of pills can you refine?”

The Palace Master asked, after being pleasantly surprised.

“Only xun qi pills and yang qi pills!”

Saying this, embarrassment immediately appeared on Yang Chen’s face.

“As for other kinds of pills, I have only looked at their methods, but have never experimented.”

“So, your spirit power and medicinal knowledge have all been mastered at the Hidden Pavilion, hasn’t anyone taught you?”

The Palace Master nodded without making any further comments and continued to ask.

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen nodded his head in agreement, this was an open secret at the Ye Xiu Manor and Nine Earth Manor, not something which could be hidden, moreover Yang Chen also didn't want to pretend to be guided by Chu Heng.

“Be relieved and go to the Immortal Falling Well and remember to obtain a few spirit essences, they will be extremely beneficial for your immortal cave afterwards.”

The expression on the face of the Palace Master made it impossible to know what he was thinking and his tone was also serene, only the last words have leaked some of his thoughts.

“From today, if anyone tries to speak out against your identity as an executioner again, directly kill him. If you are unable to kill him, then come back and inform the Law Enforcement Hall and kill him with the help of the Pure Yang Palace!”

# Chapter 55 - I Will Follow Only You

On the surface, the tone of the Palace Master's voice was absolutely normal, as if nothing happened, but within his heart, the Palace Master was cursing Chu Heng with a torrent of abuses.

Du Qian had reported Chu Heng's attitude towards Yang Chen some time ago already, but in the Palace Master's eyes, an inner disciple of the mid foundation stage was far more valuable than someone who had just recently become an outer disciple and joined the Pure Yang Palace only two years ago. If Yang Chen was not able to persevere through this minor issue, that would only illustrate the fact that Yang Chen was a lump of rotten wood, which could not be carved.

But currently, without any guidance from anyone, just by relying on the knowledge he gained from the Hidden Pavilion, Yang Chen had already become a second grade pill concocting expert. And as for his cultivation, not only had he reached the third qi layer within the brief period of three years, but he had also already killed the peak qi layer cultivator Sun Hai Jing, facing him head-on. In addition to that it had been reported that several sixth and seventh qi layers cultivators had fallen under Yang Chen's hand.

If this kind of result had been due to Chu Heng's meticulous guidance, then the Palace Master would have naturally been delighted. But throughout these past three years, Chu Heng hadn't even said one word to guide him and had instead created innumerable obstacles for Yang Chen. Whether Yang Chen had learned to read or had gained enlightenment, it had all been due to his own efforts. Such a talented disciple, if he was at any other

sect, he would certainly be guided and cultivated properly, but within the Pure Yang Palace he had received this kind of treatment. How could the Palace Master, who was worried for the growth of the Pure Yang Palace every day, endure this?

In his previous life, Yang Chen did not have a lot of contact with the Palace Master, so he did not know much about his character. As for the Palace Master's instructions, he only agreed to them because he could sense some of the anger the Palace Master held for his treatment.

But Xu Cheng Xin and Zhu Chen Tao who were familiar with the nature of the Palace Master, had sensed that deep rooted anger within the Palace Master's voice. Both of them were also angry, the outer disciple's Merit Transferring Disciple would definitely have to take the consequences this time. Perhaps, this time even his Uncle Master, Liang Shao Ming, would not be able to help him.

But these two didn't feel any sympathy for Chu Heng, they had a favourable impression of Yang Chen, so naturally they would not have a good attitude towards Chu Heng. Previously they were not aware that while cultivating, Yang Chen also had to face these kinds of circumstances. If they had known about this earlier, then Chu Heng would have already received what was coming for him, and would not have gotten the chance to create such a situation at the sect's martial competition.

If Chu Heng said he didn't have his fingers in the meteoric rise of Sun Hai Jing's strength within those three months, who would believe it? There is also the matter of Yang Chen being attacked by assassins which also had Chu Heng's secret support, otherwise

how could Sun Hai Jing, a fourth qi layer outer disciple, get the money to hire seventh and eighth qi layer experts?

These were naturally some important affairs which were investigated later, but the earlier words of the Palace Master allowed Yang Chen to be reassured and look to Pure Yang Palace's strength to support him, so that he could cultivate at ease.

Only Zhu Chen Tao thought that this was somewhat unfortunate, Yang Chen was a second grade pill concocting master, if he concentrated on the dao of pill concocting, he would certainly become a great pill concocting expert. Unfortunately The Palace Master had already given Yang Chen permission to go to the Immortal Falling Well, otherwise Zhu Chen Tao would have confined Yang Chen and forced him to practice the dao of pill concocting.

The person who was most happy here, apart from these several high class experts, was precisely Du Qian. The Palace Master's words towards Yang Chen implied that he would do his utmost to support Yang Chen, perhaps this could not have happened without Du Qian's help, he estimated that the reward for this service would be of great benefit to him. To be able to help with the problems of Yang Chen, whom he appreciated, and also receiving great benefits. Du Qian greatly regretted that these kinds of misdeeds did not happen every day.

Following this, Yang Chen immediately started gathering many different herbs for the yang qi pills, almost sweeping the market of the town nearby clean. After Zhu Chen Tao returned, he also gave a good amount of herbs and money to Yang Chen. Yang Chen's

qiankun pouch was completely packed with the materials to make yang qi pills, but he still he didn't stop buying them. Fortunately he had the Achievement Ring, which was a magic tool with an infinite amount of space, so he could collect even more raw materials.

Chu Heng had been removed from the position of Merit Transferring Disciple and had simultaneously been arranged by the Hall Master of the Luminous Moon Hall to go to another famous, fearful region, the Desolate Valley, to temper himself. The Luminous Moon Hall's inheritance was water attributed, but the Desolate Valley was a barren land where water was very rare, this kind of arrangement really exceeded the idea of a punishment, naturally this was also set under the Palace Master's watch.

For the time being, Yang Chen did not pay much attention to Chu Heng, but this didn't mean that he would let Chu Heng get away with everything he had done. In any case, immortal cultivation was a long road, Yang Chen would have plenty of time later to slowly take his revenge. As for the present, his top priority was to immediately go to the Immortal Falling Well.

The reason why Yang Chen wanted to hurry to the Immortal Falling Well was due to a secret of the Immortal Falling Well. In his previous life, Yang Chen had learned this secret only after ascending to the world of immortals, from someone of the Heavenly Court. The Immortal Falling Well, apart from having a large amount of high level underground spirit beasts due to its unique topography, it also had a fire source which would help Yang Chen's pill concocting cultivation, the geocentric flame.



The geocentric flame did not have formidable offensive power, but, at the moment it was most suitable for Yang Chen at this stage. As long as he was able to obtain this fire source, Yang Chen's fire attributed cultivation would advance one more layer and not only would his pill concoction become more proper, even for other tasks, like refining herbs, it would have great benefits. At the same time, the geocentric flame was able to enhance the grade of his Profound Spirit Furnace. One has to know that the best way for the Profound Spirit Furnace to increase in grade, was by swallowing different fire sources.

Initially Yang Chen would have only come here once he had properly attained the foundation stage, but the Palace Master had unexpectedly given him an opportunity to skip this process, during the Martial Arts Competition, so naturally Yang Chen immediately went to obtain the qualifications to enter the Immortal Falling Well, to gain the considerable benefits it had to offer, such as obtaining a large amount of spiritual essence.

Before leaving, Yang Chen had to make arrangements for his servants and guide each one of them, according to their character. He guided his third and fourth qi layer servants under the pretense of having gained the knowledge from the Hidden Pavilion, so others couldn't say a thing.

His servants had also resolved to not fall short, at the moment, Ho Lin's fire controlling skill had already increased by a large amount, her cultivation had also reached the peak of the third qi layer, just one step away from making a breakthrough. Gu Qin had also followed Shen Da's footsteps and had entered the fourth qi layer. The slowest of them was Ting Yuan, but although she was only at the third qi layer, she was still able to refine low level

talisman tools.

At the moment, these four servants had far greater ambitions when compared to the time when they were at the Ye Xiu Manor. Even they had noticed that the sudden increase in Yang Chen's status, would entail large benefits for them, such as an increased amount of time they had for cultivation, when they previously had to do chores for the sect.

After making the proper arrangements, Yang Chen departed from the Nine Earth Manor. But before going to the Immortal Falling Well, he first had to visit the Ye Xiu Manor, as he had made a promise to Manager Wang Yuan, that he would get him one Profound Yang Fruit.

“Congratulations, Younger Disciple Yang!”

Wang Yuan was the Manager of the Ye Xiu Manor so he could not leave easily on a normal day. Every day he had been hearing more and more news about Yang Chen, so seeing Yang Chen today, he immediately cupped both hands to congratulate him.

Yang Chen smiled in response to Wang Yuan's greetings and at the same time also cupped his hands towards Wang Yuan, saying:

“Congratulations, Senior Disciple Wang, it seems that your strength has increased yet again!”

Wang Yuan had once again increased his strength when

compared to the last time he had seen Yang Chen. Because he had the guarantee of receiving a Profound Yang Fruit from Yang Chen, he had gained some self confidence, initially he was just an eighth qi layer cultivator, but at the moment, as if he had gained the highest level of enlightenment, he had already broken through to the ninth qi layer and then immediately to the peak of the qi realm, only one step away from the foundation stage.

“It was my good fortune that I was able to get Younger Disciple’s support!”

Wang Yuan was really grateful to Yang Chen. Originally he was the same as Shangguan Feng, hopeless for reaching the foundation stage, that’s why he was picked as the Manager of the Ye Xiu Manor. But Yang Chen’s promise to give him a thousand year old Profound Yang Fruit had ignited his desire to reach foundation stage again. Propelled by this force, within the brief period of a few years, his cultivation, which had stopped at the bottleneck, had suddenly advanced by leaps and bound. After breaking through from his original boundary, he had rushed to the closest he could be to the foundation stage.

After thinking about this carefully, Wang Yuan felt that, even if Yang Chen did not give him a thousand year old Profound Yang Fruit, he was still confident in reaching the foundation stage within ten years.

However, when he looked at the bright red fruit in Yang Chen’s hands, although Wang Yuan was already at the peak qi realm and his mind had been tempered properly, yet he could not stop his heart from beating frantically within his chest.

That fruit's colour, shape and size, all were exactly the same as the thousand year Profound Yang Fruit which he had seen Yang Chen eating last time, but not only did everything look the same, it was actually a real Profound Yang Fruit. Yang Chen had not broken his promise and had really found a Profound Yang Fruit for him.

“Senior Disciple, this is the thing I promised to give to you.”

Yang Chen opened his hand sincerely and offered the thousand year Profound Yang Fruit to Wang Yuan and said with a smile on his face:

“This time, because of the Floating Mountain Assembly, I did not have much time to visit Senior, nor did I have many opportunity to delay along the way. I hope that Senior forgives me!”

Wang Yuan's hands trembled while receiving the thousand year old Pure Yang Fruit. After receiving the Pure Yang Fruit he stayed rooted to the ground, with a shaken mind, not knowing what to do next. Only after Yang Chen reminded him did he take out a jade box to store the fruit properly and then he repeatedly expressed his thanks to Yang Chen.

Never before had the foundation stage been so close to him, just one step away. His tremendous fortune still made him shiver slightly. Originally he was selected as the Manager of Ye Xiu Manor because he was considered as a clever and eloquent person, but at this moment he kept on talking stupidly, trying to express his

gratefulness for Yang Chen. Within those stammering words, the word ‘thanks’ was mixed in randomly, really proving that Wang Yuan had lost his self control.

Only after regaining his calmness with great difficulty in front of Yang Chen, did Wang Yuan start to think about his future path. After receiving the Profound Yang Fruit, advancing to the foundation stage was not much of an issue. It would not be a long time before he would be able to become an official inner disciple.

However, even among the inner disciples, there were quite a few factions. Basically, there were many Palace Halls and Main Halls, which had specific purposes pertaining to different aspects among each of them. Logically, Wang Yuan would be considered under the power of the Palace Hall or Main Hall which he would enter. But at the moment, looking at this extremely young and peak level genius, standing in front of him, Wang Yuan suddenly thought that perhaps following Yang Chen within the Pure Yang Palace would not be a bad path.

Not to mention the fact that Yang Chen had already proven himself by ascending to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, just by seeing the great value which Medicine Hall’s Hall Master attached to him, he had already gotten some clues. For the past two years, the Ye Xiu Manor had received a new type of pill, known as ‘xun qi pill’, for the preparatory disciples, which allowed them to sense qi quite easily and start on the path of cultivation. Just this one pill had increased the number of outer disciples by sixteen in the past two years, which was at least twice as many as usual.

Whose contribution was this pill? Although this information was

very tightly sealed, the Manager of the Ye Xiu Manor had still gotten many clues. All of this had happened only after Yang Chen entered the Nine Earth Manor, added to that, his importance to the Medicine Hall's Hall Master, if Wang Yuan could still not guess the rest, then he would be a real fool.

A person who had shown talent for either cultivation or concocting pills, regardless of what kind of person he was, everyone would put in great effort to curry favor with them, let alone Yang Chen, who was a natural genius in both of them.

At the time when he made the prompt decision to accept the position of Manager at the Ye Xiu Manor, then when he saw Yang Chen holding the Profound Yang Fruit, he had decided to come to Yang Chen's side, from this it could be seen that Wang Yuan had a resolute and firm character. After absentmindedly holding the Profound Yang Fruit for a moment, he immediately decided which path he had to choose.

“Younger Disciple Yang, whatever sort of troubles you have later on, do not hesitate to inform me. As for all of the matters which this Senior Disciple has in the Pure Yang Palace, I will follow Younger Disciple's lead!”

Wang Yuan no longer spoke any more words of gratitude, instead he declared his devotion and loyalty to Yang Chen. These words were spoken very sincerely, without the slightest amount of contempt because his cultivation was higher than Yang Chen's.

“I do not dare, Senior Disciple Wang, in the future, if there is a problem, we must support each other! These kinds of words must

never be spoken again!”

Yang Chen politely declined.

Wang Yuan made the promise and within his heart he became determined about this. These words would never be said again, if any kind of major affair occurred, he would follow Yang Chen’s instructions. This time Yang Chen had helped him to become a foundation stage expert, maybe next time he could help him reach the JieDan stage.

Yang Chen hadn’t realized that he had unintentionally gained himself many faithful followers. After bidding farewell to Wang Yuan, Yang Chen started to move on the road to the Immortal Falling Well alone.

If it were any other person, he would never know the location of the Immortal Falling Well without getting directions from someone, but Yang Chen was thoroughly aware of the way to the Immortal Falling Well. After he had travelled a thousand miles after leaving the Meiqing Mountain, Yang Chen suddenly discovered that someone was apparently following him secretly, but this person was extremely clever and hadn’t revealed the slightest bit of his presence. After detecting him, Yang Chen calmly turned into another direction. After spending two days riding on the bamboo falcon, he stopped at the edge of a deep pond at the very bottom of a hidden and not very well known valley.

After leisurely putting away the bamboo falcon, Yang Chen took out the commanding jade tile and inserted his spirit power into it, a circular sphere of light shrouded Yang Chen therein. Soon after

that, without idling around, Yang Chen jumped into the the pond and in flash he disappeared without a trace.

After the time it takes to burn a stick of incense, the figure of a person appeared on the side of the abyss, knitting his brows and looking at the shady pond at the bottom of the valley. Thinking for a while, he put his hand into the water and when he found nothing unusual, after hesitating again and again, he jumped into the water and began to sink.

After sinking by ten meters, he felt no peculiarity, but he still couldn't see the end of the pond, and it was very dark to look at. The sinking person felt quite relieved, and using his spirit power, he once again began to dive. Just as he thought that he could overtake Yang Chen very easily, something strange suddenly happened.



# Chapter 56 - Is This A Place For You To Play Around?

The spiritual awareness of the person who was following Yang Chen was focused on tracking Yang Chen's figure, so he hadn't discovered that within the water, a very long ribbon was floating silently. When he had discovered that there was something strange about the surrounding water, it was already too late.

The long ribbon suddenly rushed towards him, tightly winding around his body. In a moment, his flying sword appeared before him, but before he could use it, he suddenly felt as if he had been stabbed in his neck and he suddenly sensed that his whole body had been bound tightly.

The fierce pain did not let him notice that he had lost control over his flying sword. In a moment, the sword ray was seen flying away from his body, then it came to halt within the water and soon the sword ray started flickering and slowly started to sink down.

He wanted to use his strength to resist that large amount of constrictive force, but to his despair, he found that he was unable to make his body move, as if, apart from the sensation of pain, he had no awareness of his body.

He had clearly seen that the ribbon like thing which was twisting around him was a slender python with black stripes on dark, green colored skin, making it totally blend in with the water. The poisonous python was not very thick, but it still had the breath of a

demonic beast. But, its breath was completely hidden, if it were not attacking him, the person who pursued Yang Chen could basically not discover it.

Not only was the poisonous python wrapped around him, but it was also very possible that it had already bitten him, the pursuer had given up all the hopes. He still couldn't understand why had Yang Chen jumped into this region. This was not the entrance of Immortal Falling Well, could it be he wanted to throw away his life?

During his despair, he suddenly found that the flying sword which had been sinking had slowly started to rise again. Looking at the familiar flying sword, hope began to shine within the eyes of the pursuer. But, when he saw his flying sword in the hands of Yang Chen, his hope immediately turned into despair.

Yang Chen was standing some distance away from him, shrouded in a dazzling light and with the flying sword in one hand, his entire self was wrapped within the faint radiance of the command tile, even his clothes hadn't become wet. In the other hand, he was holding something and was rushing towards the pursuer. The pursuer could clearly see that it was the commonly used great medicine, Five Colored Zoysia, used to detoxify the poison of the highly toxic demonic python, furthermore, it was a whole batch of many years old Five Colored Zoysia.

Looking at the Five Colored Zoysia within Yang Chen's hand, the pursuer became hopeful once again, but he was unable to say anything, he only could increase the pain showing on his face, with an expression that was begging Yang Chen to rescue him. Until

now he had not understood why Yang Chen had not been attacked by the demonic python, but instead he, who had a higher cultivation than him, had become the prey.

“Sorry, I never save those who harbor malicious intent towards me.”

Yang Chen said, while observing the begging expression on the pursuer’s face and slightly shook his head, following which, Yang Chen’s voice reached the ears of the pursuer.

Hearing this, his hopes were shattered again and he abandoned all hopes of living. At this moment he stopped his futile resistance. Soon the pursuer heard the sound of breaking bones and a moment later, the view in front of him turned dark, with the exception of two fierce teeth. In a flash, those teeth entered into his flesh and he lost consciousness.

Then the demonic python swallowed the pursuer completely, but Yang Chen was still observing all of this motionlessly, as if he was not the least bit worried that the python might attack him. After the python swallowed the pursuer, it started roaming around within the water, its gaze swept across Yang Chen once, but as if it had seen something terrifying, it did not dare to come near him.

It seemed as if it was fidgeting for some time, but afterwards it turned around in a circle towards another direction, before it suddenly opened its mouth and spat out the qiankun pouch and the jade belt of the pursuer, whom it had just swallowed. After spitting it out, a sound was once again heard from the body of the demonic python. It sounded like ‘chug chug’, and as if something

had shattered into pieces, the thick swell in its body became normal again. Apparently it had finally been relieved. It glanced at Yang Chen again, but soon it silently turned around and disappeared to the bottom of the pond.

“Wishing to digest this kind of defensive magic weapon, truly overestimating yourself!”

Yang Chen mumbled to himself, immediately grabbed the jade band and the qiankun pouch and then started to float upwards rapidly. Soon after he began his ascent, he finally broke through the surface of the water and landed on the shore nearby.

This was not an entrance to the Immortal Falling Well, but according to Yang Chen’s memory, this was the ancient nest of a demonic python, which had stirred up trouble two thousand years in the future, when he was ascending in his past life. But that was still an affair, two thousand years from now, at the moment it had not become powerful enough. Within the Medicine Garden which Yang Chen possessed, there were numerous herbs that had matured for many years, which could resist the demonic python, that’s why the demonic python had not attacked Yang Chen.

But even though it had not yet become powerful enough to stir up big trouble, to deal with a mere foundation stage expert, it still had more than enough power. In addition to that, the spiritual awareness of the pursuer was mainly focused on Yang Chen, so the demonic python was able to attack him sneakily and bite him, releasing the highly toxic poison into his body, which reduced the pursuer’s ability to resist even further.

What an unfortunate guy, just because of his undue curiosity and the arrogance he had because of his higher cultivation when compared with Yang Chen, making him think he could easily take Yang Chen's life at any time, he had been led to the mouth of death by Yang Chen.

The flying sword, because the spiritual awareness of its master had completely faded away, had sunken down as an ownerless object and had easily been marked with Yang Chen's spiritual awareness and was then added to the sword box. This grade of flying sword, Yang Chen would not even look at it and had only used it to increase his collection.

The Five Colored Zoysia was a sacred thing for detoxification, most of all the zoysia which had been born from a thousand year matured demonic python, the higher the toxicity of the demonic python, the better is its detoxification effect. As soon as the demonic python had bitten him, the foundation stage follower had immediately lost control over his flying sword, from this it could be clearly seen that its toxicity was very high, so naturally the Zoysia which Yang Chen had obtained could be considered as the best among the best.

The jade belt was the item Yang Chen was most interested in, even after the demonic python had swallowed it, it was not able to subdue it and could only spit it out for Yang Chen's convenience. This was clearly a very good defensive magic tool.

It was the same as the flying sword, a magic tool, but it was a specialized on defense. Yang Chen used his spiritual awareness to probe it, only to find that it was surprisingly a refined defensive

magic item with a fire jade rock spell. Because the highest quality of fire jade was used as raw material and combined with the earth attributed rock spell formation, as long as one inserts his spirit power into it, it would immediately enclose the body with a protective spell formation.

At the moment, Yang Chen lacked this kind of defensive magic item. Although it was not very powerful, it could still take one strike from an initial foundation stage expert. Having this fire jade belt, Yang Chen could add a layer of security.

Throwing the qiankun pouch into his Achievement Ring, Yang Chen started to process it with the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets and then wore it on his body. The raw materials used to make it were very good, but unfortunately Yang Chen's cultivation was lacking by too much, otherwise he would have immediately used the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets to refine it and it certainly would have become a top grade magic item.

After obtaining this jade fire belt, Yang Chen's combat prowess had increased by an entire level, feeling relieved, he searched for a proper region at the side of the demonic python's nest and began to search through that person's qiankun pouch.

That qiankun pouch was manufactured by the Greatest Heaven Sect, which could be seen clearly by the mark of the Greatest Heaven Sect on it. Before this, Yang Chen did not know to which sect the pursuer belonged, but after seeing this mark, Yang Chen understood clearly.

In this life, there was still some time left before he incited the

Greatest Heaven Sect, then why was the Greatest Heaven Sect coming again and again, knocking at his door?

This kind of thing made Yang Chen furious. Could it be because of the body refining pill he received from Shi Fairy at the execution ground? If that was the cause for a foundation stage expert to spare no expenses for killing him, then weren't the people of the Greatest Heaven Sect too excessive?

Could it be because of the affair of crippling the JieDan stage experts at the Heavenly Stairs last time? Yang Chen thought deeply about this and felt that this was the only probable reason. Even if Greatest Heaven Sect was very strong and could be called the strongest sect within the cultivation world, it could still not bear the loss of a few JieDan experts at the assembly for qi layer disciples.

Many people were aware that Yang Chen had left for the Immortal Falling Well, clearly word of it had also reached the Greatest Heaven Sect. Perhaps they were not clear about why Yang Chen was doing this, but after the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace, as well as the Medicine Hall's Hall Master and the Foreign Affair Hall's Hall Master had collectively hurried to Yang Chen's small courtyard, so they knew that, clearly, some kind of important development had occurred.

There was also Chu Heng, he would probably not conceal any affair that took place at the Nine Earth Manor from the Greatest Heaven Sect, even if he did not know the exact details, he could still approximately surmise what was going on. Since Medicine Hall's Hall Master Zhu Chen Tao had personally appeared, this

clearly had something to do with pill concocting.

As for people of the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen could kill them without any burden to his heart, this person was not even killed by Yang Chen, he had just gone to look for a Five Colored Zoysia, yet that person insisted on chasing him secretly, could he still blame Yang Chen for not warning him?

Within the qiankun pouch, there were no magic weapons, but rather it had several hundred catties of spirit stones. It seemed to Yang Chen that this guy, who was a foundation stage expert, was a poor wretch. Apart from fire jade belt and his flying sword, this guy had nothing at the grade of magic tools. As for talisman tools and talisman gems, Yang Chen didn't find any.

But he did have several herbs, which made Yang Chen delighted. They were matured for approximately a hundred years. Although they did not have any great value, they would still have a pretty good medicinal strength, just enough to allow Yang Chen to refine a few furnaces worth of good medicines. There were still a few lumps of lower quality ores, but they were also not any great rarities, merely ranging between medium to high grade raw materials, but they would be slightly useful for refining the Profound Spirit Furnace, so still better than nothing.

The only thing that made Yang Chen really happy were the jade slips it contained. Yang Chen careful picked them up and started to examine them one by one, using his spiritual awareness.

There were a few pill recipes, one of them was for the yin and yang nature pill, which was refined by using thousand year



ginseng as the main herb. This pill was very useful for foundation stage disciples. Unfortunately, Yang Chen already knew the recipe for the pill, so this didn't have any real significance to him. Furthermore, a foundation stage pill's recipe, was meaningless to him.

The Emperor Profound Earth Secrets was the Greatest Heaven Sect's yang earth attribute cultivation method, it was the best earth attributed cultivation method for the foundation stage or lower. The word 'Emperor' also stood for the meaning 'peak', compared to the fifth earth cultivation method in which Yang Chen currently trained in, its grade was higher by a great margin. Yang Chen simply went mad with joy after seeing this.

Originally, Yang Chen's Five Phases of Yin and Yang Secrets were different kinds of cultivation methods put together, so after obtaining these Emperor Profound Earth Secrets, Yang Chen immediately wanted to change the cultivation method he used for cultivating fifth earth originally, but Yang Chen managed to restrain himself and began to look at the rest of the jade slips.

There also were two scrolls of spell diagrams, both were earth attributed and attached most importance to defense, one of them was precisely the rock spell which was on the fire jade belt and the other one was also very ordinary, so Yang Chen put them away.

Finally, on the one last jade slip there was a record of all the herbs and ores known to the Greatest Heaven Sect and describing the method used to refine them. Compared to the records held by the Pure Yang Palace, this was far superior. Afterall, the Greatest Heaven Sect was the number one sect, compared to a second grade

sect, such as Pure Yang Palace, the knowledge they had was much deeper. Unfortunately, it was still not of much use to Yang Chen.

Only after checking out everything, did Yang Chen pick up the Profound Emperor Earth Secrets once again and began to comprehend the content written within. In his previous life, Yang Chen hadn't cultivated earth attributed cultivation methods, so he was extremely careful. Once he began to cultivate the most basic one of these cultivation method, he did not need to care about it a lot. But the Profound Emperor Earth Secrets were a high grade cultivation method, so he first had to comprehend and link it together before he could begin cultivating.

It was not a cultivation method for everyone, it could easily be memorized with just one look it, but everyone has their own understanding and comprehension, even the people who had produced this spell could not use exact words to describe everything precisely, as everything depended on the cultivator's own perception.

That's why this time Yang Chen was very cautious and only began cultivating it after taking ten days to understand it properly. Fortunately, for a disciple who already had a different cultivation method has his foundation, the Profound Emperor Earth Secrets would rapidly complete one heavenly circulation and begin to replace the original foundation cultivation method.

The Five Phases of Yin and Yang Secrets began to rotate, so Yang Chen had no option but to start controlling the Emperor Profound Earth Secrets, so that it would remain in equilibrium with the other cultivation methods. But a high level cultivation method

would increase the overall cultivation efficiency, so immediately after Yang Chen achieved equilibrium, the rate of spirit power accumulation had increased by at least two times.

At the moment, among Yang Chen's Five Phases of Yin and Yang Secrets, three of them were already high grade cultivation methods, including the third and fourth fire cultivation methods and the recently acquired Profound Emperor Earth Secrets. He was convinced that, if all of the ten types of cultivation method were replaced with high grade cultivation methods, his cultivation would advance by leaps and bounds.

Yang Chen had stayed here for half a month, taking care of the pursuer and cultivating. After finishing everything, Yang Chen leisurely mounted the bamboo falcon and rushed to the Immortal Falling Well's entrance valley.

After reaching there, he inserted spirit power into the tile and rays of light from the commanding tile began to quickly envelop Yang Chen's whole body and soon Yang Chen was wrapped up in a ball of light and began to slowly sink into the ground. The Immortal Falling Well, the only exit for the underground spirit beasts was basically below the ground. The spell formation arranged here allowed the people who had the command tile to enter.

“Newcomer?”

Very quickly, Yang Chen appeared within a stone room, all six surfaces were made of stone and there wasn't anyone present in the stone room except for Yang Chen, but after a moment, a sound

echoed within Yang Chen's ears:

“Which sect, announce your identity!”

“Outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen!”

Yang Chen was aware of this rule, so naturally he declared his status.

“Outer disciple? Qi realm?”

The owner of the voice clearly hadn't anticipated Yang Chen's cultivation, he was somewhat taken aback and astonishment was clear within his voice.

“An outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace?”

Suddenly another voice echoed in Yang Chen's ears.

“A trifling qi stage cultivator, is this Immortal Falling Well a place where you can come to play around?”

# Chapter 57 - If You Speak False Words, You Must Pay The Price

“This Yang Chen requests to see the great master!”

Yang Chen said this as he cupped his hands, facing towards where the voice had come from. Although the tone of the other party was very rude, it gave Yang Chen a familiar feeling, only he could not remember who it was.

“Humph!”

With that cold snort, the stone wall in front of Yang Chen suddenly disappeared and he found himself standing on an empty, flat ground.

There was no sunshine here, but above his head he could see the lights of night pearls, which provided the lighting here. Although it was not as bright as sunshine, for cultivators it was already sufficient to see everything.

In front of Yang Chen, four people were standing in a row, including both the person who had snorted and the one who had spoken. Yang Chen knew that these were the gatekeepers of the Immoral Falling Well's entrance. The gatekeepers have always included the elite disciples from every sect. These defenders were at least at the foundation stage and together with the entrance spell formation, they were strong enough to resist JieDan stage experts.

Among the four people, Yang Chen remembered three of them from his past life, only of one he didn't have any impression of. Now Yang Chen had already determined who the person that had snorted was. In his previous life, this guy had chased to kill Yang Chen and he was a disciple of TianQuan Sect, known as Jin Tao. At that time, he was at the peak of the JieDan stage, but currently he was only at the peak of foundation stage.

He had tried to kill him in his previous life because of the orders of the Greatest Heaven Sect, but right now Jin Tao did not have any reason to show this kind of attitude towards Yang Chen. But Yang Chen immediately remembered that at the Floating Mountain Assembly, he had killed Han Jiande, a disciple of the TianQuan Sect, as well as forcing a JieDan expert of the sect to lose a layer of cultivation, perhaps this was the reason.

“This is the Immortal Falling Well, can qi layer disciples not come here?”

At this moment, Yang Chen began to pretend to be stupid and filled with surprise, taking on the appearance of a country bumpkin who did not know the rules of society. He was looking around everywhere sizing up all of his surroundings, and after looking for quite a while, his gaze moved to the four people with fear and trepidation on his face, appearing as if he was unwilling to accept this.

“The Immortal Falling Well is not a place where a trifling qi layer disciple like you can come!”

Jin Tao continued to speak as before.

“You don’t have the qualifications! This Pure Yang Palace has become more and more outrageous and surprisingly even gave the command tile to a qi realm disciple.”

Jin Tao’s tone was extremely arrogant, even when he was talking about the Pure Yang Palace. Apart from Yang Chen, a minor qi layer disciple, there was nobody else of the Pure Yang Palace here, so even if he was a little arrogant there would still not be any serious consequences. The crucial point was that he wanted to vent his sect’s resentment.

“Disciple Yang Chen pays his respects to Elder Wu!”

There was no difference on Yang Chen’s face just an expression of strong veneration. This gesture was directed at the constantly taunting Jin Tao, who hurried to move out of the way.

Yang Chen’s words made these people very confused, but nobody dared to accept Yang Chen’s gesture. Yang Chen had made it absolutely clear that he was paying his respects to Elder Wu. In the Immortal Falling Well, there was only one Elder Wu and he was precisely one of the five powerful elders elected by every sect to keep watch over the Immoral Falling Well.

The five formidable elders also used to have one loose cultivator, but due to his astonishing comprehension and innate skill, he had already cultivated to the Da Cheng stage. Because of his good moral character and exceedingly powerful strength, he was an overseer

of the Immortal Falling Well and simultaneously also the person who would handle different matters at the Immortal Falling Well. All of the rules of the Immortal Falling Well had been drawn by these five formidable Elders, so no one dared to defy them.

Even though Jin Tao was very arrogant, he still did not dare to accept Yang Chen's act of paying his respects to Elder Wu, otherwise he would not even need the people of the Immortal Falling Well to take care of him, as long as the sect leader of the TianQuan sect heard about it, he would immediately have Jin Tao's cultivation crippled and evict him from the sect, and this was already the lightest punishment.

“Are you not Elder Wu?”

Yang Chen said after Jin Tao had bent over and dodged out of the way.

“I never said that I am Elder Wu!”

Jin Tao coldly snorted again. The four people did not know that Yang Chen was acting.

“Has the Immortal Falling Well changed its rules? The world's sect leaders don't know anything about this. At least my Pure Yang Palace's sect leader did not tell me at the time of giving me the command tile that qi layer disciples cannot go to the Immortal Falling Well.”



Yang Chen was staring at Jin Tao, suddenly he smiled and said:

“I have researched many ancient records, but still didn’t find that the Immortal Falling Well had this kind of rule. So I believe this is a new rule of the Immortal Falling Well. For such a change in the rules, apart from a bigger sect’s Sect Master, it seems only one of the five formidable Elders can do this.”

“Since you are not Elder Wu, then there is no use for me to say many words!”

Yang Chen cupped his hands again.

“This young disciple will leave immediately, I have to make a report of the new rule to my Palace Master!”

After he finished speaking, a faint light from the command tile enveloped Yang Chen again, preparing for him to leave.

“Wait a moment!”

Including Jin Tao, the four people on the scene were scared stiff. The Immortal Falling Well had never had this kind of rule, it was only that Jin Tao had heard Yang Chen’s name in a bad light, therefore he subconsciously wanted to suppress him, but he hadn’t thought that Yang Chen would get cold feet. If they allowed Yang Chen to leave and he informed the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace, then these four people would surely be annihilated without leaving an intact corpse.

These four did not dare to slight him and hastily obstructed Yang Chen, but Jin Tao came forward one step and said in a loud voice:

“Yang Chen, you piece of shit, you want to falsely accuse us, do you know what kind of sin this is?”

“Piece of shit?”

Yang Chen smiled.

“How come?”

He flashed his hand and a sound storing rock appeared in his hand. Immediately the conversation between Jin Tao and Yang Chen resounded within everyone’s ears.

From Yang Chen asking whether a qi realm disciple could not enter the Immortal Falling Well to Jin Tao’s arrogant reply, everything was clearly recorded without even missing a single word. Listening to this conversation, the complexion of all four immediately paled.

Yang Chen had the command tile and had been recorded from the moment he entered, so he was neither an invading demon, nor had he broken any rules. So right now, even if they wanted to forcibly take away the sound storing stone from Yang Chen’s hands, it was impossible. Their responsibility was guarding the door, not to attack humans.

Indeed, with this sound storing rock, as long as Yang Chen returned and let the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace hear it, Jin Tao would certainly be in great trouble, taking down the other three with him, because they were also at the scene but hadn't corrected Jin Tao's mistake, so they would surely be accused of the same crime. The rules of the Immortal Falling Well, how could a trifling foundation stage cultivator like Jin Tao make absurd suggestions about them?

The only responsibility of the gatekeepers was to defend the entrance, as long as they authenticated the command tiles and people didn't break any rules, the defenders could not dare to casually punish them, that was a taboo. Even if the TianQuan sect greatly cared about Jin Tao, they could still not dare to offend these five formidable elders. This was not just a problem of saving face, but it was also for the benefit of the large number of sects involved. If they really let Yang Chen turn away and leave, these four could absolutely not handle the consequences.

Among the four people, one of them was very agile, it was the person whom Yang Chen did not recognize. Suddenly, with a big stride forward he reached out his hand to grab Yang Chen's arm and said:

“Just a joke! It was just a joke, Younger Disciple Yang should not bother about it!”

It was not that he was apologizing, rather the sound storing rock was no longer in Yang Chen's hand, he wanted to grab it but was not able to, so he could only use these sweet words to make Yang

Chen stay. As long as Yang Chen did not report anything, these four would naturally not have any problems.

This guy had pulled Yang Chen with a smile, but his gaze swept to Jin Tao's face, indicating him to do something. After all, he was only a spectator and the real offender in this case was Jin Tao. This glance was precisely to ask Jin Tao to resolve this situation.

How could Jin Tao have foreseen this, his unintentional words would unexpectedly be used against him by this repulsive youngster in front of him, by storing them in a sound storing rock. If someone on the outside heard this, he certainly would lose all of his face.

Maybe he could kill him some other time, but breaking any rules right now is absolutely out of question. The Immortal Falling Well was a place where lives were lost to accidents all the time. Not to mention the fact that Jin Tao was only a foundation stage youngster, even if he was YuanYing expert breaking the rules, he would still be chased and killed by the five formidable Elders, without getting a chance to escape. The Immortal Falling Well was a strategic location, in case an accident happens here, who would take responsibility for the subsequent loss of life? Even during an ordinary day, everyone had to be careful, breaking rules here was just courting death.

“You were joking?”

The smile on Yang Chen's face, was so false, that even he himself noticed it. Not bothering to conceal his greed, he asked:

“These words, do they mean that a minor qi layer disciple like me can indeed enter the Immortal Falling Well?”

“Naturally you can!”

The person pulling Yang Chen’s arm smilingly repeated what he said and afterwards released his arm. Jin Tao had already come over and this was precisely Jin Tao’s problem to deal with. Anyway, if they really couldn’t come to an agreement, they could also not be blamed as the culprits. With that expression on Yang Chen’s face, anyone could see what he wanted, the one who had caused this trouble had to resolve it, all of them were clever, so they all clearly understood this.

Unfortunately, at the moment, Jin Tao had committed such a foolish mistake. The rock within Yang Chen’s hand could immediately strip him of his life, even if Jin Tao could not bear to stand the sight of Yang Chen, even if Yang Chen had killed a disciple of the TianQuan sect at the Heavenly Stairs and had harmed a JieDan expert of the sect, currently he could only swallow his anger.

The other people had already disappeared, but this meant that in whatever way Jin Tao deals with the situation, they would all not have seen it. At the same time, it also meant that, whatever happened here had nothing to do with them. Naturally, at the Immortal Falling Well, Jin Tao could not attack Yang Chen, so he could only gnash his teeth and apologize.

“Younger Disciple Yang, what happened just a moment ago was a joke, by all means you must not take it seriously.”

Jin Tao's attitude had become quite pleasant, even addressing him as Younger Disciple Yang like the other person just a moment ago. Usually when outer disciples at the qi realm met with him, they would all address him suitably as Uncle Master or Master, but currently, for no reason, he had to apologise, only so that Yang Chen would not be bothered and did not make the report.

“When I heard Senior Disciple's tone just then, it did not seem like a joke!”

Suddenly Yang Chen's expressions became serious. The change in expressions was so fast, it was as if he was an actor.

“Indeed, Younger Disciple Yang, you are not aware of the difficulties here, I just didn't want you to suffer any losses!”

Jin Tao acted as if he had not seen the hostile expressions on Yang Chen's face and without the smallest change in complexion, he kept on smiling and said:

“It just so happens, that elder disciple here has a good object which is suitable for Younger Disciple Yang, you should take a look at it!”

While speaking, Jin Tao fished out a small and exquisite thin hawk from his qiankun pouch. He directly stuffed it into Yang

Chen's hand and said:

“This is a magic tool refined by this Senior Disciple, it is knitted from black ice natural silk, compared to your bamboo falcon, it is a bit faster. Younger Disciple should not hesitate to take it.”

This guy was not so easy to deal with, looking at Jin Tao who was smilingly facing his own, cold expression, Yang Chen immediately understood this. The other three were also like this, but they didn't give Yang Chen any reason to flare up.

“It's just a little bit quicker, so is it any use in here?”

Though Yang Chen had said this, his hands showed no restraint in taking the silk falcon and putting it into his qiankun pouch, exposing a smile on his face, while he smilingly said:

“Actually, Senior Disciple, I have only come to the Immortal Falling Well this time in order to obtain some of the five phases spirit essences, that's all, can Senior Disciple bestow me with one thousand eight hundred pieces to broaden Younger Disciple's horizons?”

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Jin Tao almost spat blood. Of the people coming to the Immortal Falling Well, who did not come to look for spirit essences? What was Yang Chen saying? The question is, where could anyone find spirit essences that easily to be able to casually bestow one thousand eight hundred to someone? Jin Tao had stayed here for four years and still had only found three thousand pieces, how could he bestow one thousand

eight hundred of them to Yang Chen?

He did not have enough for himself, so giving them to Yang Chen as a sign of good faith was clearly not possible, within Jin Tao's gaze, flashed a trace of seriousness, but it was merely a flash, then it turned into that pleasant gaze again, laughingly he took out two hundred multicolored crystal chunks, and forced himself to put them into Yang Chen's hand.

“Younger Disciple, is getting spirit essences that easy? First you take this and if it is still not sufficient then ask again afterwards.”

Jin Tao continued and did not bother to haggle anymore and said:

“First you should get a good place to settle in the Immortal Falling Well, Senior Disciple will later take you to kill a few underground spirit beasts. Once you kill them, you will be able to obtain many more essences, haha!”

Yang Chen did still not show any restraint, like before. In any case, Jin Tao's slip of the tongue had caused to him pay a price of two hundred pieces of spirit essence, surely his heart would be aching too much. But Yang Chen also knew when to stop. He immediately assumed an absolutely satisfied expression and laughingly said:

“Since Senior Disciple is offering, then it would be impolite of me to refuse!”



“Younger Disciple, what about that sound storing rock?”

As soon as Yang Chen had put away those spirit essences in his qiankun pouch, Jin Tao again smilingly asked.

“Oh, where’s my memory!”

Yang Chen slapped his own head and took out the sound storing rock from his qiankun pouch and gave it to Jin Tao.

“Younger Disciple will also consider this as a joke, do not worry, Senior Disciple!”

Jin Tao had finally obtained this sound storing rock, once he passed his spirit power through it and heard that the contents were exactly the conversation between him and Yang Chen, he immediately destroyed it. Only after taking care of everything did Jin Tao relax. When his eyes met with Yang Chen’s gaze, it seemed as if he had become even more kindhearted.

“This is Younger Disciple’s first time here, this Senior Disciple must teach you the rules. Otherwise if you mistakenly break a rule, you may sustain injuries or could even lose your life, Younger Disciple must by all means not neglect it!”

After resolving the dispute, Jin Tao became more and more intimate with Yang Chen, as if he had no discord with him.

“I request Senior Disciple to give me some pointers!”

Yang Chen smiled while cupping his hands together, but within his heart he didn't care about it in the slightest.

“I am not going to keep you in dark, this is the only entrance to the Immortal Falling Well. The spirit beasts of this Immortal Falling Well's cannot be defeated that casually.”

Jin Tao smilingly continued.

“Every person who comes to the Immortal Falling Well has to learn how to defeat these underground spirit beasts for several days. Only after they have killed one underground spirit beast alone can they genuinely enter the Immortal Falling Cave. Younger Disciple must follow me for a few days to learn, as soon as you can kill an underground spirit beast, it will still not be too late to enter the Immortal Falling Well afterwards!”

# Chapter 58 - Thanks To Senior Disciple For His Consideration

These words of Jin Tao had a basis and were not a violation of the rules in the slightest. Newcomers at the Immortal Falling Well first had to receive the guidance of experienced people and only then could they enter the real battleground of the Immortal Falling Well. This was a rule, jointly established by the the five formidable elders and the Sect Masters of all sects. The purpose of this rule was to prevent casualties among newcomers who did not know about the characteristics of the underground spirit beasts.

The reason was completely rational and the rule was also completely faultless without any loopholes to bypass it. Yang Chen didn't decline Jin Tao's proposal, despite already being familiar with underground spirit beasts.

But Yang Chen didn't put down his guard because of Jin Tao's enthusiastic proposal. He was not so naive to think that, since he had already obtained evidence of Jin Tao's wrongdoing, he could do whatever he pleased. A foundation stage expert who was blackmailed by a qi layer disciple would not be so delighted to help him. Clearly there was some kind of scheme behind this. Very soon, under Jin Tao's arrangements, Yang Chen entered Li Lou Village situated at the entrance of the Immortal Falling Well, Li Lou Village was the main hub for replenishing the supplies of cultivators who were entering the Immortal Falling Well. Although Li Lou Village was situated at the mouth of the Immortal Falling Well's entrance, it was still included in its spell formation. Just in front of the entrance spell formation was Li Lou Village.

The village was also situated underground and similar to the entrance, overhead of it were night pearls, the size of human heads, illuminating the village almost as if it was day time. This kind of extravagance, even if it was the ruler of a country within the mortal world, he would still not be able to present something like this, but in here nobody even cared to look at them.

There were many houses, but all of them were very simple and crude, what surprised most people, was that the spiritual influence was much thicker here, when compared to the outside. Cultivating here was much more effective in comparison. Unfortunately, a person could only remain inside of the Immortal Falling Well for at most ten years, after ten years, they could not enter again, this was in order to balance out the steps each sect had taken to gain control over the Well.

The Li Lou Village was an important supply center for the cultivators entering the Immortal Falling Well, as this was neither their home, nor their own sect, only a supply center. The village itself was a big market, as long as one could enter here, one could conduct business. The transactions, however, were not done like in the world above, using spirit stones, but instead the spirit essences from the bodies of underground spirit beasts were used.

The spirit essence of the five phases was the essence which formed inside of the bodies of underground spirit beasts, thus, when they solidified, they became spirit essences. Compared to spirit stones which were measured in weight, spirit essences were measured by the number of pieces. All spirit essences have the same size and weight. Only the color of the spirit essence was different between the five phases, otherwise they were identical.

Spirit stones could offer spirit power, and they could also be used for cultivation. Spirit essences on the other hand had only one use, that was precisely to increase the rate of spirit power ejection by the underground spirit vein. Generally speaking, ten thousand spirit essence of each phase, for a total of fifty thousand spirit essences, could double the spirit power ejection rate and was sufficient to be used for cultivation until the JieDan stage.

In the Immortal Falling Well, it was very rare that people were able to kill enough spirit beasts in ten years. The usual arrangement was that disciples of the same sect would cooperate with each other to obtain the spirit essences. so that they could improve their spirit vein and at the same time help a few people with cultivation.

Due to this utility, naturally, if anyone wanted to exchange something within the Li Lou Village, everyone was required to use spirit essences for the transaction. Regardless of whether it was a pill or a magic weapon, everything was traded through spirit essences.

Yang Chen had arrived here. Under Jin Tao's lead, he had a room arranged for him, in which he would stay for ten years. At the same time he received a jade slip, which gave introductions about every kind of spirit beast, so he made himself comfortable.

“Younger Disciple Yang, you must properly study the weak points of all these beasts and by all means learn properly, this concerns your life!”

Jin Tao was afraid that Yang Chen did not know about the seriousness of the matter and spared no effort in warning him repeatedly.

“Wait until you think you are ready for the test, as soon as you pass the test, you can immediately enter the Immortal Falling Well.”

“How can I take this test?”

Yang Chen asked impatiently.

“In the Li Lou Village, there is a testing spot where you have to kill one spirit beast of each of the five phases, after that you have passed the test.”

Jin Tao smiled, downplaying the difficulty of the test the best he could.

“As soon as you are properly prepared, inform me immediately!”

“Many thanks, Senior Disciple!”

Yang Chen courteously sent Jin Tao away. His gaze followed Jin Tao until he left, only then did Yang Chen sit down and probe the jade slip using his spiritual awareness. Immediately a grim smile appeared on his face.

Inside of the jade slip, the weak points of all of the spirit beasts of the five phases were indeed recorded, but only that and nothing more. This jade slip neither contained their strength nor their ranking. Although it did have their weak points, but who did not know that, when encountering a low ranked spirit beast and a high ranked spirit beast, the outcome would be completely different.

Jin Tao had given this jade slip to Yang Chen, so clearly he had malicious intents. Unfortunately, he had encountered Yang Chen, even if all of the knowledge Jin Tao had gained about underground spirit beasts was multiplied by ten, it would still not come close to Yang Chen. These kinds of tricks of his were destined to be a futile and wasted effort.

People don't intend to harm the tiger, but they have to, or else the tiger would kill them. Jin Tao had once again become Yang Chen's enemy within his heart. If Jin Tao knew that his current arrangements had thoroughly offended Yang Chen, nobody could say whether he would repent or not.

The room did not have anything special, the only use of the room was to provide Yang Chen a place to rest within the Li Lou Village. It only contained a mat and a couch, but Yang Chen did not care about them in the least, and without even sitting once, he directly left the room and went to the market.

Since the Immortal Falling Well was situated underground, there was basically no difference between day and night. People could be seen entering and leaving the village or the market at any time.

Yang Chen wasn't as unfamiliar as the other newcomers, but he

couldn't find any open spaces within the already lively market. He immediately started searching for a small open space at the corner. After finding a good spot, he took out a jade bottle from his qiankun pouch and put it on the ground, in front of the jade bottle he placed an eye catching piece of cloth. On top of the cloth was written: 'second grade yang qi pills, ten for one spirit essence!' After properly placing it, he did not start shouting, instead he calmly sat on the ground, waiting for customers to drop by.

The people coming to that corner were not many, Yang Chen had a very young face, and moreover he was still at the qi realm, the coming and going foundation experts could immediately determine this using their spiritual awareness, Yang Chen was definitely at a realm where he could not use refining tools. What kind of good items could a qi layer youngster possibly have? Thinking this, nobody stopped at his shop.

Even in this kind of situation, Yang Chen wasn't anxious in the least. He calmly sat there, unhurriedly practicing the three purities secret. Only the three purities secret could be halted at any time without suffering any backlash.

When Yang Chen had just started training, he sensed many people standing in front of him and simultaneously, he also heard a muffled cry of surprise:

“Do you truly have second grade yang qi pills?”

The other person's voice contained some surprise, but it was filled with even more suspicion. A second grade pill, even if it was only a yang qi pill, was still not something a qi layer disciple could



refine. Moreover, the price quoted by Yang Chen was a bit low, which made people doubtful whether Yang Chen was deceiving them.

Yang Chen didn't even lift his head and merely opened the jade bottle. Afterwards he took out more than ten pills and placed them on the white cloth in front of him and indicated with his hand that the other party should take a look himself.

The mark of a second grade pill was absolutely clear, moreover its smell was also very pure, there was no doubt in the mind of the other party now in regards of Yang Chen's pills, so he didn't haggle over the price and directly took out one spirit essence. After counting the ten yang qi pills, he turned around and left.

These two people only spoke a few words and immediately reached an agreement. The other party of this deal was quite honest, actually Yang Chen was very fond of this kind of transaction. It was a simple business deal, why make it complicated?

After receiving the spirit essence, Yang Chen continued to sit calmly, on one side practicing the three purities secret and on other side waiting for customers to come. However, this time he did not have to wait for long.

After a moment, the person who had just then purchased ten yang qi pills returned again and sat in front of him, asking in a low voice:

“These yang qi pills, however many you have, I will buy them all!”

“Buy them all?”

Yang Chen lifted up his head and found himself looking at delicate and pretty face. The person had quite an honest vibe to him. Nodding, Yang Chen agreed:

“Right now I have five hundred pills, so fifty spirit essences.”

While speaking, he took out five jade bottles and arranged them on the white cloth.

The other person similarly took out fifty spirit essences and took the five jade bottles and got up. Before leaving, he suddenly said:

“In the future if you have more, I will buy them all!”

“I will return and refine five hundred more pills to sell here again.”

However Yang Chen didn't promise anything, he only smiled and said:

“Let's leave meeting each other again to luck!”

The other person also didn't speak any more, just nodded in response. Immediately afterwards he left the market, it seemed to Yang Chen that he was going straight to the Immortal Falling Well and had come back here to replenish his pills and rest for a little bit.

Although Jin Tao didn't show up, he was monitoring Yang Chen with his spiritual awareness. Seeing that Yang Chen had gone to the market, he followed him to take a look. When he discovered that Yang Chen had surprisingly received fifty spirit essences, he could not help but be amazed.

Returning to his room, Yang Chen didn't waste any time hiding his concocting skills and immediately took out his Profound Spirit Furnace to begin concocting pills. He could refine a hundred yang qi pills at a time. For second grade yang qi pills, to produce one furnace worth of them would require two hours. Yang Chen refined five furnaces worth and then he began his everyday regular activities. After swallowing a thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, he began to cultivate the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets.

There was no day or night underground and Yang Chen also didn't follow any specific routine. After training, he went to the market again to sell his second grade yang qi pills. There were very few people at that corner, but still someone would see it and usually after someone tested the pill, he would immediately purchase all of the pills from Yang Chen.

This kind of routine continued for more than ten days and within one or two hours of a day, Yang Chen would get fifty spirit essences after selling the pills. This kind of income made Jin Tao,

who was monitoring Yang Chen, very jealous. Even after staying here for four years, he had only obtained three thousand essences but within the brief period of ten days, Yang Chen had already obtained several hundred essences, already close to one thousand, this speed, how could it not make him drool?

But this was also good, the more spirit essences Yang Chen earned, the more he would get, when an accident happened to Yang Chen at the test. Jin Tao was very impatient in his heart, but he still did not act recklessly.

This continued for more than twenty days. After that, Yang Chen used up all of the raw materials he had brought with him. In exchange he had obtained one thousand and three hundred spirit essences of all kinds.

Since he had no more raw materials, Yang Chen finally decided to enter the Immortal Falling Well. After making some preparations, Yang Chen started to look for Jin Tao, to ask him to make the preparations for the test.

Jin Tao sneered within his heart when he saw Yang Chen looking for him. He led Yang Chen to the testing stage, while giving him instructions with false care. After Yang Chen entered the stage, Jin Tao started the spell formation and removed the restrictions on the underground spirit beast. After that he began to wait outside of the spell formation. As long as Yang Chen perished inside, Jin Tao would secretly exchange the jade slip and those spirit essences in Yang Chen's qiankun pouch with the objects in his pocket.

But this was still an extremely pleasant surprise for him,

originally he just wanted to teach a lesson to Yang Chen, but currently he had also gotten the chance to obtain more than a thousand spirit essences, and all he had to do was pretend to be sad about his death. One thousand spirit essences was equal to Jin Tao's earnings of one year.

As for Yang Chen being killed by the underground spirit beasts, it was quite a common occurrence. Even if it was a great foundation expert, like Jin Tao, if he was even a little careless in the Immortal Falling Well, he would immediately be killed by underground spirit beasts. Who told him to overestimate his capabilities, a disciple of the qi layer initial stage wishing to challenge a high level underground spirit beast, dying would serve him right. If he wanted to blame someone, he could only blame the person who gave him the command tile while fully aware that his cultivation was quite lacking, but still allowed him to come to the Immortal Falling Well.

Who could find out that Jin Tao hadn't registered the correct information about the underground spirit beasts? Furthermore, instead of releasing low level beasts one by one, he had instead released the high level spirit beasts of all five phases at the same time. Even if he, who was at the foundation stage, was in Yang Chen's place, facing those five high levelled spirit beasts at the same time, would have to fight for several days, slowly wearing down their strength and only then would he be able to kill them. Sometimes encountering spirit beasts of the five phases and being massacred by them was the most tragic reminder of this, in the Immortal Falling Well. For Yang Chen's first time in coming in contact with spirit beasts of the five phases, Jin Tao was guessing how long it would take to settle this. Five breaths? Ten breaths?

Once the testing stage's spell formation was activated, any great affair happening inside would not alarm the people in the village. Just as Jin Tao felt at ease and was waiting with outrageous leisure for some kind of accident to happen on the stage, dreaming about the thousand spirit essences he would receive, a thunderous sound echoed on the stage behind his body, the spell formation opened and from the inside, Yang Chen could be seen coming out very slowly.

“Unexpectedly these spirit beasts were all subdued by my fire attribute!”

Across Yang Chen's whole face, a smile could be seen with no trace of being exhausted in the slightest. Laughing happily, he cupped his hands towards Jin Tao and said:

“Many thanks, Senior Disciple, for your care and consideration, which allowed this Younger Disciple to enter the Immortal Falling Well!”

In this moment, Jin Tao's expression was of extreme disbelief. Looking at Yang Chen's smiling face, Jin Tao felt an intense need to start crying.

# Chapter 59 - Want To Make A Breakthrough? Dream On!

All of them were metal attributed lower level spirit beasts? Jin Tao was so gloomy that he almost started weeping, he had obviously planned for five high level spirit beasts, how could they turn into low level spirit beasts? Furthermore into spirit beasts of the metal attribute, which would easily be subdued by Yang Chen's fire attribute?

He wanted to start the test again to not allow Yang Chen to pass through, but if he did that, other people would start suspecting him and at that time, he could be exposed. Jin Tao did not dare to do such a thing, for the fear of exposing himself, but then how could he remedy this time's mistake?

“Younger Disciple Yang, your luck is really good!”

Jin Tao said with a joyful face, but soon after that he pretended to casually say:

“You have already passed the test, so Younger Disciple Yang can enter the Immortal Falling Well at any time. But, you should return the jade slip with the information about spirit beasts to me, Younger Disciple has no more need for it, so the next person should be allowed to have it to learn.”

Yang Chen glanced at Jin Tao and took out the jade slip from his qiankun pouch. With a mysterious smile he said:

“Senior Disciple Jin should certainly take good care of it, if it is lost, it would be a tragedy!”

These words made Jin Tao feel fear and trepidation, he almost couldn't bear to look at Yang Chen anymore. But before he could fulfill his desire to forcefully put him down, he remembered where he was. But he still did not look at Yang Chen anymore, deeply afraid that he would make an enormous blunder right now.

“Alas, your skill is only worth it's words, not even worthy of a smile!”

Yang Chen slowly shook his head and sneered, attentively watching Jin Tao rigidly glance at him, then he turned around and left.

Under Yang Chen's gaze, Jin Tao's whole body suddenly trembled and started dripping with sweat, as if he was experiencing a matter of life and death. It was as if death itself had risen in Yang Chen's eyes and could easily see through him, as if he had the intention to strangle and kill him before he could even be born.

“Peak foundation stage, want to condense your dan? Dream on!”

Standing distantly, Yang Chen gave his exceptionally disdainful evaluation and disappeared entirely from Jin Tao's spiritual awareness. Even with Jin Tao's ability, he still could not determine the position of Yang Chen.



Initially, after hearing Yang Chen's final assessment, he still had the intention to struggle, but Yang Chen's sudden disappearance gave him a fright. Yang Chen's words were like a blade chopping at his head and left a profound impression on his mind. Yang Chen's sentence that he was 'dreaming' filled his entire mind.

All of a sudden, Jin Tao felt really discouraged and had no more thoughts regarding breaking through. It was as if only his body was left, his brain had become completely empty, with only regret left behind.

Only after this, did Jin Tao begin to ponder deeply about this strange thing. If Yang Chen was only an ordinary qi layer disciple, then how could the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace give him the command tile. How could he think that the ability to judge of Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master, a YuanYing expert, was poorer than that of Jin Tao? Since these kinds of arrangements already existed, Jin Tao should have used his brain at an earlier time and should not have been affected by his emotions.

At that time even Jin Tao did not know what kind of demon had confused his mind, surprisingly, as soon as he heard Yang Chen's name, he wanted to entirely suppress him, so much so, that he even forgot to take these facts into consideration. When he remembered that, his intestines turned green with regret.

Dismay filled his mind and because of his countless regrets, his whole self, from top to bottom, was discouraged. Alas, he couldn't even see this simple thing, but he still wanted to condense his dan? Yang Chen's sentence about dreaming on, struck Jin Tao's mind

again and again, so that he immediately sat down on the spot, like an imbecile.

Yang Chen had only used a minor method to stun his spirit, within the three purities secret there were many such simple magics, including methods to stun the spirit. Although Yang Chen called it a minor method, it was only minor when used against immortals. In this realm it could be considered among the most supreme of secrets.

Usually the spirit stunning methods were used to confuse the soul, but during that time the caster could not just relax and do something else, that would have the same effect as loudly yelling, waking the target up. Yang Chen did the exact opposite in the case of Jin Tao, when he was confused and discouraged, Yang Chen completely destroyed his confidence in one move. This was the same as planting a heart's devil within his mind, as soon as he would try to cultivate, this dispiritedness would immediately appear.

Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was a whole realm higher when compared to Jin Tao and moreover, in this world Yang Chen had never seen anyone who could resist the Great Supreme Elder's secret. Jin Tao was not aware that everything had went according to Yang Chen's plan. He had already been immersed in regret, incessantly criticising himself.

Perhaps if he had come across this kind of thing in his previous life, Yang Chen could only resign himself to having bad luck, and cultivate again afterwards. But, in this life Yang Chen would not let any person who had intentions to kill him get away with it.

As for Jin Tao, Yang Chen could stop paying any attention to him for the time being, a cultivator plagued by his heart's devil, only if someone of very high cultivation found out about his situation and sacrificed some of his cultivation to help him, could Jin Tao remove it. A cultivator who had lost all of his confidence in cultivating, even if he was a very high level expert, in the cultivation world he would still be regarded as a crippled person. This kind of ending was even worse than death.

Perhaps Jin Tao could still have a fortuitous encounter and be able to break away from Yang Chen's spirit shaking technique, but Yang Chen was very confident that the next time he would see Jin Tao face to face, he could easily get rid of him.

Yang Chen found that he could only gain the complete approval of the XianTai stage's will by continuous slaughter. Within the Heavenly Stairs' spell formation he had only fused with a small portion of that killing intent, but luckily, madly killing the spirit beasts at the Immortal Falling Well could excite that killing intent. Yang Chen was convinced that, as long as his soul were to completely fuse with that will, his strength would take a giant leap.

Outside the Li Lou village, there was not much light, instead it was dark everywhere. The Immortal Falling Well had gotten its name because, even if an immortal cultivator lowered his guard, he would easily perish. Within this absolute darkness, if one were to be surrounded by a large number of underground spirit beasts, only if he was a YuanYing stage expert could he escape from this confinement, otherwise dying was the only option.

Because many people inhabit the region near the village, the amount of spirit beasts was relatively very low here. After Yang Chen came out of the village, with the help of the faint light from the Li Lou village, he began to determine the approximate direction of his destination.

That person from the Heavenly Court had only told Yang Chen the approximate location, Yang Chen had no other option but to rely on his own memory and sense of direction to track down the exact location. Yang Chen rapidly determined the direction and began to walk into the darkness.

Not long after Yang Chen departed from the Li Lou village, someone came to the corner where Yang Chen had frequently set up his stall. When he looked at the completely bereft flat piece of land, he suddenly asked in a loud voice:

“Where did that second grade pill concocting master go?”

His loud shout suddenly caused a great commotion in the whole market.

“Second grade pill concocting master? Where is he? Who is he?”

Countless people began to come over there.

The regular life within the Immortal Falling Well was quite dull. To obtain enough spirit essences, apart from resting and

replenishing supplies, everyone would only keep on fighting in the Immortal Falling Well.

Often, to persist through these long and dull battles, the fights would become extremely violent. Similarly a pill concocting master and tool refining master who were extremely focussed on concocting pills and refining tools were not very adept at fighting in this way, thus, there were very few people like this in the Immortal Falling Well.

Any kind of fight required the circulation of spirit power and the use of weapons, while simultaneously also inevitably being the cause for severe injuries and damage to magic weapons. Under normal circumstances, some highest quality pills were available for healing or perhaps restoring the spirit power in an extremely violent fight, but as for second grade pills, these people had never come in contact with them. Apart from how many kinds of high level pills he could refine, the status of a pill refining master was also determined by looking at the grade of his pills.

Even if the cultivation of a second grade pill concocting master was low, compared to an ordinary pill concocting master, his future prospects were boundless. To run into a second grade pill concocting master at the Immortal Falling Well was simply some unbelievable luck.

After hearing the shout of that person, everyone faintly remembered that at this place there had been a youngster selling pills for the past few days. Only, everyone thought what kind of quality items could a trifling qi layer cultivator possibly have, so everyone merely swept over his stall once with their spiritual

awareness and then walked away without stopping.

But currently, hearing that he was a second grade pill refining master, countless people began to lament. If he already was a second grade pill refining master at the qi layer, then what would his grade be after building his foundation and congealing his dan? This kind of a person was in front of their eyes for several days, but surprisingly nobody paid attention to him.

Luckily this was the Immortal Falling Well, that youngster had also come here to be refined through battles, so in the end he had to return to the Li Lou village. From this moment, nobody would occupy that corner of the market, all were aware that they had to stay away from that vacant space, and as soon as that youngster returns, everyone could seek contact with him for their own purposes. As long as they could get on good terms with him, it would be an enormous opportunity for them.

Yang Chen was not aware that this kind of thing happened after he left, he merely kept on walking towards his destination. Very quickly, he came across some spirit beasts.

Bang!

The spirit beasts near the Li Lou village were basically all homeless exiles and were not that powerful. Under the heavy defence of Yang Chen's reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, their attacks basically didn't even harm a hair of Yang Chen. Moreover, Yang Chen only defended himself but did not attack in the slightest.

Strictly speaking, the underground spirit beasts were not living creatures, rather just spiritual influence that has condensed to form a creature. Their attacks were just a release of the spiritual influence inside of their bodies. It's true that you could kill a spirit beasts by attacking it, but, by waiting until they exhausted their entire spiritual influence, many more spirit essences could be obtained when compared to the usual way of attacking and killing them.

Only half an hour later, that spirit beast had consumed all of its spiritual influence and turned into a piece of spirit essence that fell down to the ground. After picking up the spirit essence, Yang Chen had not walked many steps before he heard the sound of a violent fight and the roar of more than a hundred spirit beasts.

Turning towards the direction of the sound, he saw a silhouette being jointly attacked by more than a hundred spirit beasts from all sides. The entire body of that person was wrapped up inside of a blue colored shield which was fluttering around. In addition to that, a flying sword was continuously flickering in the surroundings, rapidly attacking the spirit beasts moving close.

Difficult situations such as this would only happen if several beasts of different attributes attacked together. When a large number of underground spirit beasts flock around one, apart from this method, in which, after properly protecting oneself with a good defence like this and attacking the spirit beasts which could be restrained by one's own attribute afterwards, there was no proper method. But every spirit beast that perished would still take about half a day to be killed. Most of the time, by oneself one could only obtain one type of spirit essence and later ask other people to

trade, in order to obtain spirit essences of other attributes.

Even if it was a spell formation cultivator, when facing underground spirit beasts, they would also be at wits end. Underground spirit beasts are basically condensed spiritual influence, so an attack by a spell formation, which was also formed from spiritual influence, against these condensed forms of spiritual influence would not be effective in the least. Only by truly striking them with flying swords would one be effective, but, usually the people in the Immortal Falling Well were all middle foundation stage experts who wanted to raise their cultivation and increase their status, so who among them would possess flying swords?

Yang Chen didn't stop and directly passed by the small area, rushed towards even more dark abyss. Yang Chen's action made that surrounded cultivator turn pale with fright. He had already discovered Yang Chen's presence with the help of his spiritual awareness, but within the Immortal Falling Well, people very rarely associated and formed a group. He also didn't care about it a lot, but seeing Yang Chen's path, he thought that Yang Chen had made a mistake and picked the wrong one.

When he saw that Yang Chen was surprisingly rushing even deeper, that person could not help but cry out in surprise:

“In there it's even more dangerous, take care!”

He could only shout, as he was already surrounded by spirit beasts, so he was unable to block Yang Chen.



“There is no harm in checking it out, many thanks, Senior!”

Yang Chen vaguely expressed his gratitude and without showing any signs of stopping, he continued to walk forward. But within a moment, suddenly a big flock of spirit beasts appeared in front of him and surrounded him, making Yang Chen disappear from the range of that man’s spiritual awareness.

“Alas!”

While being attacked by spirit beasts from all sides, that man sighed:

“He was only at the qi layer, how could he enter that deep region!”

But he also only sighed, without slowing his hand. Was the number of cultivator dying within the Immortal Falling Well really that low? What about one Yang Chen, even several Yang Chens wouldn’t be a lot.

If that person could see Yang Chen’s current situation, he would have surely been shocked beyond measure. Yang Chen didn’t have any defensive magic weapon and those spirit beasts were madly attacking him, but Yang Chen did not care about them in the least and only kept on moving forward without stopping, incessantly searching the surroundings with his spiritual awareness.

After walking for nearly half a month, he had already penetrated

deeply into the regions of high level spirit beasts, only then was Yang Chen able to arrive at his destination. At this moment, he was being attacked by spirit beasts from all sides, yet Yang Chen could only do his best to resist them.

As for the yang qi pills he had brought for himself, Yang Chen had already consumed every pill out of every bottle, after all there were several hundreds of spirit beasts in his surroundings and the number was still increasing. Without the support of these pills, even if Yang Chen was powerful, he would still have been incapable of finding his destination. But when all was said and done, the pills were finite and he hadn't gotten any opportunity to restore his spirit power, so when he was finally here, he was already like an arrow at the end of its flight.

His formidable spiritual awareness encompassed several tens of meters, very quickly, Yang Chen appeared at the place he was informed about. It had an immense circular and lofty stone as landmark, as if for reminding Yang Chen that he had found the right place.

There was a small crack behind the circular stone, luckily it was just enough for himself to enter. Seeing that, Yang Chen did not dare to be careless and at lightening speed he jumped on the top of the pile of attacking underground spirit beasts and moved towards that entrance, striving to make his way into it.

# Chapter 60 - Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret

When Yang Chen had finally gone through that entrance, the spirit beasts chasing him choked up at the small entrance and weren't able to enter. At last he was able to completely rest up.

Since he was a third qi layer disciple, he still did not have the ability to fly by himself, so after moving while defending against several hundred underground spirit beasts for half a month, Yang Chen was extremely exhausted.

A high level spirit beast with a large head, the size of a wild boar, was jammed between the stones on both the sides of the tunnel, it could neither go in nor come out, but because of this, all of the spirit beasts behind it were stuck on the outside.

The space inside the cave was very big, it had a large perimeter which provided a lot of space, Yang Chen could even spread his legs and take a nap. What would make people most speechless was that there was still an underground spirit vein here, which provided an unending flow of spirit power, making it a natural cultivation spot. Such a good region, it was very fortunate that someone in Yang Chen's previous life had been able to find it.

At the moment, Yang Chen didn't dare to be neglectful and immediately took out his obsidian jade mat, placed it on the mouth of spirit vein and sat down on it to meditate. He started restoring his spirit power and at the same time began to nourish his

meridians.

He had to meditate for two days and two nights continuously to restore the spirit power and spiritual awareness he had exhausted in the fortnight he had been resisting the spirit beasts. Due to the plentiful spiritual influence from the underground spirit vein, Yang Chen did not need to waste a Profound Yang Fruit. Even the bottle of the Medicine Garden began to slowly replenish its spirit power when placed at the mouth of the spirit vein.

Originally the Immortal Falling Well was just an enormous cavity in the ground, nobody knew where its perimeter was, even the council of the five formidable elders was not able to discover its edge. As for why these underground spirit beasts appeared, nobody had even the slightest idea. Everyone was only aware that these spirit beasts killed endlessly without any reason and kept on attacking the Li Lou village, the only exit in an unending stream.

The high-spirited Yang Chen had accidentally come to know about these insider facts, but currently the most important task for him was to kill these underground spirit beasts and collect their spirit essences to increase his own cultivation and to fuse the will of the XianTai Stage.

The reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets were like two millstones, grinding at high speed. When it was focused on the spirit beast, it quickly sapped away all of the spiritual influence of that high level spirit beast, only leaving behind a few shiny spirit essences.

After that, the entrance became clear again and immediately he

was attacked by another spirit beast whose head had also gotten jammed at the small entrance. This spirit beast also died under Yang Chen's hand. In here, Yang Chen did not have to worry about the security of his life, one spirit beast would absolutely not be a menace to him. On the contrary, with sufficient spirit power and a safe environment, he could continue to kill the spirit beasts for an unlimited amount of time.

In case anyone in the Immortal Falling Well saw Yang Chen's efficiency at killing the spirit beasts, he would certainly faint with shock. When someone tried to kill a spirit beast, first he had to take care of his own defence properly and then single mindedly concentrate on attacking the spirit beast with a magic weapon grade flying sword, even after that, if the spirit beast was killed within half a day, it could still be considered to be a great accomplishment.

It had to be known that this was originally the territory of the underground spirit beasts, so the spiritual influence here was quite plentiful and the spirit beasts who had suffered injuries could recover their injuries by themselves. The time they needed to recover their injuries was far lower, when compared to those disciples who had come to Immortal Falling Well to train. So where would one find a person like Yang Chen, who was effortlessly cutting off the necks of spirit beasts like this?

This became a regular routine of his life, sapping away their spiritual influence and killing the spirit beasts without stopping, then, when his spirit power was exhausted, he would sit down on the obsidian jade mat and meditate to replenish it again. Every day he would practice the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets once all the way through, then the three purities secrets and afterwards

absorb the killing intent that had been evoked due to the incessant killing of spirit beasts and hammer his spiritual awareness into shape. After that, he would use the universal treasure raising secrets on the Profound Spirit Furnace and sword box to increase their grade and soon after that, he started killing those spirit beasts without stopping again.

Yang Chen had stored enough food and water within the Achievements Ring. He even had the luxury of using the Medicine Garden, where he planted some fruits and vegetables. Apart from the fact that he could not leave here when he wanted, his life could almost be called perfect.

The number of underground spirit beasts was endless, as soon as Yang Chen killed one, the next one arrived, it was basically not possible for him to kill all of them. Within the brief period of half a year, Yang Chen had already killed more than ten thousand spirit beasts and collected their spirit essences, which had far surpassed the number of spirit beasts killed, because of Yang Chen's superior killing method and the high grade of the spirit beasts. Currently Yang Chen had already collected more than thirty to forty thousand spirit essences, after some more time, he had managed to obtain fifty thousand spirit essences by himself.

This kind of cycle wasn't dependent on day or night. Under this kind of extremely intensive cultivation, Yang Chen had already forgotten the time. When he had barely killed the spirit beast at the entrance, the next one immediately jammed the tunnel. Soon he would be exhausted of spirit power and return to the obsidian jade mat to start cultivating in order to recover.

After performing ten heavenly circulations, the spirit power in his body almost recovered, but he still didn't show any signs of stopping. The pressure of this routine also passed on to his meridians, one pull, one push, seemingly as if expecting something, the spirit power began to build up with his meridians. At last, the spirit power that had been surging forward was unable to proceed further and began to be compressed to an extreme point.

Bang!

As if some kind of shield inside his meridians had broken, the spirit power began to surge forth violently within his body, like a runaway horse. The sensation was as if the strength stored in his whole body had been liberated. Yang Chen noticed that this was his own spirit power, once again trying to overcome an obstacle, to breakthrough to the fourth qi layer.

Originally the spirit power was being forcefully built up inside of the meridians but now it was as if his whole body had become completely empty. The obsidian jade mat underneath him was the source of an unending stream of spirit power, which began to fill the hollowness created because of his breakthrough to another level.

From the third qi layer to the fourth qi layer, although it was just an increase of one minor layer, this was also a qualitative change from the initial qi realm to the middle qi realm. This implied that Yang Chen was no longer a rookie at the initial qi stage, but rather a proper cultivator at the middle qi stage.

This certainly did not mean that it was just an increase of one type of spirit power, but rather an increase for all of the ten types of spirit power of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang. The underground spirit vein of the Immortal Falling Well basically had all types of spirit power, otherwise it would have been impossible to nurture all attributes of spirit beasts. An enormous amount of spirit power began to rush forth, violently entering Yang Chen's body. Under Yang Chen's meticulous guidance, the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets rotated to their maximum limit and began to strengthen his internal organs.

This was a necessary course of events everyone had to experience after entering the middle qi layer, actually, the purpose of the entire qi stage was to transform the body so that it would be able to resist even more pressure from spirit power and finally build the foundation.

Although Yang Chen's body had already been strengthened by the essence of the flesh and blood of countless immortals, that kind of devil cultivation transformed the body from outside to inside, but currently, the enormous amount of spirit power was strengthening the body from the inside to the outside. Under the violent rush of the large amount of spirit power, Yang Chen could not even deal with the underground spirit beasts and began to concentrate on consolidating himself.

The state of consolidating was a necessary process after making a breakthrough. Even compared to the process of increase in attack, the state of consolidating was more important.

A good analogy to compare both states would be to consider the



process of breaking through in attack power as being equivalent to hammering a nail into the rooftop of one's house, if the attack power was enough, it would easily pierce through. But, the consolidating process was comparable to consolidating the foundation after the nail had pierced through. The more profound the foundation, the bigger the house it can support.

Currently Yang Chen looked exactly like a person who was building their foundation, frantically absorbing the spiritual influence from the spirit vein to lay his own, solid and firm foundation.

During the absorbing process Yang Chen encountered one problem. When he was at the initial qi stage, the five phases were complete and were in an equilibrium in Yang Chen's body and it was not much of a concern, but in the middle qi stage, to continue maintaining this kind of display, it would be universally shocking. In the future, he had to deliberately give prominence to his fire attribute cultivation, otherwise a lot of people would be able to make the connection .

This time, absorbing the spirit power to strengthen his foundation had taken almost two to three times more time than usual, only then was it completed. As for Yang Chen, since there was no disturbance and the area also had plentiful spirit power, there was basically absolutely no chance of some unexpected accident and he could smoothly consolidate the fourth qi layer's state.

Once he had made the breakthrough, Yang Chen immediately took out a flying sword and attempted to execute the second

refining by the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets.

The Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets was a very good technique, it could allow him to generate a Heavenly Stars spell formation on every kind of spirit power. Due to the Heavenly Stars spell formation, his defense and attack had become a lot more formidable when compared to an ordinary cultivator's defence and attack. Although currently he had only executed the first refining, but after probing with his formidable spiritual awareness, because he could judge his own strength very precisely, he knew that his strength had been increased by at least three times compared to before. In other words, just activating the thirty six threads of spirit power together would immediately increase his strength. The only question was whether the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets increased his strength by two to three folds or ten folds.

Fantasy was very beautiful, but reality was extremely cruel, even if Yang Chen had already entered the middle qi stage, he was still unable to execute the second refining. Apart from using the method to increase it by one grade to reach the middle stage, the second time he started executing it, he would feel the spirit power being blocked every time, unable to proceed any further. Yang Chen had no option other than stopping resentfully.

Since the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets were out of question, Yang Chen directly turned to the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets. The seventy two layers of Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, could similarly increase the grade of a magic weapon, previously Yang Chen's cultivation was too low, but after making a breakthrough, he could give it a try.

The outcome was far beyond his expectations, under the first refining by the earth spell, the flying sword was successfully branded with the seal of the earth spell. But still Yang Chen was only able to barely accomplish it. His whole body was profusely sweating and all of his spirit power had been consumed, he even had to use the spirit power of a Profound Yang Fruit, not to mention the fact he was already sitting on top of an underground spirit vein, only then was he able to accomplish this.

But although the process was very exhausting, its success made Yang Chen delighted. A bright light flashed from the flying sword, anyone could tell at one glance that it was not an ordinary object. Only Yang Chen did not know whether to laugh or cry at it, upgrading the magic weapon was a good thing, but this kind of flashiness was not something he was fond of. Unfortunately, this was not something under Yang Chen's control. Yang Chen knew that refining by the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets and Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets was not a complete refining. Refining a magic weapon was only complete when it could be properly controlled. Only then could it become a peerless gem of magic weapon grade.

Although the transformation of the flying sword made Yang Chen happy, the transformation of his own spirit energy made Yang Chen absolutely ecstatic. Not even Yang Chen had anticipated that, when he had completed the first level refining of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation secrets, the spirit power of every type in his body, which had been divided into spirit power threads by the Heavenly Stars spell would once again split, and an earth fiend spell formation was added. But these two types of spell did not mutually influence each other and existed by themselves, not having fused the earth spell and the Heavenly Stars spell.

Even if it was like this, the transformation within his body still made Yang Chen go wild with joy. Immediately he began to restore his spirit power and soon he went to test his offensive power.

The unlucky spirit beast which was stuck at the entrance became the first pitiful victim of his test, it could not move at all and could only blankly stare at Yang Chen attacking its body. After around ten strikes, it finally took its last breath, leaving behind two spirit essences. Yang Chen's initial way of killing the high level spirit beast would have left behind five spirit essences, but attacking like this only gave two.

After several attacks, Yang Chen finally determined how much damage he could cause. With the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, every layer increased his strength by three times. According to this, if he could completely cultivate the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secret and the Earth Secret, his attack power would increase by three hundred twenty four times, and even if he didn't completely cultivate them, his power would still increase by thirty two times. This was still when the Earth Spell and the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets were working alone. If Yang Chen was able to completely fuse them, then he would get even more of a surprise.

Yang Chen who had the experience of two lives was naturally aware of the saying: 'Learn to walk before you can run'. In any case, right now, obtaining these kind of outcome was already more than enough, Yang Chen didn't let greed take him over. On the contrary, after sufficient preparation, he took out the Profound Spirit Furnace and the Sword Box separately and also executed the Earth Secret's first layer refining.

After having done the refining on the flying sword earlier, the refining of the sword box and the Profound Spirit Furnace went without a hitch and also wasn't as exhausting as the first time, but compared to the first time, the use of the Earth Secrets was somewhat better.

After the refining of the Sword Box was completed, Yang Chen began to kill the spirit beasts in a different way. In any case, he had already collected fifty thousand spirit essences, which were more than sufficient for his immortal cave in the future, so obtaining spirit essences was no longer his main objective. What he needed to do now, was to kill the spirit beasts by beheading them.

This method was the most preferred method for executing immortals at the XianTai Stage and also was most capable of provoking the fusion of the will of the XianTai Stage with his own. Immediately, without wasting any time, Yang Chen took the Sword Box, which had the appearance of his Immortal Execution Blade and raising it high, he beheaded a spirit beast in one slash. This marked the beginning of his new regular routine with the new method for killing and beheading beasts.

Having a sharp weapon increased the efficiency of killing when compared to doing it empty handed, with just three slashes Yang Chen had chopped off the head a spirit beast stuck in the entrance.

# Chapter 61 - Fusing With The Will Of The XianTai Stage

Currently Yang Chen didn't have the ability to control the flying sword to kill people from a distance, but he could do nothing about this, as his cultivation was quite lacking, even though he had already entered the fourth qi layer, his skill to control the flying sword could only persist for a few strikes before his spirit power was depleted.

The skill to use a flying sword to kill underground spirit beast required an enormous amount of spirit power, but while its speed was quite rapid, it only managed killing three beasts before he had to sit down to recover his spirit power. Currently Yang Chen was not making a breakthrough in spirit power, rather he was trying to fuse the will of the XianTai Stage as soon as possible, therefore he had no need to continuously use such a method.

Everything was remarkably similar to the time when Yang Chen was at the execution grounds, the sword box resembling the immortal beheading blade within his hand, the underground spirit beasts who were trying to break in, stuck at the entrance appearing as if bound convicts. Yang Chen used the posture he was most familiar with and then started chopping down, one slash followed by another, three slashes were required to kill one beast. As soon as one spirit beast was killed, another would immediately follow up, hardly giving him any time to rest.

The Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets entered the bodies of the the underground spirit beasts under the influence of the Immortal

Executing Blade, regardless of their attributes, while chopping. The spirit power within their bodies was then completely used up, leaving none behind, so that Yang Chen could chop off the heads of spirit beasts without much difficulty.

Even if the spirit beasts were not very intelligent organisms, they still had been birthed from spirit wisdom. Beheading every one of them gave Yang Chen the sensation of killing a living organism, this caused the killing intent within his body to slightly increase, but it also caused the killing intent outside of his body to increase at the same rate.

The will of the XianTai Stage was most directly roused by massacre. What Yang Chen sensed at that moment was completely aligned with what happened when he was on the XianTai Stage. That portion of violent will rushed out from within Yang Chen's body and began to fuse with Yang Chen's killing intent.

For every spirit beast killed, Yang Chen was able to sense his temperament become more like an executioner, paying no attention to reason, paying no attention to the consequences, merely the firm resolution chopping down continuously. He also felt, that he himself had also become somewhat more aggressive.

The violent killing intent even made the spirit beasts on the outside begin to sense dread, making them not dare to enter. So after some time, Yang Chen had no other option than to stop his hand, on one side to recover his spirit power and on the other side to put the Three Purities Secret to use, so that the killing intent on his body could be completely absorbed.

Every day had turned into a loop again. Cultivating by slaughtering was very tedious and dull, without even a little bit of thrill or excitement. Every day, just like a machine, slashing his blade to kill. He had even started killing more than ten thousand spirit beasts per day. Sometimes, Yang Chen wanted to just rush out to the pile of spirit beasts and face fatal dangers and fight wantonly, to vent out his feelings, but the many years of cultivation experience in his previous life allowed him to restrain himself.

Currently he did not require that sort of reckless fighting, instead he needed to steadily increase his strength and conceal it from other people, who could cause trouble to him, and then be able to pay his respects to his master again. Other things were not even worth a glance when compared to this goal. Thinking about the expression in his master's eyes when they were parting, without any hope, while she was bidding him farewell, forced Yang Chen to inspire himself.

After the endless slaughter, Yang Chen did not know how much time had passed, but, he could now sense that the will of the XianTai Stage had finally been fully roused and appeared after experiencing the massacre of several million spirit beasts.

Bang!

Just like the time after he had killed a senior god in this life, suddenly an endless killing intent flashed within the Immortal Falling Well and all the people in the Immortal Falling Well were able to feel this terrible will. That will, which could even make the Jade Emperor shiver with fear, made every organism in the



Immortal Falling Well faint due to the intimidation, even YuanYing and Da Cheng experts were no exceptions. The only one who could remain sober was Yang Chen.

In the region near Yang Chen, these underground spiritual beasts were only formed out of spiritual influence with a little spiritual wisdom to act based on their instincts, but all of them were killed by this invading killing intent. Within a radius of a hundred meters, which was originally filled with spirit beasts, only a wide expanse, filled with a large number of spirit essences and nothing else remained.

As a matter of fact, it was not only the killing intent which he had brought back from the XianTai Stage, but also all of the killing intent the XianTai Stage accumulated from the countless beings which had been executed in it. This fearful beast which had been imprisoned within Yang Chen's body could finally release its pressure as much as it liked, without any restrictions and began to fuse with Yang Chen.

The spirit power within Yang Chen's body began to circulate, as if his body had turned into one huge black hole, frantically sucking in the spirit power of the underground spirit beasts. The speed of the spirit power rushing forth to enter his body made even Yang Chen fearful.

Fortunately the Reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets were able to effectively purify this spirit power. By no means did Yang Chen want to make his body explode because of spirit power surging in too fast. The mixture of the spirit power of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial

Formation secrets, began to crazily expand under the propulsion of the killing intent.

But that killing intent also began to once again shout with frenzy inside of Yang Chen's mind:

“Obey me! Obey me!”

But after having experienced it at the XianTai Stage already, Yang Chen could easily deal with it now. Within his mind, the image of his master's eyes while she was bidding him farewell began to flash continuously, the happy scene where his master was giving him a bright, light flying sword, and soon a smile appeared on Yang Chen's face once again.

“I have already said it many times, I am the executioner!”

Facing the will of the XianTai Stage, Yang Chen only smiled and did not waver, despite the will of the XianTai Stage exciting the killing intent on his body and making it go mad.

Very quickly, the will of the XianTai Stage, which was unable to suppress Yang Chen, could only be restrained by him and began to merge with his mind, trace by trace, and turn into a part of Yang Chen.

The familiar, obscure, red aura appeared in Yang Chen's surroundings again, that sinister red, blood mist looked striking under the illumination of the night pearls. When the killing intent

had completely merged with Yang Chen's mind, the spirit power within Yang Chen's body once again changed dramatically with a rumbling sound.

Originally he had already entered the fourth qi layer, enjoying that exceptional cultivation environment and adding onto these few days of incessant cultivation, Yang Chen had already accumulated enough spirit power, so when the spirit power was stimulated by the killing intent, he immediately broke through again and entered the fifth qi layer. During the process of fusing with the killing intent, he once again broke through the bottleneck of the fifth qi layer and under the crazy propulsion of the killing intent, his spirit power rose once again frantically and within a flash, it crossed the hurdle, reaching the sixth qi layer and started rushing towards seventh qi layer.

Only after reaching the barrier of the seventh qi layer did the spirit power start to calm down slowly, and did not remain as berserk as before. This rapid breaking through the barriers of three layers left Yang Chen's meridians in severe anguish. At the moment Yang Chen was unable to deal with it, so he immediately sat down on the obsidian jade mat and began to restore his meridians and stabilize his cultivation.

Elder Wu, overseeing the Immortal Falling Well, was the first person to wake up, but he only woke up after one day and one night's time. But after waking up he found that a cold killing intent was present everywhere, the concentration and fierceness of which made him feel fear throughout his entire body. He wanted to probe around, but found that under the suppression of the killing intent, he could not even move.

What kind of catastrophe had descended onto the Immortal Falling Well? Elder Wu didn't dare to come to a conclusion and could only helplessly experience the killing intent that had spread everywhere, trying to forcibly withstand it, but what else could he do.

According to Yang Chen's plan, he would cultivate to the foundation stage within ten years, that would be upgrading one realm per year, this was so that he did not seem abnormal to other people and at the same time could be considered as a rarely seen talent, able to gain the sect's attention. But, after the Heavenly Stairs he had already gained the sect's attention, so naturally, there was not much sense in concealing anything.

Thus Yang Chen had thought to let his cultivation take its natural course, but he hadn't anticipated that, at the Immortal Falling Well, the fusion with the killing intent would surprisingly happen in an instant, and that, stimulated by the killing intent, his cultivation would increase by three layers, from the qi layer middle stage, fourth layer, to the seventh layer. Calculating the time taken, it had taken him just one year of time to ascend three layers, this kind of speed could be considered most monstrous among talents.

Consolidating his cultivation and restoring the damage to his meridians took Yang Chen ten days time, during this time, a dense killing intent flooded the surroundings. Among the people in the Immortal Falling Cave, only Yang Chen and the recently woken Elder Wu were clear headed.

Yang Chen was aware of the damage caused by the killing intent

to the surroundings, so after consolidating his realm, he hurriedly began to cultivate the Three Purities Secrets. The second layer of the three purities secrets had unmatched speed while absorbing the killing intent. Within the brief period of six hours, the dense blood colored fog in his surroundings was completely absorbed.

This was the killing intent he accumulated by killing the countless immortals at the XianTai Stage, which had been completely transformed into spiritual awareness by Yang Chen. Even during the transformation, Yang Chen had a feeling that his spiritual awareness was like a hurricane which even he did not dare to accept.

Originally, Yang Chen's spiritual awareness was already at the peak of the foundation stage, but currently, after it rose without stopping, accumulating more and more, it began to attack the JieDan stage bottleneck. Even if it was a very experienced and knowledgeable person, he would still not dare to believe this. Yang Chen was a qi stage disciple at the moment, but surprisingly his spiritual awareness was already comparable to that of a JieDan stage expert.

Bang!

Under the incessant attack by the spiritual awareness, suddenly the sound of an explosion echoed within Yang Chen's mind. Soon after that, Yang Chen sensed his whole body shaking, as if his entire self had appeared in a blood colored world.

Yang Chen was aware that this was his awareness sea being established after his spiritual awareness had entered the JieDan

stage. Usually, one could only hope to establish their awareness sea after condensing their dan. As for Yang Chen, after absorbing the will of the XianTai Stage, he had directly stepped across this step.

Originally, the Three Purities Secrets had the effect of using the condensed spiritual awareness to expand the awareness sea, and currently they had opened the awareness sea, but the killing intent still hadn't been absorbed completely, it was still continuously absorbing and refining. And so within Yang Chen's awareness sea, variations began to slowly appear.

A blood colored smoke was present everywhere, as if all of the killing intent from outside of the body was collecting here. But very rapidly, this blood colored smoke began to concentrate and soon afterwards converged to form a blood colored river and began to flow over the blood colored ground. And so the awareness sea began to slowly fade away, as if all of the blood color began to converge within that river.

The absolutely empty awareness sea created only this blood colored river and no other scenery. But Yang Chen had become wild with joy. In his previous life, when he had just opened his awareness sea, the smoke was of the form of a drizzle, very small, as if it was a little point. How could it be compared to this long, blood colored awareness sea?

The Three Purities Secrets were precisely Three Purities Secrets, Yang Chen couldn't help but sigh regretfully at the strength of the cultivation methods used by the Greatest Supreme Elder. However, one thing was still very strange, this kind of strong elder, how could the people of the Profound Heaven Sect have captured and

delivered him to the XianTai Stage?

This kind of fantastic awareness sea, Yang Chen knew that this was only the lowest layer among the three layers of the awareness sea formed by the three purities secrets. This was just a newly established spiritual sea, the difference from the most pure layer was one hundred and eight thousand miles. But having this kind of great beginning, would Yang Chen still be anxious about his future cultivation?

Taking a satisfied breath, he withdrew his spiritual awareness from his awareness sea and became totally clear headed. This time, the fusion with the will of the XianTai Stage was an extremely pleasant surprise.

The killing intent that had been filling the air in the Immortal Falling Well was cleared out. Without that violent killing intent, the people within the Immortal Falling Well began to slowly wake up. For the ones with a stronger cultivation, when they woke up, they were ecstatic, seeing these several hundred unconscious spirit beasts in their surroundings. Regardless of anything, they first began to kill these spirit beasts, delivered to them as a present and collected their spirit essences.

Fortunately, all cultivators who were able to enter into the Immortal Falling Well were the ones who had been permitted by their sect leaders and had also researched the places they shouldn't go. Although some were quick to wake up, while some were slow, in the end, compared to underground spirit beasts, their recovery was rapid. Otherwise, the Immortal Falling Well would have lost the majority of the disciples on that day. In this case, everybody

was unclear about the reason they had lost consciousness, even the council of the five elders overseeing the Immortal Falling did not know about the reason. All the disciples who had woken up, were only concerned with collecting the spirit essences.

Yang Chen also didn't do anything uncommon, when he completely released his spiritual awareness, he became aware of everything in a perimeter of several hundred meters. Spirit essences and unconscious spirit beasts were strewn around all over, naturally Yang Chen did not let this chance escape and directly rushed out of the cave and cleared up the surroundings, raking in thousands upon thousands of spirit essences without any restraint. Only then did he return to the cave jubilantly. After coming in, he squeezed the head of the spirit beast at the entrance and began to inspect the changes within his body.

Yang Chen could easily determine that he was at the seventh qi layer, but the seventh qi layer right now was completely different from the seventh qi layer in his previous life. With the powerful Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, the current Yang Chen could deal with tens of Yang Chens from his previous life if they were at the same realm.

As a habit, Yang Chen took out a flying sword from the sword box and began to refine it. The second layer of refining of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets was not obstructed in the least and within the short period of two hours, the flying sword quickly rose up by one grade. The light of the sword became even brighter, making Yang Chen feel really gratified. Similar to that, the second layer of refining of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets was also not obstructed, it even directly rushed



to the third layer of refining.

As for the spirit power threads within his body, all threads of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets as well as the threads of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets began to shine and started splitting into more than two threads, what made Yang Chen even more delighted was, that the threads which were initially the size of silk, had at this moment surprisingly become thicker and more compact.

In Yang Chen's mind the image of the pain filled eyes of his master, bidding him farewell flashed again and in the blink of an eye, it turned into his master's face, saying to him:

“Yang Chen, this is a bright light sword which I have specifically refined for you, you should properly take care of it and cultivate more diligently!”

Gradually, all of these memories flashed through Yang Chen's mind.

Master, very soon I will reach the foundation stage, very soon, I will be able to return to your side and become your disciple again!

**03 May 2016**

The Profound Spirit Furnace was a magic tool which Yang Chen cared about; after all, this was an excellent furnace, ranked within the top ten even in the world of immortals, if Yang Chen meticulously upgraded it.

The Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets were of course not bad, or how would they be able to increase the Profound Spirit Furnace by a grade? There was no way that Yang Chen would not use this kind of good thing on Profound Spirit Furnace. The boundless spirit power under Yang Chen's control began to refine the Profound Spirit Furnace from the inside out.

Yang Chen was very cautious regarding this refining; he even made sure to be clear about all of the defects inside of the Profound Spirit Furnace using his spiritual awareness. There was a relationship between refining and the master; Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, which was already comparable to a middle JieDan expert, directly penetrated through the inside of the Profound Spirit Furnace, making the structure and defects of the Profound Spirit Furnace clear to him.

Although the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets was a very accomplished technique, Yang Chen still felt somewhat dissatisfied. The layer of the fire attributed spirit power was very low, moreover he didn't have a suitable fire source or other materials, so these flaws could be clearly seen but they couldn't be fixed, which made Yang Chen very regretful. Apparently, it had

become necessary for him to put an emphasis on increasing his fire attributed spirit power.

Initially Yang Chen had a fire attributed spirit root, but his realm had been very low then; in addition to that, he had already declared that in order to understand the other attributes, he had to have contact with all of the other phases. But now that his cultivation had become higher, Yang Chen had no other option than to think it over; he had to give prominence to his fire attributed cultivation, otherwise it would surely raise the eyebrows of many people.

Currently, he had a very good opportunity. Yang Chen knew that, within the Immortal Falling Well, there was a location which had an underground fire vein. Together with the geocentric fire, which was a high quality yin fire(fourth fire) that could be used for pill concoction, not only would the Profound Spirit Furnace be upgraded one more level, but Yang Chen's fire attributed cultivation could also become even more outstanding.

After the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets, he used the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secret, and then were the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. With these luxurious refining methods, adding on to them this luxurious maintenance skill, they could be considered equal to possessing a magic weapon. Even if a magic weapon of a higher grade than the Profound Spirit Furnace was put before him and the magic weapon was extremely powerful, it would still be overshadowed by them.

After refining the sword box, Yang Chen fished out the bottle of the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden from his qiankun pouch so

that it could absorb more spirit power. The geocentric fire was in another direction from the Li Lou Village so he needed to leave. When Yang Chen was going to put down the bottle to absorb more spirit power, something startled him.

The Medicine Garden's clean bottle and bottle lid were originally very high grade magic weapons, and because of Yang Chen's current level, at least before reaching the foundation stage, Yang Chen would not even think of refining them; even if he had the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising Secrets or the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, they would still be useless. At the moment, the medicine garden had been forcefully branded by Yang Chen's spiritual awareness, so at least it wouldn't harm Yang Chen.

Originally at the Yang Mountain, the Medicine Garden's bottle was only left with a thin trace of spirit power; at the time when he was receiving the elder's Sword Box, the bottle had completely absorbed that tiny spirit vein, but that also only added a finger thick layer, and nothing more. But currently, the bottle was completely filled with spirit power, the entire bottle let out a blue light which could shake a person's soul. Holding it in his hand, it was like a chunk of a sparkling and translucent ice cube.

Not only the bottle, even the lid of the blue colored bottle had absorbed spirit power until it was full, and emitted a golden, bright and dazzling light. This kind of change was something that even Yang Chen had not expected. Initially he believed that the lid was just a part of the bottle itself, but right then he had discovered that surprisingly it could function by itself, and moreover, looking at the color, it was very evident that the clean bottle's sword spell was metal attributed.

This was actually quite a nice surprise; at the very least, Yang Chen did not need to worry about the medicine garden's spirit power requirement for at least several tens to hundreds of years. Afterwards, as long as he was able to refine it by using any sort of method, maybe he could make medicine garden absorb all kinds of spirit power of the five phases and form a five phases world within the medicine garden. At that time, he could certainly grow more than the drug ingredients that were currently growing inside of the medicine garden. Cultivation was a very long road, and by the time when he would ascend, having a few thousand year matured herbs would definitely be a big advantage to him.

That underground spirit vein which had plentiful spirit power had already weakened by much due to Yang Chen's frantic absorption of spirit power within these two years, adding on to the absorption by the clean bottle. Only, the Immortal Falling Well was located below the ground, so it would naturally recover, but Yang Chen still unconsciously did not like it if a Fellow Daoist found this location in the future.

So with the help of the pearl in his hand, he took a last look at this unfair region, which he was reluctant to part with, and finally departed.

He could find the direction of Li Lou Village by the reaction of the pearl within his hand. This pearl, apart from illuminating the surroundings, could also guide those cultivators who had come here to train back to the Li Lou Village. As long as one followed the directions on the pearl, one would certainly arrive there.

While walking, Yang Chen checked the spirit essences he had received this time. These days, apart from cultivating through massacre all the time, he didn't have the opportunity to count his spoils of war.

After killing several million spirit beasts, Yang Chen possessed more than ten million spirit essences. More than ten million, what did that mean? Fifty thousand spirit essences of the five phases could promote the ejection rate of spirit power bubbling forth by one unit, this unit of spirit power rushing forth was equivalent to one percent of the ejection rate of spirit power in the whole Pure Yang Palace at the Meiqing Mountain spirit vein.

Even if it were only ten million spirit essences, they were still capable of expanding more than two hundred spirit veins by one unit, this meant, that this amount was able to allow the current Pure Yang Palace's spirit vein exit to expand by twice as much, it also meant that in the future, the concentration of spirit power at the Meiqing mountain would be an extra two times stronger when compared to before, for a total of three times as strong as it was before.

This time, if Yang Chen took out all of the spirit essences he had obtained, then the Pure Yang Palace would have an enormous change. For a sect to be strong, it needed to have disciples, cultivation methods and money. At the moment, Yang Chen, just by his own strength, could increase the Pure Yang Palace's strength. A sect which had the resources to obtain three times more spirit power, who didn't know what kind of effect that would have on its future?

Even if it was a foundation stage disciple, he could still not obtain this many spirit essences within ten years. That meant, for Yang Chen to obtain these many could be considered as a cheat.

His killing intent had slightly changed due to a small transformation of the blood color within his awareness sea. It covered the whole area in his surroundings, those underground beasts did not even dare to come near him. After slaughtering several millions of spirit beasts, Yang Chen emitted the pressure of a predator towards those spirit beasts, so naturally they did not dare to approach him of their own initiative.

Originally he had taken fifteen days time when coming here due to the continuous attacks by spirit beasts, but now, after only seven days, he could already see that the Li Lou Village was not more than a day's journey from here.

Suddenly, in front of him, a pearl colored light appeared, this was the pearl light of a pearl, similar to Yang Chen's, which could help people in reaching the Li Lou Village. Within a moment, a voice echoed in Yang Chen's ears:

“Hahahaha, waiting for one and half a years for you was not in vain, finally you have come! Yang Chen, accept your death!”

This voice seemed somewhat familiar to him, but Yang Chen was still stumped for a few moments. Only then did he remember. Surprisingly, this was the voice of Jin Tao. Jin Tao should have been under the effect of his Heart's Devil and the soul stunning technique used by him, so strictly speaking, if he did not find a high level expert within the Immortal Falling Well, it should have

been impossible for him to recover by himself, so how could he wait for Yang Chen for one and a half years?

“Trying to kill me within the Immortal Falling Well, Jin Tao, aren’t you worried about being discovered by the council of the five elders?”

Since the other party had shouted at Yang Chen to die, but still hadn’t attacked, it could be assumed that he still had some worries. He had heard some hesitation within that voice, so Yang Chen didn’t take it seriously but instead shouted this question.

“If it was before, certainly people could not kill anyone within the Immortal Falling Well, but now, hmph!”

Jin Tao snorted.

“Some kind of unknown demon has appeared, so the elders have already gone to the depths of the Immortal Falling Well to investigate it. Therefore, if some kind of accident happens with training disciples, it would be a perfectly normal event, isn’t that so?”

“That is to say, killing people here would not cause any kind of trouble?”

Yang Chen was not worried about causing trouble, but if he was able to avoid trouble, he would naturally take that opportunity.



“Therefore, you should extend your neck so I can easily execute you, apart from me, nobody will even discover how you died!”

On Jin Tao’s face an evil grin and some anger could be seen.

“To think that I, the great Jin Tao, a peak foundation stage expert was surprisingly made fun of by a trifling qi stage youngster like you, if it were not for the elder of the council who found the abnormality, I still would have been muddleheaded!”

But Jin Tao’s furious remark told Yang Chen the reason for why the Jin Tao, who had been under the effect of the soul stunning technique and his Heart’s Devil could have sobered up and was waiting for him for one and a half years. So it turned it was due to an elder. For an elder, who was an overseer of the Immortal Falling Well, to find that something was abnormal with a disciple who had come to train and correct it, was actually quite normal, nothing out of the ordinary.

“I have been a joke among the people at the Immortal Falling Well for a year because of you, I must turn all of your bones to ashes to remove this hatred from my heart!”

Jin Tao firmly said, he was an arrogant and haughty person, this kind of affair had brought him utter shame and humiliation. Most of all the fact that he clearly knew that it was done by Yang Chen, but he still could not disclose this fact to others. If anyone knew that he had been played by a qi stage youngster, he would never be able to raise his head ever again.

Jin Tao was extremely sure that Yang Chen had plotted against him, otherwise he could in no way have made Jin Tao so depressed. Though he was not clear how Yang Chen had plotted against him, but he knew that this qi stage youngster was a second grade pill concocting master, maybe he had used some kind of vicious poison to deal with him. If confronted head on, Jin Tao was convinced that even ten Yang Chens would be unable to do anything to him.

Naturally, Yang Chen was not easily convinced by Jin Tao's words and released his spiritual awareness to the limit and began to check for signs of activity in the surroundings. Yang Chen only wanted to check for signs of other people and was not looking for any details, his spiritual awareness covered a radius of several hundred meters. The result of this investigation made Yang Chen very pleased, there were no people in the surroundings, only spirit beasts.

Withdrawing that trace of killing intent which pressured the underground spirit beasts, Yang Chen smiled at Jin Tao in front of him and said:

“Jin Tao, for every debt there is a debtor...”

Not waiting for Yang Chen to finish speaking, Jin Tao interrupted him and evilly grinned:

“That's right, injustice has a head and debt has a debtor, speaking of this, yes, my TianQuan sect's Junior Disciple, Han Jiande, had taken the initiative to provoke you and moreover had issued that life or death challenge, dying served him right!

Indeed, we are cultivators, if we aren't meticulous about it then what is the point. To help one's own people is often not the right thing according to logic, but for this reason you must also not harbor any grudges, this is the way of the world, really unjust!"

"Many thanks, Senior Disciple Jin for giving me a pointer!"

Because Jin Tao's words had allowed Yang Chen to gain a sudden insight, he said these words of thanks to an enemy for the first time.

"What pointers?"

Jin Tao on the contrary stayed at his original position, he had no idea what kind of guidance his words regarding injustice having a head was to Yang Chen.

"Firstly these words of Senior Disciple, that to help the people close one's self was not always supported by logic!"

Yang Chen enthusiastically cupped his hands to express his thanks to Jin Tao, this made Jin Tao's complexion even more unsightly.

"To have a first implies there is also a second, what is the second reason?"

At this moment, Jin Tao had surprisingly taken interest in Yang Chen's words, so he couldn't help but ask inquisitively.

“Second is precisely to thank Senior Disciple for telling me that killing him here will not cause any kind of trouble.”

Yang Chen replied earnestly as before.

Hearing Yang Chen's reply, Jin Tao was stunned for a moment and then suddenly started to laugh wildly, pointing a finger towards Yang Chen and clutching his abdomen with the other hand, he kept on laughing for a long time, as if he had heard some kind of great joke.

“Hahahaha!”

Only after laughing loudly for a long time, did he return to normal and said with a blank expression:

“This is the best joke that I have heard in my life, I will teach you the difference between the foundation stage and the qi stage!”

After saying this, a sword ray suddenly flew high into the air from his back. It quickly transformed into a flying sword, bright as snow, and slowly started hovering horizontally in front of Jin Tao.

“Even if you have killed several qi stage disciples, to believe that I am the same as them!”

Jin Tao sneered and extended his hand to point a finger at Yang Chen and immediately the flying sword turned into a sword ray and rushed swiftly towards Yang Chen.

Yang Chen, who had been sitting in front of him, however began to sway weirdly and lost his presence. Against this, Jin Tao was seemingly not even startled a little bit, the sword ray flashed once and began to flutter in the surroundings.

“An escaping technique? So you were at the eighth qi layer, no wonder you talk so big!”

Jin Tao sneered and, reaching his hand to touch the ground with one finger, he loudly shouted:

“Break for me!”

The region on the ground where the finger had touched, suddenly exploded and soon afterwards the sword ray flashed again and faded away within the breach in the ground.

Ting ting ting ting!

Continuous sounds of collision could be heard from underground. Jin Tao did not dare to believe what he was hearing.

“What kind of object is this? It can obstruct my flying sword?”

Jin Tao was really astonished, unexpectedly the flying sword which he had refined very meticulously was being stopped again and again by Yang Chen, using some kind of weapon. This was certainly not an object which could normally be taken out by a qi stage disciple. After his astonishment, Jin Tao's face revealed a happy expression.

“After killing him, this good weapon will belong to me!”

“I think you must be wondering now, why, even after such a long time, no spirit beast has appeared from the surroundings!”

Yang Chen didn't appear himself, but his voice echoed in all directions.

Hearing Yang Chen's words, Jin Tao was suddenly startled and discovered the abnormality in the surroundings; because he was so pleased to get a chance to kill Yang Chen he didn't notice this obvious circumstance, which clearly did not conform to common sense.

“What's the matter?”

He had already discovered that ten underground spirit beasts had began to surround him, if he did not recall his flying sword, apparently he would be turned to pulp by these spirit beasts.

When he was hesitating about it, he suddenly heard Yang Chen's

voice again:

“You want to kill me with this level of ability? Dream on!”

‘Dream on!’ These words, once they entered Jin Tao’s mind, as if they had set off a deep seated fear, buried at the bottom of his mind, his whole self immediately became hysterical.

# Chapter 63 - Grade Three Pill Concocting Master

Last time, on top of using the soul stunning technique, Yang Chen also used these most crushing words: 'Dream On'. Now Yang Chen had once again shouted those words, while using the soul stunning technique of the Three Purities Secrets, which made Jin Tao sink into a deep depression.

The Soul Stunning technique was after all a magic within the Three Purities Secrets of the Greatest Supreme Elder. Even if one elder of the council of elders was able to wake him from that sort of depression, a trace of that heart's devil was still deeply concealed within the deepest parts of Jin Tao's subconscious mind.

At that time Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had already broken through to the middle JieDan stage, so compared to the first time, the strength of the soul stunning technique was even more formidable this time. Saying the same thing as before allowed the trace of the heart's devil within Jin Tao's mind to flare up again, rendering him incapable of controlling his attacks smoothly.

The most frightening thing for him was that the spirit beasts in the surroundings had discovered that the trace of this fierce killing intent had already disappeared completely, so they started attacking Jin Tao viciously. Even if Jin Tao was distracted, he was still able to sense the threat that these underground spirit beasts posed, so the flying sword which had originally been attacking Yang Chen underground flew out of the ground and within a moment began to dance in all directions around Jin Tao, attacking



those spirit beasts.

In an unprecedented confusion and flurry, even Jin Tao himself did not know the reason why he was so absent minded at this frightening time, he only knew that he had to stake all of his strength to be able to resist those spirit beasts attacking him from all sides. To be able to kill them while they were defenseless was already the best he could hope for.

The more he panicked, the more he thought about Yang Chen's warning and the more he remembered that Yang Chen was still there after using the Earth Evading Technique to flee underground. Unfortunately for him, even though Jin Tao was at the peak of the foundation stage he did not have the earth attribute, so he would not be able to use the same technique.

At some point in the fight, an armor had appeared on Jin Tao's body. Apparently this was Jin Tao's body protecting magic armor. When the few underground beasts who were able to get by the flying sword attacked Jin Tao, their claws couldn't do more than cause a few sparks. Although the efficacy of this magic armor was pretty good, rather than feeling proud of himself, Jin Tao was getting more and more panicky and frightened.

What peak foundation stage strength? What 'crushing Yang Chen's bones to ash'? Compared to the flock of underground spirit beasts in front of him, all of this was insignificant. At this time, only feelings of fear and regret occupied Jin Tao's heart, regret being the complete majority.

He was a majestic expert at the peak of the foundation stage who

was just one step away from condensing his dan and becoming a JieDan stage expert, what kind of demon had confused his mind that he really stuck his head out for that worthless disciple of his sect? Han Jiande, a disciple at the sixth qi layer, he had been very insistent on challenging a minor third qi layer youngster to a life and death duel. This had already been a matter of ridicule and what was even more embarrassing was that instead of winning the duel, he had gotten himself killed.

Life and death battles were considered to be the most upright form of resolving a grudge, regardless of whether someone lives or dies, they would not be looked into after the event. Certainly Jin Tao himself had hit his head somewhere, hearing the name of Pure Yang Palace's Yang Chen he was absolutely insistent on making things difficult for him, but instead he fell into his own trap, his minor obstructions were taken care of by Yang Chen, who had then proceeded to plant a Heart's Devil.

It would be reasonable to say that, even after Jin Tao became clear headed, he still didn't understand the seriousness of the situation, otherwise he wouldn't have come to take out his anger on Yang Chen and end up in his current plight.

But at that moment, it was already too late for regret, not only was he being attacked from all sides by underground spirit beasts, there was still Yang Chen, watching like a tiger, tracking his prey from a secret location.

“Younger Disciple, I was only jesting, you must not misunderstand by all means!”

In this life and death crisis, Jin Tao could do nothing but continue to pretend that he wasn't scared and shout into the surroundings with a loud voice. Currently his flying sword was becoming less and less effective, he thought of leaving, but he knew that Yang Chen would not let him off that easily, so he could only admit defeat first and pray that Yang Chen became softhearted and let him go. It was very probable that Yang Chen was only trying to make him lose confidence from the beginning.

“Actually I wanted to let Senior disciple Jin get away at first, but unfortunately Senior Disciple Jin should not have informed me that nobody would know about anything that happened here.”

Yang Chen's voice echoed from all directions, making it impossible to determine his location. But one thing was certain, that he was keeping a close watch on Jin Tao's movements at all times.

Although he did not know for what reason the underground spirit beasts were not attacking Yang Chen, at this moment Jin Tao did not have much time to think about it, he turned away and immediately started running. His body protecting magic armor opened to the maximum size, so that the attacks of the underground spirit beasts could not cause much harm, he only wanted to be able to reach the Li Lou village, as for other matters, they could wait.

Bang! Bang!

The sound of explosions continued to echo. It was a pity, Yang Chen absolutely would not allow him this chance. After his

rebirth, Yang Chen had become very clear that if a snake was not beaten to death, then it would cause endless calamities, at this moment he would not allow that kind of mistake to happen.

Frantically dashing towards the village, Jin Tao suddenly discovered that the pressure in front of him had lowered by a lot, the spirit beasts coming out in the surrounding area had suddenly deserted the area in front of him and stopped obstructing him. Seeing these circumstances, Jin Tao was delighted within his heart and was just about to dash forward with more speed, when suddenly a figure appeared from underground, as if someone had been waiting for him there and Jin Tao crashed into him at high speed.

An idea flashed within Jin Tao's mind and he immediately controlled his flying sword to attack Yang Chen. When the flying sword was just about to strike, Jin Tao was suddenly stunned again for a split second. But in this split second, Jin Tao saw Yang Chen holding something within his hand. A light flashed and he immediately felt a coldness on his neck. Following which his whole body loosened up and he didn't feel the effects of Yang Chen's attack anymore. He felt relaxed from head to toe in a way he had never felt before.

Soon after that, Jin Tao felt as if he had flown high into the air and his field of view couldn't help but rotate. Only after he was able to see that headless corpse on the ground, under the illumination of a night pearl, did Jin Tao realize what had happened. It was then that an expression of shock appeared on his face. At this time, within the eyes of the flying head a hopeful expression appeared.

The sword of the white flying sword was already at Yang Chen's side and within the blink of an eye, it would penetrate his body. Although he himself had died, taking down Yang Chen together with him was also a satisfactory conclusion.

However, while a dream is one thing, reality is actually something else entirely. Jin Tao expected Yang Chen to die by the sword, but Yang Chen merely extended one hand and grabbed the fluttering sword light as if catching a mouse. With a heart full of regret and unwillingness, Jin Tao, at last, closed his eyes completely.

With the ownerless flying sword in his hand, Yang Chen shook his head while looking at Jin Tao without saying anything. Previously he was delighted after making a breakthrough, but unfortunately this eyesore spoiled his fun. Could it be that he really thought that Yang Chen would be afraid to kill him?

Yang Chen didn't forget about Jin Tao's qiankun pouch and that protective armor on his body. The chance that Jin Tao had provided him was hard to come by, the location of this place was completely hidden and it was furthermore quite far from Li Lou Village. Here, Yang Chen could dare to kill him without any mental burden and seize his wealth. Such an easy opportunity to earn free money, he absolutely could not let it go!

Within the qiankun pouch there were only seven to eight thousand spirit essences, as well as a hundred or so catties of low grade spirit stones, which caused Yang Chen to curse him. Apart from these, there were also several kinds of elixirs and the recipe to refine a nature pill. This was the most widespread elixir used at

the time, in order to condense the dan, Jin Tao was an expert at the peak of the foundation stage, he actually could have used it immediately, but unfortunately he had passed it on to Yang Chen instead.

The flying sword was of a pretty high grade, but compared to the flying sword left behind by the ancestor in the sword box it was still somewhat lower. Yang Chen directly stored it in the sword box, maybe he would have a use for it in the future. The defensive armor on the contrary was made of a high quality material. But there was still one problem, when Yang Chen would get his hands on a Geocentric Flame, he could refine his Profound Spirit Furnace, but he could do nothing about improving the flying sword, nevertheless getting something was always better than getting nothing. Regardless of whether it was the flying sword or the defensive armor, Yang Chen could not transform them even one bit and could use them in the way he got them.

He also found a pile of talismans which could be sold for some spirit stones later. For now he stored them inside of the qiankun pouch so he could take care of them later.

Apart from this, he also found some high quality profound metal essences, it was reasonable to assume that Jin Tao wanted to use them to temper his flying sword. Yang Chen wasn't modest and directly put them into his Achievement's ring. But he was most interested in those the jade slips that Jin Tao carried.

The first one was the water attributed cultivation method of the TianQuan Sect, which was used for cultivation after the foundation stage, the Okra Yin Water Profound Secrets. Yang Chen

had heard about this cultivation method before, apparently it could replace Yang Chen's tenth water cultivation method.

Obtaining this cultivation method was Yang Chen's luck, under normal circumstances that cultivation method was recorded entirely within the mind and was absolutely not recorded on jade slips. Clearly this Jin Tao had planned to use this for someone else, but before he could give it to that person, he had died and this jade slip had become an object within Yang Chen's qiankun pouch.

On another one of the jade slips, there was a method to create the diagram of a spell. Yang Chen inspected it for some time although he didn't have any great interest in it, but it could indeed be used as a present for Gongsun Ling, who could research it.

On the last jade slip was a map. If it was any ordinary map, Yang Chen would not have cared about it, but on this map, three locations were marked. Yang Chen had heard about treasure being found at all of these three locations in his previous life. Though Yang Chen had a lot of information about these locations, it was not comparable to the detailed information recorded on this map. Looking at it, if he could find the time, Yang Chen could still visit these places to take a look.

After receiving all of these good items, Yang Chen threw the qiankun pouch into the Achievement's Ring. Similarly Yang Chen had already collected many custom qiankun pouches of other sects, waiting for the time when he collected enough and he made the breakthrough to another realm. In the future he could use these qiankun pouches to increase the grade of his own qiankun pouch. Although he still had the Achievement Ring, while the qiankun

pouch given to him by the sect was just a decoration, to maintain appearances Yang Chen did not mind having a high grade one.

As for Jin Tao's dead body, Yang Chen did not need to take care of it, after he left, these underground spirit beasts in the surroundings would thoroughly eat his body. The dead body of a peak foundation stage expert was like a big supplement pill for these spirit beasts, they didn't leave even the last bits of dregs. Within the Immortal Falling Well, another careless cultivator had fallen into the mouths of spirit beasts.

Within the market of the Li Lou village, cultivators could be seen moving around in groups of two and three. Since there was no day and night here, people could be seen at any time.

One cultivator, who entered the market and wanted to start some business by selling elixirs and remains on the outer side for one day's time could earn many spirit essences. As long as he had the right price, this absolutely was a very good deal. Entering the market, the cultivators habitually swept a glance over an empty corner the same as before and that corner was still empty as before.

He was just about to go to take a stroll to another region, when suddenly a silhouette appeared and walked towards that corner. Under the astonished gaze of those cultivators, that silhouette directly sat on the ground and afterwards spread a piece of cloth in front of him, placing down a jade bottle and sat motionlessly.

In great alarm, the cultivators hastily rubbed their eyes, not even daring to be convinced of what they were seeing and started



probing with their spiritual awareness. It was true, there actually was a person sitting in that corner with a white cloth arranged in front of him, with a small jade bottle on top. An upper qi layer cultivator, his characteristics were the same as the second grade pill concocting expert who had appeared two years ago, except for the fact that his cultivation was a little higher.

After the moment of the surprise, the cultivators were exhilarated and nearly started shouting in joy. Surprisingly they were able to run into the person who sold second grade yang qi pills. This was simply a fortuitous encounter for them, but upon seeing the price, anyone would say that it was simply profiteering.

In his exhilaration, one cultivator suddenly took a big stride forward. But, even if he was quick, other people were even quicker compared to him. More than ten cultivators shot forwards like an arrow from all around and rushed towards this corner. Within seconds, this corner was surrounded by more than ten cultivators.

The person who appeared was precisely Yang Chen, but he hadn't anticipated that he would be so popular within the Immortal Falling Well. Because the underground spirit beasts didn't dare to approach him, Yang Chen was not able to use all of those yang qi pills he had refined for his own use, so he found the same position within the market to sell them when this kind of scene occurred in front of him.

A second grade pill concocting expert, furthermore a qi layer second grade pill concocting expert, who did not know what this meant. The people who had surrounded him this time were not seeking the pills that Yang Chen was selling, instead they were

seeking to obtain Yang Chen's friendship. In case Yang Chen was able to become a third grade pill concocting expert, then Yang Chen would immediately turn into each and every sect's honored guest.

In the mortal world, a fourth grade pill concocting master was already the limit, no higher grade had ever appeared before.

As long as any pill was passed through refining three times, its efficiency would rise by at least ten or even a hundred times. If it was refined four times, then the pill could be considered as an immortal grade pill. As for the highest limit of nine refinings, a ninth grade pill refined by the Greatest Supreme Elder could allow an ordinary mortal to directly ascend to the spiritual world. Seeing a ninth grade pill in this world was simply unimaginable.

The jade bottle which he had currently was sold immediately and on the white cloth in front of him were also several spirit essences. He was still sitting there motionlessly, but the people around him were anxious, everyone noticed that this time Yang Chen had only brought one bottle of yang qi pills to sell, they couldn't do anything about this and hurriedly asked:

“Younger Disciple Yang, don't you have any more, I am willing to pay a high price to buy them!”

At first they thought that Yang Chen would not produce any more pills, but suddenly Yang Chen took out few bottles. These bottles provoked the same reaction as the first one and immediately sold out. Second grade yang qi pills were comparable to yuan cultivation pills, but they were much more convenient and

the effect was nearly the same, everyone knew about its benefits.

Seeing that Yang Chen did not have any more pills to take out, the people didn't start shouting again, showing consideration for Yang Chen's business. Aside from obtaining tangible benefits for themselves, if they were able to leave an impression on Yang Chen, then in the future they would have plenty of chances to associate with him.

After selling the pills, Yang Chen didn't want to stop for long. But just as he was about to leave, someone suddenly dashed forward to ask:

“Younger Disciple Yang, don't you have any third grade pills?”

The person just wanted to probe to initiate a conversation but Yang Chen halted his steps and, turning towards the person who asked the question, he suddenly said:

“Wait for me to come out of Immortal Falling Well, then!”

Bang!

These words were just like sparks coming out of a deep fryer.

# Chapter 64 - Want To Play With Fire With Me?

A third grade pill, there was no need to talk about efficiency, everyone who was able to refine third grade pills was considered to be an outstanding talent within this world. The already known third grade pill refining experts were all nearly YuanYing or Da Cheng stage monsters, even being able to see them was a huge event, let alone receiving their pills.

But surprisingly Yang Chen had declared that within one year he would be able to refine third grade pills, right in front of them. Wouldn't that mean that, after coming out of the Immortal Falling Well, he would become a third grade pill concocting master?

A third grade pill concocting master at the qi layer? This could not just be considered as a talent, this was a monster. Any pill, as long as it was a third grade pill, even if it was the most common yang qi pill, it could still be compared to a Jade Lingzhi Pill. It should be known that the Jade Lingzhi Pill could heal any kind of injury and even bring back a person from the brink of death. This pill was simply outrageous.

“Younger Disciple Yang, I am from the Universal Sect, if you find any problems within the Immortal Falling Well, just tell me!”

“Younger Disciple Yang, after coming out of the Immortal Falling Well, if you need anything, look for me at the Mo Yun Sect...”

Within a moment, countless voices started talking close to Yang Chen, striving to make a good impression on him. How many people could get the opportunity to become friends with a third grade pill concocting master, most of all someone at the qi layer, who hadn't become a third grade pill concocting master yet? If they could give him enough assistance, then their future gains would be ample enough to make even their sect's Sect Leaders drool.

The chaos at that corner immediately captured the attention of the other people within the market, everyone released their spiritual awareness to watch, but because they did not hear what these people said, they were confused why an upper qi layer cultivator could make foundation stage and even initial JieDan stage experts chase after him.

A qi layer cultivator, moreover at that corner, could it be that second grade pill concocting master? Immediately all of them understood everything and began to rush in that direction.

The higher the number of people assembled there, the more it increased Yang Chen's urge to flee from the scene. The enthusiasm these cultivators showed would make people believe that Yang Chen was some kind of amazing personality. Yang Chen reckoned that even if the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace personally appeared, he still wouldn't be able to get this kind of treatment.

“This Yang Chen appreciates everyone's kind intentions.”

Finally Yang Chen said this, cupped his hand, bowed all around and said in a loud voice:

“This youngster’s ability is merely superficial, myself is not worthy of the praise Seniors give. Myself still lacks different flames which can be found at different places, if any one of you Seniors have any information related to different flames, Myself is ready to swap it for a furnace full of pills.”

Hearing these words, all of them remembered something. What Yang Chen had previously said, about being able to refine a pill thrice after returning from the Immortal Falling Well, that would mean that he was only incapable of refining thrice because he was lacking some high grade flames. As long as he got hold of a flame, he would be able to immediately break through to become a third grade pill concocting expert.

Although in his previous life Yang Chen was a cultivator with the fire attribute, he was only able to find the flame ‘Real Sun Fire’, which was very well suited to his cultivation, by a fluke, otherwise Yang Chen would not have been able to ascend successfully. To find a flame by oneself was an extremely difficult task, so maybe he would be able to get some assistance from these people in searching for flames, by handing out some favors.

Regardless of whether the flame was of a low or high grade, even if it was unsuitable for Yang Chen, it could still be absorbed by the Profound Spirit Furnace and increase its grade, so this kind of deal had only benefits for Yang Chen and no harm, why shouldn’t he do it?

As for these cultivators, now they knew what this future third grade pill concocting master required, so if they wanted pills from

him, it was only natural that they should use their connections to seek information regarding this. If they were able to find something, it would give them a chance to obtain Yang Chen's friendship. In this world, where would they get such an easy opportunity to curry favor with a third grade pill concocting master, furthermore one that was still at the qi layer?

Countless cultivators left with all kinds of hopes and finally Yang Chen didn't need to cup his hands to the surroundings anymore and could go by himself again, to take care of his own matters. Within the Immortal Falling Well, everyone only cared about tempering themselves and killing spirit beasts, as for making friends with a pill concocting master, they would try to seize that opportunity if it was convenient, as for everything else, it could only be done at a later time after they came out.

Immediately afterwards, Yang Chen once again disappeared into the Immortal Falling Well, but that didn't cause any suspicion, as everyone had come to the Immortal Falling Well to train by killing spirit beasts. Everyone within the Immortal Falling Well had this kind of lifestyle, they went out and they knew where they could find spirit beasts they could kill.

This event didn't bring any substantial benefits for Yang Chen, it merely gave people a chance to curry favor with him and in return it gave Yang Chen the opportunity to ask for other people's assistance in searching for different flames, nothing else was affected.

Currently Yang Chen did not attach much importance to anything other than obtaining the Geocentric Flame. Within the

five years that Yang Chen had joined the Pure Yang Palace, Yang Chen hadn't forgotten his training for even one day, he was doing all of this with only the desire to pay respects under his master again.

Yang Chen had a very strong premonition, as long as he was able to obtain the Geocentric Flame within the Immortal Falling Well, his cultivation of the fire attribute would be able to reach the foundation stage. No matter what, at that point in time Yang Chen was stranded at the qi layer. In many matters he was not able to do anything because he hadn't officially built his foundation and connected the spiritual influence of heaven and earth. Even to defend himself, he could only rely on other methods.

The whole journey towards the location of the Geocentric Flame was very relaxed, wherever he went, all of the underground spirit beasts disappeared at lightning speed, so he didn't come across any hinderances at all.

In a region, some distance behind Yang Chen, someone was creasing his brows. Yang Chen's speed was very rapid, making all of them incapable of catching up to him.

“Could it be that the Pure Yang Palace has discovered a method to keep away the spirit beasts? How can he move this quickly? Why aren't the underground spirit beasts attacking him?”

That person was puzzled and while examining the compass he held, he raised his head to look in the direction where Yang Chen had disappeared and wrinkled his brows again.



“A qi layer cultivator who can become a third grade pill concocting expert? This kind of person should not remain at the Pure Yang Palace!”

In some other direction, another shadow said this while holding a similar compass. His expression showed that he did not have any good intentions, looking at the continuously trembling pointer of the compass.

“The Pure Yang Palace has gained an immense reputation in the recent years, even a qi layer youngster is bragging and swindling people in the Immortal Falling Well, it would be a good lesson for them!”

The high level expert said.

“Is it possible that the Pure Yang Palace has obtained the guidance of a senior expert? Otherwise how could their outer disciples increase so much in the last few years. Even a qi layer youngster can easily become a second grade pill concocting master!”

A black clothed person said while enviously looking in the direction in which Yang Chen left.

“I will capture this youngster and torture him to reveal the secrets of the Pure Yang Palace!”

The large number of people following Yang Chen had various sorts of ideas. But the strangest thing was that they all held the same kind of compass, which pointed towards Yang Chen's location.

Even if all of them released their spiritual awareness, Yang Chen would still not be able to discover these people, because they followed him from a distance one hour away. Although Yang Chen's spiritual awareness had reached middle JieDan stage, his spirit power was quite lacking, several kilometers was its maximum range. Yang Chen would not be able to find someone if he was outside of this range.

But even if Yang Chen was unable to discover them, they were also unable to keep up with Yang Chen's pace. The underground spirit beasts kept coming up to attack them like always, this convinced those people even more that the Pure Yang Palace, or more precisely, Yang Chen, had found some way which could deal with the underground spirit beasts. This method, they definitely had to obtain it!

Actually, Yang Chen was not moving that fast, just at his regular speed. Within the Immortal Falling Well, Yang Chen hadn't been flying to move around, even though he was currently at the seventh qi layer, while a cultivator gained the ability to fly without using any talisman tool after reaching the sixth qi layer. But below the ground the most secure way was to walk, one absolutely couldn't show off one's ability.

The problem was, even though Yang Chen was walking normally and those several people were quick, if they wanted to catch up

with Yang Chen by going against hundreds or thousands of spirit beasts, even though they were all experts at the foundation or even JieDan stage, they still had to make their way by cutting a bloody path.

Yang Chen seemed completely unaware of what was happening behind him, he just calmly kept on walking towards his destination. In this direction there was an underground river formed of magma. A lot of people knew that the Geocentric Flame was located at that magma river. Since it was not any highly secret location, nobody found it strange that he was going there. In any case, he was a fire attributed cultivator, so coming to this magma river was very suitable for his cultivation.

The magma river emitted a dark red colored brilliance, this was also the only region within the Immortal Falling Well which was naturally illuminated. The red colored magma slowly flowed below the ground and from time to time some magma would leak out of the river, forming a few blisters on the ground and making the surroundings sizzling hot. An ordinary person would be basically unable to support himself.

The most unexpected thing here was that, when Yang Chen was hurrying over here, a silhouette could be seen standing on a high rock, attentively gazing at that magma river.

“You have finally come!”

Sensing Yang Chen’s presence, the person standing above the rock came down and said in an arrogant tone:

“It took you long enough!”

The dim red color reflecting against the skin of his face, gave him an appearance similar to Yang Chen when he came out of the XianTai Stage.

“Here is a river of magma and you lack a flame, maybe you should try your luck and see if you can find the Geocentric Flame.”

The person apparently wanted to convey the feeling that Yang Chen’s appearance here was not a surprise to him. Not waiting for Yang Chen to speak, he eagerly declared his conclusion.

“Am I correct?”

“You are indeed correct!”

Finally Yang Chen had the opportunity to open his mouth, but he was not intimidated by that person’s knowledge about him, because that person spoke too quickly, talking with complete confidence and without shame about his thoughts, not even giving Yang Chen any time to speak.

Looking at the complacent smile on that person’s face, Yang Chen said:

“But even if you are correct, what does this have to do with me?”

This one rhetorical question made that person's smug smile directly curve downwards. He absolutely did not expect that Yang Chen would give him this kind of reply and with such a tone.

What he had thought was that Yang Chen was a qi layer youngster, so in his plans, if he correctly guessed Yang Chen's aim, it would surely shock Yang Chen, and in his shock, Yang Chen would ask for guidance. Afterwards he would suddenly flash his name, which would sound to Yang Chen like thunder piercing his ears, which would then intimidate him and make him extremely respectful. What came next would be a matter of course.

But he hadn't thought that Yang Chen would reply like this. In other words, the plan that he had thought of for a long time completely failed. This made him, who had constantly enjoyed popularity and many people chasing after him within his sect, fly out in rage, due to the humiliation.

"Let's get directly to the point, kid, I want to know a few things from you, if you answer me, then it will be very beneficial for you."

The person who had spoken so calmly before, immediately changed his tone:

"You must not throw away your life to save your face!"

"With pleasure, as long as you can provide me with enough benefits, there is nothing we can not discuss."

A smiling expression appeared on Yang Chen's face.

“Speaking of this, what do you want to talk about and what will the benefits you want to give me, be?”

This kind of delighted reply by Yang Chen shocked the other person. Originally, the loftiness which he had built up for a long time had been broken by these interruptions, it was supposed to be like taking candy from a kid, but he ended up getting robbed instead. At the same time, that air of superiority of his was also diminished, two people using favors to exchange for information, this was just doing business and not a problem of who was superior and who was not.

“You are a qi layer youngster, how can you move so freely through the Immortal Falling Well?”

No matter what, since Yang Chen had shown a cooperative attitude, giving no reason for the other person to be angry, that person could only ask his question.

“Furthermore, you are at the qi layer, yet you have become a second grade pill concocting master, what kind of secret is behind this?”

“These two things are not any great secret.”

Yang Chen faintly smiled and then asked:

“However, what kind of benefits can you give me? If they are worth less than the secrets, we cannot reach a deal!”

“As long as you speak, I will let you retain your little life. You can use your life in exchange for these two secrets!”

The other person finally revealed his fierceness.

“This price, isn’t it high enough?”

While speaking, a strong pressure suddenly pushed down from the sky, and a huge net came down at Yang Chen. That person had unexpectedly determined that he first had to capture Yang Chen and torture him to get answers, when talking with him.

‘Not good!’

A stifling pressure from someone else was something that Yang Chen could easily ignore, that pressure was trifling to deal with for him, but that huge net caused a fear in Yang Chen, if he got caught in that net, he would absolutely not be able to escape from it in a short period. Suddenly Yang Chen dashed forward at a very fast speed, directly stepping into the magma sea. Immediately after that, Yang Chen’s figure faded away, as if he himself had turned into magma.

“Eh?”

The other person's net ended up catching only air, he hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would surprisingly not be influenced by his pressure, but instead would be able to use a fleeing technique to escape. But he immediately recovered and coldly snorted:

“Humph, a trifling fire escape technique, he must have barely learned it, yet he dares to show it off in front of me? Qi layer youngster, let me see, where can you run to?”

His body flashed once and immediately disappeared into the lava.

Within the magma river, as if Yang Chen did not sense any of the burning heat, he effortlessly continued forward. Once the enemy chased after him into the magma river, Yang Chen immediately sensed his presence. Unwilling to forgive him, Yang Chen could not help but sneer.

“Want to play with fire with me? I would like to see how ferocious you can be within this fire!”



# Chapter 65 - Who Said The Flame Was At The Center?

Yang Chen was able to determine that the huge net was knitted from silk of the Profound Ice Silkworm and had been refined many times at a single glance, it was incomparably tenacious and it couldn't be damaged by water or by fire neither could it be cut by sword. If he became tangled within it, then he would be just like a pig ready for slaughter. The thing which Yang Chen found most dangerous, was that that the silk net had clearly been refined by a JieDan expert, even in the dim illumination of the luminous gems one could tell that the silk net was extraordinary.

All of the magic weapons that Yang Chen currently had, whether it was the sword box or the flying swords within it, all of them were incapable of cutting through the silk net. Even if he tried to burn it using fire, it would be a waste of time, because ordinary fire wouldn't be able to deal with the silk of a Profound Ice Silkworm and right then he didn't have any strong flame, so for now he could only flee.

The reason why he was fleeing and hadn't used the killing intent, that was emitted by the red colored long river within his spirit sea, to intimidate his enemy, was because Yang Chen had discovered the presence of a few other people following him. Although the killing intent released by Yang Chen with full strength was sufficient to intimidate people in a large area, Yang Chen was afraid of one person, and that was Elder Wu. In case Elder Wu discovered that Yang Chen was the source of the killing intent at that time, then he feared he wouldn't be able to survive the consequences.

There was also the reason that, once people knew about that terrible killing intent, he would be unable to give a clear explanation. Before starting with cultivation he could say that it was because he was an executioner, so it was the murderous spirit he gained from killing people, but for the time after he started cultivating he was unable to explain the reason behind it. Though he could say that it was because of killing the underground spirit beasts, but haven't the other people also killed spirit beasts? So apart from Yang Chen establishing his reputation as a fearful devil, it had no advantages.

Therefore, Yang Chen could only use the red colored river within his spirit sea as a last resort for surviving and couldn't use it frequently. Usually, using a slight trace of it to intimidate a spirit beast was not bad, but trying to intimidate all living things, moreover cultivators was absolutely out of question.

After the huge net missed its aim, the enemy immediately collected it and chased after Yang Chen at high speed within the magma. By this time, the people who were chasing after Yang Chen had nearly arrived there and sensed that something strange had been happening there, so they hurried to see the situation. But when they came over, it was already too late, they only found an absolutely empty magma river and not even a single shadow.

This time, everyone discovered everyone else, but they had expected it. Those with hostility among each other also discovered their enemies at a glance, when suddenly one person yelled:

“He will belong to the first person who catches him!”

This was clearly an agreement to share the booty, apparently they already treated Yang Chen like an object which they wanted to gain.

“Good!”

Someone responded, suddenly his figure flashed and he directly rushed towards the magma river, vanishing in an instant. Upon seeing this, the others didn't dare to be neglectful and the figures of those people flashed like streamers, launching themselves towards the magma river and disappearing in an instant.

The magma river was very long, fire from the earth bubbled forth from it at various points and it covered an area of at least several hundred meters to the sides. Furthermore, the magma river was not neat and straight but rather broken and disorganized, with exits for magma to rush forth nearly everywhere. Naturally the magma river was divided into a huge net of magma.

At the center of the huge magma net was a huge magma lake. It had the largest magma exit, which belched with most blazing magma. The magma here was not dark red colored, rather it was bright red colored, so much so that the center of the magma lake was burning brightly white.

The enemy chasing him knew that Yang Chen was seeking the Geocentric Flame, but he didn't dare to be sure that the Geocentric Flame was definitely located within this magma net, therefore he

was unable to determine Yang Chen's final destination. Naturally, Yang Chen would also not be so foolish as to lead him directly to the position of the Geocentric Flame, instead he would have him chase around in circles.

Yang Chen didn't know at all that the people following behind him, all had a compass which was pointing them in his direction. As long as he was within a radius of five hundred li, these compasses would point towards his location.

Within the magma, Yang Chen's speed was not slowed even one bit, on the contrary, it was increased by much. Although Yang Chen had a low cultivation, his fire evasion technique was being used to the point of perfection; inside of this magma network, he was like a fish in water.

The more this enemy chased after Yang Chen, the more irritated he became. This magma network was a place inhabited by fire attributed spirit beasts, so from time to time a flock of them would appear. Yang Chen was not obstructed in the slightest, the enemy on the other hand had to deal with these flocks of violent spirit beast and during the time he was killing spirit beasts, Yang Chen would pull ahead a by great distance again. This kind of thing happened many times, so he had no way to keep up with Yang Chen's pace.

The most annoying thing for him was that the spirit beasts which were coming to attack him had received some kind of provocation, each of them was extremely berserk, which made the enemy pursuing Yang Chen complain endlessly. Could it be that he had entered into a long standing nest of spirit beasts? Otherwise what

was happening here? Nobody knew that the real reason was, that these spirit beasts had been scared by the faint killing intent emitted by Yang Chen, and while fleeing they would ruthlessly attack everything which dared to obstruct them.

Very quickly, Yang Chen's figure couldn't be seen anymore. The very first person to chase after him had no other way to find him and could only come out of the magma river and groan while lamenting. But he immediately discovered that people who seemed to be chasing after Yang Chen kept on rushing, without stopping. The even stranger thing was that those people were all chasing in a particular direction, as if they were able to sense Yang Chen's direction.

“Eh?”

In the hand of these people was a compass which caught his attention. He immediately rushed back again and shot towards the nearest person holding a compass. That person hadn't thought that anybody would move towards him, so he only shouted from that place:

“Haven't we agreed that he will belong to the first person who captures him? What do you want to do?”

These words had barely come out when the compass within his hand was snatched by the former. After struggling for few moments, when he still could not find any way to take it back he sincerely backed down, not daring to say anything more. He had already sensed that this person's strength was extremely high, and moreover he was not one of the people who had acknowledged that

earlier agreement. He understood very clearly that this person could not be offended in any case or he would be a dead man walking.

“What is this?”

Raising the compass within his hand, the person arrogantly asked the other one, from whom he had just taken the compass.

“This compass can trace the location of the qiankun pouch which that youngster holds.”

The person within the magma net sincerely replied.

“If Senior wants it, you can take it.”

Just as he finished speaking, he sensed a huge net coiling around his body and tightening, on top of that, a trace of extreme strength started to push down on him, as if devouring him. It actually appeared as if it would extract all of the blood from his body. He was scared stiff and started shouting:

“Please spare my life, Senior! Please spare my life!”

The person holding the compass noticed that the pointer of the compass was pointing towards a direction in the front, seeing this, he coldly smiled without saying anything. Within a moment the person within the net seemed as if he was already incapable of supporting himself. After a hissing sound, the person within the

net was turned into a pool of blood, everything else was absorbed by the huge net. The qiankun pouch and magic weapons which he had, all conveniently went to the master of the net.

After having broken away from that troublesome person with great difficulty, Yang Chen once again discovered the silhouettes of some people. These people were like glue, tenaciously following after Yang Chen regardless of which direction he turned to. They were all seemingly capable of discovering his presence wherever he went. Fortunately these people were not as troublesome as the person at the beginning, Yang Chen was always able to escape from them.

Soon, the actions of the people who had suddenly appeared within the magma river caught Yang Chen's eye. The compass within their hands also caught Yang Chen's attention. After pondering for a moment, Yang Chen realized that surely there had to be an object on his body which was allowing them to track his presence. Yang Chen, who had ample experience, immediately checked all of the magic weapons on his body and immediately concluded that it had to be his own qiankun pouch.

All of the qiankun pouches provided by the sects have a tracking spell formation inscribed on them, moreover there was Chu Heng within the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen had no problem figuring out how these people could keep on chasing him and what the compasses within their hands were.

Yang Chen merely wore the qiankun pouch hanging on his body for decoration, all of the important things were within the Achievements Ring. Resolving this problem was very easy, he only

had to put the qiankun pouch into his Achievement Ring. But Yang Chen did not want to resolve this so easily, he had thought of an even better plan.

The people pursuing soon discovered that Yang Chen had run off towards the huge magma lake at the center. As the owner of the huge net discovered this, he could not help but slap his forehead in regret. He had already known from the beginning that Yang Chen had come here to look for the Geocentric Flame, and the place which was most likely of having the geocentric fire was precisely the most brightly glowing region within the magma lake. It was such an easy problem, but he surprisingly hadn't thought of it. If he had noticed this earlier, then he would have guarded the tree-stump to wait for the rabbit, wouldn't that be much better?

The group of people divided into a few directions, surrounding, and moving towards the magma lake from all sides. That person from the beginning was also included among them. Merely with presence of so many people, it was not easy to kill them all, so he only stuck to one direction. People on top of the magma lake were calmly checking their compass, enduring the burning heat.

Yang Chen was clearly moving towards the centermost region of the magma lake, that was also the hottest and most frightening region. Even the people who had already arrived there did not dare to proceed recklessly. Common fire evasion techniques could allow them to move through the magma unobstructed at all times, but this was not the case at that one opening, there they would need special body protecting magic armor or perhaps magic techniques to save themselves. They didn't know whether Yang Chen knew of this point or not, but in any case everyone looked at the pointer of the compass and started moving towards that direction.



Suddenly, the pointer started shaking and immediately began to spin round and round in all directions, unable to point in any specific direction. Everyone was totally stunned, what was the meaning of this? Someone managed to react very quickly, this clearly meant that the Presence of the qiankun pouch had disappeared. Did this mean that Yang Chen, the youngster who did not know the immensity of heaven and earth, who wanted to absorb the Geocentric Flame while still at the qi layer, had instead been burned to death?

In general, all of the cultivators carried qiankun pouches and kept all of their possessions inside of them. When the Presence of a qiankun pouch disappeared, it usually implied that the qiankun pouch had been destroyed. In these circumstances this could only mean one thing and that was that Yang Chen had been killed by the underground magma.

The group of people immediately felt their enthusiasm waning, if they had known earlier that it would turn out this way, then they would not have come to scare him, instead they would have allowed Yang Chen to slowly find out about the difficulties of this magma lake and then, when he would have returned after failing, they could have surrounded and captured him at any time they wished. But currently, because he had been forced by them, Yang Chen had panicked and chosen the wrong path, knocking himself into the vortex of death. Since this had happened, it was already a complete loss, all the things which Yang Chen owned had already turned into a pile of magma.

Fortunately, even if Yang Chen had died, they had accomplished the task entrusted to them by their good friend, so this trip hadn't

been a total waste. But it was still a little unfortunate.

Everyone there was a cultivator so they were patiently waiting on the side of the big lake, on one hand killing the spirit beasts and on the other observing the movements in the lake below. Only when they didn't find anything abnormal after waiting for several days did they start departing one by one. At last, only that first person, the owner of the huge net, was left, still waiting.

“Humph, a group of idiots, a person who could become a second grade pill concocting master at the initial qi layer, how could he not be familiar with the nature of fire?”

The remaining person concealed himself properly and spied out at the activities of those other people, feeling disdain at them within his heart.

“How is it possible that the more they cultivate, the more foolish they become? How can a minor diversion tactic fool all of these people?”

The expert was sneering here, not even realizing that those few departing people were also sneering at him at a distance away from there.

“Hiding so close to mark your claim, Yang Chen isn't stupid, do you really think he would die so easily?”

Everyone already knew what Yang Chen was doing here from

what he said earlier about becoming a third grade pill concocting expert after coming out of the Immortal Falling Well and collecting a flame. The most plausible case was that the Geocentric Flame was located here, as long as they were able to get hold of that Geocentric Flame, they wouldn't have to worry about Yang Chen not appearing, if he wanted that flame, this was the only possibility.

Every person was having their own thoughts, but no one was aware that just at this time Yang Chen was laughing at them in another region. At the time when he was approaching the center of the huge lake, where it became impossible for him to endure, he placed the qiankun pouch into his Achievement Ring and immediately fled in another direction.

Having followed the trail of the qiankun pouch, these people immediately lost their target and could only wait for a chance to catch him at one side of the river. After all, this place had the highest probability of the Geocentric Flame appearing, as long as Yang Chen was able to obtain the Geocentric Flame, he would definitely appear in the vicinity.

When Yang Chen was observing those people making foolish plans to catch him, he started laughing so hard that he had to clutch his belly. If he had enough strength to appear honorably in front of these people, he would definitely ask them laughingly:

“Who says that the Geocentric Flame is here for sure?”

That's right, the Geocentric Flame was not at the center of the magma lake, where everyone had guessed. Normally, these people

would take it for granted that the most brightly glowing region was the region which had the highest probability for the Geocentric Flame to be there, but in reality it was not at all like that.

The Geocentric Flame was the Fourth Fire, that was a Yin fire. It was completely different from the Real Sun Fire, which burned fiercely. The characteristics of the Geocentric Flame was continuously burning, the nature of it was moderate, so the region where it existed was definitely not an opening in the magma, instead it was another direction entirely.

So, at this moment Yang Chen was moving along a very small tributary of the magma river. Normally if you moved towards the end of this kind of tributary, the magma would start cooling and freeze into stone. But this tributary was different, although the magma did not have that same high temperature compared to center region like this, the magma was still very fluid. Yang Chen had spent a good amount of time to find this area.

The reason which allowed the freezing magma retain its unusually good fluidity was precisely the Geocentric Flame lying underneath it.

# Chapter 66 - Geocentric Flame

No one would be able to guess that the Geocentric Flame was located at the utmost edge of the magma river. If it were not for his memories from his previous life, Yang Chen would also not be able to be convinced about this. Nevertheless, after finding the location of the Geocentric Flame, the excitement in Yang Chen's heart came down by few knots.

When had he obtained the Real Sun Fire in his previous life? It was around the time when he was at the middle YuanYing stage, only then did he have a chance to receive the Real Sun Fire and from then on his hopeless situation turned around and he got the chance to cultivate to ascension.

Currently, when he was so close to the Geocentric Flame, he just had the cultivation of the upper qi layer. Although there was a difference of several grades between the Geocentric Flame and the real sun fire, possessing a flame at the qi layer and possessing a flame at YuanYing stage are two very different concepts.

Yang Chen noiselessly wrapped his spiritual awareness around himself, so that he would not be discovered by those people sweeping around with their spiritual awareness and he soon disappeared into the magma.

Underneath the magma was a very small space with a size of five square inch. Within this space the magma flow was completely different from the magma flow in other regions. In fact, the flow in this place was not magma, it was actually a broth of rocks flowing

together, while the great majority of it was a flame. This flame was only flowing within this space, not even overflowing a little bit. When the magma came into contact with this flame, it was burned again and turned into liquid, flowing even more rapidly.

Yang Chen's silhouette appeared at the side of this space, but this time he was not using any fire evading technique, instead he was using a method to control the fire to push out the magma from the surroundings. After emptying a space large enough to fit himself, it allowed him to come in close contact with the Geocentric Flame.

Even though the Geocentric Flame was not very high grade, merely an insignificant third grade flame, Yang Chen was still extremely cautious. Even if it was the lowest grade flame, if one was not cautious at the time of receiving it, it was still able to burn the insides of that person and kill him.

The best method was to use a medium. One would first allow the medium to absorb the flame, then the cultivator could extract the fire qi from the medium little by little, wait until his body has adjusted to the small increase in the flame, and then repeat until he finally achieved his aim of absorbing the fire.

According to Yang Chen's experience, he first had to make a plan. Originally the Profound Spirit Furnace lacked a flame, this time was the perfect opportunity. But Yang Chen was still extremely cautious, he did not want to be careless, now that his desire was in front of his eyes, as he didn't want to ruin this undertaking for just some short-term benefits.

With two Thousand Year Profound Yang Fruits in his hands, the

Profound Spirit Furnace transformed into the size of the palm of his hand. First Yang Chen sat cross legged with his soles and palms pointing towards the sky and meditated for a while, then he bit into one of the Profound Yang Fruits. Using the spirit power overflowing from his body, he controlled the Profound Spirit Furnace to slowly fly towards the Geocentric Flame.

As soon as the flame touched the furnace the boundary around the flame was broken through and the speed of the Profound Spirit Furnace suddenly became very fast, rushing towards the flame.

Within a moment, the originally black colored Profound Spirit Furnace turned dark red. Due to the connection between Yang Chen and the Profound Spirit Furnace, he also sensed the violent heatwave wreaking havoc in the surroundings of the Profound Spirit Furnace. The body of the Profound Spirit Furnace appeared to show signs of melting.

Nevertheless, even though it was a third grade furnace, to be able to melt this large amount of magma effortlessly, it was absolutely normal for the Profound Spirit Furnace to show signs of melting. If it were not for the protection of his spirit power and he did not have a medium like the Profound Spirit Furnace, which could absorb the flame, he absolutely would have melted on the spot.

Yang Chen immediately sensed the pressure and the spirit power within his body started to crazily flow towards the Profound Spirit Furnace. The Five Phases spirit power of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets all transformed into fire attributed spirit power and entered the Profound Spirit Furnace.

The only way to collect the flame was to use fire controlling arts, otherwise failure was the only option. This was also the reason why the cultivators capable of receiving the flame were mostly fire attributed.

A trace of fire entered the Profound Spirit Furnace under Yang Chen's control and then began to refine the internal composition of the furnace. This trace of fire was being controlled by Yang Chen's spiritual awareness inside of the Profound Spirit Furnace, because he was the master of the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Very quickly this trace of fire was absorbed by the Profound Spirit Furnace. Following this one was another trace. Yang Chen's current cultivation was very low, only at the high qi layer stage, so he wasn't able to connect the energy of heaven and earth and the amount of fire he absorbed had a limit every time. Due to this small space of five square inches which held the geocentric flame, Yang Chen could only use this kind of laborious and time consuming method to sap away at the flame little by little.

This absorption took around half a year of time. Within this half year, Yang Chen hadn't suspended his control over fire, in order to absorb the entirety of the Geocentric Flame into the Profound Spirit Furnace. During this period, he had consumed around two hundred Thousand Year matured Profound Yang Fruits, taking one every day on average. The spirit power consumed by him could put an ordinary foundation stage expert to shame.

But all of this was not without gains. Not to mention other things, just his fire attributed spirit power had been upgraded by at least one grade compared to the spirit power of his other



attributes. Yang Chen could sense very clearly that his fire attributed spirit power had already entered the eighth qi layer.

Finally, after half a year's time, only a trace of the Geocentric Flame remained in that space, the rest had all been absorbed by Yang Chen into the Profound Spirit Furnace.

At this moment, an earth shattering transformation had taken place within the Profound Spirit Furnace and it had become totally different compared to how it looked half a year ago. The small cauldron was still palm sized, but its color had completely turned dark red. It shone in brilliant lights and vibrant color, it was extremely beautiful. The appearance of the furnace turned pure and sparkling, as if it was some kind of priceless pottery, made with the help of the Geocentric Flame.

The last traces of flame were quickly absorbed into the furnace, the absorption had already gone on for half a year, so the Profound Spirit Furnace had adapted to the fire of the Geocentric Flame. This trace only took half of the time the first one took, to get absorbed completely.

When the process was over, the sound of violent trembling suddenly came from the furnace.

Buzz...

It was followed by a sudden jolt and after that the furnace became calm again. The dark red light began to move around on the upper part of the furnace as if it had become alive. Only after

revolving across the outer wall for a long while, did it gradually settle down, but it still left behind an impression similar to being burned by the Geocentric Flame.

Under Yang Chen's control, the profound spirit furnace slowly landed in front of him. He then grabbed it and fondled it admiringly for quite a long time. Only after he was done with that, did he put it away in the Achievements Ring. After finishing everything, Yang Chen exhaled a long breath. At last he did not need to continue with the frantic output of spirit power, he could finally take a little bit of rest.

But Yang Chen did not dare to relax for a very long time. Although the Geocentric Flame was completely absorbed by Profound Spirit Furnace already, he himself still hadn't began to collect it; this was an even more important task that needed to be done.

At this hidden corner, Yang Chen started to warm up his cultivation. Because of the long time he had been releasing his spirit power and controlling it within the Profound Spirit Furnace to absorb the Geocentric Flame, Yang Chen hadn't warmed up to train for a long time. This time he had to spend a whole ten days to clear the fatigue he accumulated in that half of a year.

After going through this warm up, his meridians and the spirit power throughout his body were restored to their peak state. In accordance with Yang Chen's expectations, the fire attributed spirit power stood out as it had become the highest grade spirit power within the five phases. Compared with the grade of the other attributes, it was a full grade higher.

This was fully in line with Yang Chen's expectations, as he was naturally endowed with a fire spirit root, the fire attributed spirit power was given more prominence, it was a completely normal thing. Under Yang Chen's control, the fire attributed cultivation was able to conceal the spirit power of the other phases, so that when Yang Chen went out of the Immortal Falling Well, it would not give rise to suspicion.

Currently Yang Chen had to do one thing and that was to find an absolutely safe region to extract the flame from the Profound Spirit Furnace little by little and absorb it. This was different from what Yang Chen had actually wanted to do before, the Profound Spirit Furnace had the ability to hold the flame by itself, after all. Furthermore it was still only a medium for Yang Chen, if he wanted to genuinely control the Geocentric Flame it still required Yang Chen's own strength.

Yang Chen noiselessly appeared on the surface of the magma river, there was nobody present in the surroundings. After half a year had passed, if those people were still waiting for him here, Yang Chen would absolutely admire their patience and good decision making.

The safest place within the Immortal Falling Well was probably only that cheat-like region which Yang Chen had used before. Only there would he not have to worry about attacks from spirit beasts. Moreover he would still have the underground spirit vein which would help him with cultivation, it was simply a one-of-a-kind immortal cave.

On the outside there were many safe places, but a cultivator would only get ten years within the Immortal Falling Well. If he left midway, that would also be counted as leaving, which would really be a great loss. Yang Chen still had many matters which he had to finish here.

Just as he was about to leave, he suddenly discovered something in his surroundings. He released a little bit of spiritual awareness and soon threads of spiritual awareness, thin as if they were made out of silk, slowly dispersed into the surroundings. This was a minor method of the Three Purities Secrets to control spiritual awareness. By using this, the spiritual awareness could not be discovered by people.

The thin threads of spiritual awareness spread in an area of several tens of meters, but very quickly Yang Chen could only sigh again. It had been so much time, but there were still people wasting their time in the surroundings of the magma river. This was truly outside of his expectations.

Yang Chen had underestimated the greed for obtaining a method that could make a qi layer disciple become a third grade pill concocting expert, these people had. Even for the next few years, as long as they had a hope of getting an opportunity, maybe these people would still be firmly waiting for him, as before.

Strictly speaking, it was extremely disgraceful for Yang Chen to be forced to run all around to save himself by these people. Originally Yang Chen had planned that after absorbing the Geocentric Flame, he would find these people again to settle their debts. But currently, after seeing that these people were

surprisingly still keeping watch here, Yang Chen was filled with boundless fury.

He had seen people who take unfair advantage of others, but never ones who were this unfair. In his previous life, Yang Chen was kept in house arrest as a kind of control by people. The most hateful of them were the kind of people who kept a firm watch on him, not letting him break free.

Fury rose from his heart and hate was born from his intestines, if he let these people continue to do what they want without saying anything, then surely these kinds of circumstances would happen again. Even those people who were not originally a part of this could get influenced by these people and join their ranks. If these people were not taught a lesson and were not made aware of Yang Chen's ferociousness, they would definitely not want to let this matter go.

But even if he was extremely angry, Yang Chen had not lost his reason. He had only just absorbed the Geocentric Flame into the Profound Spirit Furnace and the lowest among these enemies was at least at the middle of the foundation stage. After one had successfully built his foundation and connected the energy of heaven and earth, the transformation of his strength was something that Yang Chen knew better than anyone else. That kind of strength was absolutely not something a qi layer cultivator could contend against. He could only stand a chance against them, if they were like Jin Tao, who already lacked confidence and displayed that lack of confidence to provide a chance for Yang Chen to plant a heart's devil, otherwise, face to face, he was not their enemy.

Since he could not attack them head on, Yang Chen could only mount a sneak attack from behind. Using these kinds of methods was no problem at all for Yang Chen in this life. Even in his previous life he had used every kind of method to prevail in countless situations.

Relying on the fact that underground spirit beast were not a threat to him, Yang Chen used his fire evasion technique and noiselessly approached the most distant person in the group of departing people. The formidable spiritual awareness, comparable to a middle JieDan stage expert which was tightly wrapped around Yang Chen, who was hidden underground, did not in the least alarm that person who was killing underground spirit beasts, as well as keeping watch for Yang Chen.

Mounting a sneak attack on a person who hadn't discovered him and was locked in close combat with spirit beasts was simply not a problem for Yang Chen. The only troubling part was that this would alarm the others and he had to leave quickly before the others came.

Yang Chen had not planned to kill him silently, that sort of attack would not intimidate anyone, it was even possible that others would not know that this was Yang Chen's doing and would think that he was killed by underground spirit beasts because he was careless. Yang Chen wanted to teach a lesson to these people and naturally would not easily let them off.

The person was controlling his flying sword at that time, he did not have even the slightest hint of the crisis he was facing and was still busy with painstakingly killing the spirit beasts. After the

spirit beast was able to keep up with him and was not subdued by several of his attacks, he started fleeing from the far away area towards the direction of the magma lake. If he attacked it again in a moment using the flying sword, he would be able to obtain at least two spirit essences this time.

As he thought about it, the person who was keeping a close watch used that flying sword to attack the spirit beast. But at this time, someone suddenly appeared behind his body and a blade flashed in that figure's hand, chopping towards his neck like thunder. At the same time, suddenly a few words of a loud voice entered his ears, stunning his heart:

“For every debt there is a debtor, since you have come knocking on my door, pardon me for killing you!”

The loud shout, mixed with the spirit stunning technique, distracted the person who was keeping watch. But this small distraction was enough for him to receive a fatal attack. Yang Chen's sword box had already streaked across his neck and warm blood rushed from his neck, shooting up high into the air, and then falling down at a distance.

The people in other directions, including the person at the center who had a very high cultivation, all heard Yang Chen's voice at this moment. Everyone flew towards this direction in surprise. But before the people could arrive there themselves, their spiritual awarenesses came over and started frantically probing the situation there.

The unfortunate thing for them was, even if their spiritual

awareness was very quick, they could only discover that Yang Chen had already picked up the flying sword that had fallen far away.

“Wash your neck cleanly, I hope we will meet again!”

Yang Chen only left one sentence, making people ponder over his words when he suddenly disappeared from their spiritual awareness.

By the time everyone had managed to come over, only the dead corpse of that person could be found there. The rest of all the objects had been taken away. The qiankun pouch, the flying sword, all had disappeared without a trace long ago. The only thing left behind were Yang Chen's threatening words, still lingering in the ears of those people.



# Chapter 67 - Peak Of The Qi Layer

This time Yang Chen was determined to stop people from discovering any tracks, so he placed all of the objects on which other people could plant their spiritual awareness into the Achievement Ring, then he used his spiritual awareness to wrap around his body tightly, not leaking even a trace of his presence. Not to mention someone at the foundation stage, even if it was a JieDan expert, as long as his spiritual awareness did not surpass Yang Chen's, finding Yang Chen was not an easy task.

When he was concealed like this and following behind an enemy, the enemy would be like a deaf and blind man. In any case, even if someone looked with the naked eye or scanned with spiritual awareness, apart from finding a huge pile of spirit beasts, they would find nothing else. They wanted to find any trace of Yang Chen, but even if some signs of him existed, they were thoroughly hidden.

This kind of thing made those people feel dismay, but at the same time they also became fearful. After keeping watch for Yang Chen for half a year, they initially believed that, even if Yang Chen possessed some remarkable ability, he would not be able to leave through their net of surveillance, whether the net was formed by accident or on purpose. Who could have thought that half a year's time would actually provide time for Yang Chen to mature? At the very least his strength had already grown enough to kill a middle JieDan stage cultivator who was travelling with them.

If Yang Chen kept on appearing and disappearing unpredictably...

Thinking this, they all clearly understood what kind of big trouble they had provoked. Nevertheless, under these circumstances they all didn't have any better option than grouping together to look for Yang Chen and kill him.

Only Yang Chen was not so foolish to wait for them while they were searching for him together, he had already fled far away. Currently the most important goal to him was to find an extremely secure place where he could refine and absorb the Geocentric Flame and increase his strength. As for the matter of revenge, that could wait for later.

The place within the Immortal Falling Well which provided Yang Chen with the greatest sense of security, was only one: That small cave where he had previously fused with the will of the XianTai Stage. Even the Li Lou Village didn't provide a greater sense of security than this. Yang Chen clearly understood about the cruelty of competition among cultivators. He would certainly not put his life in other people's hands, where he would have to depend on someone to enforce these, not particularly strict, rules to restrain people.

This time, Yang Chen hurried to the cave which he had sealed last time in less than ten days. Furthermore, this time Yang Chen did not remove the boulder from the cave's mouth, but directly used an evasion technique to enter the small cave. He carefully released a trace of his red colored killing intent to cover up the cave. By doing this, he would not have to worry about disturbances from spirit beasts.

Taking more precautions, Yang Chen even took out the lid of the Medicine Garden's bottle, the Seven Step Enchanting Deadly Spell. Even if Elder Wu suddenly burst into the cave, this spell formation was capable of trapping him for a very long time. In any case, there was also an underground spirit vein he could use for replenishment here, so Yang Chen didn't need to worry about exhausting his spirit power.

After properly making all of these preparations, Yang Chen once again sat down on the obsidian jade mat, took out the Profound Spirit Furnace and started studying it. Yang Chen could tell that the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace, which had absorbed the Geocentric Flame, had increased by at least two grades even without a thorough examination, just by looking at the change in its shape.

Brilliant lights and vibrant colors could be seen on top of the furnace with a decorative design resembling a flame. The more Yang Chen looked at it, the more he became fond of it. He couldn't help but use the Heaven and Earth Treasure Raising Secrets to warm up the furnace once.

Suddenly he noticed a faint movement, a dark red colored flame quickly welled up inside the Profound Spirit Furnace. During this time, Yang Chen used the peels of the Profound Yang Fruits which he had eaten during the past several days and threw them into the furnace. In a short period of time, the peels turned into a thick and dense liquid. Under the control of Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness, it kept on changing forms and shape incessantly, but not even the slightest mark of being burned appeared.

The geocentric flame was worthy of being called the most suitable flame for pill concocting masters within this mortal world. Any kind of medicine or herb, as long as the pill concocting master did not crazily increase the temperature, would only liquify and not burn. Naturally, this was only one of the reasons why the Geocentric Flame was suitable for pill concocting, the most important reason was that the Geocentric Flame was capable of purifying or even refining the impurities within herbs, according to the requirements of the one who is controlling the flame.

It could almost be said, that as long as one had the Geocentric Flame, one could immediately rise by one grade as a pill concocting master. Just using this property of the flame was enough to obtain one additional pill refining. Currently Yang Chen could already achieve two refinings by his own methods, by possessing the Geocentric Flame, Yang Chen could already say that he had already achieved the level of a Third Grade Pill Concocting Master.

Of course, reaching the level was just one thing, his Spirit Power was still the limiting factor, Yang Chen was still not able to refine a large number of high level pills because he was stranded at his current cultivation. But even so, a low level pill that has been refined three times was still enough to make people drool.

Peels of Thousand Year matured Profound Yang Fruits together with some supplement drugs was the recipe of yang qi pills. The yang qi pills were very low levelled pills, so when using the base herb together with some supplemental herbs, as long as they had adequate medicinal strength, it was already good enough; the recipe didn't have to be followed too closely.

This was Yang Chen's first time using the Geocentric Flame in both of his lifetimes. He controlled the flame very carefully, purifying all of the ingredients once at first, concluding the first refining. Soon afterwards, he produced the pill in accordance with the traditional recipe, concluding the second refining. After that, Yang Chen continued to refine it for the third time. Even if it was just for the yang qi pill, Yang Chen specifically used the skills within the Greatest Supreme Elder's Pill Concocting Method, regardless of whether it was for purifying the pill or collecting it, he did all of them in accordance with the methods left behind by Greatest Supreme Elder.

After everything was completed properly, out of the ingredients originally meant for a hundred yang qi pills, only ten yang qi pills were produced, but these ten yang qi pills were all third grade pills.

Refining a pill thrice could even change the nature of the pill, this was the reason why third grade pill concocting masters all received so much popularity. However, these ten third grade pills within Yang Chen's hand were all refined in accordance with the Greatest Supreme Elder's technique, so their quality was even higher than normal third grade pills. Even Yang Chen himself would hate to eat them. All of these pills were very good items, which could save someone's life at a most crucial time.

Just this little point was enough to make the Profound Spirit Furnace a heavenly treasure in Yang Chen's eyes, not to mention that he still wanted to refine and absorb the Geocentric Flame, for which he would require the assistance of the furnace.

Yang Chen's purpose for refining these yang qi pill were finding

out about the nature of the Geocentric Flame as well as familiarizing himself with the Greatest Supreme Elder's pill concocting methods and to test the Profound Spirit Furnace. If he wanted to absorb the Geocentric Flame, the first thing was naturally to familiarize himself with the characteristics of the Geocentric Flame. Since the Geocentric Flame was known as the most suitable flame for pill concoctors in this world, it was necessary for him to understand the characteristics of the Geocentric Flame to be able to concoct pills of the highest possible quality.

But concocting pills once was still far from enough to give Yang Chen enough familiarity with the Geocentric Flame. He wanted to get information of all aspects, like knowing the situations in which the Geocentric Flame could go out of control, therefore Yang Chen still need to conduct even more concoction experiments, so that he could comprehend the characteristics of Geocentric Flame even better.

Yang Chen was very patient, he spent the following next month to concoct yang qi pills in the Profound Spirit Furnace using the Geocentric Flame, to learn about the properties of its fire. When the number of third grade pills had already crossed three hundred, Yang Chen finally stopped concocting and began to absorb the Geocentric Flame.

When the first thread of Geocentric Flame entered Yang Chen's body, the extremely hot sensation forced Yang Chen to repeatedly, forcibly control his mental state, so that he wouldn't get distracted. In his previous life, when he received the Real Sun Fire, Yang Chen was at the YuanYing stage, but currently he was a mere qi layer cultivator, his tolerance for fire was far inferior compared

to before.

Fortunately Yang Chen already had an experience of using fire to do various things for over ten thousand years, in addition to that he still possessed strong self-control. Resisting the pain that felt like being burned at a stake with great difficulty, Yang Chen slowly began to permeate his own fire attributed spirit power throughout the Geocentric Flame.

After a short while, Yang Chen discovered that the spirit power in his entire body was seemingly ignited by this trace of Geocentric Flame; his whole body had begun to combust. This was purely a feeling, if Yang Chen wished, he could use the water attributed spirit power to ‘pour water to extinguish the fire’ to stifle this portion of flame, but Yang Chen didn’t do anything like this. If he did not go through this the first time, he would never be able to genuinely refine and absorb another flame, no matter what kind it was.

Enduring the pain that felt as if his whole body was set on fire, Yang Chen’s mental state had become tenacious like an old mangosteen [\[1\]](#), without the slightest amount of hesitation about abandoning the plan. His formidable spirit power was monitoring the situation of his body at all times, guiding his spirit power and the Geocentric Flame, which were in contact with each other, around, little by little.

Absorbing a flame at the qi layer was a very risky task, but Yang Chen had no other option. First, there were still people within the Immortal Falling Cave who were waiting for their chance to attack him, and second: he was looking forward to the time when he

would be able to pay his respects under his master once again, able to assist his master to rise to the heavens. If he didn't have enough strength, he would not be able to do that.

Yang Chen was certain that after absorbing the flame, his fire attributed cultivation would rise by leaps and bounds. The difference between a fire cultivator with a flame and a fire cultivator without a flame just could not be measured in a difference between their stages. It was a very normal for fire cultivators with a flame to easily be able to defeat cultivators two layers above them with ease.

Currently Yang Chen needed to urgently increase his strength, but he also didn't want to destroy the proper foundation that he had built, so he could only think of one way to reach the heavens in single bound, and that was to endure and take some heavenly treasures. This had two benefits, first they would not destroy his foundation and second, it would also steadily increase his strength.

Having the experience of ascending to the spiritual world and the world of immortals in his previous life, Yang Chen was well aware of what happened to people, who used spirit medicines to suddenly increase their strength, after ascending. It would already be considered enormous luck to be able to become a servant for a strong person in the spiritual world, but most of those people accidentally trespass on the territory of some formidable spirit beast and from then on disappear without a trace. Cultivation never has any shortcuts.

Along with the flow of time, Yang Chen's body, which was being nourished by the fire attributed spirit power, slowly started



getting used to this kind of burning by the flame. Only after finally reaching this condition, did Yang Chen begin with the next step, that was to use the thread of Geocentric Flame to pull out even more thin threads and blend them into the thirty six Heavenly Stars, seventy two Earth Fiend Layers of the Fourth Fire attribute, enter them into his meridians and start circulating.

The spirit power of the Fourth Fire was as if it had started boiling, the flame rapidly permeated the one hundred eight spirit power threads. Apparently this division had lowered the formidability of the Geocentric Flame by a lot, very soon Yang Chen was not able to sense the existence of the Geocentric Flame anymore.

Absorbing a flame could be metaphorically compared to using the flame to ignite the Spirit Power. It was like using fire to ignite a piece of firewood, a spark of flame wouldn't have enough energy, it would require a sufficiently high amount of energy. Just absorbing one thread of geocentric fire was far from enough to reach this situation, so he could only continue with the absorption. Because of the peculiar situation of Yang Chen's Spirit Power, the requirements at the Geocentric Flame were even higher.

The events which followed were very simple, one trace after another, the Geocentric Flame started to increase more and more within Yang Chen's Spirit Power and finally, after the utmost boundary was reached:

Bang!

All of the meridians began to 'burn'.

This time, the Spirit Power had been completely integrated with the flame, moreover all one hundred eight threads of Spirit Power had been completely linked with the flame, the Spirit Power within each thread was brimming with fire from the Geocentric Flame. Those regions which originally had not been influenced, were also ignited and all of them began to ‘burn’.

The Spirit Power of the Fourth Fire was as if it had consumed a huge supplement pill, it began to flow violently and under the provocation of the flame it began to circulate within his meridians at lightening speed. Yang Chen did not have to suffer that intense burning pain again, because of the circulation it was replaced by a warm and comfortable sensation.

The Geocentric Flame could be classified as a Fourth Fire, but after the flame blended in, not only had the Fourth Fire Spirit Power increased sharply, but because Yin and Yang were mutually complementing each other, the related Third Fire was also aided and under the provocation of the Fourth Fire Spirit Power, began to crazily absorb the underground vein’s Spiritual Influence and rise violently.

The sharply rising spirit power began to run rampant within his body, but under the control of Yang Chen’s formidable spiritual awareness, it was very quickly controlled and restricted within the meridians, becoming more and more powerful. After some time, when Yang Chen had sensed that it was enough, he began to guide the fire attributed Spirit Power to attack the crucial points within his meridians.

Bang!

Like a hot knife cutting through butter, the fire attributed Spirit Power began to open a barrier and Yang Chen finally entered the ninth qi layer in fire attributed cultivation.

Immediately after breaking through, the spirit power appeared to be a little lacking, but the Geocentric Flame began to ignite yet again and the spiritual influence of the underground spirit vein began to frantically rush into Yang Chen's body, overflowing it and once again starting to replenish it. At the time when Spirit Power accumulation was sufficient, Yang Chen once again began to guide it to attack the next barrier.

Under the eruption of energy, this barrier within the meridians was also broken through without any suspense, he easily reached the tenth qi layer, the peak of the qi layer. Suddenly Yang Chen had a sensation about the energy of heaven and earth. What Yang Chen needed to do most in this realm, was to accumulate enough spirit energy, then he could begin to break through after comprehending the required mental state and finally become able to connect the energy of heaven and earth and successfully build his foundation.

For Yang Chen, comprehending the mental state required to break through was not a problem, with his experience as a Great Principal Golden Immortal, how could he be stranded at the trifling foundation stage?

But Yang Chen did not want to break through immediately, he was at the peak of the qi layer, but only the fire attributed spirit

power had increased, the other attributes still needed to be improved, as there could not be much discrepancy between the attributes. In addition to that, Yang Chen wanted to consolidate his realm and did not want to keep on increasing his cultivation. Haste makes waste, suitably stabilizing the foundation would certainly have many benefits for his future cultivation.

When Yang Chen finally calculated the days he had spent here, he suddenly discovered that already half a year had passed.

Sensing the violently surging Spirit Power within his body, Yang Chen had the sudden urge to be impulsive. Those people who were waiting for him at the side of the magma river, it was finally time to settle his debts with them.

---

[\[1\]](#) The mangosteen is a fruit that starts to harden after harvest

# Chapter 68 - My Path Is That Of A Pill

## Concocting Master

Yang Chen's figure once again appeared within the Li Lou Village at that same remote corner, still sitting motionlessly. In front of him was, as before, a crude, plain, white cloth. The only different thing was that on the white cloth, there was no longer a medicine bottle, instead there were just two big words:

“Concocting Pills”

Yang Chen simply hadn't gone towards the side of the magma lake to find those people. Since half a year had already passed, if anyone was still waiting for him there, he would only be an idiot. Moreover, those people were in all likelihood capable of very quickly obtaining the news that Yang Chen had already returned to the Li Lou Village.

As long as Yang Chen was in the village, he did not have to worry about those people not coming for him. Usually people weren't like Yang Chen, who was able to sufficiently prepare for them, since one could only stay within the Immortal Falling Well for a few years. Li Lou village was the entrance and exit to the road one had to take in order to go into the Immortal Falling Well; Yang Chen did not believe that they would not stop here.

The people within the market rapidly discovered that Yang Chen had appeared again. Compared to the first time, his cultivation had increased from the middle of the qi layer to the peak of the qi layer.

But in the eyes of those numerous foundation stage experts, this was not something to make a fuss about. What they were most interested in was Yang Chen's accomplishments in pill concocting.

A lot of people were disappointed seeing that he had no pills, and instead the two words 'concocting pills'. This stirred the emotions of countless people. This time, Yang Chen's actions could be understood very easily. He had already used up the ingredients he had brought from the surface, so naturally he was unable to concoct any more pills, but he still wanted to improve his pill concocting level, therefore he had substituted selling pills for concocting pills for people, since it allowed him to obtain spirit essences as well as the ability to use other people's drug ingredients to improve his own skill he was hitting two birds with one stone.

“Can you refine all kinds of pills?”

A voice echoed within Yang Chen's ears. Hearing this, Yang Chen who had closed his eyes to rest while waiting for customers to drop in, opened them and in front of him the two legs of a person appeared. That person was wearing black colored, embroidered boots, seemingly extremely luxurious.

Yang Chen didn't raise his head to look at the person in front of him, he merely closed his eyes again and quickly replied:

“All pills at the qi layer can be refined.”

A lot of people were paying attention to the surroundings here,

hearing Yang Chen's reply, they felt relaxed. This was only normal, if Yang Chen had opened his mouth and began to claim that he could refine all kinds of pills, that would be a very strange thing.

But following this reply, Yang Chen once again opened his mouth, which immediately caught the attention of everyone.

“Second grade!”

These were two short words, but they increased everyone's expectation again. Second grade pills, even if it were qi stage pills, they could also be used by these foundation stage cultivators. Not to speak of others, the yang qi pill was the most common example of this.

“Can you also refine the yuan cultivation pill?”

The person in front of Yang Chen asked again, not willing to give up.

This time Yang Chen didn't reply directly, instead he faintly nodded and after pondering for a brief moment, he said:

“I can.”

“Is that one also at the second grade?”

The person in front of him couldn't help but feel pleasantly surprised, he didn't kept on standing, but rather squated down, coming to almost the same height as Yang Chen and asked with his voice full of expectation. This time Yang Che clearly saw the appearance of the other person, but he was not someone Yang Che recognized. He was not too old, but was dressed in embroidered clothes, apparently he was quite wealthy.

“That one is also at the second grade!”

This time Yang Chen did not take too much time to ponder over this, he directly nodded his head. The yuan cultivation pill was a pill used by foundation stage cultivators to recover their spirit power. Generally speaking, once a person reached the initial foundation stage, he was capable of refining this pill.

After Yang Chen finished speaking, the entire market went silent. A second grade yuan cultivation pill. They had never heard about such a thing before. A great majority of pill concocting masters who could refine a second grade yuan cultivation pill were at least at the JieDan or YuanYing stage. Why would these high level pill concocting masters be willing to waste their time on a yuan cultivation pill? They would rather use their time to concoct more pills of higher grades.

The medicinal properties of a second grade yang qi pill were already comparable to a normal yuan cultivation pill, so how would the second grade yuan cultivation pill perform? This question was surging in the minds of all those people, but nobody said anything.



Gulp...

The person wearing the embroidered gown in front of Yang Chen could not help himself from swallowing his saliva, he once again asked very prudently:

“Can you also refine foundation stage pills?”

“I do not dare to guarantee!”

This time Yang Chen did not discuss too much, he just gave a simple answer.

“Those ones also at the second grade?”

This time, nervousness could be heard in the voice of that embroidered gown wearing person. As for the other people within the market, they had already stopped the work within their hands and all of them were concentrating their spiritual awareness at this small corner, afraid to miss even a single word.

“Refining them once will not be a problem.”

Yang Chen didn't reply directly, instead he gave just this one statement. However, this already explained everything clearly. Refining once was not a problem, so this meant he couldn't guarantee a second refining.

“What is the cost you demand?”

The embroidered gown wearing person asked for the cost without the slightest hesitation. A first grade foundation stage pill was able to increase the rate of success in building the foundation by ten percent, but ten pills did not guarantee success completely, only compared to one pill would they still slightly increase the chances. But a second grade foundation stage pill, perhaps that could increase the chances by fifty percent, maybe seventy percent or maybe it could help one directly succeed in building their foundation. Every cultivator above the foundation stage clearly understood this detail.

“The ingredients will be self provided!”

Yang Chen continued without batting an eyelid.

“Five thousand spirit essences or one thousand catties of middle grade spirit stones.”

As soon as he finished saying this, Yang Chen suddenly remembered something: The mountain god whom he had beheaded, there were still some spirit stones left on the inside of his shrine, he hadn't gone to receive them, he could easily visit there when he returned. Since he had a deal with the mountain god, he had no reason not to accept the remuneration.

Yang Chen's words caused everyone in the market to suck in their breath. Ingredients had to be provided by the customer, nobody had any problem with this condition, but the price of five

thousand spirit essences or one thousand catty of middle grade spirit stones, that was certainly a very high price. The only people on the scene who had this much money within their qiankun pouches, were the ones who had spent at least five years within the Immortal Falling Well.

Not to mention other things, just preparing these drug ingredients would require a huge amount of spirit stones. A large enough amount of Profound Yang Fruit, matured until a given year would already require several hundred catties of low grade of spirit stones, and to refine second grade foundation stage pills, only one would naturally not be sufficient. For an above average success rate they would require at least fifty Profound Yang Fruits. And that still did not consider other, assisting ingredients; that would make people faint. If Yang Chen's cost was added on, then this second grade foundation stage pill's cost was comparable to the cost of several hundred first grade foundation stage pills.

But a higher number of foundation stage pills did not mean a higher chance of success. Generally speaking, as long as it was more than ten pills, even if they succeeded in building foundation, the foundation they built would be very different from an ordinarily built foundation. But just taking two second grade foundation stage pills was enough to ensure success and these problems wouldn't exist.

Everyone in the market place had turned silent, similar to the person sitting in front of Yang Chen. The person wearing the embroidered gown hesitated for a long time, then he suddenly clenched his teeth as if he had formed his resolve and asked Yang Chen:

“What ingredients do you want and how much time you will require?”

Yang Chen would naturally not push away business knocking on his door. Using other people’s ingredients to increase his pill concocting skills while also making a profit of spirit stones and spirit essences, why would he not do it?

As long as he was in the Li Lou Village, even if a piece of straw moved in the wind, in this small village it could not escape his senses. Within the Three Purities Secret there was a minor skill which could divide the Spiritual Awareness into extremely fine threads, which would then disseminate in all directions, examining the activities of people in all directions.

This method was merely a simplified version of the method to divide the spiritual awareness, but it could probe the surroundings without these people even noticing it, so Yang Chen gave it the name Spiritual Awareness Threads. Compared with releasing his entire Spiritual Awareness, it would use only some of it and it would be secret, so it would not give rise to protest from other people. It was the most suitable method for Yang Chen to keep an eye on Li Lou Village at the moment.

Since Yang Chen’s Spiritual Awareness was higher than his cultivation by more than one realm, he was already able to divide his Spiritual Awareness. But currently Yang Chen did not want to train his own primordial spirit. Yang Chen’s current cultivation was really low, so a primordial spirit would only burden the pace of his cultivation.

When Yang Chen released his spiritual power threads, he suddenly thought of a problem. Since a qi layer cultivator like him could take this step, then how could it be impossible for the Greatest Supreme Elder? In all likelihood, the entire Heavenly Court or at least the area of a thousand miles radius surrounding the Tusita Palace must have been under the control of the Greatest Supreme Elder, then how could the rebellion of the Heavenly Court succeed? Could it be that the Greatest Supreme Elder himself intentionally or unintentionally helped it?

Thinking about this point, cold sweat broke out on Yang Chen's whole body. If it was like this, then wasn't there some inside secret related with the fall of the Heavenly Court?

This thought flashed in his head and then immediately died again, Yang Chen didn't think about this anymore. Regardless of whatever secret was hidden within the Heavenly Court, it was not something a trifling qi layer cultivator like him should or could care about. Thinking a lot about it would be of no help, as well as increasing his worries, maybe it could even affect his mind. What he currently had to do was to properly play the role of the talented pill concocting master.

That's right, the experience of Yang Chen's previous life had taught him that no matter if it was the world of mortals, the spiritual world or the immortal's world, a pill concocting master, especially a high level pill concocting master, was the most sought after person. Unless there was a life and death enmity, nobody would dare to offend a high level pill concocting master.

In his previous life, when Yang Chen had become a Great

Principal Golden Immortal, because he had been a fire attribute cultivator, he could barely pass for a sixth grade pill concocting master. But even after ascending two times, if he could still only reach the sixth grade, then he could be considered as trash among trash. Not to mention the Greatest Supreme Elder who could casually take out a ninth grade pill, even compared ordinary pill concocting experts who had ascended he was still worse by far.

In this life, Yang Chen however had a great opportunity, not only did he have the top grade Profound Spirit Furnace, but he also had the Greatest Supreme Elder's pill concocting method. Just these two things were already sufficient to allow Yang Chen to have the potential to become a top grade pill concocting expert. Let alone these two things, he also possessed the Yang Mountain Medicine Garden, which had thousands of spirit medicines and furthermore he still had the experiences from his previous life, so he knew where to find more, better suited flames. He had even participated in the pill concocting processes of some high grade pill concocting masters; when all of these factors are added together, they provided the right conditions for him to become one among the highest grade of pill concocting masters.

Having this status, he could increase his value in the sect more and more and at the same time he could create an illusion against his potential enemies. A pill concocting master generally had mediocre fighting strength like Zhu Chen Tao of the Pure Yang Palace. As long as he possesses this status, other people will involuntarily take him lightly, making it easy for Yang Chen to confuse the enemy.

Yang Chen was assigned a cabin for pill concocting. That person who wore the embroidered gown took a room close by and began

to guard Yang Chen, not allowing other people to interfere with him.

The person with the embroidered gown looked rich and overbearing, and provided sufficient ingredients for fifty to sixty first grade foundation stage pills. Yang Chen reckoned that the person with the gown was probably close friends with a youngster in his clan or sect, whom he had to be trying to help break through to the foundation stage, therefore he was spending such large amount of money.

Refining the foundation stage pill was not much of a problem for Yang Chen, he did not lack the skill or a good pill furnace, as long as he could ensure that his Spirit Power could persevere or could be replenished, this was not an issue at all.

The Profound Spirit Furnace could easily take tens of Profound Yang Fruits and refine them into a medicinal liquid which would afterwards be mixed with other ingredients and slowly begin to form shapes. This was a sustainable process, ordinary pill concocting masters would take at least half a month's time to refine foundation stage pills, but for Yang Chen it would not be that long. With the Profound Spirit Furnace and Geocentric Flame, everything had become much simpler.

Though a lot of people were paying attention, not many of them dared to use their Spiritual Awareness to probe. If not because they could anger Yang Chen if their probing agitated him, then the fact that, if they were not cautious and accidentally destroyed the elixirs, the person with the embroidered gown at the door would not be very courteous towards them.

After five days, a burning smell arose from Yang Chen's room. The heart of the person outside of the door tensed, he was aware that this meant that Yang Chen had failed, but he had no other choice than to put up a bold face and continue. He had tried almost everywhere, but Yang Chen was the first person he had run into who could fulfill his wish. For the person who wore the embroidered gown, each day felt like an entire year.

With complete patience, the person wearing the embroidery kept on waiting for twenty more days. The other people of the village also started to remain inside of the village. Even if they went out to hunt spirit beasts, when they returned they would directly come to the area near Yang Chen's room to take a look at the situation.

A few days after he started, a sweet fragrance began to float out of Yang Chen's cabin. The smell was extremely clear, just one sniff could give a huge shock to everyone's minds, as if it was an all cure potion. Moreover, the fragrance began to be more and more dense and very quickly spread throughout the entire village.

At the current day nobody had left the village, everyone was hovering around Yang Chen's room waiting for him. The person with the embroidered gown was bitterly waiting on the outside, hoping to see the outcome. Every day he would keep on scuttling and pacing around. But without Yang Chen's permission he didn't dare to go in or probe with his Spiritual Awareness.

Finally on one day, when the medicinal smell had reached its peak, they could soon clearly hear Yang Chen shouting inside of the room and then the medicinal smell suddenly disappeared



without a trace, as if it had been absorbed by something.

Creak.

Yang Chen opened the door of his small room and came out with an exhausted expression spread across his face. He looked at the person in the embroidered gown, whose face was full of expectations, smiled and held out his hand:

“Do you have a jade bottle, because I don’t have one here.”

“I do! I do!”

The person wearing the embroidered gown hurriedly nodded and then hastily fished out a jade bottle from his qiankun pouch, threw away whatever was inside and gave it to Yang Chen.

Two pure white pills slowly flew towards the jade bottle and entered it. After cautiously stuffing the cork, Yang Chen gave the jade bottle to person wearing the embroidered gown and said:

“Fortunately, I did not humiliate myself!”

# Chapter 69 - You Can't Complain About Dying

Bang!

As soon as he put the jade bottle into the hands of the person wearing the embroidered gown, it was as if the whole Li Lou Village had detonated. A second grade foundation stage pill! It was possible that the person who received these two foundation stage pills already had a ninety percent chance of stepping into the foundation stage, the remaining ten percent depended on his luck. If he did not face some kind of unexpected mishap, then the foundation stage was already within his reach.

Everyone present on the scene, apart from Yang Chen, were all foundation stage-or even JieDan stage experts, who among them didn't want to support the younger generation? The problem was that foundation stage pills were not a problem, as long as they were willing to spend a little money, everyone could find them, but second grade foundation stage pills were just objects of legend.

Currently everyone was blankly staring at those two foundation stage pills within the hands of the person with the embroidered gown, everyone's gaze was burning hot with desire. Being the attention of everyone's gaze, the person with the embroidered gown was scared and immediately concealed the jade bottle inside of his qiankun pouch. Soon afterwards he very respectfully took out a huge pile of spirit essences and delivered them to Yang Chen.

“This is the promised reward for the great master. It is but a minor reward, unable to express my respect for you!”

Despite Yang Chen failing for the first time, he was still able to refine two second grade foundation stage pills for him, the person with the embroidered was already so pleased that he did not know what to say, so he hastily offered the reward. He was the first person to ask Yang Chen to concoct pills and the results were his good karma, maybe in the future he would still get to have further contact with Yang Chen. This kind of opportunity... His intestines would turn green in regret if he lost this opportunity, so how could he dare to withhold Yang Chen's remuneration?

The person in the embroidered gown also addressed Yang Chen exceptionally smoothly as 'great master', without feeling any awkwardness. If the person who could refine second grade pills at the qi layer was not suited to be called a great master, then who would be?

“Myself is the Sky Sword Villa's Yong Zhu, great master, if you want anything from that region in the future, don't hesitate to call for me, I will go through water and tread on fire for you, even a thousand deaths won't be able to stop me!”

After delivering the remuneration, the person in the embroidered gown did not dare to be neglectful and immediately introduced himself. If he wasn't able to make Yang Chen remember his name this time, then wouldn't that be the biggest blunder?

“ Yang.....Great master, I also want to request two second

grade foundation stage pills!”

Just as Yong Zhu was had declared his identity, a person immediately started shouting while rushing towards Yang Chen. After knowing Yang Chen’s identity, he had barely shouted Yang Chen’s surname when he noticed that it was not appropriate, so at the last moment he changed it into great master, but his speed was very fast and in a moment he came very close.

Yong Zhu’s complexion changed, this was obviously someone trying to snatch his chance, he was just about to show his anger when he suddenly heard the voices of a bunch of people who had already managed to surround them.

“Great master, I want to request one second grade foundation stage pill!”

“Great master, can you refine the nature pill?”

The people coming and flocking around, almost directly pushed Yong Zhu to the outside. Yong Zhu couldn’t do anything about these circumstances and could only rejoice that he was the first one who obtained Yang Chen’s pills and got the opportunity to inform him about himself. Fortunately, he was able to tell his name to Yang Chen just a moment ago, so in the future after Yang Chen came out of the Immortal Falling Well, he had to carefully try to get close to Yang Chen.

People who wanted pills were many, but several of them hadn’t completely prepared the ingredients. There were large number of

people who were coming over, wanting to make a deal with Yang Chen first and then wanted to come again later at a suitable opportunity to deliver the missing ingredients. Although Yang Chen did not reject any of them, he asked them to wait for some time. The reward hadn't been reduced, however.

All of the people were extremely delighted, to be able to connect with a pill concocting master with boundless prospects, even if Yang Chen only agreed to give them an opportunity in the future to refine for them, that would still be an enormous chance. Even if Yang Chen's cultivation was the lowest within the Li Lou Village, when passing by his cabin, nobody dared to make a loud noise for the fear that they would disturb Yang Chen's cultivation.

All of them had extremely delighted expressions on their faces. Yang Chen was currently able to refine second grade foundation stage pills, didn't this mean that, after reaching the foundation stage, he would be able to refine the nature pill, which was the first choice of pill at the time of congealing dan? This pill was something all of the foundation stage cultivators yearned for, most of all a second grade nature pill would simply mean that the chances of congealing their dan were increased by fifty percent.

Who did not want to increase their chances of congealing a dan? Who did not want to improve their cultivation and break through to the next realm? For that they would naturally try to curry favor with this pill concocting master by all possible means.

Afterwards Yang Chen never left Li Lou Village, instead, if someone requested him to concoct pills, Yang Chen would lend a hand by concocting the pills, conveniently upgrading his own pill

concocting skills and at the same time also increasing the medicinal qi nurturing of the Profound Spirit Furnace. The reason why the Profound Spirit Furnace was so powerful in his previous life, was because a large number of all kinds of pills had been refined in it. No matter what kind of spirit medicine it was, whenever any kind of pill was refined in the furnace, it would leave behind a trace of its medicinal qi, which would nourish the furnace. Yang Chen naturally knew this very well.

As for monitoring the Li Lou Village, Yang Chen didn't relax even one bit, he wanted to take care of the people who dared to attack him, he had been good for too long. In this life Yang Chen would not be the one who never tries to offend anybody. Li Lou Village was the only exit of the Immortal Falling Well, Yang Chen did not believe that they would not stop here.

Peng Hui was in very bad mood these recent few days, the people on the outside had entrusted him with the task of getting rid of a trifling qi layer cultivator within the Immortal Falling Well, even providing him with a compass that could trace his qiankun pouch, but he, together with many other people, had allowed the target to escape when they were chasing him and furthermore they still let one of their companions be killed by him.

Although the person who died was a big sect's disciple with whom he did not have a good relationship, as a loose cultivator, Peng Hui was looking forward to his early death, but not being able to accomplish the task entrusted to him from the outside by someone had made Peng Hui lose a lot of face. To be able to make these people wait for half a year and then disappear from under their eyes... Who could be happy about this?

Killing spirit beasts around the magma lake had also become very troublesome affair. After Yang Chen had run away, he found that all of the spirit beasts in the surroundings seemed to have gone mad, and frequently began to attack those people. In the end, everyone had to join together, only then were they able to charge out from there, but this had still made them battered and exhausted.

Within this half year, everything had gone the wrong way for him, no positive event had happened during this time. After killing the spirit beasts for two months on the outside, Peng Hui was finally exhausted and was going to return to the Li Lou Village to resupply.

Just as he entered the mouth of the Li Lou Village, Peng Hui immediately sensed something abnormal with the atmosphere. When he raised his head to investigate, he saw Yang Chen standing at a distance not too far from him with a smile spread across his entire face and his eyes filled of interest.

Seeing that Peng hui was looking at him, the smile on Yang Chen's face became even wider.

“Fellow Daoist, I don't know how to address you?”

Peng Hui was startled, he suddenly felt empty within his heart, surprisingly not even daring to announce his own name. Without paying any more attention to Yang Chen, he snorted and turned towards another direction, still pondering within his heart, he had to inform those friends of himself. The most proper thing was not to let Yang Chen know his identity.

Peng Hui was thinking about this when he suddenly heard an unbelievable sound.

“Great master, this is a lone, loose cultivator, Fellow Daoist Peng Hui, for what reason are you asking about him?”

Who spoke out his name without even blinking? The thing that made Peng Hui even more puzzled was the phrase ‘great master’, who was this great master?

Peng Hui turned around angrily, but then he saw a scene which made him completely speechless. A lot of people had appeared beside Yang Chen, why these people had appeared, Peng Hui did not understand, but it was already clear that the strength of these people was much greater compared to his.

What made him even more shocked, was that people who had an even higher cultivation were accompanying Yang Chen with a smile on their face. One person still had his finger pointed towards Peng Hui, as if taking credits for his report.

“Great master, I know where he lives, for what kind of matter are you seeking him? Or do you need our help for something?”

Even a fool could understand that there was some disagreement between Peng Hui and Yang Chen. On one side there was a high level pill concocting master with boundless prospects, on the other side was a loose cultivator without any influence, even a child would know whom to choose. The scene in front of Yang Chen was



completely in line with the expectation of people, except of one person: Peng Hui.

Another person was even more straightforward, he directly rushed to Yang Chen and asked:

“Whoever he is, great master, has he committed some kind of offence against you? Should I capture him and make him kowtow to you to beg for forgiveness?”

The person speaking this time was a peak foundation stage expert, he certainly didn't hold Peng Hui, a middle foundation stage cultivator, within his eyes. As long as Yang Chen nodded once, he would immediately follow through with the idea he mentioned earlier. This attitude gave a huge fright to Peng Hui.

When had Yang Chen turned into a great master? Has the entire Li Lou Village begun to go foolish? Right away a large group of people gathered over there with a pleasant smile towards Yang Chen, Peng Hui already knew that the current situation was far from good. When he wanted to flee, he suddenly felt a coldness on his neck, as if something was put on top of his neck, soon afterwards a sinister, cold voice came from behind his body:

“Great master, has this guy offended you or not, how about I kill him right now?”

Peng Hui was scared stiff, who could have thought that a qi layer youngster would surprisingly have the support of so many people at the Li Lou Village? Hearing everyone's voices, it seemed as if

they were using his life to curry favor with Yang Chen. He intended to turn around, but due to the flying sword on his neck, he didn't dare to make any movement, fearing that if it gave rise to some kind of misunderstanding, then he would be killed in one blow.

“This ..... This..... Here..... Is..... the..... Immortal Falling Well!”

Peng Hui's stuttering voice came through, only after waiting for a good moment did he continue:

“It is forbidden to kill people here!”

Everyone only wanted to curry favor with Yang Chen, but they had forgotten that they were currently at the Immortal Falling Well. Or perhaps they were aware that this was the Immortal Falling Well but a few of them still wanted to put out this kind of courageous appearance in order to leave a deep impression on Yang Chen. Hearing Peng Hui's words everyone began to hesitate.

“Great master, what do you think should we do? Or should I make sure that after leaving the Immortal Falling Well, he dies without a burial site?”

The person who was holding the flying sword on Peng Hui's neck, asked Yang Chen for instructions. Although the tone of his voice was still threatening, he did not appear like he would immediately kill Peng Hui anymore.

“There are many people like him who are killed by spirit beasts every day!”

A person immediately spoke from one side of Yang Chen.

“Let him go for now, we will follow after him and wait for him to reach a region with many spirit beasts!”

This guy was even more fierce, he wanted to kill him within the Immortal Falling Well itself and afterwards push the blame on underground spirit beasts.

Hearing everyone’s discussion, the coldness within Peng Hui’s heart grew. Yang Chen hadn’t said anything but that mocking smile was creating even more pressure on Peng Hui, compared to those other people’s remarks.

Who could have anticipated that a trifling qi stage youngster who had offended a great person in the outside world had flourished so well within the Immortal Falling Cave? Seven to eight peak foundation stage experts blocked his path, not even allowing him to speak, furthermore their strength was higher than his. He had never before seen such a huge group of supporters in the Immortal Falling Well. Peng Hui still did not know the reason why Yang Chen, who was just a minor qi layer disciple, had such high levelled cultivators fawning over him. Even if they could not kill him, could they not seize him?

On the scene, Peng hui knew that he had never been benevolent towards Yang Chen. The most likely outcome was that his body

would be dismembered into ten thousand pieces after leaving the Immortal Falling Well, after all he had lived for a long time. What was even more probable was that after he went back after replenishing the materials he needed, his corpse would be found buried within the mouths of underground spirit beasts.

People could not kill each other within the Immortal Falling Well, all of the resentments and grudges from the outside should not be brought into the Immortal Falling Well, this was the regulation set by the council of the five formidable elders. However this regulation could only have effect in the Li Lou Village, nobody among the council of the five elders was an immortal, so could they still monitor every corner of the Immortal Falling Well? A large number of people settled their disputes at some corner, just like Yang Chen had been chased to kill him previously.

Chasing other people to kill them was an easy task, but when it's one's own turn to be chased and killed, that was a completely different feeling. Peng Hui was merely a middle foundation stage cultivator, against a group of peak foundation stage experts or even initial JieDan stage experts, even if he wanted to flee, it would be impossible. He also didn't have Yang Chen's hiding abilities, until now he didn't know where Yang Chen had hidden in the end.

“You all don't need to pay attention to him, I know how to take care of him!”

Against everyone's expectation, Yang Chen let off Peng Hui quite lightly. Although everyone did not understand, but the person holding the blade did not want to defy Yang Chen, so he snorted

towards Peng Hui once and then turned around and slowly left.

Just as that ice-cold sensation suddenly disappeared, Peng Hui loosened and took a deep breath. However, recalling the discussion between these people just a moment ago, he looked at Yang Chen's calm face again. Peng knew what kind of calamity he had escaped today. In his desperation, Peng Hui could not help but clench his teeth, resolving that he would kill Yang Chen right there!

Within a moment, a flying sword suddenly soared in the air and rushed to attack Yang Chen, who had just turned his head and began to walk. The flying sword rapidly approached its target, which was very different from Yang Chen's style of killing by beheading with a blade.

Everyone was greatly startled at this and were just about to take out their magic weapons when suddenly Yang Chen shouted loudly:

“Everyone must not move, in this Immortal Falling Well we follow the rules of the council of elders!”

The most unexpected thing was that, after glancing at the flying sword once, he continued to walk away.

Peng Hui had naturally heard Yang Chen's words and noted it in his mind, but putting the sword back into his scabbard now would greatly shame him, so the flying sword hesitated for only one moment and then continued towards Yang Chen in order to kill him.

“Outrageous!”

Suddenly these words echoed like a thunderclap within everyone’s ears and an overflowing loftiness directly engulfed all of those people. Peng Hui was so shaken that blood spurted from all of his seven orifices, the flying away flying sword turned around, defying it’s master’s control and with an even higher speed, it flew towards Peng Hui and without even stopping for one moment directly penetrated his body.

Peng Hui looked at his flying sword with his own blood all over it, with an unbelieving expression, his body swayed a little and then finally fell to the ground, even at the point of dying he still hadn’t closed his eyes and couldn’t die in peace.

“It is rare that someone doesn’t remember this old man’s rules, very good!”

The earlier voice echoed within everyone’s ears once again, but this time its tone was much more soft.

# Chapter 70 - Elder Wu Needs A Favor

16 May 2016

Hearing these words, everyone realized whose voice this was: Elder Wu of the council of Five Elders, a Da Cheng stage expert, the great cultivator who was admired by all of the ancestors of everyone's sects, the overseer of the Immortal Falling Well, the person who made all of the rules here.

Since everyone had set foot into the Immortal Falling Well, nobody had ever seen this legendary Da Cheng stage expert, everything was entirely conducted according to the rules without the slightest accident. Gradually everyone seemed to have forgotten the existence of Elder Wu, the rules were only followed at the Li Lou Village, when going into the depths of the Immortal Falling Well, the sun was high and the emperor far away. [\[1\]](#)

Obviously Elder Wu had not shown himself, he just controlled the flying sword of Peng Hui to kill him. Seeing that, everyone realized within their hearts that compared to a genuine expert, they were still very far away. Thinking about that incident, what would have happened if Yang Chen hadn't shouted to stop them, their whole bodies were covered in cold sweat.

Even if their strength was higher when compared to Peng Hui, when all was said and done they still had their limits, at least no one among them would have been able to control Peng Hui's flying sword to kill him. Not to mention achieving this, they did not even dare to think about trying it. Everybody on the scene did not dare to say anything, in the entire Li Lou Village, there wasn't a single

person who would have dared to even move.

One sentence from Elder Wu made everyone clearly understand that, at the Li Lou Village, at the Immortal Falling Well, regardless of the situation, complying with the rules of Elder Wu was the best choice.

Similarly Yang Chen also didn't make any unnecessary movements or say anything, he had long ago anticipated Elder Wu's appearance. When his Spiritual Awareness Thread had suddenly come in contact with a formidable, but hidden, Spiritual Awareness, which left immediately after contact, he realized that this surely had to be Elder Wu's Spiritual Awareness. Elder Wu had begun to investigate the traces of that frightening killing intent years ago, Yang Chen clearly understood this point. Seeing his sudden appearance just a moment ago, Yang Chen reckoned that he must have returned from the outside world.

At the time when Yang Chen had turned around to walk away, when Peng Hui used his flying sword to attack him, Yang Chen immediately shouted to stop everyone because of the rules of Elder Wu. As for the recently returned Elder Wu, he did not care about right or wrong, the important thing to him was that people had to comply with the rules he had laid down.

Peng Hui had suddenly revealed his flying sword but the group of people didn't do anything because of Yang Chen's advice, no other outcome could've made Elder Wu happier. These people not doing anything indicated that they adored him, they adored the rules he had laid down. That person who had attacked was surely a person who would recklessly break the rules he set down.



The person who had been attacking surely had resentments, but Elder Wu had already made it clear long ago that after entering into the Immortal Falling Well, even if they had resentments as big as the sky, they had to suppress it and not indiscriminately kill Fellow Daoists. Since Yang Chen and the other had upheld the rules, naturally Elder Wu would punish the person who was breaking them.

“I do not care what kind of grudge you have, even if you all want to attack or kill each other outside of the Immortal Falling Pond I do not care about that. But if you try to attack anyone within the Immortal Falling Well, I will kill you!”

That awe inspiring voice echoed within everyone’s ears again, but nobody was able to see his figure. Nobody dared to start discussing about Elder Wu, even if one was a JieDan expert, when facing a Da Cheng stage expert, they wouldn’t even dare to turn look them in the eye, let alone act recklessly.

“Youngster, you are pretty good!”

His voice resounded in everyone’s ears, but this time it was pointing towards Yang Chen in particular.

“I see that your cultivation is quite low and you don’t have any flying sword, I bestow this flying sword to you!”

Following Elder Wu’s words, the flying sword which was hanging in the air after killing Peng Hui flew in front of Yang Chen,

following which the qiankun pouch on Peng Hui's belt also flew towards Yang Chen.

“I also see that you don't have a sect provided qiankun pouch, which sect's disciple is so poor? Take this also as a reward!”

Yang Chen extended his hand and grabbed the flying sword and the qiankun pouch in front of him. Under everyone's envious gazes, he bowed towards the sky and said:

“Many thanks, Senior, for your kindness!”

“The road of cultivation is extremely hard, though it's ultimately not very important, you should still try not to arouse enmity with others.”

A trace of guidance could be heard within Elder Wu's voice, but it was not in a commanding tone.

“Do your best!”

“Yes, Senior!”

Yang Chen again voiced his gratitude respectfully, but as if Elder Wu had disappeared, his voice could not be heard anymore. Everyone sensed that the earth shattering pressure had also disappeared so it was safe to assume that Elder Wu had already left.

Hu! Hu!

A series of sighs could be heard, apparently everyone had relaxed. Although Elder Wu had not appeared in person, the expressions of everyone were as if they had been fighting for a whole day with all of their strength, sweat could be seen dripping from their bodies. All of them immediately sat down on the ground and were unable to say anything for half a day.

Since these people had stuck out for him in his predicament, Yang Chen was not even a little bit stingy and immediately took out a jade bottle and gave every person a second grade yang qi pill. After the pill entered their stomachs, a little bit of Spirit Power was restored in everyone and one by one they began to stand up.

“What a narrowly escape!”

Blurted the person who was pointing his flying sword at Peng Hui's neck just a moment ago, but he immediately realized his mistake. If this was heard by Elder Wu, wouldn't this create a grave misunderstanding? Thinking this, he covered his mouth at lightening speed and did not dare to speak anymore.

Other people's expressions were also as if they had been given a new lease on life, they had realized that if it were not for Yang Chen stopping them a moment ago, they would also have been killed by the flying sword. They could not help but rejoice and felt extremely grateful towards Yang Chen.

“Great master, thanks for what you did just a moment ago!”

As soon as they sobered up, people immediately came to thank Yang Chen. Yang Chen didn't consider it as a great favor and similarly cupped his hands towards everyone and said:

“The one expressing his gratitude must be me, everyone had only spoken out for justice. Many thanks, everyone!”

Both sides were courteous to each other, but when pushing the credit around, those who had previously overstepped their limits to show off in front of Yang Chen were extremely delighted within their hearts. This had once again given them a chance to further their relationship with Yang Chen and leave a stronger impression on him.

There was nobody who envied Yang Chen for obtaining the flying sword and qiankun pouch. If everyone were made to experience Elder Wu's pressure again to obtain a flying sword afterwards, Yang Chen reckoned that they would be ready to do anything to not have to suffer from that nightmarish experience again. Those among them who originally believed themselves to be figures who could shake the world, only now discovered that they were just a mole, who didn't even have the ability to choose whether to live or to die, in front of those real experts.

The only person who was fine among them was Yang Chen. Not to mention his previous life, even in this life Yang Chen had beheaded many great experts, even the Jade Emperor, so how could he be afraid of the pressure from a Da Cheng stage cultivator. For him that was basically just a piece of cake.

Three years had already passed since Yang Chen had entered the Immortal Falling Well. Currently he was considering how to spend the rest of the time. He definitely could not waste even a single second of those ten years.

Yang Chen did not have any lack of Spirit Essences, he even had an amount which was sufficient to support a sect. The spirit power was also plentiful here, so this was a good place for cultivating, but from the time when Yang Chen had entered the sect, only six brief years had passed and he had already reached the peak of the qi layer in the fire attribute, this kind of speed was already heaven defying.

Even the speed of a cultivation talent like Shi Fairy could not compare to this. When he had stepped onto the peak of Heavenly Stairs, people had said that, since he had killed so many his will had become quite firm and illusionary spaces could not affect him, but as for cultivation, he would never be able to compare to Shi Fairy, who had a metal attributed full spirit root.

Previously Yang Chen had planned to reach the foundation stage within ten years, which would already surpass the speed of all kinds of cultivation talents, so naturally he could not allow to show off his aberrancy for now. If he did, it would give rise to endless jealousy and other such trivial matters when the other sects thought about it and decided that he, a cultivation talent, had to be trampled while he was still sprouting, so that he would not be able to influence the equilibrium between the sects in the future; then it could only be called a grave injustice to him.

As for killing underground beasts, he only needed to do that in order to fuse with the XianTai stage's will, but that had already been done, so Yang Chen didn't feel like troubling those underground spirit beasts. It seemed as if he could only forge himself into a pill concocting talent.

Fortunately his reputation had already spread somewhat, at least within the Li Lou Village, nobody could question this. Yang Chen refining second grade foundation stage pills was something that had occurred before everyone's eyes, so there was definitely no possibility of him being a fraud. Afterwards, he had exchanged some ingredients with other people and refined some low level pills like the yang qi pill, the yuan cultivation pill and so on, all of them second grade. So by now, nobody had any doubts regarding Yang Chen being a pill concocting master.

Days kept on passing calmly until half a year had passed. Everyday, Yang Chen would do one heavenly circulation and afterwards use the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets on the Profound Spirit Furnace and the Sword Box.

Since his fire attributed cultivation had already increased by one step, the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets could be used to conduct an even higher layer refining. But what made Yang Chen astonished was that, apparently, whichever attribute of Spirit Power he used to refine, it would only enhance the Spirit Power of that attribute. His fire attributed Spirit Power had already attained the fourth layer of the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the sixth layer of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets, accordingly, the third fire and the fourth fire attributed Heavenly Stars and Earth Fiend Spirit Power threads had already strengthened four

times and six times respectively, but there was no change in the spirit power threads of other attributes.

Having Elder Wu overseeing the Immortal Falling Well, Yang Chen was afraid that this Da Cheng stage expert would discover the fact that he cultivated both Yin and Yang of all Five Phases, therefore he did not dare to reveal much and only concentrated on improving his fire attributed Spirit Power.

Within the short period of half a year, Yang Chen's fire attributed spirit power had already reached the pinnacle, vaguely touching the boundary of the foundation stage. After that, Yang Chen used his formidable Spiritual Awareness and no longer increased the fire attributed Spirit Power, instead he began to increase the Spirit Power of the other phases.

Those people who had chased to kill Yang Chen, appeared in the Li Lou Village during this half year in succession, which caught Yang Chen's attention. When both sides met each other, even though sparks radiated all around, because of what happened last time, with Peng Hui being killed by Elder Wu, nobody dared to fight within the Li Lou Village. All grudges had to wait until the time when they went into the Immortal Falling Well again.

Yang Chen had stopped appearing at the market, instead he stayed within his room. On the doorstep, he hung a board made of wood, on which a pill concocting furnace was drawn, acting as the sign for the shop. In any case, everyone was aware that Yang Chen was a talented pill concocting master, if they wanted to find him, they could directly go to his room.

On that day, Yang Chen had just sent off a Fellow Daoist, for whom he had refined a furnace of yang qi pills and sat down for a moment, when suddenly someone knocked on his door. After receiving permission from Yang Chen, a square faced, middle aged man opened the door and walked in.

Once he came in, Yang Chen had a feeling of Deja vu, but he didn't have any impression of this person from before, which baffled Yang Chen.

“You are a pill concocting master, can you refine any high grade pills?”

The middle aged man was blunt and came straight to the point.

Yang Chen had answered this question many times, but he had never seen this person before, apparently he was new, so not knowing him was normal. Yang Chen replied with a nod, without showing any signs of impatience

“At most I can refine foundation stage pills, the cultivation of Myself is limited, so I do not dare to waste Senior's ingredients.”

Yang Chen's answer was within the middle aged man's expectations, after all Yang Chen was only a peak qi layer cultivator at the moment; to be able to refine second grade foundation stage pills was already an astonishing performance, he also couldn't make any extravagant demands.



“What if you only have to refine and purify a single type of ingredient?”

The middle aged man asked.

“That depends on the kind of ingredient!”

Although he hadn’t given a clear answer, the tone of his voice was full of a confidence which couldn’t be hidden.

“What about this one?”

The middle aged man opened his hand, which held a green-blue zoysia [\[2\]](#) and placed it in front of Yang Chen. A faint expectation could be heard in his tone.

“Top grade blue-green zoysia?”

Yang Chen was stunned, after which a passionate look appeared within his eyes. This top grade blue-green zoysia only grew in the depths of some kind of underground jade ore and could only be found by chance. It was protected by formidable demonic beasts. If one did not have great strength and heaven defying luck, then it is impossible to obtain this kind of heavenly material. And this kind of zoysia just so happens to be the main ingredient of the extremely rarely seen dual heavenly pill.

The dual heavenly pill was only used in one circumstance, and

that was during the time of the tribulation during the ascension from the Da Cheng stage to the spiritual world. This middle aged man had unexpectedly taken out this kind of item. Finally Yang Chen realized why he had felt that kind of familiarity from him. This middle aged man was actually Elder Wu! Back then Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness thread had a slight contact with Elder Wu's Spiritual Awareness, that's why he felt that he was vaguely familiar with him.

Yang Chen had shouted the name of the blue-green zoysia without hesitating, which had startled Elder Wu. An ordinary cultivator simply did not know about this kind of thing, but Yang Chen had identified it with just a glance. This could only mean two things, either Yang Chen had a very extensive knowledge of herbs, or he had seen this before. Elder Wu would prefer if it were the former. Seeing this kind of thing was not easy, even for a person at the level of Elder Wu.

“Can you refine and purify this blue-green zoysia?”

Elder Wu was closely watching Yang Chen's expression, somewhat impatient for Yang Chen's reply.

“Refining the zoysia without harming the medicinal property requires almost perfect control over fire, if there is even one tiny mistake then it will burn down at once, leaving nothing behind.”

Yang Chen didn't reply directly, he rather first spoke about the trouble with refining the zoysia, then he continued to speak:

“For refining the blue-green zoysia, the most suitable flame is precisely the Geocentric Flame.”

While speaking, Yang Chen brought his hands in front of himself and a ball of flame appeared within them. The dark red color allowed Elder Wu to immediately identify the type of the flame.

Meanwhile, that ball of flame seemed as if it had come alive under Yang Chen’s control. It turned into a person whose appearance was exactly like Elder Wu sitting in front of him.

“Elder Wu, take a look at my skills, do you think I am worthy of your kind intentions?”

Yang Chen smiled and asked Elder Wu, whose gaze was fixed Yang Chen’s hands.

---

[1] This means to become more audacious because you’re further away from authority

[2] Zoysia is a kind of grass ↵

# Chapter 71 - Reading A Lot Has Its Benefits

“You know who I am?”

Elder Wu only swept a glance at the flame in Yang Chen’s hand, but he hadn’t paid much attention to Yang Chen’s question, he was most interested in finding out how Yang Chen knew about him. He had never shown his face in front of this batch of disciples who had come to train at the Immortal Falling Well, even when he had killed Peng Hui, he did that secretly, without showing his face to anyone.

“A top grade blue-green zoysia is the main ingredient for the Heaven Seizing Pill, the only person here who would have a use for it would be you, Elder Wu!”

Only, Yang Chen wasn’t very nervous as he slowly explained the reasons for his judgement.

“Your knowledge and experience are out of the ordinary!”

Elder Wu faintly nodded and praised him. But he was still quite baffled, a mere qi layer youngster surprisingly knew the ingredients of the Heaven Seizing Pill, this was unimaginable.

“This untalented youngster has already committed the entire Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor of the Pure Yang Palace

to memory.”

Yang Chen’s words removed most of the doubts in Elder Wu’s heart. A youngster who had already learnt everything in a Hidden Pavilion, for him to know about the blue-green zoysia and Heaven Seizing Pill was not something unimaginable.

But even though Yang Chen’s fire controlling arts were extraordinary and he had also absorbed the most suitable flame for concocting, the Geocentric Flame, Elder Wu still wasn’t even the least bit assured. He took out a piece of blue-green zoysia and indicated Yang Chen to refine it on the spot.

Yang Chen was still calm and composed. When the zoysia was still in the air, it was immediately engulfed by the flame, as if there were threads within the flame the zoysia was slowly pulled towards himself and was placed into his hands. The dark red flame in the zoysia’s surroundings began to touch it and soon a variation appeared in the zoysia.

The originally solid zoysia slowly began to change into dough and immediately afterwards, it turned into a liquid. Under Yang Chen’s manipulation of the flame, it kept on changing shapes incessantly, in one moment it turned into the shape of an ornament, then after another moment it transformed into a green pill cauldron. The strangest thing was that the zoysia had maintained its blue-green color from the beginning without even a the slightest change.

But all of this didn’t count for anything. Yang Chen clearly remembered that Elder Wu’s request was to purify and refine it. Although refining wasn’t a problem, but the purification step was

still left.

Under the burning of the Geocentric Flame, little by little, slight traces of multicolored impurities began to flow out of the green colored fluid and within a flash they were led somewhere else by the fast flowing fire. These multicolored impurities slowly became less and less, when a white colored juice began to seep out. Yang Chen knew that this was some different zoysia mixed in with the blue-green zoysia, which was still regarded as an impurity.

After a long moment, the impurities stopped seeping out of the green colored juice and Yang Chen controlled his flame, turning it into a circular flame cup, which he used to hold the green colored liquid and placed it in front of Elder Wu.

The green colored liquid within the flame seemed like a piece of transparent fluid, but the green color was a pleasure to look at. Even though it was liquid, its viscosity was still not increased even a little bit by the heat. Elder Wu lightly reached out his hand and put it into the liquid. The portion he touched immediately condensed at his fingertip and left the fire cup within Yang Chen's hand, when he retrieved his finger.

Yang Chen put away the flame cup and calmly waited for Elder Wu's judgement. Elder Wu held his finger directly in front of his eyes and his Spiritual Awareness directly penetrated the zoysia.

The whole lump was bluish-green in color, almost without any impurity, plump and alluring. One could see through it from one end to the other, it was completely transparent and the bluish-green color was well distributed within it. Holding it in his hand, it

immediately gave off a gentle sensation. Compared to the time when it was given to Yang Chen, the nature of the zoysia had become better by at least ten times.

“You are the first person at the qi layer I know to have accomplished this bare handed!”

Elder Wu was not stingy when praising Yang Chen. The person before his eyes had the best pill concocting talent among all of the people he had met, yet he was only at the qi layer and still able to accomplish a feat which not even JieDan expert could accomplish, especially his control over fire, it was simply in the realm of perfection. If it were not for his cultivation limiting him, even Elder Wu would not be his match.

“Elder Wu should not patronize me!”

Yang Chen displayed a kind of self deprecating elegance. Looking at Elder Wu’s eyes, he sighed deeply again.

“I want to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill for which I require the help of other high level pill concocting masters, Younger Brother, are you interested?”

Elder Wu had already inspected Yang Chen’s pill concocting skills and immediately invited him.

“This is exactly what I want!”

Yang Chen agreed with a smile stretched across his entire face. To be invited by a Da Cheng stage expert to work together, leaving aside the benefits he could gain later, just to be able to learn about the Heaven Seizing Pill's refining process was already a chance which one could only get by luck. If he didn't grab this opportunity, wouldn't he be a fool?

In addition to that, Yang Chen wanted to establish himself as a high level pill concocting master. If he used this matter with Elder Wu, that would establish it as an unshakable fact which nobody would dare to doubt. Even a Da Cheng stage expert was asking Yang Chen for help, wouldn't that clearly illustrate his point?

The refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill was similar to the yang qi pill, it only required to mix the ingredients and fuse them together to be refined. That was what the name 'Heaven Seizing' referred to. If genuinely refined, the difference was not much compared to a first rate magic weapon. It definitely did not require many high level ingredients, but the refining process was divided into many stages, every stage was a thousand or ten thousand times more complex than refining the foundation stage pill.

This could said to be the highest grade pill within the mortal world, even with the experience of Yang Chen's previous life as a Principal Golden Immortal, he had never taken part in the process. He hadn't even seen the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill. It could be said that, as long as he was able to successfully refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, he could be compared to a fourth grade pill concocting master.

When Yang Chen and Elder Wu walked out of Yang Chen's room,



it immediately gave rise to an uproar. Yang Chen hadn't left his room for a long time already, when people required pills to be concocted, they would have to come to him and ask him for a favor. This kind of situation, where he would depart after completing a person's request hadn't happened before. Because nobody had seen Elder Wu's face before, they were all looking at him in alert. It seemed as if, as long as Yang Chen suggested it, they would immediately clash with him.

Elder Wu hardly paid any attention to it, he raised his hand and immediately Yang Chen was encased in a bright light and within a flash these two people flew out of Li Lou Village without leaving any tracks. But the group of people left behind at the Li Lou Village didn't know what happened. Looking at the bright light fading away, they looked at each other in dismay, not knowing what to do.

“What happened just a moment ago? How could the great master be seized by someone?”

“What's the matter?”

Following the guesses, finally an expert who was on duty here said in a matchlessly jealous tone:

“The person just a moment ago was Elder Wu of the council of five elders, he has taken great master Yang away.”

When the group of concerned people heard his words, nobody had any doubts, everyone began to make guesses, one after

another. Why had Elder Wu taken Yang Chen away?

It seemed that Elder Wu did not want to create problems for Yang Chen, so it could be assumed that he would not harm Yang Chen. Moreover, if he really wanted to punish Yang Chen for something, he only had to make a slight effort, equivalent to raising his finger, so why would he go through the trouble and appear himself?

Since Yang Chen was not in trouble, then there could only be two possibilities: One was that he wanted to cultivate Yang Chen and the other was that he wanted something from Yang Chen. No matter what he wanted to do, it would not be a bad thing for Yang Chen.

Everyone immediately realized why that expert had used this kind of envious tone when he explained it to them. They also began to be jealous within their hearts. If Elder Wu regarded them as important, was there any benefit that they wouldn't get?

No matter what was said, those people who had the desire to to fawn over Yang Chen and get close to him were the happiest this moment. After this meeting with Elder Wu, Yang Chen's market price would instantly touch the heavens. They thought that they had already made good karma by forming a bond with Yang Chen, so they were all delighted. The closer they were to Yang Chen, the more benefits they would obtain.

But at this moment, Yang Chen wasn't concerned about this, he was totally excited to take part in the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill. Even if he was a Golden Principal Immortal before rebirth, he

would still be extremely interested in this heaven defying pill. Not to mention that he would form a good relationship with Elder Wu, who could be considered as a strong expert even in the spiritual world.

By comparison, the speed at which Elder Wu was flying with him on a magic treasure was not something that would amazed him. Yang Chen had also sensed that they were no longer within the Immortal Falling Well, instead they were already flying above the ground, out of the Immortal Falling Well spell formation. Otherwise, at this kind of speed, it would surely give rise to many attacks of underground spirit beasts if it was within the Immortal Falling Well.

When looking at the scenery on the ground, Yang Chen's body slightly shook and he looked at Elder Wu with suspicion and asked him:

“Elder Wu we are already out of the Immortal Falling Well, could it be?”

“I have already begun to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill for the past few years!”

Elder Wu was naturally aware of what Yang Chen meant to say when he last spoke. He was extremely appreciative of Yang Chen's quick wittedness.

Between these two people there was no need for any secrecy, since Elder Wu was refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, he naturally

wanted to ascend to the spiritual world. Yang Chen was shocked at this, Elder Wu had a pact with the leaders of every sect. He would not leave the Immortal Falling Well if his ascension was not imminent, his leaving already explained everything clearly.

Although Yang Chen was not all that amazed by the flying speed of Elder Wu's magic treasure, this flying type magic treasure could make normal people gasp in admiration. Within a few hours they had already travelled a distance which would take Yang Chen at least two months.

While flying at rapid speed, Yang Chen no longer felt like measuring the distance, so he slowly began to think about himself flying this magic treasure. This magic treasure was a shuttle shaped boat and Yang Chen was sitting on the hull together with Elder Wu, but unfortunately the hull was not very big. With two people sitting there, almost no space was left. At most they could fit a small desk with some tea, but that was the limit.

“This is the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle refined by this old man. To gain more speed I had to sacrifice some space.”

As if he could see Yang Chen's lament about the space, Elder Wu explained it, but self satisfaction was clearly visible on his face. This Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle was Elder Wu's emergency treasure, one which he was immensely proud of. Moreover this magic treasure was quite well known within the cultivation world, almost all cultivators would have expressions of jealousy and astonishment on their faces once they heard its name, so he thought that Yang Chen would not be an exception.

Elder Wu was astonished that his guess was so far from reality, Yang Chen sized up the magic treasure once and afterward he slightly nodded and responded:

“How pitiful!”

In his previous life, Yang Chen had seen all kinds of flying magic treasures. This Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle was only lower grade trash in Yang Chen’s eyes. His assessment was already giving face to Elder Wu’s abilities.

Elder Wu was astonished at Yang Chen’s reply. If Yang Chen had really never heard the great name of the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle, then it was unfortunate for Yang Chen. How could a mere qi layer youngster like Yang Chen comprehend something like a high grade magic treasure?

Elder Wu was not an ordinary cultivator, so he would surely not use the mentality of an ordinary person to judge this assessment. Although Yang Chen’s cultivation was low, he knew about the Heaven Seizing Pill, moreover his control over fire was at a simply divine level. Even though he knew many fire attributed cultivators, among those he could not find anyone who would dare put aside their cultivation and compete against Yang Chen’s fire control. Since he had such a great skill in pill concocting, then surely his assessment for the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle would not just be random drivel.

“How can you say that?”

Elder Wu asked with the tone of seeking a guidance, without even the slightest trace of mockery for Yang Chen's young age and low cultivation.

Elder Wu's attitude raised Yang Chen's admiration for him, he had seen a lot of people who insult ones who were weaker, because of their own high strength, but seeing Elder Wu's bearing just now had really caught him off guard. In his previous life, Yang Chen never had the opportunity to make contact with Elder Wu, so he did not know what kind of person he was. A Da Cheng stage expert who might immediately ascend to the spiritual world had not only shown courtesy towards a qi layer expert, asked for his opinion without caring for his face.

“When you refine this magic treasure again, use the Immortal Passage refining technique to fuse this magic treasure with the Immortal Passage.”

Yang Chen did not have any sentimental attachment to the idea, so he calmly explained what he knew:

“Although it will require a little bit of skill, in the end it will be much more comfortable. It also doesn't need to be carried as eye-grabbingly as a qiankun pouch. This is not the highest grade of magic treasures.”

This method was commonly used in the spiritual world, but nobody wanted to do this in the mortal world, Elder Wu would soon know about this after ascending, but in the mortal world, very few people would want to spend the ingredients and magic power, just to improve a flying magic treasure. A lot of people

would think of this as a waste.

Like a person woken up from a dream, Elder Wu suddenly felt enlightened, in the past if he ran into any kind of difficulty on this magic weapon, he would immediately escape, so he could not help but praise him loudly:

“That’s right! Such a simple thing, why didn’t I think of this earlier?”

After he finished his praise, his gaze immediately moved to Yang Chen’s face, with a smile he asked in suspicion:

“Are you really a qi layer cultivator?”

“This youngster has only read a few books.”

Yang Chen smilingly replied. In any case, he had already told him that he had learned everything in the Hidden Pavilion, so this idea was also not something unimaginable.

Elder Wu nodded, but didn’t say anything, but in his mind, he had already formed a plan. During the refining of the dual heavenly pill, he would spend as much time as possible with Yang Chen and he had to learn about all of the knowledge Yang Chen had learned by reading. Currently his cultivation did not have any bottleneck, what he required was some time and a sudden insight. Previously he had only looked into things pertaining to cultivation, but apparently that wasn’t enough.

# Chapter 72 - Seizing His Geocentric Flame Would Be More Convenient

Elder Wu didn't raise this topic again, instead he took out a pot of strong tea, two tea cups and poured one for himself and one for Yang Chen and put it back afterwards.

The tea within the teapot produced a dark green color which was similar to the blue-green zoysia Yang Chen had refined. The teacup was also not something simple, it similarly had a fresh appearance and green color which could make people drool. Together with the dark green tea, it perfectly resembled a precious treasure.

“This is something this old man prefers when he is free, young friend, experience my selfmade jadeite tea!”

Elder Wu made a signal with his hand. If other people saw this, they would immediately faint from shock, this was Elder Wu of the council of the five elders, who was not even modest when he was in front of a sect's leader.

But as if Yang Chen was not even a little bit disturbed about what this implied. After thanking him courteously, he clasped the dark green cup with his hands.

For a majority of the time, Elder Wu stayed at the Immortal Falling Well, so he had no time to come out above the ground to search for things, therefore, he made this jadeite tea from the tender leaves of the green jade bamboo which had a totally



different flavor from an ordinary tea plant. This was also the trick for which Elder Wu felt the most satisfaction, but he had always tasted it alone and had shared it with very few people, this was his first time pouring a cup for someone.

The more one was obsessed with something, the more one would desire that people appreciate one's work, but Elder Wu had been at the Immortal Falling Well, so he had met with very few people like Yang Chen who could talk to him with confidence. When other people met with Elder Wu, they were just like moles in front of him, trembling with fear. Where could he find someone as unrestrained as Yang Chen, who could treat a Da Cheng stage cultivator as an ordinary friend?

But Elder Wu admired him for this, in Yang Chen's eyes there wasn't the slightest bit of regret for his assessment of the Heaven Fleeing Shuttle. The method to improve it which Yang Chen told him made Elder Wu's admiration for Yang Chen grow even more. Although the method was not very complex, people rarely think like this, so this was very commendable.

Currently Yang Chen was calmly sitting with the jadeite tea in his hands, but Elder Wu was nervously looking at Yang Chen, waiting for his assessment. This kind of feeling of looking forward to something hadn't appeared in him for a long time. This time, he was prompted by a sudden impulse to look for Yang Chen and invite him, but that had turned out to be the correct decision.

Originally Elder Wu had just wanted to settle the affairs of the Immortal Falling Pool before leaving, but he hadn't expect the sudden appearance of that killing intent, he looked everywhere but

still couldn't find the source of that killing intent. Soon after that he had searched most of the Immortal Falling Pond and had barely returned back when he discovered that someone had broken his rule of killing another. His anger was immediately vented on Peng Hui who was out of luck that day and was killed by Elder Wu.

Soon after that he heard about Yang Chen being a pill concocting master, while he was in the middle of his preparations for refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. To refine and purify the blue-green zoysia to the best quality, he required the help of an expert. He knew a few people, but they didn't have a suitable flame. Thinking about giving it a try, he looked for Yang Chen, but he hadn't expected that Yang Chen would turn out to give him a great surprise.

Immediately afterwards, his assessment of the Heaven Fleeing Shuttle made Elder Wu gain a whole new level of respect for him. At that moment Elder Wu was once again waiting nervously for Yang Chen's evaluation of his self made jadeite tea.

Yang Chen had the jade cup within his hands but hadn't started drinking the tea, instead he first brought the cup in front of him and lightly smelled it. This jadeite tea was very strong, the smell was also quite dense, but the thick smell of bamboo leaves could make people's hearts carefree and relaxed. With just this one sniff, Yang Chen could smell a portion of Spirit Power being breathed in, it gave a very comfortable feeling, as if his body had been soaked within refreshing water.

Looking at Yang Chen's facial expression while quietly smelling the tea with closed eyes, Elder Wu was becoming more and more expectant. Yang Chen's behaviour had already completely

exceeded a normal qi layer disciple. Elder Wu was becoming more and more anxious with each passing second, wanting to know Yang Chen's evaluation of his jadeite tea.

Compared to the pleasures Yang Chen had enjoyed in the Heavenly Court, this jadeite tea possessed its own unique kind of fragrance, which forced people to take a sip. Only after smelling it for some time did Yang Chen bring the cup to his mouth and took a sip. Immediately, a portion of mixed up bamboo fragrance and simultaneously a kind of sensation that penetrated his spirit, filled his mouth, and after his mouth, it reached to the bottom of his heart.

An enormous amount of Spirit Power was released from the tea leaves, it swept away until the bottom of his heart, the beautiful taste not stopping for a long time. But at this moment Yang Chen was completely incapable of sampling this tea, the huge amount of Spirit Power it released made Yang Chen have no choice but to use the Reverse Yin and Yang Five Phases secrets to the greatest extent in order to refine and absorb this portion of spirit power. The frightening amount of spirit power was even more abundant than a one year matured Profound Yang Fruit's Spirit Power.

Yang Chen's face immediately turned red, looking into the eyes of Elder Wu, he suddenly responded. His jadeite tea was made up of the tender leaves of jade bamboo, so how could a qi layer disciple like Yang Chen bear the accumulated Spirit Power? Elder Wu was just about to help him when Yang Chen's complexion slowly recovered. Soon after that he suddenly exclaimed with his voice full of infatuation:

“Good tea!”

Following which, he again took another mouthful while his face turned red and recovered again.

At this moment, Elder Wu was at a loss about how to deal this qi layer youngster. Although his praise made Elder Wu very happy, Yang Chen’s behaviour had clearly surpassed that of an ordinary qi layer disciple, making Elder Wu unable to judge him clearly. That youngster before his eyes, was he really at the qi layer?

He was very much unlike a frog in a well, this thought flashed within Elder Wu’s mind and he suddenly had a premonition, apparently inviting Yang Chen to participate in refining the Heaven Seizing Pill might give him a pleasant surprise.

Following which, the thoughts of these two people began to revolve around the tea, Yang Chen was enticed by the uniquely refined teapot and wanted one himself. He started to have an intense desire for a tool for making wine. The countless Thousand Year matured precious ingredients in the medicine garden, together with the unique secret recipes about making wine that he knew, along with his own experience of thousands or tens of thousands of years of winemaking, what kind of smell would it produce? The fine jade wine made within the Heavenly Court, he probably couldn’t even come close to it.

Elder Wu was completely unaware that his teapot had given rise to many thoughts in Yang Chen’s head. In any case, the more he talked about the tea with Yang Chen, the more they hit it off. Yang Chen’s plentiful knowledge and that unique perspective about its

taste, often made Elder Wu's eyes shine brightly. Even if Yang Chen hadn't any knowledge about pill concocting, Elder Wu still wished to sit together with Yang Chen and converse. Even he felt fortunate to find such a young friend, who did not mind his seniority and cultivation.

The conversation between them continued until they reached their destination. But both of them felt unsatisfied and still wanted to talk some more.

This was the location personally chosen by Elder Wu for refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. Because they had been flying on the Heaven Fleeing Shuttle for the whole journey, Yang Chen did not know how much time had passed or how far they had travelled. But Yang Chen was very sure about one thing, Elder Wu would definitely not allow any person or matter to trouble him while he was refining the Heaven Seizing Pill.

There were several tens of restriction spells on this place, even if it was Elder Wu himself, controlling the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle and incessantly attacking the spell formations one by one, he would still have to spend at least one hour to be able to enter. But this tight defence was still only one small gear in a big machine.

This was not out of Yang Chen's expectations, the Heaven Seizing Pill, a pill that dared to be called as 'Heaven Seizing' was already the pinnacle pill in defiance against the heavens. If Elder Wu handled this matter lightly, then he would be playing with his life.

After the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle landed on the ground, Elder Wu asked Yang Chen to come out, then he collected the Heavenly

Flying Shuttle and put forth a spell formation. Soon afterwards, a road suddenly appeared within the dense jungle in front of them. Elder Wu took the lead and Yang Chen followed close behind, entering the jungle.

Behind the jungle was a valley, neither big nor small, the Spirit Power within the valley was plentiful. Once they came in, Yang Chen saw an exceptionally refined villa. At the gate of the villa, more than ten foundation stage servants were neatly lined up, forming a row. All of them had the same attire and seeing Elder Wu, they immediately paid their respects to him.

Elder Wu made a casual gesture with his hand to command them, pointing towards Yang Chen.

“My Young Friend Yang Chen is someone whom I have personally invited. You all must not show even a little bit of carelessness!”

After he finished instructing them, he immediately entered the villa, bringing Yang Chen along with him.

The inside of the manor was still lavish and exquisite, just the region, as far as Yang Chen’s eyes could see, had at least three, one thousand years old trees, swaying gently. As for the materials used to make the villa, everywhere Yang Chen’s eyes could look, he would not even regret to dismantle the roofs, walls and ground, as they could be used to refine a magic treasure. The net worth this Da Cheng stage expert had accumulated for several hundred or thousand years was at least two times that of Yang Chen when he was hiding and running.

Elder Wu had paid particular attention to efficiency. After returning to the manor, he directly led Yang Chen to the location where the Heaven Seizing Pill was being refined. Here, Yang Chen saw a few guests of Elder Wu.

It was as expected. Elder Wu was not at all famous for pill concocting, therefore, in order to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, he would surely require the help of high grade pill concocting masters. Yang Chen saw that there were at least three YuanYing stage pill concocting masters.

Peng Zhu, Deng Yi, He LianYun, three people, all of them famous pill concocting masters. In Yang Chen's previous life, these people had very well known reputations. When Yang Chen was a youngster, the worst of these three people was already at the third grade, while the best, Deng Yi, a female, was already a fourth grade pill concocting master.

Hearing that Yang Chen was also a pill concocting master, a trace of doubt and contempt appeared within the gazes of the three pill concocting masters. A qi layer pill concocting master, even if his level of achievement was high, how high could it possibly be?

“Yang Chen has the Geocentric Flame, most suitable for refining blue-green zoysia.”

Regardless of whether it was Elder Wu or Yang Chen, both hadn't expected the disdain these three pill concocting experts showed. The Heaven Seizing Pill was not something a qi layer youngster

could participate in. The only reason why Yang Chen was capable of participating was because he possessed the Geocentric Flame and his control over fire was absolutely outstanding, making him competent enough for the assignment of purifying the blue-green zoysia.

On top of that, Elder Wu hadn't overrated Yang Chen, which made these three people feel some dissatisfaction. At the same time, he hadn't degraded his value, merely declared the reasons why Yang Chen should be allowed to participate. These reasons could be considered to be acceptable to these three pill concocting experts. Although each of them was a fire attributed cultivator and possessed a flame, they didn't have the Geocentric Flame.

“Humph!”

He LianYun snorted but didn't say anything, but he didn't conceal that trace of loathing towards Yang Chen within his eyes. This kind of opportunity to become famous under the heavens by refining a Heaven Seizing Pill was given to a youngster, this was simply an inconvenience to them, He LianYun could not believe that Yang Chen was integral.

“Only do what you are supposed to do, by all means do not try to participate in anything else.”

With regards to words, Deng Yi was very cautious and warned many times:

“His mistake will be Elder Wu's problem, you should certainly



not blame us!”

Only her words were meant to be a reminder and didn't have a warning tone.

As for Zhu Peng, he didn't say anything, only coldly glanced at Yang Chen and then did not pay any more attention to him, sitting down to recuperate.

The attitudes of these three people were totally different, but Elder Wu didn't even show slightest change in expression. To refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, these three were the most important people he needed, so he could absolutely not develop any hostility with these people for a qi layer disciple like Yang Chen. When he had brought Yang Chen along, his only aim was to increase the chances of success at first, even if his view toward Yang Chen had changed later, he would not change his priority for Yang Chen.

Towards the contempt of those three pill concocting experts, Yang Chen acted as if nothing had happened, he sat down on the seat arranged for him by Elder Wu and began to examine the one person who was not a pill concocting master.

“Fan Shan, Beast Taming Sect!”

Seeing that Yang Chen was observing him, an unfriendly expression spread across the face of the remaining person, but he declared his identity regardless.

Yang Chen knew clearly that the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill required the spirit of a formidable demonic beast to act as the Pill Spirit. Fan Shan was precisely the expert who provided assistance in this area.

He nodded slightly towards Fan Shan and soon after that, Yang Chen stood up to show the proper etiquette of a youngster towards his seniors:

“This youngster is referred to as Pure Yang Palace’s Yang Chen.”

This ceremony eased up the complexion of a few people, but the rest didn’t say anything. Deng Yi opened her mouth again and just said “en” and nothing more. These four majestic YuanYing experts had surprisingly degenerated enough to concoct pills together with a qi layer youngster, if it were not for Elder Wu’s face, they would have already kicked him out of this villa.

“According to recipe, everything has been completely prepared, everyone take a look and tell me if you require anything more.”

Elder Wu asked everyone in the meeting, his complexion had turned solemn. This matter concerned his ascension, so he could not have even the slightest error happening.

“There’s nothing else required, but this Yang Chen, will he do? This is a major matter concerning the ascension of Elder Wu, if he makes even a small mistake, then even if he was killed a hundred times, he would still not be able to repay the debt!”

He LianYun once again opened his mouth, speaking out against Yang Chen.

“As far as I know, the Pure Yang Palace is not a sect famous for pill concoction, this qi layer disciple has merely acquired the Geocentric Flame by luck, instead of him I’d rather take one of my apprentices or a third grade pill concocting master at the peak of the JieDan stage, seizing his Geocentric Flame would be more convenient!”

# Chapter 73 - Gambling A Flame For A Flame

In addition to the three high level experts in this place, there was one person from the Beast Taming Sect, Elder Wu and Yang Chen, altogether six people. After He LianYun said those words regarding eliminating Yang Chen nobody said anything.

Though these people each treated Yang Chen differently, but all of them had one thing in common, that was that they had all shown contempt for him. The refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill, was that something even a trifling qi layer cultivator could participate in? Did he even deserve that chance?

To seize a flame from the body of someone was not impossible, naturally, the precondition was that the flame should be suitable with the person. It was not possible for dead people to possess a flame, so extracting it by force was also not possible, the only possibility was that the host would be willing to offer it. But among the people present, the lowest cultivation was the YuanYing initial stage, would a qi layer youngster even have the power to resist?

The three people did not conceal their desire to attack Yang Chen, greed filled everyone's eyes. Although they did not need the flame for themselves, who didn't have a few disciples in their sect? All of them wanted to obtain this flame for their younger generation. Most of all, this Geocentric Flame was the most suitable flame for pill concocting. It could only be encountered by luck and not by searching. If it were not that they already possessed even higher levelled flames, they would be ready to

directly obtain it from Yang Chen's body for themselves.

Elder Wu now regretted bringing Yang Chen here, what he thought was that Yang Chen would be able to refine and purify the blue-green zoysia to the best quality but he hadn't expected the compatibility problems with these people and he furthermore also hadn't expected that He LianYun would propose such a ruthless plan.

But Elder Wu was not willing offend these three pill concocting masters, they were the most top notch pill concocting masters in this mortal realm, he could not get the Heaven Seizing Pill refined for himself without the help of these three. But he was also extremely unwilling to sacrifice Yang Chen, after all he was the one who had brought him here, if he was killed by these people, then what about his face?

A difficult problem had presented itself to Elder Wu: on one side was the Heaven Seizing Pill, on the other side was Yang Chen. Although among these three people, only He LianYun had proposed this, the thoughts of everyone else were already stirred by He LianYun. If he did not appease these three properly, then there would not be a Heaven Seizing Pill, but if he sacrificed Yang Chen, what about his face? He did not know what to do next.

Elder Wu's hesitation, naturally everyone could see it with their eyes, Yang Chen was also no exception. Yang Chen was already very grateful when he saw Elder Wu hesitating, after all his words were still the words of a qi layer youngster, if a qi layer youngster and three pill concocting masters were hostile with each other, anyone who had a brain would not even raise an eyelid.

But Yang Chen was not someone who would resign himself to death silently, since He LianYun had malicious thoughts towards him, Yang Chen also would not mind destroying his face to open his eyes.

“You’re speaking as if you had already refined the Heaven Seizing Pill! Or are you saying that, as long as I hand over the Geocentric Flame, Senior He would have certainty in success? Senior is a guest personally invited by Elder Wu, but so am I. If right now a Da Cheng stage pill concocting expert appeared, would Senior He also hand over his flame?”

Once he opened his mouth, Yang Chen’s words made the group of people slightly surprised.

“Moreover, is this Elder Wu’s villa or Senior He’s villa?”

Yang Chen asked with a smile, while attentively watching He LianYun.

“Or do you mean that Senior He could substitute Elder Wu for making decisions and managing things here?”

By the time Yang Chen had finished, He LianYun’s complexion had already turned unsightly. It was not wrong that Elder Wu had invited him, but this villa was not his territory. He had directly tried to call shots in Elder Wu’s territory, and even wanted to punish a guest invited by Elder Wu. This was already far from the way a guest should act, instead it was like he had become the

master himself.

Elder Wu was also reminded by Yang Chen that this was his territory, the guests were invited by him, so who would dare to be rude in this way? They hadn't even refined the Heaven Seizing pill yet and but already began to raise internal strife here. The most important thing was that this way of handling the situation was not beneficial for Elder Wu's face. When he thought of this, Elder Wu's complexion sank.

When all was said and done, Yang Chen was a guest, personally invited by Elder Wu, similar to these three. Even though their cultivation was different, in here their status was the same. Since all of them were visitors, if the voice of a guest overwhelmed that of the host, it was a shameful guest.

Although Zhu Peng's and Deng Yi's thoughts were somewhat provoked by He LianYun's words, at this moment they didn't have the same contempt for Yang Chen as before. A qi layer youngster could speak with confidence in front of four YuanYing, and a DaCheng stage expert, this could only be called extremely daring. They could not help but see Yang Chen in a new light.

“You!”

He Lianyun was shocked in his heart, but after one ruthless glare towards Yang Chen, he immediately turned towards Elder Wu and hurriedly said:

“Elder Wu, this junior did not mean it like that!”

Pill concocting masters were generally considered superior to cultivators. There wasn't a person who would like to offend a pill concocting master with some potential, not to mention He LianYun whose name had already shook the whole world. But Yang Chen's words were also correct, the Heaven Seizing Pill hadn't yet been successfully refined and the success rate of the Heaven Seizing Pill was not very good. That was the only reason why these three pill concocting experts had gathered here to discuss things.

Historically, once the Heaven Seizing Pill was refined, it was a life changing, refining success for a pill concocting master. After refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, the pill concocting master would directly ascend, leaving behind only some incomplete records of the ingredients, thus the refining method still required everyone to gather and ponder over it.

If he really had certainty, then Elder Wu would have done anything that He Lianyun wanted, but the problem here was that, He LianYun did not dare to vouch for the success, therefore he did not have the confidence to be commanding in front of Elder Wu. Confronted with those words of Yang Chen, he had no other option than to give an explanation.

“Young friend Yang Chen is a guest, personally invited by this old man, before you say anything, think before you speak!”

Elder Wu was furious on the inside but he also knew that he could not offend He LianYun and these other pill concocting masters right now, so he could only say something like this.



He LianYun did not dare to say anything and only nodded, then he stood silently at his place. A trace of anger had already been incited in Elder Wu's heart due to Yang Chen's words, even if he was a high level pill concocting master, why would a Da Cheng stage expert, who was one step away from ascending, care about him? Later they would have plenty of chances to put Yang Chen in order, then why were they creating trouble for him at this critical moment?

Suddenly, Yang Chen said:

“However, Senior He's words still make sense.”

Which shocked He Lianyun. Hearing Yang Chen approve of his proposal, he could not help but wrinkle his brows, not knowing what Yang Chen wanted to do.

“Since Seniors do not feel assured about this Youngster, this Youngster offers to show a small trick for controlling fire to reassure everyone.”

Yang Chen kept on looking at those pill concocting master with a smile and continued:

“If Senior He is also able to accomplish this, then Myself will submit the Geocentric Flame, what do you say?”

The gazes of those people were fixed on Yang Chen's face, could it

be that this youngster was an idiot? He had humbled He LianYun just a moment ago and now he surprisingly said this kind of thing?

A scowl immediately appeared on He LianYun's face, a qi layer youngster who had obtained the Geocentric Flame by some luck, who did not know how high the sky and how deep the earth is, still wanted to challenge the power and prestige of a YuanYing expert? Did he really not know how to spell 'to die'? Furthermore, he thought the minor accomplishments which a qi layer youngster like him could achieve would be incapable to be surpassed by a YuanYing stage expert?

“Since you yourself are courting death, then I have to accept it! Elder Wu, you can see how arrogant this youngster is, so I request Elder Wu to be the judge!”

He Lianyun said with an ashen expression, but his vision was towards Elder Wu. Just a moment ago, Yang Chen had used Elder Wu to ruthlessly sweep all his face and had surprisingly provoked him. He was a YuanYing stage expert, not someone who would continue to lose face in front of qi layer youngster.

“Yang Chen, refining the Heaven Seizing Pill is important!”

Elder Wu could not help but wrinkle his brows, so he couldn't help but remind Yang Chen in an extremely serious tone:

“Youngster needs to stop before going too far.”

“Elder Wu, refining the Heaven Seizing Pill would require everyone’s sincere cooperation to work as one. The most important thing is that people should be used to the greatest extent, if these seniors did not know what this youngster was capable of, then they wouldn’t be able to assign tasks to this youngster any tasks which would make full use of me. So Myself just wants to let these Seniors know my abilities, that’s all.”

This kind of insistence could not be blocked by Elder Wu. Moreover, Yang Chen had even provided proper reasons for his actions, that made it all the more difficult to stop him. He had already made these three pill concocting experts unhappy when he had brought Yang Chen with him, but at this moment if he intervened again, then he would just be embarrassing those three.

‘You better do your best!’

Since the Heaven Seizing Pill was important, Elder Wu could only nod, but he still hadn’t understood why Yang Chen was doing this.

At this moment, Yang Chen laughed bitterly within his heart. Yang Chen had already heard about He LianYun’s nature and his skills in pill concocting in his previous life. Just a moment ago, he had completely offended him, so Yang Chen was convinced that after the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill was complete, regardless of whether it was a success or failure, he would surely be chased by He LianYun, so it was better for him to settle this dispute in Elder Wu’s presence and use his influence, otherwise, he would never be able to have a peaceful day in his life again. Offending a YuanYing stage pill concocting expert wasn’t much different from offending the Greatest Heaven Sect in his previous

life.

He LianYun evilly grinned while looking at Yang Chen. In his eyes, or rather in the eyes of everyone present, Yang Chen had already lost without any doubt. After losing the Geocentric Flame, Yang Chen wouldn't have any reasons to remain here, so even if he could not kill Yang Chen right then, he could look for Yang Chen in the future and create trouble for him then. But right now he had a chance to vent some of his resentment on him.

“Senior, if Myself loses then Myself will hand the Geocentric Flame to you.”

Yang Chen turned towards He LianYun's side and asked with a smile:

“I do not know what Senior proposes to stake if he loses? Senior you are a YuanYing stage expert, so in all likelihood you will not renege a debt to the younger generation?”

“I can lose? Don't you think too highly of yourself?”

He LianYun grew angrier in his heart, as a pill concocting master, he was an expert in controlling fire, how could his fire controlling skills possibly lose to a trifling qi layer youngster like Yang Chen? But in front of these YuanYing stage experts and Elder Wu, he could not say this directly, otherwise he would appear too narrow minded.

Although this was something which all them mutually agreed on, it could still not be spoken publicly. But what Yang Chen said was also reasonable, since both parties had agreed on the wager, then if only one party put forward their stakes, that would indeed be quite unjust.

“You desire something?”

He LianYun smiled despite his extreme fury, while everyone else was completely calm. As pill concocting masters, apart from controlling fire, they were also required to be calm more than anything. When they reached a crucial point after starting to concoct pills with their furnace, this was a very essential quality.

“Since Myself must put forward a flame, then Senior should also do the same, what do you say?”

Yang Chen declared his own request and fixed his gaze on He LianYun.

“You want to bet your Geocentric Flame against my Real Sun Fire?”

Hearing this request, He LianYun almost spat blood because of his anger. Although the Geocentric Flame was the most suitable flame for pill concocting in the mortal world, his Real Sun Fire was at least two grades higher than the Geocentric Flame; this stake was simply not fair.

“Myself is only at the qi layer while Senior is already at the YuanYing stage! Has Senior already admitted defeat within his heart?”

But Yang Chen did not cower in the slightest because of He LianYun’s anger. The difference in their cultivation was very high, while his gains on winning were next to nothing. These words were precisely to provoke He LianYun and make him fall into his trap.

In his previous life, the flame that he had collected was precisely this Real Sun Fire, merely at that time he had only narrowly escaped. Since he had already offended He LianYun, he might offend him all the way. In any case, after this matter was over, He LianYun would surely try to kill him, so Yang Chen naturally had to obtain as many benefits as he could, for later.

“Good! Good! Good!”

He LianYun was unable to suppress his anger after being provoked by Yang Chen. He even repeated the word ‘good’ three times. Gnashing his teeth he said:

“You really are a courageous youngster! A newborn calf is not afraid of a tiger. Regardless of your cultivation, this old man admires your guts!”

Everyone was astonished again after He LianYun finished speaking. His eyes were shone in a cold light, similar to a bloodthirsty animal.

“Since a youngster like you is so excited, how could this old man not also be excited? Good, we’ll bet our flames!”

After he finished speaking, he turned towards Elder Wu and while cupping his hands, said:

“Elder Wu, it’s not that this old man is taking the advantage of his seniority, but this junior is compelling me to do this, therefore I request Elder Wu to bear the witness!”

Not just Elder Wu, even Zhu Peng, Deng Yi and Fan Shan from the Beast Taming Sect, did not understand why on the earth Yang Chen had gone mad. But since this situation had already developed until here, they couldn’t find an exit out of this embarrassing situation for either party.

Just as Elder Wu was feeling embarrassed, Yang Chen turned towards him and similarly cupped his hands:

“Elder Wu, this Junior requests Senior to be the witness!”

Knowing that this matter had already reached the point of no return, Elder Wu could only nod, but he also added one remark:

“No matter what, the stakes of this gamble can only be taken after the refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, the refining must not be delayed any further!”

He asked everyone to come here in order to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, so he certainly did not want that one of two pill concocting masters lost his flame before the refining could even begin.

“As Elder Wu commands!”

Yang Chen and He LianYun both cupped their hands. Both of them clearly understood that Elder Wu had already yielded to the maximum limit, so they naturally did not have any objection.

“Youngster, I do not believe that you have spent enough time practicing the fire controlling skill!”

He LianYun looked at Yang Chen like looking at a dead man.

“I will wait for you to cup your hands and offer me the Geocentric Flame!”



# Chapter 74 - Is This Something A Human Can Do?

Yang Chen did not cower in the least and walked over to the open space. The other people sat down in their respective corners, waiting to see what kind of fire controlling method Yang Chen would use in the end.

As a matter of fact, Elder Wu was not only anxious in his heart, but much more suspicious. He had talked with Yang Chen all throughout the journey and he didn't think that Yang Chen was a person without a sense of propriety, but here he was being so abnormal, which really put him at a loss. He really did not understand it; Yang Chen was a qi layer youngster, even if he was very confident, how could he still dare to challenge a YuanYing expert?

Zhu Peng, Deng Yi and Fan Shan were similarly perplexed. Deng Yi and Zhu Peng were both pill concocting experts, both were fire attributed cultivators and both were YuanYing experts. Because of their experience, they were able to roughly estimate He LianYun's control over fire. They really didn't believe that Yang Chen had any way to achieve victory.

And even though Fan Shan was a person of the Beast Taming Sect, it was not like he was completely ignorant of the fire attribute. The qi layer against the YuanYing stage, this disparity between cultivation was an impassable mountain, even if Yang Chen used an exquisite fire controlling method, He LianYun could make up for anything merely by using his cultivation. It had to be

known that these two people hadn't agreed on restricting He LianYun's cultivation base.

This also displayed He LianYun's calm headedness, even if he was burning with fury in his heart, he was still cautious enough to leave behind a loophole for him to cheat. Zhu Peng knew about this point, so did Deng Yi and Fan Shan, but none of them reminded Yang Chen. Afterall, when all was said and done, Yang Chen was only a qi layer youngster, unworthy for them to become hostile with a fellow YuanYing stage pill concocting master.

Everyone was waiting to look at Yang Chen's performance and Yang Chen didn't let them wait for long. He walked to the middle of the open space and stopped, then, after concentrating his breath and calming down, he lifted his hands up. Soon afterwards, a trace of flame emerged between his hands.

The dark red colored flame made the eyes of everyone present turn sinister. Everyone could clearly make out with just a glance that the flame in Yang Chen's hand was the Geocentric Flame, without the slightest amount of corruption. Moreover, under the probing of everyone's Spiritual Awareness, they confirmed that Yang Chen was really at the qi layer and not some expert in disguise.

Currently Yang Chen's performance was equivalent to qi layer cultivation, not exceeding it even a little bit. But the more it was like this, the more it made everyone curious, their eyes were fixed on the scene, but this was still not sufficient, everyone's Spiritual Awareness was also firmly observing everything, afraid to miss even a little.

The dark red colored flame had successfully surrounded him like a ring. Soon after that, it drew the outline of a somewhat baffling image. This skill was not something that amazed everyone, instead it could even be called as just ordinary. A complacent smile covered He LianYun's face, apparently the Geocentric Flame had already fallen into his hands.

Yang Chen naturally hadn't finished; the flame in front of his body had turned into a paintbrush, accurately drawing the outline of a strange picture. For the time being it could be said that nobody could make out anything about the picture, but that one trace of flame was well proportioned from beginning to end. Furthermore, until now it was still a trace, without the slightest interruptions. Just this skill alone was worthy of everyone's applause.

For those YuanYing cultivators it was not difficult to accomplish such a thing, especially for the three pill concocting experts. But the person doing the performance, Yang Chen was a qi layer cultivator, so this was actually very precious and remarkable. Everyone was clear about what was going on, even if it was a JieDan stage expert, wanting to accomplish such a thing was not an easy matter.

Just seeing this, everyone clearly realized why had Elder Wu had brought Yang Chen together with him, just based on this control over fire and his Geocentric Flame, he is absolutely capable of increasing the grade of all ingredients for the Heaven Seizing Pill. if the grades of all ingredients were increased, then they were convinced that the rate of success for refining would greatly increase.

Elder Wu, who had originally brought Yang Chen here, had also made the decision after seeing this. Currently everyone clearly realized Elder Wu's intentions, but the previous contempt shown by everyone, together with He LianYun's ruthless proposal had forced Yang Chen into a corner, where he was forced to stand up for himself.

For the chances of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill to increase was something that everyone, whether it was Elder Wu or those other people, would be glad to see. If the Heaven Seizing Pill was refined successfully, not only would Elder Wu gain benefits, but these other people who were participating in the refining would also gain an eternal name, and in the future, when they would be ascending, they would have the means to increase their chances of success.

But at this moment, they did not know what was to be done about that matter caused by He LianYun. Even if they were able to provide an amicable conclusion to this, who could guarantee that Yang Chen would still make an all out effort to help them? Everyone had their usefulness, even a nobody had a nobody's usefulness. Although everyone's level was high, in the respect of extracting the material, they still required the Geocentric Flame, possessing Yang Chen's full strength.

But He LianYun did not think in this way, he had fixed his gaze on Yang Chen and from time to time coldly snorted, filled with contempt. If this was everything Yang Chen had to show, he could do all of this effortlessly, did he even have the ability to control fire? This kind of minor talent, how could he even dare to show his face in front of a YuanYing stage fire attributed cultivator?

Yang Chen kept his concentration single mindedly on the flame, as if he had not noticed the change in everyone's mood. The range of the flame was small, which had something to do with his cultivation. But the more smaller the range was, the more it tested his control over fire, everyone clearly understood this point.

The image began to become more and more complex, it was so densely packed that nobody was able to make out what kind of image it was. Everyone's eyes were only fixed on the piece of dark red flame. Only with the use of Spiritual Awareness did it become clear that Yang Chen had used thread-like flames to draw a clear pattern on a disk.

The image was very regular, it was very much like a spell diagram, but it still wasn't complete, so a nobody knew what it was. The more time was taken, the more their interest in the picture increased and the stronger their expectations were. If he was daring to fight with a YuanYing stage expert, then would a simple image be of any use?

Beads of sweat had already started appearing on Yang Chen's head, clearly this kind of control required all of his attention. Nothing could be done about this, as his cultivation was only at the qi layer and hadn't yet attained the level where he could connect the energy of heaven and earth. Using a lot of energy was a laborious task, this was a fact which no one could change. Even if Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness was formidable, this one fact still wouldn't change.

Finally, when Yang Chen's flame control reached its peak, the

entire red pattern was complete. Yang Chen took a long sigh of relief and revealed a smiling expression.

“Is it over? In front of me you still dare to...”

He LianYun had only just spoken, when suddenly, as if he had seen a demon, he became speechless, staring at the painting within Yang Chen’s hands.

Not only He LianYun, but even Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and Fan Shan’s expressions were like they had seen a demon and Elder Wu was even more stunned when looking between Yang Chen’s hands that even his mouth opened, but he still did not dare to believe his own eyes.

Not only did he not dare to believe his eyes but he also did not dare to believe his Spiritual Awareness. How was this possible? Was this even something a qi layer youngster was able to achieve? To use the word ‘exaggerated’ could not cover his astonishment, was it even possible for a human to produce this!?

The image of flame in Yang Chen’s hands had already turned light blue at this moment and a portion of Spirit Power had begun to rise from the surroundings. Everyone on the scene was an expert, with just a sweep of their Spiritual Awareness did they clearly realize, that this portion of Spirit Power was water attributed Spirit Power.

Within the villa of a Da Cheng stage expert like Elder Wu, Spirit Power of all five phases was plentiful, so it was not a strange

matter.

The image in Yang Chen's hands, everyone clearly realized what it was at this moment, it was a spirit gathering spell, a low level spell formation to gather water attributed Spirit Power. Nobody there was a water attributed cultivator or a spell formation expert, it was only natural that they did not recognize it the first time when they saw the incomplete spell formation.

The flame was the low levelled Geocentric Flame, the spell formation was the low levelled spirit gathering formation, the Spirit Power that gathered was also not very great, merely some water attributed Spirit Power within a very small area, at most the spell formation's result could cover the room they were in. But nobody dared to ridicule this spell formations formidable power and even less daring to ridicule Yang Chen's control over the flame.

Using the flame of the Geocentric Flame to forcibly draw a spirit gathering spell of the water attribute, while it was also in the air, without using any ingredients and just with the help of the flame in his hand. Was this still a pill concocting master?

The most frightening thing was that Yang Chen had surprisingly used a flame to draw a water attributed spell formation, those two elements among the five phases which were completely opposite of each other were surprisingly unified at this moment. This kind of skill, if one did not see it with one's own eyes, one wouldn't even listen to the description.

Not daring, not believing, unimaginable! At this moment, no

matter whether it was the YuanYing stage experts or the Da Cheng stage expert, no matter whether it was the pill concocting masters or the beast taming master, all of them had the same facial expressions. A flame could even be used in such a way, it could actually be used in conjunction with the realm of water?

Which known high level spells did not require high level ingredients, a high level spell diagram, and exceedingly powerful Spirit Power? Even if it was a low levelled spirit gathering spell, didn't that also require some water attributed ingredients? Using the flame without any foundation to draw an image and produce Spirit Power from it, this was already enough to shock people, but using the flame to draw a water attributed spirit gathering spell, this had completely toppled all of the knowledge they had regarding the five phases. This, was this still something that a human could achieve?

Everyone here was an expert, so they didn't need Yang Chen to remind them, naturally everyone had used their Spiritual Awareness to thoroughly examine everything from all around and inside out of this spell.

They didn't have any doubts, the spell diagram was completely arranged by the flame, it was very clear to everyone that apart from the flame, no other method was used. Although everyone could see all five phases of spirit power within Yang Chen's body, but among the people there, who didn't? Apart from those people who had full spirit roots of the five phases, all people under the heavens have every kind of the five phases present, only in some people one attribute had a majority, that's all. Yang Chen was no exception, with the fire attribute as the major.



But Yang Chen's flame was against reason, to build a complete water attributed spirit gathering formation, which in addition to that already began to condense water attributed Spirit Power from the surroundings... This point was examined very thoroughly and attentively by the Spiritual Awareness of everyone there. In front of these four YuanYing stage experts and the one Da Cheng stage expert, Yang Chen had not possibility of lying.

Water and fire are not compatible, this was an argument that had been passed on for countless generations which had right then been destroyed in front of everyone's eyes. Those people were completely shocked and looked at each other for a long time. Only then did they discover that the others had also lost their self control similar to themselves.

Apparently, all these years they had just been frogs at the bottom of a well, everyone clearly realized this point. Immediately afterwards the few pill concocting experts began to stand up excitedly. Fire could also be used this way, then wouldn't it provide them a direction for future research? Even though Fan Shan and Elder Wu were not fire attributed cultivators, their bodies also possessed spirit roots of the five phases. If fire could be used in this way, then so could the other elements, which made them also very excited.

The only person who was alarmed was He LianYun. When Yang Chen had used the flame to make that water attributed spirit gathering spell and it began to condense Spirit Power, he was so stunned and dumbstruck that he was not even able to say anything.

He LianYun's cultivation was very high and he also was a third grade pill concocting master already. Although his control over fire could not be said to be in the realm of perfection still it had reached great heights, otherwise it would not be possible for him to become a renowned pill concocting master. But this skill of Yang Chen, he did not even dare to think, let alone declare to go against it.

Even if he had the strength of the YuanYing stage and could make up for the deficiency in his control over fire by using the immense gap in their cultivation, he still did not dare to say that he was capable of merging fire and water. He clearly did not understand the crux of the matter, not to mention following Yang Chen's method again all the way through.

However, previously he had already gambled his flame for Yang Chen's flame, wouldn't this mean that the Real Sun Flame, which he had obtained after making countless efforts and using countless number of pills as exchange, which had also wasted a century of his life to refine, would go to Yang Chen, this qi layer youngster, in vain?

It was not an exaggeration to say that a high level flame was like life blood to fire attributed cultivators. This time, Yang Chen had surpassed him in every aspect.

Once he handed over the Real Sun Fire, He Lianyun could conclude that his Ying would immediately be scattered and his realm would fall back down to the JieDan or an even lower realm. He had only reached the YuanYing stage after refining the Real Sun Fire, if he handed it over, there would be no difference

between this and directly crippling his cultivation.

His words had not yet reached the ground and were only a ringing in the ears [\[1\]](#), but, together with Yang Chen, he had invited Elder Wu to be the witness, did He LianYun dare to go back on his debt in front of Elder Wu? Would he really have to hand over the Real Sun Fire? If he did not have the Real Sun Fire, could he continue to preserve his status as a YuanYing stage cultivator and a pill concocting master?

In his fear, He LianYun's eyes already turned to Zhu Peng and Deng Yi, as long as these two opened their mouths, Elder Wu would also not dare to risk offending the three high grade pill concocting masters at the same time to forcefully make him hand over the Real Sun Fire. Although the shame of eating his own words would forever stain his face, at least he would still be able to maintain his position.

What made He LianYun even more dismayed was the fact that, when he requested help from Zhu Peng and Deng Yi, as if both of them hadn't sensed his gaze, their eyes were completely fixed on Yang Chen. He LianYun's heart immediately fell to an all time low.

---

[\[1\]](#) Something that was said very recently.

# Chapter 75 - The Real Sun Fire Is Mine

Although using a flame to draw an image in the air without any support was not an extremely difficult task, the difficulty was in forming a spell diagram and furthermore have the spell diagram to show its effects and most of all using the flame to construct a water attributed spell diagram. Even the people there still hadn't realized how he had done that.

Yang Chen very clearly understood that nobody, including Elder Wu, would be able to understand that mystery. Naturally he would also not educate them; this was something they could only begin to ponder over after reaching the spiritual world.

The opponent was at the YuanYing stage, normal methods wouldn't have been able to suppress these people at the top, so naturally Yang Chen needed to use something unusual. Using a flame to produce a spell was not very complicated and Yang Chen was currently fully able to do that, therefore he had directly used this method.

Apparently the results were pretty good, at least when these five people looked at him now, it was as if they were looking at a monster, so Yang Chen's goal was already accomplished. He had gotten hold of the Real Sun Fire and moreover his words had gained value during the refining process of the Heaven Seizing Pill.

If everything had gone normally, even if these people had accepted Yang Chen, they still wouldn't have looked at him favourably, they would have allowed him to enter and considered

him as a dispensable servant for supporting them at most, to give face to Elder Wu. But after this performance, nobody would be able to give him any orders regarding controlling the fire.

Suddenly the blue colored spirit gathering spell between his hands dispersed and it turned into a trace of extremely thin flame again. One end was connected to Yang Chen's right hand, while the other was free in the air. The spirit gathering spell also lost its effectiveness and the spirit power it had gathered suddenly exploded on Yang Chen's side, emitting a blue light.

Yang Chen shook his right hand and the trace of the flame wound around it and shook with it, then it swiftly dispersed from a chaotic ball and turned into an absolutely nimble rope. Soon afterwards, Yang Chen's right hand faintly turned few times and the flame within his hands began to twist around Yang Chen's hands like a whip. Soon after that, Yang Chen slowly collected the lump of flame that had coiled around him back into his body and raised his head to look at everyone.

This kind of performance, treating fire like a real object, once again managed to get everyone's attention. But compared to the earlier stunning performance of producing a spell from the flame, this is was relatively easier by much. The pill concocting masters at the scene could barely accomplished it, relying on their strength of the YuanYing stage, but if their cultivation was made equal to Yang Chen, it would also extinguish their hopes of being able to do it.

“Senior He LianYun, I have already finished, I invite Senior to start!”

With a smile, Yang Chen did an inviting gesture towards He LianYun and afterward he stepped aside from the middle position and walked to Elder Wu's side. This He LianYun was quite narrow minded, because Yang Chen had no other way of stopping him, sitting next to Elder Wu was the most secure and safe way.

He LianYun's complexion had turned gloomy, at this moment, they were already unable to tell his mood. After stopping at the middle of the place, he sank into deep thought. The few people looking at him from the side, all had regret within their gaze. A YuanYing stage pill concocting expert was cornered by a qi layer youngster, they really didn't know what to say about this.

Along with Yang Chen's performance, his image within the eyes of these people had also changed greatly, at least within their subconscious mind, their address for him had already changed from 'qi layer youngster' to 'qi layer junior'.

Especially Deng Yi and Zhu Peng couldn't help but feel some sympathy for He LianYun at this moment. But apart from feeling sympathy, they also had some lingering fear, if at that time, they had also jumped out in support of He LianYun's proposal, then maybe Yang Chen would have also challenged them, then certainly at this moment they would also have to suffer from incessant embarrassment like He LianYun.

But nobody had said anything at that time, seizing Yang Chen's Geocentric Flame was He LianYun's own idea. At that time, his words certainly hadn't given the slightest amount of face to the host, Elder Wu, so naturally Elder Wu would also not come to save

him, particularly since Elder Wu was acting as the arbiter.

Everyone's gazes were fixed on He LianYun, but from the beginning he was only standing, as if rooted to his position, without making any movements or saying anything. It seemed as if he was deeply pondering about something. Nevertheless everyone knew what he was pondering about, actually, once Yang Chen's spell had worked, everyone had thought about, if they were in Yang Chen's place, could they also achieve this and if they could, how?

Surely He LianYun was also thinking about how to do it, so nobody disturbed him. But this process should not take too long, otherwise all of them may have to wait for tens or hundreds of years for He LianYun to find a way. Yang Chen would not allow him to do this. Elder Wu, who was acting as the arbiter would also not favour him. If he wanted to blame someone, then He LianYun could only blame himself.

Finally, after a long moment, He LianYun walked to the center, extended his hands like Yang Chen and a thread of flame appeared in his hands, beginning to form an image. But compared to Yang Chen, he actually seemed somewhat out of practice with this thread of flame, after all this was his first time. Before this he had never thought that flame could be controlled to do this.

Luckily he was at the YuanYing stage, so under the control of his formidable spirit power, he was barely able to accomplish this with the flame. The spell diagram was different from Yang Chen's, nevertheless it was also a low levelled water attributed spell formation that he knew. In any case, everyone here knew that he

tried to imitate Yang Chen. The only chance he had at victory was to activate this spell formation in any way he could.

Regardless of anything, he was a YuanYing stage expert and also a high level pill concocting master, so he just could not just admit defeat without trying, this was indeed He LianYun's style. He believed that, even if it happened by a fluke, as long as he was able to complete the spell diagram, he would also be able to easily activate, it like Yang Chen had done.

Unfortunately, things don't always turn out like expected. Without really knowing the properties of the five phases, without really understanding the spell formation and without practicing his control over fire to the peak, he basically could not accomplish Yang Chen's feat. No matter how good He LianYun's luck was, he would still not be able to produce a miracle.

Under numerous stares, He LianYun's spell diagram was formed many times, but regardless of how much he tried, from the beginning to the end, the spell formation never activated. Even after trying several times, when the spell formation still did not work, He LianYun's expression finally turned ashen.

Lost. A majestic YuanYing stage expert, a third grade pill concocting master, had unexpectedly lost to a junior at the qi layer, how could the proud and arrogant He LianYun bear this? He, who was standing at the top not so long ago, how could he be humiliated in such a way?

Although he was extremely furious, he did not dare to show even a trace of it. In front of Elder Wu he did not dare to raise the issue



of breaching the contract. He LianYun had began to repent. Why had he jumped out with that sort of attitude at that time? Now that it was too late, he would have to improvise.

Perhaps, refining the Heaven Seizing Pill with an all out effort was the best opportunity for him. As long as he was able to make Elder Wu happy, maybe he would be able to exchange the wager for some other things at that time. Only when one loses something, does one realizes its preciousness. As long as he was not stripped of his Real Sun Fire, He LianYun was willing to agree to any condition.

“I lose!”

In front of Elder Wu, He LianYun did not think about getting off lightly, he could only admit his defeat, dispiritedly hanging his head. This time, he had taken the initiative and admitted defeat. This was much better than being rudely judged by other people and at least he could get a favourable impression from Elder Wu.

Showing resistance? He had discarded this idea as soon as it had flashed within his mind. What a joke, with just a single hand, Elder Wu could exterminate a YuanYing stage expert like him several times over.

When all was said and done, He LianYun was still a person who valued his life and was afraid of dying. Even if Real Sun Fire was very precious and important within the cultivation world, when compared with his life, He LianYun would still be willing to part with it. As long as he could concoct pills, he would always be able to find an opportunity to exchange them for flames. As for Yang

Chen, after Elder Wu ascends, who would be able to protect him? Until this moment, he was thinking about how to handle Yang Chen, maybe he would still be able to snatch back the Real Sun Fire. But all of this was only possible if he remained alive.

“The Real Sun Fire is mine now!”

A smile appeared on Yang Chen’s face.

“For now, let it be a deposit inside of you!”

He LianYun’s admission of defeat also allowed Yang Chen to see He LianYun’s true nature. He was a coward who treated his life as extremely precious, from which Yang Chen could conclude that He LianYun would definitely not be willing to part with his life for the Real Sun Fire or do something which would end in perishing together with a qi layer cultivator. As long as He LianYun tried to do anything to him during the time of refining the Real Sun Fire, he would not be escape from Elder Wu’s hands. With this guarantee, Yang Chen could feel relieved and take part in the refining without any fear.

As for what happened afterwards, that was a matter for the future. He LianYun without the Real Sun Fire against Yang Chen who had absorbed the Real Sun Fire, even if there was a large gap between their realms, he was convinced that He LianYun would not dare to attack him within the territory of the Pure Yang Palace. In any case, after Yang Chen returned from the Immortal Falling Well, he would surely be able to pay his respects to his master in the Pure Yang Palace. At that time the Pure Yang Palace would certainly defend a talented pill concocting master like him to the

death.

After this minor incident, nobody dared to look at Yang Chen with contempt any longer. Currently everyone who had been gathered by Elder Wu had already arrived, following was the long and tedious process of preparation.

Elder Wu had already prepared all ingredients, now everything was ready and all they needed was an east wind [\[1\]](#). Unfortunately, the pill recipe which Elder Wu had, was passed down from a senior who had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, to the later generation and had moved from person to person before reaching him. This meant that the pill recipe was not complete, only the list of ingredients used and the earliest stages of the refining method were recorded, but no word about the final stage was mentioned. Everything would require all of them to discuss and test things out. The reason why he had gathered three pill concocting masters was precisely because of this.

The ingredients were plentiful, up to the point that it could shock ninety five percent of all cultivators in this world. It seemed that apart from Elder Wu, this Da Cheng stage expert, other people were simply not able to gather this many ingredients. Just the first stage of refining already required several years, even if it was divided among three pill concocting masters, it would still take three to four years.

The Heaven Seizing Pill was completely different from other ordinary pills. It seemed to Yang Chen that this Heaven Seizing Pill was basically a combination of ten top grade pills, moreover it still required a powerful demonic beast's spirit as the pill spirit, only

then could it be refined.

Just this requirement preceded over the other top grade pills, that was already sufficient to test these pill concocting masters, not to mention that the final stage was the fusion of the pill spirit with the elixirs produced during the process. For ordinary pill concocting masters, that simply was an unimaginable affair.

Several kinds of elixirs of all five attributes, rousing and restraining one another and wanting to fuse together. This was an extremely troublesome affair for these YuanYing stage pill concocting masters. This authority was the privilege for which Yang Chen had fought with He LianYun over.

The ingredients were sorted according to their properties, simply stockpiling them occupied an entire storeroom with the size of two wide halls, but this still didn't include the huge dead bodies of those demonic beasts. For just a first grade refining of these ingredients, it would require half a year's time.

Currently, the work of purifying the ingredients had entirely been handed over to Yang Chen. His Geocentric Flame was the most suitable flame for refining ingredients, and moreover Yang Chen's performance had made all of them acknowledge that his control over fire was splendid. If he was not most suited for purifying the ingredients, then who was?

As long as the most basic ingredients could be upgraded, it would greatly increase the chances of success in the final stage, nobody could deny this fact. So all of these people were very courteous to him.

Everyone was staying in Elder Wu's villa. When those pill concocting experts were discussing with Elder Wu about how to execute the last step, Yang Chen had begun the work of purifying the ingredients.

This time, Yang Chen wasn't empty handed like before, instead he was using the Profound Spirit Furnace. Once he took out the Profound Spirit Furnace, it immediately stunned all of them. Naturally, they were not astonished by the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace, but rather at the fact that the Profound Spirit Furnace was a magic treasure. Although the name of the Profound Spirit Furnace would someday shake the Heavenly Court, it was currently only a low levelled pill concocting furnace and was still far from the condition which could make YuanYing experts lust after it.

Yang Chen was only at the peak qi layer, yet he could use and refine a magic weapon and that also without any difficulty, that was the thing that really amazed these experts. But despite being amazed, they did not say anything. In this world cultivation geniuses were a dime a dozen, too many to count, so this was a common occurrence.

After purifying the medicines, he carefully placed them into the most suitable vessels for each of them and afterwards extremely carefully arranged them, one after another, within the plaza. From the beginning, Zhu Peng, Deng Yi and He LianYun would all frequently visit to check the progress of his refining. But every time they visited, all of them only nodded without speaking.

After Yang Chen purified the ingredients, all of the impurities were completely expelled and only the purest part of the ingredients remained. Even the three YuanYing experts couldn't help but admire him. Even if they were substituted to do the work, they could not guarantee that they would do it better than Yang Chen. It was even possible that they couldn't compare to Yang Chen.

When He LianYun looked at Yang Chen, he had no peculiarity in his gaze, even in discussions he was making an all out effort, so that nobody could see any dissatisfaction from him. But every time he looked at these purified ingredients, a trace of viciousness would flash through his expression, but nobody noticed it.

Within half a year's time, Yang Chen had refined all of the ingredients that needed refining, as for the rest of the materials they had to be refined on the spot for use, like the high grade blue-green zoysia. All of those were left, waiting to be purified at the final stage. The three YuanYing stage pill concocting masters had finally come up with ten methods after a discussion over thousands of types of proposals, and if needed, they could also be changed according to the situation.

Now that everything was in place and ready, they could only wait for the refining to begin.

---

[1] Idiom, meaning that something crucial is still lacking.

# Chapter 76 - While Others Refine, I Practice

23 May 2016

After the refining had begun, there was no work left for Yang Chen. His strength was indeed very low, so he wasn't even able to refine the random elixirs required for the Heaven Seizing Pill and could only stare blankly at those other people doing their job.

Zhu Peng, Deng Yi and He LianYun did indeed deserve their reputation, apart from the minor gamble earlier where He LianYun had behaved rudely with Yang Chen, everyone of them had their own merits.

Although Yang Chen could be said to have achieved great heights in his control over fire, in his previous life he hadn't painstakingly studied pill concocting and could thus only be counted as the most ordinary pill concocting master within the Heavenly Court. On one hand he didn't have a magic tool grade pill furnace and on the other hand he was always hiding, so he never got the chance to practice. The little knowledge that he did have was due to coming in contact with many great pill concocting masters and interacting with them, but he never had the opportunity to actually practice. But currently he had the opportunity to observe these high grade pill concocting masters doing the refining at a close range.

Based on his previous life's experience and the knowledge from the pill scriptures provided to him by the Greatest Supreme Elder, Yang Chen could determine the essence of these skills in a single

glance. These pill concocting masters were really worthy to be called the mortal world's highest grade pill concoctors. Every one of them had their own unique concepts and the skills which they were using had nothing in common, which broadened Yang Chen's horizons.

Although their techniques varied greatly, they all had the same goal. Now Yang Chen had finally discovered which of the approaches mentioned within Greatest Supreme Elder's pill scriptures these three pill concocting masters used for heat control and processing the ingredients. Furthermore, the techniques mentioned within the Greatest Supreme Elder's pill scriptures had an even more outstanding efficacy when compared to those used by these three.

Although it was like this, it was not even a bit out of Yang Chen's expectations. If the Greatest Supreme Elder's pill scriptures were not sufficient, then which pill concocting master's techniques would be more sufficient? He could almost be considered as the greatest pill concocting master within the heaven and earth, but unfortunately, even though the pill scriptures contained all kind of methods to process ingredients, but for the techniques to concoct pills as well as the methods to collect and condense the pills there wasn't even a single recipe. Otherwise, if there was a recipe of even a single ninth grade JieDan pill and the proper ingredients, a single pill was capable of increasing his cultivation so that he would immediately be able to ascend.

Refining a pill was not a short time affair, Yang Chen didn't mind chatting with Fan Shan for all this time. The main purpose of Fan Shan was to refine the primary spirit of that demonic beast. Frankly speaking, the primary spirit of the demonic beast was



already equivalent to a primordial spirit of demonic beasts with a cultivation at the YuanYing stage or higher. The more powerful the demonic beast used, the higher the chances of the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill being successful.

The demonic beast was acquired by Elder Wu himself, the demonic beast at YuanYing stage was almost one step away from being able to ascend and enter the spiritual world. Only a Da Cheng stage expert who was going to ascend, like Elder Wu was capable of capturing it without injuring it, other people would not be of any help in that regard. But after capturing it Fan Shan had to do the next step, that was to forcefully separate the demonic beasts primary spirit. This was something only the people of the Beast Taming Sect were specialized in.

Naturally Fan Shan would not talk about anything related to controlling beasts with Yang Chen, as Yang Chen was only a trifling qi layer disciple and did not have the qualifications to discuss with him in this respect. What Fan Shan was interested in was Yang Chen's skill in controlling fire, everyone had all five attributes, but surprisingly Yang Chen had achieved such a level at qi layer. Anyone who saw this could easily determine that Yang Chen surely had a unique cultivation secret.

Unfortunately, regardless of any kind of insinuations made by Fan Shan or any kind of promises made by him, Yang Chen didn't reveal anything regarding his cultivation method. This was not much of a surprise for Fan Shang, if other people asked him regarding his beast taming skills, he would also not calmly tell them. Since Elder Wu was here, nobody could attack Yang Chen and could only maintain a friendly relationship.

After Fan Shan was certain that he would be unable to obtain the cultivation secret from Yang Chen, he decided to make good friends with him. Fan Shan was able to reach the YuanYing stage so naturally he was no fool, a qi layer cultivator with such accomplishments, in ten or a hundred or a thousand years, Yang Chen would take the throne among pill concocting masters, if he was not able to build a good relationship with such a pill concocting master with boundless prospects, then he would indeed be an idiot.

Fan Shan was meticulously trying to build a relationship with Yang Chen, while Yang Chen was also interested in getting a powerful helper within the cultivation world, both of them clicked together and were very happily chatting with each other. Apart from matters regarding cultivation or other such matters, Fan Shan was telling Yang Chen everything he knew, from things of pleasure to material for magic weapons. Fan Shan was talking with Yang Chen about everything.

Elder Wu was paying close attention to the refining. The first stage was not very difficult, as everyone was at the level of a third grade pill concocting master. Adding to that the records of the early stages, the separate elixirs were all completely refined within a period of one year. Only a few comparatively high grade elixirs could not be refined the first time, all others were refined the first time itself.

Even these few troublesome, but comparatively high grade elixirs, after passing through refining several times, were also all completely refined. Of course, more than one batch of materials was prepared, every kind of material had reserves which could be used several times to be used as contingency.

While refining, everyone sensed that the ingredients refined by Yang Chen were exceptionally comfortable to use, the medicinal quality was just perfect, and was also at the extreme limit which they could handle. While refining, they also did not need to worry about whether the medicinal efficacy would reach the minimum qualifications. As long as they single mindedly devoted themselves to refining, they would have the most comfortable months of their pill refining careers.

The most comfortable thing for them was that every time they wanted to retrieve ingredients, they would find the ingredient in a region which they could reach very easily. Yang Chen had already placed all of the ingredients in accordance with the requirements. According to pill recipe on the record, all of the preparations were completely done. Even if he was just a servant to support them, he was also the servant which caused them the least amount of worries.

They never had to face failure because of Yang Chen having trouble with the ingredients or because Yang Chen's preparations were unsuitable. The few times they failed was not because of heat control, but because they had made an error in their skills, or perhaps because the elixir itself was very difficult to make and had a low success rate, which had no relation with Yang Chen.

When assisting these people by preparing their ingredients, Yang Chen also observed their refining skills at a very close distance. Perhaps the other three pill concocting masters believed that if they themselves did not explain, other people watching their refining process would not be able to learn anything, so they were fearless and had never before guarded against it, but it was

nevertheless a huge convenience for Yang Chen. Everyone's unique skills and refining methods were thoroughly researched by Yang Chen.

Yang Chen had never been this brazen before, before the eyes of these three pill concocting masters he was secretly learning their pill concocting skills thoroughly and even improving on them. Unfortunately, nobody would know about this. From purifying to refining the ingredients, by now the refining of the elixirs was complete, within just a bit more than a year's time. Within this time, apart from corroborating the skills of those high grade pill concocting masters with the pill scriptures of the Greatest Supreme Elder and discussing with Fan Shan, the rest of the time he was cultivating.

After absorbing the spirit power, Yang Chen's cultivation had increased from the eighth qi layer to the peak of the qi stage at the tenth qi layer. In general, people believed that the quicker their cultivation increased the better, but even though he had broken through two layers, for Yang Chen, although his cultivation had increased, it was not the sort of increase which he desired.

In his view the most ideal way of increasing one's cultivation was still to follow the prescribed order and break through one layer by one layer and accumulate the breakthroughs of small layers until one's realm increased. From the cultivation experience of his previous life, Yang Chen had known that this was the most stable method for increasing his cultivation, which would cause him least amount of trouble later. Although very quickly increasing the layers could allow him to raise his realms faster, but the foundation would not be stable enough and in the future, because of not stabilizing the foundation properly, his strength would not

be enough to break through many times at some crucial point. This was simply incomparable to spending some more years at the lower realm to build a proper foundation with which future breakthroughs would be very quick.

But the actual circumstances currently did not allow him to achieve this. Yang Chen was completely aware that after absorbing the flame, the increase in his fire attribute cultivation would not be something he could control, therefore, he had to think of every possible method to remedy this.

After increasing his cultivation quickly, he had to immediately stabilize his current realm and afterwards consolidate his current layer sufficiently. This was the best method for decreasing the inconsistency in his future cultivation, even if it would take him some time. This time, all that Yang Chen had to do was to consolidate his realm.

The refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill was chance which was hard to come by for Yang Chen. While making the pill for a Da Cheng stage expert who was going to ascend, even the high grade pill concocting masters like Zhu Peng, Deng Yi and He LianYun would not be able to guess the amount of spirit power accumulated within and Yang Chen could absorb some of it as a side effect during the process of refining.

The refining and purification by Yang Chen was not a process with improvisation in whatever way he wanted, instead they were in accordance with a certain order, beginning with the fire attribute, it was based on the five attributes rousing each other, one by one, during the refining. The ingredients consisted of

things of all five phases and their yin and yang, moreover they were not some ordinary ingredients, instead they were the best ones, which allowed Yang Chen to borrow their medicinal qi and use it to rinse his meridians entirely, once.

Even if the medicinal qi was barely sufficient to refine the Spirit Power overflowing from the process, but it was enough for a qi layer cultivator like Yang Chen to completely remove his hidden damages, formed from the continuous increase in his strength, so it would allow to his current realm to stabilize properly and the Spirit Power becoming even purer.

The large amount of medicinal qi was nourishing not only Yang Chen's realm, but also the Profound Spirit Furnace. The higher the grade of the ingredient was, the better it was in nourishing the pill concocting furnace. Yang Chen's mind was almost linked with the Profound Spirit Furnace, he could even sense the plentiful Spirit Power congesting at every corner of the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Under the influence of these high grade ingredients, the Profound Spirit Furnace slowly began to mature and the body of the furnace began to show some slight variations. Although it still hadn't reached the condition where it could increase by one whole grade, the pills refined by the current Profound Spirit Furnace would at least have twenty percent more medicinal strength than before.

All of the basic pills were already completed, now what remained was using every kind of method to fuse these pills and Yang Chen's work to purify the high grade blue-green zoysia. Within this time, Yang Chen's fire attributed peak qi layer cultivation had already

consolidated completely, not only that, his other attributes at the eighth qi layer, had also been extremely stabilized and had reached the required condition to be raised.

The refining and purifying of the top grade blue-green zoysia was Yang Chen's opportunity. The main ingredient of the Heaven Seizing Pill was the blue-green zoysia, the immense amount of Spirit Power accumulated within it could be described as an ocean of Spirit Power, which could allow the Da Cheng stage expert to ascend. So even a little bit of medicinal qi absorbed at the time of refining and purifying was sufficient for Yang Chen to break through the peak qi layer and enter into the foundation stage.

All of the three pill concocting masters were racking their brains to think of the method for fusing all of the ingredients in the final stage, so who would pay attention to Yang Chen? Although He LianYun bore grudges towards him, in front of Elder Wu he didn't dare to reveal even an inkling of it. Yang Chen would also be able to execute his plan with ease without any interference under the protection of the four YuanYing and one Da Cheng stage expert.

The top grade blue-green zoysia, although it could only be found in the depths of jade ore, it could be classified as a heavenly ingredient among all of the ingredients of all the five phases. It was also the key for the fusion of these other foundation pills. All steps in refining and purifying the blue-green zoysia followed a loop, if it weren't for Yang Chen showing his almost perfect control over fire previously, this task would definitely not be given to him.

At that time, when Elder Wu had come looking for Yang Chen, although it looked like he was effortlessly carrying the blue-green

zoysia within his hand, in truth he had to use thirty percent of his strength to endure the blue-green zoysia. This kind of heavenly material possessed intelligence, this meant that if someone was not careful, it would directly escape and run away out of someone's hand. Even now Elder Wu rather carried the blue-green zoysia on his body, than keeping it near the other ingredients.

The box containing it was opened, little by little revealing the blue-green colored zoysia. It seemed like it had sensed its destiny, initially the zoysia was like a dead object, but then it started to get restless like a startled animal, but under the control Elder Wu's formidable power, it could only squirm within a small area and change shapes, unable to run in the slightest.

At Yang Chen's side, Elder Wu had arranged three layers of restrictions, this kind of arrangement was done so that, even if Yang Chen was unable to control the zoysia for some amount of time, the zoysia would still not be able to escape. It had to be known that, as long as the zoysia could touch the ground, it could immediately use earth evasion like an expert and escape.

“Are you absolutely certain?”

Elder Wu asked Yang Chen in a concerned tone before he started.

Everyone had very serious expressions, naturally Yang Chen didn't say much, he only nodded his head slightly but the flame had already began to untangle within the furnace, it quickly formed an extremely complicated spell diagram. At the center of the spell diagram, pea sized flames were emitting specks of dark red light.



Looking at this spell diagram, Elder Wu showed a praising look. This was basically the restrictive spell formation which he had used to restrict the blue-green zoysia within the bottle. Laying this kind of proper foundation, the rate of success would definitely not be low.

When the high grade pill concocting experts saw that Yang Chen was capable of such manipulation within the pill concocting furnace, their faces turned serious. They fixed their gazes on the Profound Spirit Furnace within Yang Chen's hands, afraid to miss anything.

# Chapter 77 - There Are Still Benefits Like This?

Engraving a spell formation within pill furnaces was not a strange thing, even Yang Chen could initiate the earth fiend spell within the Profound Spirit Furnace to increase its strength at the time of executing the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets. But this was still the first time of using a flame to form the spell formation within the furnace. Regardless of whether it was those three pill concocting masters or Elder Wu, it was the first time for all of them to see such a method.

If this kind of method was used by a Da Cheng stage pill concocting master these people would not find it strange and would admire the pill concocting master as if he was an untouchable mountain, but right now it was being used by a qi layer disciple, specifically one who was not someone from a great sect specialized in pill concocting, but rather a disciple of Pure Yang Palace.

All of those pill concocting masters felt like a disgrace when looking at Yang Chen carrying out the process, they wanted to know even more, but they were not able to shed the arrogance of YuanYing stage experts and were ashamed to ask him about this, so they could only open their eyes widely and watch everything attentively, intending to make out even an inkling of what he was doing. But regardless of how much they observed with their eyes and how much they examined with their Spiritual Awareness, they were still unable to comprehend the crucial point of the process and were as confused as before.

Once the top grade zoysia entered the Profound Spirit Furnace it immediately began to shudder, but being controlled by Yang Chen using fire, it was unable to escape for some time. Within this time, those pea sized flames wrapped around the blue-green zoysia and the originally bluish-green zoysia was successfully turned into a dark red color.

This one ingredient was very important and even with Yang Chen's skill it could only be stopped for a few breaths. But these few breaths were enough for the lid of the Profound Spirit Furnace to be covered properly.

When the flame restrictions of Yang Chen collided with the blue-green zoysia and the sixth earth fiend spell formation of the sixth layer of the refining of the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets within the Profound Spirit Furnace began to display its effects at the same time, it firmly locked the blue-green zoysia within the spell formation and did not allow it another chance for escape.

Yang Chen only had to exercise control over the Profound Spirit Furnace to be able to provide the necessary Spirit Power for the spell formation and to accelerate the refining and not have to worry about blue-green zoysia escaping. The red flame engulfed the whole zoysia and began to burn it slowly.

A trace of the zoysia's medicinal qi slowly appeared under the effect of the Geocentric Flame. This one trace was enough for Yang Chen to make up for the expenditure for using the spell formation in the pill furnace and it was also enough to fulfill the

requirements for controlling the flame. He didn't even need to use yang qi pills to recover his spirit power.

Refining this zoysia was not as easy as refining the zoysia which Elder Wu had used for testing, or all of this could be accomplished within a moment. The Geocentric Flame was burning brightly, but it was as if the zoysia possessed its own spiritual influence and was using it to protect its body. Yang Chen could not even refine a single trace of it for a short time, no matter what method he used.

But since the zoysia had already entered the Profound Spirit Furnace, it had no opportunity to come out. Although other people did not know what was happening inside, Yang Chen understood it very clearly. Everyone knew that this was not something which would take a small amount of time and everyone had enough patience so they were all slowly waiting for Yang Chen.

What Yang Chen had to do currently, was to absorb the Spirit Power of the zoysia's constituent spirit calmly after almost exhausting it slowly, after that, refining became the main part again. This was work which tested his patience and control ability vigorously. If one's patience was not enough and had to leave it halfway or in case there was some problem with controlling the Geocentric Flame, if one was not careful, then it would immediately waste the heavenly material grade zoysia.

Luckily Yang Chen did not have to worry about the blue-green zoysia escaping, this decreased worry was something which allowed him to concentrate all of his mind on controlling the flame to go through with the refining. As for patience, Yang Chen had never lacked in patience before, even in his previous life, he had

experienced patiently enduring thousands and ten thousands of years.

It took him ten days, then Yang Chen sensed the spirit of the blue-green zoysia resisting and struggling, but unfortunately for it, after entering the Profound Spirit Furnace, it did not receive any nourishment to recover and the more the Spirit Power it used up, the smaller its strength to resist became. According to Yang Chen's calculations, he should be able to refine the blue-green zoysia completely within two months time.

During the refining process, Yang Chen could maintain his Spirit Power to be abundant at all times by absorbing the small amount of medicinal qi which leaked to the edge. This was not something out of everyone's expectation, everyone was aware of how precious the blue-green zoysia is, everyone was looking at him with an envious gaze, because he was able to be nourished by the zoysia at qi layer, as all of them knew that the earlier a person could be influenced by a treasured object like this, the more advantageous it would be for him at the later stages.

Two more months passed within a flash and under the continuous and unending torment of the Geocentric Flame, the top grade blue-green zoysia finally stopped struggling and didn't even tremble in the slightest, calmly lying down within the Profound Spirit Furnace, motionlessly.

An immense amount of Spirit Power directly rushed out of the furnace and entered Yang Chen's body. The fleshly body which had been nourished by the blood of countless immortals once again began to show some slight changes.

His blood started surging as if he had gained some kind of mysterious ability and he had a feeling as if he was full of life force. It felt as if, as long as an attack did not kill him immediately, his body would have the ability to recover to the peak. Although this was entirely based on his instincts and was never put to the test, Yang Chen was sure he had this kind of vitality. It seemed as if he had also absorbed the resistance ability of the zoysia while refining.

No wonder that He LianYun did not want to allow Yang Chen to refine and purify the herb, he was probably aware that the refining of these herbs could allow him to gain such great benefits. Yang Chen did not have a lot of experience in pill concocting in his previous life, so he was not very familiar with top grade herbs like the zoysia and believed that they were only capable of providing some Spirit Power to break through, only now did he realize that they also had such huge benefits.

The Spirit Power entering his body began to improve Yang Chen's Spirit Power frantically. After being refined by the Profound Spirit Furnace for these few months, there seemed to be hardly any impurity within the Spiritual Influence and the Spirit Power of yin and yang of all five phases were spurred to start circulating frantically.

Even though Yang Chen had used the reverse yin and yang five phases secrets to refine this Spirit Power, it was still an unending stream of Spirit Power and would burst into his body as before. The Spirit Power accumulated within the zoysia was being released little by little and just the first part of refining the constituent spirit was already sufficient to allow Yang Chen to get lifelong

benefits.

Yang Chen had nursed his body for a long time while sitting down in meditation in order to rush towards the foundation stage, and now the time for the sprint had come. Using this immense Spirit Power, Yang Chen's own Spirit Power began to increase frantically and at the same time it also began to slowly flow outside and vaguely communicate with the Spirit Power in the outside world.

The dense Spiritual Influence within the villa began to merge with the Spirit Power in Yang Chen's body and gradually began to form into one. In front of the four YuanYing experts and the one Da Cheng expert, light began to emerge from Yang Chen's body and the Spiritual Influence within the villa began to converge there.

“Connecting the energies of Heaven and Earth?”

Elder Wu was startled and immediately wrinkled his brows.

“Building a foundation at this time?”

Yang Chen reaching foundation was a good deed which Elder Wu would be glad to see it happening, but Elder Wu was afraid that, because he was suddenly connecting the energies of Heaven and Earth, he would be distracted. Even a little bit of carelessness at the time of refining the blue-green zoysia could lead to failure. Other ingredients had many batches in reserve, but there was only one blue-green zoysia.

This time Elder Wu began to regret that Yang Chen was going to reach the foundation stage. He hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would make a breakthrough at such a time. Unfortunately, he did not know, but those pill concocting experts should have realized it clearly, why didn't they warn him? Thinking this, Elder Wu looked resentfully at those three, as if the failure in refining this time would be the responsibility of those three.

In reality, even Zhu Peng, He LianYun and Deng Yi were astonished. Although they clearly knew that refining the zoysia had immense benefits, they also hadn't expected that Yang Chen would be able to make a breakthrough during the process of refining. By the time they became aware of this, everything was already too late, during this time, they also didn't know what to do and could only closely observe Yang Chen using their Spiritual Awareness, fearing that he would cause an accident over there.

The Spiritual Influence of Heaven and Earth began to frantically rush towards Yang Chen, he had already anticipated this long ago, he relaxed his control and allowed the Spirit Power of Heaven and Earth to enter within his body, but his hands hadn't relaxed in the slightest, his control over that thread of flame hadn't loosened and the stably burning zoysia didn't fluctuate in the slightest.

This kind of performance slightly lessened the worries of the people in the surroundings, although their Spiritual Awareness could not examine what kind of change was occurring within the Profound Spirit Furnace, but the hands controlling the Spirit Power hadn't changed in the slightest bit, this clearly alleviated many of their worries.



Elder Wu was especially glad, even at this time Yang Chen was still making an all out effort to continue the refining process of the blue-green zoysia, in spite of being surprised by the breakthrough. He was indeed both scared and happy. Ordinary cultivators would certainly cause fluctuations in those threads of flame if there was such a sudden change in their body, but there was not even the slightest change in Yang Chen's control over the Profound Spirit Furnace. Even Elder Wu reached the conclusion that he himself would not be able to show such tenaciousness under such circumstances.

The top grade blue-green zoysia, together with the thick Spiritual Influence within the villa made sure that Yang Chen didn't have the slightest amount of obstructions in reaching the foundation stage. His Spiritual Awareness and Spirit Power were both frantically increasing during this process, the small changes that had accumulated for a long time had finally given rise to completely fundamental changes, an enormous amount of Spirit Power began to overflow from his meridians and entered his body, beginning to nourish all of his internal organs.

The medicinal power and Spirit Power thoroughly cleansed Yang Chen's body and bit by bit, the body which was originally nourished by the blood essence of tens of thousands of immortals began to slowly release some black colored impurities. Soon a stinking smell appeared in the whole area.

This was a fundamental change which everyone had to go through at the time of reaching the foundation stage, all of the impurities within the body were discharged to make it more tranquil. But at this moment, nobody had any means to wash the

impurities of Yang Chen's body for the fear of disturbing him and ruining the entire process of refining and purifying, so they had to continue to bear this horrible smell for a good moment. They did not dare to relax their attentive watch, fearing that Yang Chen would be disturbed by this and lose control.

At the time when everyone was tensed, Yang Chen did something which made the souls of everyone there leave their bodies. He surprisingly took away one hand from the Profound Spirit Furnace and transformed his water attributed Spirit Power to a clear thread, moving over his body like a serpent. Within a short moment it washed away all of the impurities discharged by his body and soon afterwards he fished out a jade bottle and collected all of the impurities in it, which confused the surrounding people even more.

Nevertheless, the most astonishing thing was that, even though Yang Chen had performed so many tasks with one hand, his other hand was steady and unswerving from the beginning to the end and hadn't swayed in the least. The output Spirit Power was also absolutely stable. At this moment it seemed as if Yang Chen had suddenly turned into two people.

Other people may not know, but Yang Chen was very clear about his body. After reaching the foundation stage, his Spiritual Awareness had a huge increase, directly rushing to the peak of the JieDan stage. The benefits of cultivating the Three Purities Secrets could be seen very clearly at this moment. Although Yang Chen still hadn't reached the level where he could form another primordial spirit, dividing his mind to do two different tasks was not an issue for him. One side was controlling the refining of the blue-green zoysia within the Profound Spirit Furnace, while the

other was controlling the Spirit Power which was washing his body, as if it was very normal.

All of these people were so scared that cold beads of sweats threatened to drop from their faces. They all had a whole new level of respect for Yang Chen, but everyone was confused about Yang Chen collecting all of the impurities and storing them in a jade bottle. But this was clearly not the time to ask questions and they could only watch Yang Chen accomplish everything, while enjoying the spirit power cleaning his body with one hand, and controlling the Profound Spirit Furnace to continue refining on with the other.

Even if the constituent spirit of the blue-green zoysia had disappeared, the refining still required grinding labour. Fortunately, Yang Chen had already entered the foundation stage, so his Spirit Power and Spiritual Awareness had risen tremendously. In addition to that, the medicinal power dispelled from the zoysia would ensure that there would be sufficient amounts of Spirit Power, so there was no reason to be worried about the refining.

The fire attributed Spirit Power had finally broken through the qi layer bottleneck and had entered the foundation stage. The Spirit Power of the other attributes had also risen by one layer under the nourishment of the blue-green zoysia, rising from the eighth qi layer to the ninth qi layer. Because of reaching the foundation stage, the Spirit Power from outside also began to enter his body and provided Yang Chen with the opportunity to consolidate his current realm.

This process of refining on one side and going through great changes on the other, continued for ten days, during this time, the blue-green zoysia was slowly refined. First, the whole zoysia had turned dark red and began to soften and then it gradually changed into a liquid. The impurities within the medicinal liquid were released at the edge of the pill concocting furnace under his precise control of the flame, leaving behind only the most purified medicinal liquid.

After this medicinal liquid was completely spread out, Yang Chen scorched the whole medicinal liquid with his controlled flame and cleared up all of the impurities within it completely. Only after waiting until the medicinal efficacy reached the extreme limit which Yang Chen could reach, did he yawn.

“The blue-green zoysia has been refined, immediately prepare the pill furnace!”

The zoysia had to be used immediately after refining, so everyone had already made their preparations, hearing Yang Chen’s words, Deng Yi immediately placed her pill concocting furnace in front of Yang Chen. This pill concocting furnace was many grades higher than Yang Chen’s Profound Spirit Furnace. This magic tool grade pill furnace released a wave of purple colored radiance, as if it was a great emperor standing in front of a commoner.

Yang Chen controlled the medicinal liquid of the blue-green zoysia with all of his strength and in an instant he opened the furnace and shifted it to Deng Yi’s furnace. Deng Yi was prepared a long time ago and once the medicinal liquid entered the pill concocting furnace, she immediately took control and transferred

the liquid to the bottom of the pill concocting furnace.

Only after seeing that everything was complete, did Yang Chen open his mouth and say to Elder Wu:

“Elder Wu, fortunately I did not fail!”

# Chapter 78 - First Get Attached Before Falling Out

Yang Chen relaxed and took a breath, and at the same time, Elder Wu did the same. Now that the top grade zoysia had been refined, the success rate of refining in the later stages would once again be somewhat increased.

When Yang Chen was refining the blue-green zoysia, the others were also not sitting by idly and were discussing about the originally proposed plan for fusing all of the ingredients and had finally settled all of the issues. They had also referred to Yang Chen's technique of merging fire and water, and although they were not able to find out the core of the technique, it had offered them a thought to resolve the problem.

Deng Yi had was the highest grade pill concocting master among the three, so she automatically became the leader and began to implement the plan.

The following refining continued for at least one year. Just fusing a few high grade elixirs had taken them such a long time, but actually completing it within one year was already an extraordinary arrangement.

Zhu Peng and He LianYun were also not lazing around, apart from providing all kinds of assistance to Deng Yi, they were also taking care of the constituent spirit of the demonic beast.

The demonic beast had the shape of a Flood Dragon, its torso was similar to a huge poisonous python and it had already cultivated for a thousand years, its figure was exceptionally close to a Flood Dragon and even had two horns sticking out of its head, it needed only one more step to ascend. Even if Elder Wu was able to capture a YuanYing demonic beast, it had to be one that was compatible with Fan Shan. This demonic beast was only captured after strenuous efforts. Elder Wu was still recuperating from an injury he received during this capture.

Apart from the blue-green zoysia, the most important ingredient of the Heaven Seizing Pill was the constituent spirit of this demonic beast, it would act as the Heaven Seizing Pill's spirit, which even the constituent spirit of the zoysia could not compete with.

To deal with this poisonous Flood Dragon it required Elder Wu to be compatible with Zhu Peng and He LianYun. Naturally, Fan Shan was also an absolutely indispensable person, as he needed to control this poisonous Flood Dragon at the crucial point.

“Will you first force the Flood Dragon to consume all of the Spirit Power and afterwards extract the constituent spirit?”

This time Yang Chen could only be classified as a spectator, as he had no relation with this matter, but after hearing this method, he still couldn't help but raise the question:

“This kind of method, wouldn't it make the poisonous Flood Dragon's constituent spirit weak and powerless?”

“Ignorant youngster, stop trying to sound smart and don’t talk without thinking!”

He LianYun was not even one bit courteous towards him and directly mocked Yang Chen’s questioning.

“Could it be that you really believe that using some minor tricks of controlling the fire, you could refine the Heaven Seizing Pill? Or is it that we three pill concocting masters are worse than you, a mere foundation stage youngster?”

The method to deal with the constituent spirit was agreed upon after the discussion between the three pill concocting masters. After all, the poisonous Flood Dragon was already a super demonic beast which was approaching its ascension, its constituent spirit was not something which these YuanYing stage pill concocting masters could control.

This powerful constituent spirit was not at all equal to the constituent spirit of the heavenly ingredients, like the top grade blue-green zoysia, which did not possess the ability to attack and only required some very hard labour to refine, which could even be taken care of by a qi layer disciple such as Yang Chen. The constituent spirit of the poisonous Flood Dragon was at least one realm higher than Deng Yi, if the control was not perfect, not only would the refining fail, but the pill concocting master might still have to suffer from the backlash; the lightest result would be getting some serious injuries, a serious one could be losing one’s life, so it indeed was incomparably dangerous.



For the successful refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill, the constituent spirit of the demonic beast was not allowed to create any problems, so they would be seeping away the Spirit Power until it became weak enough to be controlled. Moreover, the degree of weakness had to be grasped properly, it couldn't be too powerful and at the same time it also couldn't be too weak, otherwise it would not be sufficiently powerful.

“Since the name is Heaven Seizing Pill, with the two words ‘Heaven Seizing’, is this something that can be accomplished by a weak constituent spirit?”

But Yang Chen did not pay the slightest attention to He LianYun's mockery, instead he stated his own reasoning, while wrinkling his brows.

“Although junior cannot make the Heaven Seizing Pill, junior still has some knowledge about it. If it is not powerful enough, who will be ready to take the blame?”

Although Yang Chen's words contained some speculation, they were still somewhat reasonable, even during the previous discussion, Elder Wu had also raised this concern. But thinking about the cultivation of the pill concocting masters and the possibility of refining and secondly obtaining the completely intact constituent spirit of this vicious poison dragon was not possible without harming it. After discussing this with Fan Shan and the other three pill concocting masters, they had unanimously agreed to this conclusion. This way to control it was the easiest, most famous and also had highest chance of success.

In his previous life, Yang Chen had only heard about the difficulties in refining the Heaven Seizing Pill and hadn't refined it personally. In addition to that, Yang Chen's current cultivation could be said to be insignificant when compared to everyone else, so his words weren't very persuasive. He had already successfully completed his job of purifying the blue-green zoysia and now, whether the refining of the Heaven Seizing failed or succeeded had no connection with him. The reason why Yang Chen had stayed behind was precisely to obtain his reward of the Real Sun Fire and increase his knowledge. At this moment, Yang Chen was trying to convince everyone else who were already determined on that plan, which was appearing to be impossible.

But Yang Chen felt in his subconscious mind that this kind of refining was not appropriate. If the Heaven Seizing Pill could even be refined with a weaker constituent spirit of a demonic beast, wouldn't it be a joke? Although at this moment, the success or failure of the refining did not have any relation with Yang Chen, but he did not want to helplessly stare as this kind of opportunity was passing through his hands. If the Heaven Seizing Pill was successfully refined, then he would obtain an unprecedented reputation and also receive the invisible protection of many experts, so if he missed this, his losses would never make up for the gains.

Since he could say nothing to make everyone change their method, Yang Chen was smart enough to understand that there was no need for him to speak any more. In He LianYun's eyes, Yang Chen's silence meant that he had accepted his defeat, since he couldn't convince them with his drivel. So He LianYun started making preposterous remarks immediately after taking out the furnace.

“Trying to display your measly skills before the experts here, what a disgrace!”

He LianYun immediately pelted ridiculing words at him and continued to berate him without any restraint:

“Ignorant youngster, get lost!”

“You must properly safeguard my Real Sun Fire so that it does not get broken by anything!”

But Yang Chen wasn't enraged and instead replied this with a laugh. These words immediately turned the complexion of He LianYun ashen, his whole body trembled and he turned speechless.

He LianYun had always wanted to talk with Yang Chen regarding this matter and see if he could substitute the Real Sun Fire for something else, but he never dared to, for the fear of losing face. Just a moment ago when those words exited from his mouth, the only result of this meaningless bit of showing off was, that it had caused an even deeper misunderstanding, but not the least bit of benefit for himself. Yang Chen's counterattack had given a shock to He LianYun, following which he could not even concentrate on doing his work.

Yang Chen no longer paid any attention to him and started to think in his mind about how he could decrease the influence of that method, so that he could increase the success rate of the Heaven Seizing Pill. After much deliberation, it seemed that only one method could help him. Only, that sort of method required

many ingredients on one hand, and on the other it also required some more refining to be done.

He did not know where had Elder Wu had captured this Flood Dragon, neither did he care about it, nor was he going to take the initiative to inquire about it, but the one thing he was concerned about was how toxic this Flood Dragon was and also how formidable was his constituent spirit was, this concerned the extent of how effective the method would be, so he could not be careless about this.

Mentioning it was also somewhat troublesome, this kind of Flood Dragon, although its constituent spirit was needed at the time of refining, but the constituent spirit's nature could have an instinct to use poison and if this kind of Heaven Seizing Pill was refined, then after taking it, maybe it would produce an intoxicating sensation within the subconscious of the user, which would require him to waste some of his cultivation to resist.

Yang Chen wanted to add a little bit of a detoxifying ability at the final stage. Of course he had no need to use any detoxifying medication, instead he could use the Flood Dragon's constituent spirit to produce the effect of restraining its toxicity and then he could control the cultivation which would be wasted to resist the toxicity after taking the pill.

Additionally, when the constituent spirit of the Flood Dragon was extracted it would be utterly weak, under these circumstances, even if it successfully blended with the elixir and formed a pill spirit, the pill spirit would instinctively be weak. At that time the weakness of the pill spirit would lead to a greatly decreased

medicinal efficacy. Seizing the Heavens, this was not something which an extremely weak, almost dead, pill spirit could accomplish.

“Elder Wu, for the time being I don’t have anything to do, I want to try to make some elixirs by myself, is it possible to grant me permission?”

Yang Chen directly turned to elder Wu and raised his request.

Elder Wu was worried that Yang Chen would cause trouble for He LianYun, so hearing Yang Chen take the initiative to go, he hurriedly replied:

“No problem, you intend to refine at some other place, right? Any kind of ingredient you need, instruct those servants outside to provide them to you and they will complete all of the other preparations for you.”

Elder Wu consented very quite magnanimously, but he also questioned him at the same time. If Yang Chen wanted to prepare his own elixirs, it would be best for him to go to another place, he must not disturb the refining here. As for what kind of elixirs Yang Chen wanted to prepare, Elder Wu did not care about it, he was even glad that Yang Chen would not be here to provoke He LianYun and affect the refining. As for the ingredients he required, Yang Chen, who had just reached foundation stage, how many high grade materials would he possibly be able to refine?

Yang Chen gave him a meaningful glance and immediately

smiled:

“I will go outside to refine, but I need Elder Wu to provide me with a particular ingredient!”

Yang Chen was eager to go outside to refine as the thing refined by him could not be allowed to be seen by these people, especially He LianYun.

“What ingredient?”

Elder Wu asked, confused, if he needed to ask him to provide the ingredient, it naturally had to be quite a high level ingredient.

“I need some fine powder, shaved from the demonic dan of this Flood Dragon.”

Yang Chen asked, pointing towards the bestial pouch on Fan Shan’s waist and smiled. The Flood Dragon was being kept in the bestial pouch from the day it had been captured, furthermore it would receive its final destiny very soon.

Yang Chen was not very greedy, obtaining some powder from the demonic dan, this request was as simple as lifting a finger for Elder Wu. He was merely baffled as to why Yang Chen required this kind of thing. Because of Yang Chen’s earlier performance, even if he had asked for the demonic dan itself, maybe Elder Wu would not have refused it. But this was not the time to bestow such huge rewards and Yang Chen had also not asked for much so as to not

give rise to the resentment of other people.

Just as he expected, He LianYun looked at him with a mocking gaze, as if finding it funny that Yang Chen was overestimating his capabilities try to refine an elixir by using powder of the dan. If a disciple who had barely reached the foundation stage could refine an elixir using the dan of such a demonic beast, then even a mortal could start concocting pills.

Despite sneering at him, it didn't look like He LianYun wanted to stop him, instead he was waiting for Yang Chen to humiliate himself. Upon seeing this, Elder Wu only nodded slightly, but didn't say anything.

The Flood Dragon had been captured a long time ago and had used all kinds of tricks to survive, but under the combined suppression of Elder Wu and Fan Shan it was simply unable to resist. In the restrictive spell formation laid by Elder Wu, it had recently gained some freedom and immediately manipulated its inner dan to attack that major enemy who held its life and death in his hands.

But Elder Wu calmly controlled his flying sword, regardless of how the big green demonic dan attacked, after the sword flashed for several times, Fan Shan controlled the bestial pouch to retrieve the Flood Dragon. Holding the flying sword in his hands, he walked in front of Yang Chen and asked:

“Is this enough?”

A small amount of green grains could be seen flickering on the flying sword, that was the powder he shaved from the inner dan just a moment ago, extremely fresh. Yang Chen carefully collected that fine powder in his jade bottle and nodded:

“It’s enough!”

Elder Wu retrieved his flying sword without saying anything, but gratefulness was visible within his eyes. Although Yang Chen was being targeted and insulted from the beginning, yet he didn’t create any trouble for Elder Wu, while his work was also extremely good, which satisfied Elder Wu greatly. A person who knows when to advance and when to retreat, this was Elder Wu’s assessment of Yang Chen.

Inside that manor, some distance not far from the place where the refining was taking place, Yang Chen looked for a room where he could concoct pills. He looked for a servant and instructed him about all of the materials he needed and asked him to prepare them. Naturally some unneeded materials were also mixed in as he did not want people to know what he was refining.

Elder Wu had already instructed the servants to fulfill all requirements of Yang Chen. Yang Chen did not demand excessively high grade ingredients, and moreover, in order to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, Elder Wu had already collected as many top grade spirit medicines as he could. These slightly lower grade ingredients were all placed into Yang Chen’s room within one day.

The YuanYing pill concocting masters had already begun to



remove the Spirit Power of the Flood Dragon within the bestial pouch. Since there were no means of replenishing the Spirit Power, the demonic beast began to weaken slowly. Whenever Yang Chen looked over there and heard the roaring of the demonic beast from time to time, he could not help but shake his head and take a long sigh, then soon afterwards he began to sort out the ingredients.

Although he had already reached the foundation stage, at this place Yang Chen did not want to reveal his cultivation techniques. Therefore, although he could once again refine his magic weapon, he forced himself to endure it and began to use the Profound Spirit Furnace to refine all sorts of ingredients as preparation for his own refining.

In a flash, a few months had passed by and the medicinal liquid of the blue-green zoysia had already mixed with forty different types of foundation elixirs but twenty more still remained. The refining was getting more and more difficult, Deng Yi could already not persist by herself, so Zhu Peng and He Lianyun had also entered the battle, and, controlling the medicinal liquid inside of the pill concocting furnace, they began to refine. Every time one person changed places with another, he was extremely exhausted and drained, after stopping the work, he would immediately use pills to recover the lost Spirit Power, not daring to delay in the slightest.

On Yang Chen's side, all of the preparations were done. He LianYun and the others had no time to pay any attention to him, so after putting up a spell formation as a warning, Yang Chen used the powder from the inner dan of the poisonous Flood Dragon and carefully threw it into the Profound Spirit Furnace.

# Chapter 79 - Failed Refining

Although he only had a little bit of powder from the inner dan of the poisonous Flood Dragon, it was still an extremely high grade ingredient, so the refining would still take one day. Fortunately it wasn't as big of a problem as the constituent spirit and was much easier to handle. But before he could formally begin the refining, he still had to think of a method to neutralize the inner dan's toxicity.

The Profound Spirit Furnace had directly risen by one grade under the influence of the Spirit Power and medicinal power from refining the blue-green zoysia and still had the aura of a treasure as before and had already mixed with Spiritual Influence. The entire Profound Spirit Furnace was in the process of becoming a middle grade magic weapon from a low grade magic weapon, Yang Chen was convinced that after few layers of refining, it would become an amazing middle grade magic tool.

After reaching the foundation stage, compared with the qi stage, some high quality changes had appeared in his Spirit Power and Spiritual Awareness, not to mention other things, just the fact that he could now connect the Spiritual Influence between the earth and the heaven immediately allowed him to maintain an even more formidable strength, regardless of whether he was cultivating or fighting. Pill concocting was the same, previously the elixirs he was incapable of refining, had suddenly gotten a chance to be refined successfully.

The constituent spirit of the poisonous Flood Dragon would probably be very weak, unable to support the requirements of the

Heaven Seizing Pill, so Yang Chen wanted to make the pill spirit more powerful. During the process of refining he would have to fuse more than ten foundation stage elixirs of all attributes. Because of the possibility that the refining may fail, Yang Chen still wanted to refine some other things, in which the yin and yang of the five phases were blended properly, in short, he wanted to be prepared for everything.

Both sides were painstakingly refining, relatively speaking, Yang Chen's side was simple, so the first step was completed very quickly. Having these things ready, Yang Chen now had some certainty about the success in the last stage of the Heaven Seizing Pill. After all, compared with other people, Yang Chen had a much greater understanding of the Heaven Seizing Pill. Though he may not have eaten pork, he had seen pigs run, even if it was Elder Wu, who had the highest cultivation among them, he would also not have Yang Chen's knowledge and experience.

Although Yang Chen did not know the final refining method for the Heaven Seizing Pill, if he had a cultivation similar to Elder Wu, then he could have accomplished the refining forcefully without any problems. Currently his biggest weakness was his cultivation, so he had no other choice but to allow others to refine the pill in advance and he would think of some method to remedy it afterwards.

The refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill had entered its final stages, all of the base elixirs had already been absorbed into the blue-green zoysia. Now the blue-green zoysia in itself was an ingredient that contained both yin and yang of all five phases by means of a mixture of all the base elixirs, as long as the method of refining was correct, there would not be a problem. At the moment

it was apparent that these three people were the real deal as, until now, everything had been completed without a hitch.

These three pill concocting masters no longer needed to take turns to control the pill concocting furnace, instead all three of them were conducting the refining together under the lead of Deng Yi, while the other two were supporting her. The fusion with the medicinal liquid still required several days to be completed and after that would be the time for adding the pill spirit.

That would still be the most crucial time, whether or not the pill spirit would fuse successfully. This would directly determine whether the pill could successfully be refined or not. The constituent spirit had already been prepared properly, the poisonous Flood Dragon was preserved inside of Fan Shan's bestial pouch at its last breath, after suffering from constant torment by Fan Shan and Elder Wu. They were only waiting for the time when its constituent spirit would be required so they could extract it while the Flood Dragon was still alive.

Yang Chen had also arrived at the scene of refining by now and was attentively watching the three people doing their work, as if he wanted to learn something from the refining method of these people.

At this time, even He LianYun, who usually complained about Yang Chen, didn't have any extra energy to pay attention to him. All of the three high grade pill concocting masters were single mindedly devoted to controlling the furnace and didn't dare to get distracted for a single moment.

The purple colored pill furnace had currently already turned into a huge monster, occupying a radius of several meters. This pill concocting furnace that had been refined by high level experts, was crazily releasing steam at the moment. People with a low cultivation base could even not approach it. Fortunately, Yang Chen was a fire attributed cultivator and he moreover also possessed the Geocentric Flame, so this was still not much of a problem for him.

These three pill concocting masters were sitting in three different directions, as if they were the three legs of the pill furnace, each one of them was manipulating their unique flame and they were incessantly refining the medicinal liquid within the pill furnace. Since the pill furnace was still covered, Yang Chen could not know about the situation inside of it and so he was observing those three people very carefully, while also using his Spiritual Awareness threads to probe, waiting for the final moment.

The intensity of the flame inside of the furnace was very steady under the control of these three people, but it was inclined towards increasing more and more. Several tens of thousands catties of ingredients, were all mixed together to refine a very small pill inside of the pill concocting furnace, that was indeed a great skill. Although Elder Wu and Fan Shan weren't participating in the refining, they were sitting five steps away from the refining stage, ready at all times to take out the constituent spirit of the Flood Dragon.

After the intensity of the flame in the pill furnace reached its peak after several days, the purple colored pill furnace turned slightly white. Beads of sweat could be seen sparkling on the

foreheads of Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He LianYun, but at this moment they didn't have the time to wipe it off, both hands of each of them were pressed against the pill furnace, frantically strengthening the intensity of the flame.

“Constituent Spirit!”

All of a sudden, Deng Yi shouted loudly, following which the lid of the pill furnace rose high into the air, revealing the situation inside of the pill furnace.

Surrounded by three portions of fire, a ball of medicinal liquid, the size of human head, was repeatedly rolling between them, emitting a sweet scent. Just by sniffing this scent Yang Chen felt as if his body was fluttering and ascending, his Spirit Power moving and rousing. Even the incomplete pill had such efficacy, the name of the Heaven Seizing Pill was indeed not in vain.

Elder Wu and Fan Shan on the side didn't dare to be careless and as if they were a bolt of lightning, they appeared on the side of the pill furnace in a flash. Fan Shan opened his bestial pouch and pulled out a Flood Dragon that was several tens of meters long. The enormous body occupied almost all of the vacant space at the refining site. The Flood Dragon was at its last breath, so after it came out, it still was motionless. Only by looking at its eyes one could see some traces of it still being alive.

Elder Wu pressed one hand onto the head of the Flood Dragon and then placed a heavy punch on its head using the other hand.

Bang!

The huge head split open on the spot and a ball of feeble light flew out of the head. Elder Wu swiftly caught it in his hand and immediately threw it into the pill furnace. Fan Shan immediately collected the corpse into his pouch. Everyone stared at the pill furnace with a shining gaze.

The white light directly fused with the ball of medicinal liquid and immediately afterwards the lid of the pill furnace was closed once again at lightning speed. Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He LianYun once again started the insane refining.

This was the final step and also the most important one. If this step succeeded, then the Heaven Seizing Pill could be smoothly taken out of the furnace, if they made a mistake at this step, all of their previous efforts would be in vain. At this moment, the three pill concocting masters had exerted all of their strength, waiting for this final fight.

Elder Wu, Yang Chen and Fan Shan did not need to do anything for the time being and were carefully waiting for the moment when the lid of the furnace would be opened on the side.

This fusion continued for several days and several nights. During that time, the big round lump of medicinal liquid was incessantly struggling against the fusion with the weak constituent spirit of the Flood Dragon and the sound of the medicinal liquid ramming the side of the pill concocting furnace was echoing on the outside.

Beads of sweat continued to roll down from the faces of all three pill concocting masters, while Elder Wu was feeding them elixirs for recovering their Spirit Power every few hours, but the shaking of the medicinal liquid still didn't stop and the sound of ramming against the pill concocting furnace continued to echo.

All of the people at the scene were deeply worried, including both the people concocting the pill and the people sitting at the side. The most anxious one among them was Elder Wu. In order to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill, he had prepared for a hundred years, from looking for the pill recipe to acquiring all kinds of pill ingredients. Very soon, he would know about the results, whether he would succeed or fail, this question even made Elder Wu lose the calm-headedness Da Cheng stage experts usually displayed.

Finally, the ramming sound became quieter, the time interval between the sound was also increasing more and more, as if the strength of the constituent spirit was becoming weaker and weaker and finally it stopped completely.

A trace of relaxation appeared on the faces of the three pill concocting masters, Elder Wu and Fan Shan also took a deep breath and let it out. A smile made its way on Elder Wu's face.

“It seems that they have almost succeeded!”

“Not necessarily!”

Yang Chen's voice came through from the side. His one sentence made everyone wrinkle their brows, the four YuanYing and one Da



Cheng stage expert hadn't said anything, but this trifling youngster, who had barely reached the foundation stage said these kinds of discouraging words? He was indeed an eyesore.

“If this kind of docile elixir was able to have the reputation of Seizing the Heavens, then seizing the heavens is really very simple!”

Under the resentful stares of all of these experts, Yang Chen wrinkled his brows and continued without any fear:

“Maybe the elixir still has some counterattack!”

Yang Chen had not said this with the purpose of explaining himself to get out of trouble, instead, what he had heard about the Heaven Seizing Pill in the past pointed towards it not being such a simple matter. If they relaxed at this time, then not to mention failing at the last step, maybe they would not have any way to save it.

Although these words were not pleasant to hear, everyone could understand what he meant, so all of them immediately became even more vigorous, not daring to relax in the slightest. The chance to put down their names in history was in front of them, nobody wanted to let it slip by due to carelessness.

Peng!

A huge sound came from inside of the pill furnace and the huge

pill concocting furnace shifted horizontally for several tens of meters due to the force of the knock. The fierce impact almost made the three pill concocting masters fall backwards.

Fortunately Yang Chen had warned them, so everyone was on guard. Although the power of the hit was enormous it did not affect the refining of the pill concocting masters in the slightest, their six hands were pressed against the pill concocting furnace the same as before, incessantly rousing the intensity of the flame. Elder Wu looked towards Yang Chen with a thankful expression and nodded, before once again turning towards the pill concocting furnace.

Apparently this impact had consumed all of the strength of the pill spirit, as there was no more activity. The refining continued calmly for one day and one night. After sensing that the inside had reached sufficient a temperature, Deng Yi yelled: "Careful, I am going to congeal the pill!"

With one hand pressed against the furnace to control the heat, Deng Yi raised her other hand and made a few complex signs in succession to spur the medicinal liquid inside of the furnace and start congealing the pill.

This was the ultimate step, as long as the pill was congealed and then collected, all of the work would be accomplished successfully. A look of expectation appeared on Elder Wu's face. No accident had appeared in the previous procedure, so just after this one step, he would immediately obtain a Heaven Seizing Pill. He couldn't express his excitement in words.

Not only Elder Wu, even Deng Yi, Zhu Peng, He LianYun and Fan Shan, all had the same expectant expressions. The smile on everyone's face still hadn't completely appeared, when suddenly Deng Yi complexion changed, immediately following, Zhu Peng and He LianYun's expressions also had an enormous change.

These three people knew the situation inside of the furnace clearly, the change in their expressions made the hearts of Elder Wu and Fan Shan grow cold. Could it be that refining had failed? But these three pill concocting masters hadn't said anything, so nobody knew really knew what was going on inside of the furnace.

The only one who was calm was Yang Chen, this elixir was so weak, how could it claim the name of Seizing Heaven? Even if it was refined successfully, at most it would be Stealing Heaven, that's all. This had no relation with the word Seizing, it would be a miracle if it had been successful.

Deng Yi was desperately testing a few methods, but her expression was becoming more and more anxious, Zhu Peng and He LianYun who were assisting her, also tightly wrinkled their brows without saying anything. After Deng Yi had tried the final method, she disappointedly stopped and said to Zhu Peng and He LianYun: "I am not able to congeal the pill, you both should try!"

These words explained the current situation inside of the furnace, hearing this, Elder Wu's expressions sank, but both of his eyes were looking hopefully towards Zhu Peng and He LianYun, who were sitting on the side.

At this moment, without caring for courtesy, Zhu Heng also

extended his big hands and began to use his methods to congeal the dan. Within a short moment, he had already used more than ten methods, but in the end he stopped without saying anything, which clearly implied that his results were the same as Deng Yi, unable to congeal the dan.

The last person remaining, He LianYun, did not believe in hearsay, his spirit was greatly roused and he was using all that he had learnt in his entire life without any restraint. Even to Yang Chen, it was clear that his method to congeal and collect the pill was better than the other two. Deng Yi and Zhu Peng had been unable to congeal the pill, as long as He LianYun could grab this chance, he would amaze all of them. Just like that, Elder Wu would be so grateful to him that he would be willing to put his life on the line to help He LianYun. If that happened, he would certainly not need to pay his stakes for that wager.

Not only that, the huge fame that he would gain by refining the Heaven Seizing Pill would put him above all other pill concocting masters in the mortal world, making him the number one pill concocting master, at that time he could gain all of the fame and fortunes. Just thinking about what would happen afterwards, He LianYun lost his concentration at this moment.

Elder Wu was watching He LianYun very attentively, the hopeful expression on his face was slowly turning into despair, as He LianYun's hand gestures became slow.

“Failure!”

As a Da Cheng stage expert, his bearing was more graceful than

that of other people and he didn't appear like a sore loser. Seeing the current situation, where the three pill concocting experts were still putting in their greatest effort, he sighed and admitted that this time's refining was a failure.

“After all, the pill recipe was not complete, I don't blame you all, stay your hand!”

Elder Wu's words proclaimed the defeat of everyone's effort. The three pill concocting masters dejectedly let go of the furnace, the lid of the furnace automatically opened, revealing the situation inside.

Except for a lump of a black thing, nothing else was there. Although it was still releasing a strong Spirit Power as before, they were all very clear that this were the dregs of an already failed concoction and not the Heaven Seizing Pill they were seeking.

Looking at this black lump, a light flashed in Yang Chen's eyes.

# Chapter 80 - Strange Things Appear With The Pill

It had to be said that the pill concocting of Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He LianYun was not bad, at least in their control of heat, they had already achieved the peak, evidenced by them refining these several tens of thousands of catties of ingredients into a lump the size of a human head, without even a trace of burning. The reason why only this black colored lump was left, was because they had never been able to condense the pill from the start.

Currently the black lump was still sweltering before everyone's eyes, but apart from Yang Chen, nobody gave it even a single glance. Everyone was immersed in their dejection, because their meticulous efforts had gone in vain and for some time nobody opened their mouth, the whole place was filled with a lifeless atmosphere.

Yang Chen walked a few steps to the pill concocting furnace, lowered his head and started examining the black colored dregs delicately. This action immediately attracted everyone's attention and their gazes concentrated on him in a flash.

“What? Do you want to say the reason for why the refining has failed?”

He LianYun could not deal with Yang Chen as he had planned, so because his mood was pretty bad, he started mocking him.

“Does Great Master Yang have any advice?”

The other people were also in a bad mood, what He LianYun’s said resonated with everybody. Although nobody said anything, the gazes of four YuanYing experts and a Da Cheng stage cultivator, who was on the verge of ascending, all concentrating on someone, could make any cultivator in the mortal world tremble.

But as if Yang Chen hadn’t sensed this pressure, he unexpectedly extended his finger and stuck it into the black colored dregs under everyone’s eyes. Releasing his Spiritual Awareness, he began to sense the circumstances inside of it at close range.

This action of Yang Chen made everyone look at each other in dismay, nobody knew what he wanted to do, but everyone had the same thought: they did not believe that Yang Chen would be able to do anything to these dregs. He was a foundation stage youngster, not worthy of just talking about the Heaven Seizing Pill, not even if it was just the dregs of the Heaven Seizing Pill.

“It can still be saved!”

After sensing for a good moment, Yang Chen suddenly said this sentence, which endlessly stunned everyone. It could still be saved? What does this mean?

Everyone’s gazes converged on Yang Chen again, but this time they did not contain the same resentment as before, instead they were filled with astonishment.

“Shameless boasting!”

He LianYun immediately berated him in a loud voice.

“Who do you think you are? As soon as you got your chance, you immediately started talking big, do you really believe you are Great Master Yang?”

Not only He LianYun, but even Deng Yi and Zhu Peng’s faces turned gloomy after hearing Yang Chen’s words. These three YuanYing stage experts couldn’t find a method, but this foundation stage youngster, what did he think he could possibly do?

Yang Chen didn’t pay any attention to He LianYun and fished out a jade bottle without saying anything. Opening the mouth of the bottle, he was about to dump the contents of the bottle onto the black colored waste.

“What are you doing?”

He LianYun became even angrier and once again angrily shouted:

“Will you take the responsibility after destroying this?”

“Destroying?”

Yang Chen stopped his hand and turned towards He LianYun,



asking him with a queer expression:

“Senior He, could it be that you haven’t used all of the methods you have? I invite you first, then!”

While speaking, he made an inviting gesture with his hand.

What method could He LianYun have? If he had any, he would have already used it. He had already done all he could do, but he still wasn’t able to congeal the pill. Now Yang Chen was asking him to do anything, why would he humiliate himself again?

“If you all don’t have any good method, then I will test my method!”

This time Yang Chen turned towards Elder Wu and very earnestly stated:

“Elder Wu, just now this junior was impulsive, would it be possible to allow this junior to give it a try?”

What kind of objection would Elder Wu still have? At this moment, he refused to abandon hope, if luck was good, then maybe Yang Chen would be able to incite some result. Nodding his head, Elder Wu recalled that during the refining process, Yang Chen had already raised several objections, at that time nobody had paid any attention to him. Could it be that these problems were related to those objections?

Elder Wu could not help but feel hopeful again, did Yang Chen really find a method? He had already seen how Yang Chen had previously displayed almost perfect control over fire, which even Deng Yi, the highest level cultivator among the three pill concocting masters, would be unable to accomplish. Since Yang Chen had produced that kind of extraordinary result during the wager, perhaps he may be able to produce a similar miracle even in pill concoction.

Yang Chen slightly shook his hand and scattered the fine powder in the jade bottle, directly letting it fall onto the black dregs. Oddly enough, once these dregs came in contact with the powder, they began to change color and the black color slowly faded away, restoring the original blue-green color of the blue-green zoysia.

This miraculous act made everyone, including He LianYun forget about the dispute, everyone couldn't take their eyes off Yang Chen's actions, hope and expectations began to rise within their hearts again.

In a moment, the Profound Spirit Furnace appeared within one of Yang Chen's hands. Using the other hand as a ladle, he scooped up the blue-green dregs and put them into the Profound Spirit Furnace.

“Use my pill concocting furnace, the results will be even better!”

Deng Yi immediately said this, upon seeing Yang Chen's actions. Her purple colored pill concocting furnace was several grades higher than Yang Chen's furnace. After looking at the aura of Yang Chen's pill concocting furnace, she could not stop herself from

saying this.

“Unfortunately Junior is unable to use Senior’s pill concocting furnace.”

Yang Chen would definitely not allow the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill to be done in the furnace of someone else, the Profound Spirit Furnace needed to slowly accumulate medicinal qi, and refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, the highest grade pill in the mortal world, in this furnace would allow it to accumulate a large amount of medicinal qi. Moreover, with Yang Chen’s current cultivation, he was indeed not able to control a YuanYing expert’s magic tool.

The powder that Yang Chen had added was refined from the inner dan of the poisonous Flood Dragon, it was especially for nourishing the constituent spirit of the poisonous Flood Dragon and to remove any side effects of its toxicity. After receiving this nourishment, the utterly weak pill spirit began to slowly recover within the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Sensing this change, Yang Chen took a deep breath. A weak pill spirit was the main cause for the failure last time, but if the pill spirit could be recovered, there was still a chance.

Another factor in congealing the pill was the difficulty of combining the basic elixirs, which contained all of the five phases and their yin and yang in an equilibrium. The three pill concocting masters were all fire attributed, and although they were extremely familiar with all of the five phases, in that aspect they were inferior to Yang Chen, who cultivated the five phases together

with their yin and yang and moreover had a full spirit root for all attributes. The mixture would contain some slight deviations from an equilibrium of the five phases.

What Yang Chen needed to do at the moment, was precisely to correct these slight deviations and nourish the pill spirit to the Heaven Seizing Realm afterwards, after that, congealing and collecting the pill would not have the current problem anymore.

Only with the strength of the pill spirit at its peak, and properly refined medicinal elixirs, would it be suitable for the name of Heaven Seizing Pill.

For balancing the yin and yang of the five phases, Yang Chen just needed to input his own spirit power into the furnace. The Profound Spirit Furnace had been refined by Yang Chen from the beginning by using the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, so it possessed all of the five phases all along. Just balancing the slight deviations did not take too long, the only problem now was the nourishing of the pill spirit.

The entire jade bottle was filled with medicinal powder to nourish the pill spirit, Yang Chen divided it into five portions and added all of them into the furnace, one by one. All of the other people watching were curious about this medicinal powder, but nobody dared to ask anything: Yang Chen was someone who had barely reached the foundation stage, if asking him about the powder agitated him and caused a distraction, it would be disastrous. As for this question about the medicinal powder, it could be asked after this was over.

After five portions, the pill spirit was not as weak as before, like it was at its dying breath, and began to show a trace of liveliness. This medicinal powder was refined from powder shaved from the inner dan of the poisonous Flood Dragon, so it had the same origin as the pill spirit, naturally it was an excellent medicine for nourishing it. Finally, in this situation, the pill spirit could start absorbing Yang Chen's Spirit Power to recover.

But this pill spirit still required a large amount of Spirit Power for strengthening, to achieve this, Yang Chen directly called out to Fan Shan, who was waiting for the results:

“Senior Fan, enter your Spirit Power within the furnace!”

Fan Shan immediately agreed and rushed over there, pressing both of his hands onto the wine jar sized Profound Spirit Furnace in front of Yang Chen and began to enter his Spirit Power carefully.

Just after starting he was still very careful for the fear that, if he entered too much Spirit Power, it would ruin the pill concocting furnace, but he discovered very quickly that the Profound Spirit Furnace was similar to a bottomless pit, regardless of how much Spirit Power he put in, it would disappear without a trace. When he looked at Yang Chen with an inquiring gaze, Yang Chen only nodded, indicating him to be relieved. Only then did Fan Shan begin to enter his Spirit Power frantically into the furnace.

“Seniors, the Spirit Power requirement is very large, so I would ask the Seniors to take turns to enter Spirit Power.”

Fan Shan was already entering his Spirit Power, but Yang Chen also invited the other YuanYing stage pill concocting masters. They had completed the refining only a few moments ago and although it had failed, they were extremely exhausted. But Yang Chen's words reminded them to recover as soon as they could, so that they could also be used as labourers.

“If you require to enter Spirit Power, let this old man here assume the responsibility!”

Upon seeing this, Elder Wu also hastily replied. In terms of Spirit Power, the strongest person there was of course this Da Cheng stage cultivator. Yang Chen had not asked this great expert for anything, but he had frantically pressed the other people, which made even Elder Wu unable to sit by idly.

“Elder Wu should not be impatient, you must preserve your strength for a time of need. In the last stage we cannot do without you at your full strength.”

Yang Chen had already planned for this long ago and immediately asked Elder Wu to not speak anymore.

The three pill concocting masters, including He LianYun, had put down their objections at this moment, all of them anxiously wanted to know what Yang Chen was doing. Did the Heaven Seizing Pill really still have a chance? But at this moment nobody raised any objections and immediately swallowed pills to recover and started waiting for Yang Chen's instructions.

The four YuanYing stage experts were taking turns to enter their Spirit Power into the Profound Spirit Furnace. By this time, everyone had already sensed the strong pressure emitted from inside of the Profound Spirit Furnace. It was unexpectedly as if the constituent spirit of the poisonous Flood Dragon had completely recovered and was raging and rolling around within the Profound Spirit Furnace.

In reality, it was indeed like this, the almost recovered constituent spirit was madly struggling within the furnace. But it was only a constituent spirit without a body, and it was also bound by the medicinal liquid of the Haven Seizing Pill. Under Yang Chen's careful control, borrowing the unending stream of spirit power coming into the furnace, he began to fuse it with the medicinal liquid, little by little.

The Profound Spirit Furnace started shaking fiercely, making these people worried about whether or not this extremely low levelled pill furnace would be able to endure the fierce shaking and not break. Fortunately, this kind of thing didn't happen, the shaking just became more and more intense, while violent roars began to echo in everyone's ears.

The sound that was echoing through their ears stunned everyone. This roaring sound became louder and louder, until finally, it appeared to come out of everyone's hearts, forcing them to tremble incessantly. Everyone who came in contact with the pill furnace, felt that this was a legendary dragon's roar without the slightest doubt.

Refining a pill could unexpectedly give rise to dragon's roar! Even the YuanYing stage pill concocting masters could not help but be overawed. Looking at Yang Chen, that youngster who had barely reached the foundation stage, controlling the pill concocting furnace without being affected by the roar in the least, the YuanYing experts felt inferior.

The roar was becoming more and more powerful, and unexpectedly the outline of a shape began to appear in the sky. Lumps of black clouds began to converge over everyone's heads; the whole sky had turned black within a moment. Thunder and lightning began to crackle above everyone's heads; the rumbling sound gave these people a sense of *déjà vu*.

“This is? A tribulation cloud?”

Everyone there, apart from Yang Chen, was at least at the YuanYing stage, when breaking through from the JieDan stage to the YuanYing stage, they had survived the first tribulation, also known as lightning tribulation. This event unfolding before their eyes, how could it resemble the lightning tribulation which they had survived?

What had called for the tribulation? The YuanYing experts did not need to pass the calamity, let alone Elder Wu. Could it be that someone within this villa had broken through the bottleneck of the JieDan stage and was entering the YuanYing stage? But Elder Wu hadn't shown the slightest indications of something like this, could it be Yang Chen? Impossible, Yang Chen had just reached the foundation stage, how could he call for the lightning calamity so quickly? But if it wasn't people, then could it be... Everyone's eyes



snapped around and began to stare at the Profound Spirit Furnace within Yang Chen's hand. The roar of the dragon was getting louder and louder. Could it be that the tribulation was for the pill inside? Pills also have to go through tribulations?

Thinking about this, everyone was astonished. But together with their astonishment, they also had hopeful expressions. Yes, only this could claim to have the name of Seizing Heaven, at the time of refining successfully, even the heavens would drop tribulations. Only this kind of pill could be known as Heaven Seizing Pill. Those pills they had refined for half of their lifetimes were simply trash!

Elder Wu was both alarmed and delighted when looking at all of this, he was overwhelmed by emotions, the process of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill was simply like crossing a turbulent sea. Initially he was full of confidence, but then all of his hopes were shattered; he hadn't anticipated so much twisting and turning, but finally it had become so much more powerful. Elder Wu didn't even know how he could express his emotions.

All of this, everything, was done for him by Yang Chen. Currently Elder Wu was admiring his own decision of bringing Yang Chen with him at that time. He had such good foresight, suddenly thinking about inviting a person like Yang Chen, who was still at the qi layer at that time, but he ended up only providing him with nice surprises.

“Be careful, Elder Wu!”

Yang Chen suddenly shouted to get his attention:

“It’s time. Elder Wu, you must hold on to the Heaven Seizing Pill with all of your strength. After passing the tribulation, if you are not careful, this Heaven Seizing Pill will immediately escape, so you have to trap it properly! Success or failure, all depends on this one move!”

# Chapter 81 - Pill Tribulation

For a pill to face tribulation was already a rare and unprecedented event, but that the pill was still capable of fleeing, this had overturned all knowledge these pill concocting masters had gained in their lives. It did not mean that all of what they had learnt was wrong, but this Heaven Seizing Pill was indeed opposing the heavens, something which really should not be in the hands of mortals.

The person who refined the Heaven Seizing Pill last time had not recorded the events after refining for some unknown reason, let alone these shapes in the air as well as passing through the tribulation, or about the pill escaping and so on. If Yang Chen had not heard about these things in the spiritual world, his knowledge would be similar to them and he would have believed that the refining had ended in failure.

But he had to admit, these three high grade pill concocting masters still had quite some achievements, most of all in their grasp over controlling the heat, but unfortunately, refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill did not only depend on success in controlling the temperature.

In the mortal world, there had been only one account of successfully refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, this time was merely the second time in all of history, but one account was still not enough to make the pill well known enough.

Elder Wu was both alarmed and excited, but he didn't dare to

lower his guard in the slightest. Yang Chen had clearly said, that this Heaven Refining Pill could flee, if this situation actually came true, then it would be simply ridiculous to slip up.

The thunder was getting closer and along with the sound of rumbling and rolling, the Profound Spirit Furnace was also shaking more and more. Anyone could see that Yang Chen was currently unable to suppress it. But nobody dared to replace Yang Chen, for Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He LianYun, it was already enough for to be able to see this, they were afraid that, because of their carelessness, it would lead to a last minute failure.

“Be careful, the pill is ready!”

Everyone’s attention was totally fixed on the tribulation cloud that had converged just a moment ago, the extreme shock had even made these people neglect Yang Chen’s congealing and pill collecting techniques. Only after hearing Yang Chen’s words, did they realize what they had missed, which left them with a feeling of regret. Everyone’s techniques were secretly transmitted by their sects, since they had missed it this time, they did not know if they would ever get another chance to see it.

Only this was not the the time for regret, everyone opened their eyes widely because nobody wanted to miss seeing what the pill tribulation looked like.

The lid of the Profound Spirit Furnace suddenly rose up and from within the furnace a greenish light soared up, immediately following which, a green colored image also rushed out from the furnace, rising towards the sky.

Elder Wu had been ready for a long time, in an instant his figure immediately flew out, directly following after the greenish image. Merely, this time he did not try to do anything too clever, Elder Wu was very clear, at the time of tribulation, even if the restrictions for controlling the pill he set up were powerful, it would still not be enough to contend against several tribulations from the heavens.

When everyone looked clearly, they found that the green image was actually a jade colored dragon. When it entered the Profound Spirit Furnace, it was black colored dregs, but what was coming out was actually a jade dragon shape, what kind of accomplishment was this? Looking at this jade dragon shape, Deng Yi, Zhu Peng and He Lianyun wanted to slap themselves, they had missed the chance to see this kind of important pill congealing and pill concocting technique!

Only, now it was too late for any kind of regret, moreover, they indeed could not have managed to pay attention, a pill going through tribulation was an unprecedented event happening in front of them, so who could put down all thoughts to engage solely in regret and not pay attention to this?

Bang!

Together with the sound, the lightning struck at the jade dragon in the air. Within the glaring thunder, it seemed as if the jade dragon had already been baptized by the lightning and was not affected in the slightest.

This violent lightning flashed nine times, each time was clearer than the last time, each time was thicker than the last time. The thickest one was comparable to the waist of a human, all of them combined were similar to river. But even under this frantic wash of lightning, the Heaven Seizing Pill didn't have the slightest change; on the contrary, it liberated more and more medicinal qi, as if it had received huge benefits after being baptized within the lightning.

After the bolt of lightning had struck nine times, the tribulation of lightning was over, causing the tribulation clouds in the sky to disappear completely and the color of the sky to turn clear again. The servants within Elder Wu's villa had their horizons broadened considerably this time, being spectator to an affair like this tribulation could simply be considered as a major profit for all they had done in their lives.

When everyone was going mad with joy, they suddenly discovered that they had become happy prematurely. After surviving the lightning tribulations, the dragon appeared even more nimble, its shape had slightly shrunk when compared to before, but the medicinal qi appeared to be even more rich and powerful. After hovering in the air just for a little while, Elder Wu immediately discovered that a portion of yin fire had appeared underneath the Heaven Seizing Pill and started burning it.

There were three tribulations, lightning, yin fire and wind, which cultivators could not escape, a JieDan expert turning into a YuanYing expert had to pass the lightning tribulation, from the YuanYing stage to the Da Cheng stage one had to pass through the yin fire tribulation and when ascending from the Da Cheng stage to the spiritual world, one had to pass through the tribulation of

wind. But nobody could have ever thought that even the Heaven Seizing Pill would also be like that.

Deng Yi, Zhu Peng, He Lianyun and Fan Shan had their eyes opened widely, closely following the Heaven Seizing Pill. The burning by the yin fire happening before their eyes was simply a gift bestowed by the heavens to them. Even if they hadn't reached this level of cultivation, since they were able to see this, then when they would face this tribulation at a later time, they would be somewhat prepared.

As for Elder Wu, to him the Yin fire was nothing, he had already survived this tribulation long ago and became a Da Cheng stage expert, but seeing the Heaven Seizing Pill also going through this tribulation, he became somewhat expectant.

The Yin Fire tribulation also had nine incarnations, the formless and noiseless yin fire, everyone could only detect it by look at the changes in the Heaven Seizing Pill. Every time it ignited, the Heaven Seizing Pill became slightly smaller, after the ninth time, only a plum sized Heaven Seizing Pill was left.

“Elder Wu, the pill has an inherent deficiency, perhaps the pill will require the help of Elder Wu to get rid of it at the time of the wind tribulation!”

Suddenly, Yang Chen yelled towards Elder Wu from beneath.

Hearing this line, made all of them, including Elder Wu, realize how baffling the Heaven Seizing Pill was. Ah, the wind tribulation,

after surviving it, one could immediately ascend, which cultivator there had ever witnessed an ascension before? This was a kind of chance that could only be found and not sought! Hah... Everyone who had heard this sentence was so excited, that they started to tremble, hating that they could not immediately fly up and observe it at close range.

When they heard Yang Chen speaking about an inherent weakness, the three pill concocting masters were so ashamed of themselves, that they wanted to bury their heads in the ground. This inherent weakness was naturally a problem that had appeared because of their refining style, but it was ultimately remedied by Yang Chen. Thinking about the beginning, when they had disdained Yang Chen, these three people weren't able to look up due to shame.

When Elder Wu heard this, while in the sky, he was also unable to stop himself. The final calamity of the three calamities, the wind calamity, he was soon going to confront it, but he hadn't anticipated, that he would surprisingly be able to experience this kind of heavenly tribulation on a pill in advance, this had an extraordinary importance for his ascension.

To be unable to take his eyes off it was already insufficient to describe Elder Wu's level of concentration. His eyes, together with all his other senses, were entirely concentrated on that small dragon in the space above and between both of his palms. All of his Spiritual Awareness was shrouding the entire area and any matter happening inside. Nothing could escape Elder Wu's senses.

His whole body could not help but start shuddering due to the



excitement, waiting for the tribulation of wind to arrive. Other people's Spiritual Awareness, bold enough to examine this area were all bounced back by Elder Wu without any restraint. This time, he would not allow anyone to interfere with his opportunity to sense the tribulation of wind.

The four people underneath also knew that this opportunity was hard to come by and were also aware of Elder Wu's mood, so they only tried out using their Spiritual Awareness once and then immediately stopped, gazing at the Heaven Seizing Pill with their naked eyes, but no longer using Spiritual Awareness to probe.

The wind also appeared without any sign, nobody was able to sense it clearly except for Elder Wu. The wind without any origin appeared inside of the Heaven Seizing Pill, if it were not for Elder Wu enveloping the entire space with his Spiritual Awareness, he would basically be incapable of sensing it.

The plum sized form of a Heaven Seizing Pill suddenly reduced in size once again under everyone's concentrated gazes, but Elder Wu wrinkled his brows.

The wind of the tribulation from the records would blow through the six internal organs of his body, pass over his dantian, penetrate his nine orifices, clear away the meat and blood from his body and dissolve his body itself. Currently the size of the Heaven Seizing Pill was becoming even smaller. Wouldn't that mean that it reflected the description removing the blood and flesh and then dissolving the body itself? Yang Chen had said that this Heaven Seizing Pill seemed to have an inherent weakness, looking at the current situation this seemed to make perfect sense.

But for the time being, the Heaven Seizing Pill would have no problems, Elder Wu had already sensed this. He still didn't dare to lower his guard though, because the second wind was already approaching.

Second wind, third wind... with each wind, the Heaven Seizing Pill became even smaller. Under Elder Wu's careful support, after surviving through the sixth tribulation wind, the Heaven Seizing Pill had reached its limit at last.

The appearance of the small dragon had thoroughly transformed by this point, the very small dragon was wiggling like a living animal after the sixth wind tribulation and very quickly curled up into a ball, turning into a real, plump pill. On the outer surface of the pill, a flying jade dragon was engraved on it, drawn with its head facing upwards. But Elder Wu knew this was the pill mark of the Heaven Seizing Pill. The reason why it could form this kind of shape was because of using the constituent spirit of poisonous flood dragon as pill spirit.

The consciousness of the pill spirit had already been thoroughly erased, only leaving behind the will that had resisted the heavenly calamities and ascended. The unfortunate thing was, that it could only support itself up to the sixth layer, but it couldn't support itself in the last three.

But the heavenly calamity would not just stop because the pill had reached its limit, the seventh tribulation wind immediately appeared. Elder Wu finally used the preparations he had made long ago and a formidable Spirit Power immediately entered the Heaven

Seizing Pill and began to resist that wind.

This was an experience which everyone would yearn for, if this was any other pill in place of the Heaven Seizing Pill, then maybe he would not make such an all out effort like this, but this would have great benefits for his upcoming tribulation. Just this experience was completely acceptable for Elder Wu, even if the refining failed.

Once the tribulation wind came in contact with the resisting Spirit Power, the tribulation wind immediately attacked the master of this Spirit Power. It followed along that Spirit Power and directly made its way into Elder Wu's body. Elder Wu began to resist this tribulation wind and at the same time he also started doing everything he could, in order to experience the sensation of this tribulation wind wreaking havoc in his body.

The tribulation wind was directed against the Heaven Seizing Pill, but it absolutely wasn't more powerful than the Heavenly Tribulation of Elder Wu himself, this was a very small tribulation wind, when it passed from Elder Wu's five viscera and six bowels, apart from some resistance, the only other distinct thing that Elder Wu sensed, was a feeling as if it was purifying his soul and body after the tribulation wind had passed.

Perhaps, this was one of the benefits after ascending to heavens, but the tribulation wind, which was originally meant for the Heaven Seizing Pill, had conveniently been received by Elder Wu. After resisting that kind of tribulation wind, Elder Wu almost started laughing.

This was the seventh tribulation wind, following which were the even more formidable eighth and then ninth layers. The final three tribulation winds of the heavenly calamity made Elder Wu increase his guard to experience the last three tribulations. The tribulation winds entering would also strengthen his body to some extent.

After Elder Wu resisted the ninth tribulation wind, the pill hanging in the sky suddenly trembled because of the power which passed it, and like an arrow loosened from its bow, it disappeared within a flash from everyone's eyes. This drew a cry of surprise from everyone standing underneath, but at the same time it gave everyone even more of a shock, such a heaven defying elixir! It could actually escape after being taken out of the furnace?

Elder Wu's silhouette also disappeared suddenly. Elder Wu had been guarding against it, how could he allow the Heaven Seizing Pill to escape? In just the time it takes to blink, Elder Wu's silhouette appeared in another direction, in his hand was a pea sized, trembling, jade colored pill.

In front of everyone's eyes, Elder Wu completely wrapped it inside of several talismans and even after that, Elder Wu brought out a small jade box, on top of which several sealing spell formations were engraved. He carefully put the pill that was already wrapped in binding talismans into the box and closed it afterwards.

When everyone had thought that Elder Wu was going to come down, in the sky, Elder Wu seemingly thought of something, slightly shook his head and once again fished out a slightly larger

jade box, also filled with spell formations, and placed the slightly smaller box into it.

Even after this he was not satisfied and instead of coming down, he simply took out a lump of jade stones and manufactured many jade boxes of different sizes on the spot. He engraved sealing formations into all of them and started putting them inside one another, one by one, according to their size.

Looking at this, apart from Yang Chen, everyone was flabbergasted. The more serious Elder Wu was about this matter, the more it implied how heaven defying the pill really was. They had already endured the constant urge to take a look at how this Heaven Seizing Pill was until now.

After elder Wu descended from the sky in front of everyone, all they could see was, that he had already placed the big jade box, which contained the Heaven Seizing Pill, into his qiankun pouch, making all of them anxious.

“This is a pill which none of you would be able to control!”

Elder Wu smiled and shook his head while explaining, but these words of his only made everyone even more envious.

“Perhaps, you should ask young friend Yang about the problem with the pil earlier, isn’t that so?”

Elder Wu reminded everyone, allowing the pill concocting

masters to react.

Only, not waiting for them to speak, Elder Wu once again opened his mouth, and said to He LianYun:

“He, if you agree to a bet, you must accept the loss. Hand over your Real Sun Fire. Before I ascend, I will go and find another flame for you!”

# Chapter 82 - Guiding The Seniors

Asking for the Real Sun Fire from He LianYun clearly illustrated one point: That Elder Wu was extremely satisfied with Yang Chen's exceptional work this time.

But naturally, asking for the flame from He LianYun would give rise to his resent, even though he was also one of the guests invited by Elder Wu. But Elder Wu was worthy of being called Elder Wu, he immediately gave him a way out, that was that he would look for a Flame for He LianYun before ascending.

He Lianyun wanted to offer some other things to Yang Chen in order to not lose his Real Sun Fire and he had nearly succeeded in preserving his fire, but after Elder Wu had asked, all of his plans had flown out of the window. But with Elder Wu promising him to look for a new flame, beneath his hidden anger, He LianYun was also a little grateful.

Although immediately handing over the Real Sun Flame would cause his cultivation to fall by a great margin, but having witnessed this pill tribulation at such close range and adding onto that Elder Wu's promise, that he would find him another flame, as long as he was able to obtain another flame, his cultivation would be recovered quickly.

This was a good deal, so He LianYun was very grateful, but he immediately thought of another idea. If he did not hand over the Real Sun Flame, then Elder Wu could help Yang Chen look for another flame, nothing would be changed, wouldn't that be even

better?

People would always be greedy, when they would be able to get even more benefits, they would naturally not be satisfied with what they had in front of them. He LianYun was also like this, so even when Elder Wu provided him with a way out and even offered enough compensation, he was still as resentful as before and had extravagant hopes.

He LianYun even began to feel some hatred towards Yang Chen. This time, Yang Chen should have shown his respect for the seniors and immediately dissuaded Elder Wu, telling him that the bet was just a joke, so that everyone could dismiss it with a laugh. But that damned Yang Chen had not done this, instead he was looking towards him with a smile as if this was as it should be.

Yang Chen's annoying smile felt like chains binding He LianYun's body, making him feel extremely uncomfortable. At this moment, he had completely forgotten his calm and confident behaviour, with which he had suggested to seize Yang Chen's flame previously.

Elder Wu had always kept his words as the great elder of the Immortal Falling Well, even if he was not at the Immortal Falling Well at that moment. When Elder Wu had finished speaking, Deng Yi and Zhu Peng could also only wait until this matter was over, to discuss about it later, even though they were enormously curious.

Nobody had spoken in favour of He LianYun. If the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill had failed after the black colored waste was produced, then maybe Deng Yi and Zhu Peng would have



supported He LianYun in suppressing Yang Chen, as a favor to him, but currently, nobody could say anything, they didn't have the qualifications to say anything.

He Lianyun wanted to beg for mercy, but asking for forgiveness from Elder Wu was of no use, unless Yang Chen was willing. But making a YuanYing stage pill concocting master ask for forgiveness from someone who had barely reached the foundation stage. He LianYun would rather kill himself. Looking at Yang Chen, calmly waiting for him, He LianYun clenched his fists, blue veins were revealed all over his whole body, but he still didn't say even a word of asking for forgiveness from Yang Chen.

The flame could only be handed if both parties consented, otherwise, even if the cultivation was higher, forcibly wresting the control of the flame was impossible and the only result would be the flame extinguishing along with the other party dying. If He LianYun wanted renege on his debt, then Elder Wu had no other way than killing him. The problem was, He LianYun absolutely did not want to die just because of this reason, most of all by the hands of Elder Wu, who had already let go of all worldly matters and was going to ascend.

Therefore, He LianYun had no option other than to hand over his flame. Apart from just the embarrassment of being forced to hand over the flame, because the others had never before experienced the process of handing over a flame and it's aftermath, they intentionally requested him to give his consent, just so they could see the event and the aftermath as spectators. This made He LianYun feel even more embarrassment.

Yes, He LianYun was feeling humiliated. Most of all at the fact, that when he was down, the others were throwing stones at him. Even the Heavens knew that Deng Yi and Zhu Peng didn't support him just because of their curiosity as pill concocting masters. But even if He LianYun harbored a grudge against them, in this situation, He LianYun would not dare to take any action, let alone Elder Wu on the side, even if he considered a one on one fight, he was a pill concocting master who was not much of an opponent for the people there, except for Yang Chen.

But who among the people there would allow him to harm even a hair of Yang Chen? Therefore, He LianYun could only honor his commitment at the time when Elder Wu wanted to celebrate obtaining the Heaven Seizing Pill.

He LianYun would very much like not to pay anything, but that was impossible. Of course he wanted to retain a little bit of pride for being a YuanYing stage senior in front of Yang Chen. After looking at Yang Chen with a gaze filled with bitter resentment, He LianYun began to force out his flame.

The pain of the flame being stripped off and the humiliation he felt because of these other people watching him, forced He LianYun to faint at the final stage. After the flame was stripped off, his cultivation fell sharply, originally he was at the YuanYing stage, but now he had fallen to the JieDan stage, and furthermore to the initial JieDan stage.

The Real Sun Fire was worthy of being called one of the most powerful flames of the mortal world. In his previous life, Yang Chen ascended from the Da Cheng in one stroke stage with the

support of the Real Sun Fire. Because he lost the flame, He LianYun had fallen by one whole realm, this was also a warning for Deng Yi and Zhu Peng. In the future, even if they were beaten to death, they would still not casually gamble over other people's flames, similarly, if it wasn't that important, then they would not try to seize the flames of other people, but most of all they would never bet their flame against Yang Chen for any reason.

In an oil lamp, engraved with complex sealing spell formations, the Real Sun Fire was calmly burning on top of the core of the lamp. If they didn't know, they wouldn't believe that this pea sized flame was actually a well known flame in the whole world, the Real Sun Fire.

This oil lamp was also something refined by Elder Wu. It was actually refined just before beginning the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill. It was a magic tool that was specially refined to preserve the Real Sun Fire. Although Elder Wu was not a fire attributed cultivator, he could still make this kind of magic tool effortlessly. And this made it sufficiently clear, that Elder Wu had never wanted He LianYun slip by from the beginning, after all, He LianYun's behaviour earlier had really lost Elder Wu a lot of face. Naturally, he would not forget such a good method of punishing him.

After putting on the lid properly, he delivered this oil lamp to Yang Chen. After he was given an elixir, He LianYun soon woke up with leisure, but Elder Wu and Yang Chen's gazes were somewhat different when compared to before.

“Young friend Yang, what did you mean by saying inherent

weakness?”

Only after everyone had recovered their consciousness did Elder Wu ask the question which was on everyone’s minds.

“There was still problem with the pill spirit.”

Yang Chen had nothing to hide regarding this, in any case, everyone could already somewhat guess the reason, so concealing it wouldn’t be as good as speaking generously.

“From the beginning, I had felt that a weak pill spirit would be unable to seize the heavens.”

This was the view Yang Chen that had insisted on from the beginning, moreover he had also raised this issue at that time when they were dealing with the pill spirit, but the other pill concocting masters had forcefully insisted on doing it. Furthermore, if the pill spirit was powerful, then those three pill concocting masters would be unable to properly control and refine it, therefore they had adopted that method of dominating the pill spirit discarding everything else.

Currently, talking about this topic again had clearly hit the nerves of these three pill concocting masters. Embarrassment couldn’t be hidden on the faces of all three.

“You felt?”

But Elder Wu comprehended the meaning hidden between Yang Chen's words and somewhat suspiciously asked him:

“You only felt it?”

“Naturally!”

Yang Chen smiled and asked Elder Wu:

“Elder Wu, are you in any way under the impression that I know everything about the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

His words made the three YuanYing stage experts, no, currently only two YuanYing and one JieDan stage expert, somewhat stunned. Yang Chen had previously displayed that sort of confidence, could it all actually be based on just a guess?

“Then why did you previously say that it could still be rescued from just a minor look?”

Deng Yi rushed to ask the question before Elder Wu. Zhu Peng had also barely opened his mouth but Deng Yi had grabbed the chance first and he immediately closed his mouth, but suspicion and expectation were still mixed in his gaze.

“Because the pill spirit hadn't died!”

Yang Chen replied. At that time, everyone had lost faith because

they had not been able to congeal the pill, but Yang Chen didn't. Perhaps this was the reason for his faith.

“Please forgive me for taking liberties, but what kind of pill congealing technique did you use?”

Deng Yi rarely used the word please, moreover to first apologize and then ask the question, this was completely different from her image of a YuanYing stage senior, but at this moment nobody thought that this was inappropriate.

“Congealing the pill?”

Yang Chen smiled.

“In reality, what I did in the end was just making the pill spirit strong. I basically did not congeal the pill. All of this had already been properly done by you beforehand. When the pill spirit became strong, the pill automatically congealed, I basically did not do anything at all.

At that time the three pill concocting masters had basically guessed what kind of trick Yang Chen had used. From the beginning, using the waste of their failure as basis, he made the pill spirit rise from death and afterwards, with the support of everyone's Spirit Power, he restored the pill spirit to the highest realm that it could reach and in the end succeeded in one go.

Naturally, everyone also realized what Yang Chen meant by the

words inherent weakness. The weak pill spirit had turned into a vigorous and lively pill spirit when nourished by Yang Chen's fine powder, which was completely different from the original one, but, although the Heaven Seizing Pill had been refined successfully in the end, it was still unable to pass the wind tribulation, which meant that it was still some distance away from a completely perfect pill. This was a fact no one could deny.

Looking at Yang Chen speaking frankly with such confidence, He LianYun felt defeated in his heart. Resentment and dissatisfaction filled his heart, he did not want to see Yang Chen display even a little pride. As soon as Deng Yi had finished asking everything, He LianYun immediately opened his mouth and impatiently asked:

“You say you guess all of this? But you were certain about the pill tribulation!”

“Naturally, a pill which could make people ascend, if itself did not pass through tribulation, then how could it make people ascend?”

Yang Chen replied at once without hesitating.

Yang Chen's were exactly on point, which made He LianYun think that looking for an opportunity to question him further was a bad idea. Moreover this was not the time for questioning, instead it was to ask for guidance, whatever Yang Chen said, nobody could question it. Just a moment ago, when He LianYun had raised this question, Deng Yi and Elder Wu had already wrinkled their brows.

“You must not misunderstand, I just find it very strange, Yang Chen, according to reason, you are just a qi layer disciple who had barely reached the foundation stage, how can you know so many things?”

He LianYun immediately changed his way of asking, his tone also became very soft and a smile could be seen on his face.

“These things about the YuanYing stage and the Da Cheng stage, if I am not wrong, you could not come in contact with these things in any sect, based on your cultivation, right?”

He LianYun’s words also addressed the suspicions of the other people. Yang Chen’s performance was too eye catching, to the point that he had outshined even the YuanYing experts. Even those who had not doubted him, also had an intense curiosity. A qi layer disciple, how could he comprehend these things?

“This is not a big deal!”

Surprisingly the one who replied was not Yang Chen, but rather Elder Wu.

“Young friend Yang’s cultivation style is different from us, in his free time at the sect, he had completely learned all of the hundreds of thousands of jade slips of their Hidden Pavilion at the Nine Earth Manor. Although his cultivation isn’t very high, he knows about many kinds of strange things. This old man chatted with him on the whole journey while returning. People who have as much knowledge as him are rare.”



This was thanks to Yang Chen chatting happily with Elder Wu on the way back, the knowledge that he had shown was not at all inferior to some high level experts of those great sects who had been training for a long time. Especially in the field in which Elder Wu was interested, thus he had obtained Elder Wu's favor. Yang Chen understood the concept that the first impression was the strongest very well, in addition to that he was also not so dumb as to be unable to understand Elder Wu.

“Hundreds of thousands of jade slips stored? Learned completely?” The YuanYing experts and the JieDan expert were all perplexed. Among the cultivators in this world, who was not trying to crazily increase their cultivation or seek elixirs, cultivation methods, magic weapons, spirit veins and so on. Who was so free among them to learn about various strange things? Moreover learn hundreds of thousands of jade slips?

No wonder Elder Wu had said that Yang Chen's way of cultivation was different from them, not to mention other things, just to be able to spend so much time, was not something they were able to understand. In that case, Yang Chen knowing many things was justified.

Once they had this thought, they all became excited within their hearts, should they also learn those anecdotes which they had never even put an eye on? It had to be known that Yang Chen was still at the qi layer when he was able to arrange a spell formation of other attributes with his flame and activate it. They were all quite inferior to him in that matter, could it be that he may have gained some insight from these?

The problem was not that big, actually everyone had clearly understood that. The pill concocting masters had still done most of the work in refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, Yang Chen had only conveniently taken care of the last juncture. Their only mistake was that they were not able to handle the pill spirit properly, this kind of result allowed everyone to feel happy in their hearts, at least it would not be like they could not gain the reputation for successfully refining a Heaven Seizing Pill.

“I request everyone to take some rest, this old man is going to take young friend Yang back to the Immortal Falling Well, we will chat more when I return!”

By now, the matter regarding the Heaven Refining Pill had ended, so Elder Wu had begun to hand out the rewards, naturally the first in line would be Yang Chen.

# Chapter 83 - These Are For You

The things Elder Wu promised were different for different people, otherwise he would not be honoring their commitment. But Yang Chen was also suspicious in that his performance this time was too excessive, so Elder Wu may not know how to reward Yang Chen all of a sudden, therefore he could only send him back personally for the time being.

Elder Wu had taken Yang Chen away so hurriedly because he feared that these three would use his influence to ask Yang Chen for the recipe to manufacture the fine powder he had used to nourished the pill spirit, which would lead to a disagreement between Yang Chen and them; so after the refining had been successful, he immediately took Yang Chen and departed. The other people would not leave alone without his instructions, and even if they wanted to leave, they could only leave after he had arranged for Yang Chen. To put it crudely, they would have a hard time breaking the tens of layer of restrictions he placed.

Elder Wu hadn't expected much help from Yang Chen during the refining, but he actually ended up rescuing the pill. Among the most reputed pill concocting masters in this mortal world, only a handful of people could do something like that.

On the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle, Yang Chen was sitting in front of Elder Wu with the table in between them, holding Elder Wu's strong tea in their hands and enjoying it with satisfaction.

“Young friend Yang, I don't know how to thank you!”

After drinking the tea, Elder Wu lowered his cup and smiled towards Yang Chen.

“If you had not pulled this off at the last moment, not to mention refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, even my mental state could have been influenced. Someday I would have to ascend, at that time, maybe I could have perished because of this. You have done me a great favor by saving my life, which I can not repay!”

“The heavens help the worthy, Elder Wu. This is your good fortune; it has nothing to do with me.”

Yang Chen waved his hand, without growing arrogant. Elder Wu himself was, if Yang Chen remembered it correctly, a super expert of the spiritual world in his previous life, in those days he had not heard that Elder Wu had ascended with the help of a Heaven Seizing Pill, therefore no matter what, Yang Chen would never admit that he had done him the favor of saving his life.

Speaking of this, this time Yang Chen had gained enormous benefits. Refining and purifying the highest quality blue-green zoysia had allowed Yang Chen to enter into the ranks of the foundation stage, and even the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets had been improved by one step. Because of the large amount of Spiritual Awareness and medicinal strength, the Profound Spirit Furnace had also been upgraded by one grade during the final step of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, directly going from a low grade magic tool to a middle stage magic tool.

Even without considering this, the bet with He LianYun to get his hands on the Real Sun Fire. The Real Sun Fire was the flame Yang Chen was most familiar with. In his previous life it could display at least ten times more strength within him than He LianYun. As long as the Real Sun Fire was absorbed, there would be another increase in grade for the Profound Spirit Furnace and in addition to that, Yang Chen's cultivation would most likely also be raised.

But the biggest benefits were not these, instead it was the reputation he had gained from refining the Heaven Seizing Pill. Having this reputation also meant that Yang Chen's name as a pill concocting master would be thoroughly established, so in the future a number of experts, as countless as the stars in the sky, would seek Yang Chen in order to obtain high grade elixirs, and Yang Chen would become even more safe.

As for the Pure Yang Palace, they would absolutely regard Yang Chen as the most valuable disciple, and at that time, let alone Chu Heng, even Chu Heng's master would not be able to touch even a single hair of Yang Chen.

“The heavens help the worthy, he he!”

Elder Wu shook his head and said with bitter laugh.

“If that really was the case, then why didn't the refining succeed the first time, and required it to be remedied?”

“Forgive me for speaking bluntly but there are always ups and downs.”

Yang Chen calmly replied on this subject.

“At the end of the day, whether you have the Heaven Seizing Pill or not, does it still actually make a difference to you, Senior?”

Hearing this, Elder Wu’s eyes immediately shone, twinkling with a radiance and unable suppress his emotions. Apparently he was looking through the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle, even seeing through all of the obstructions in front of it.

“Yes, ups and downs there are indeed, but this kind of problem, how many people could think of it?”

Experts are always lonely, but the thing that made Elder Wu glad, was the person in front of him, who could understand his thoughts. Although the difference between their cultivation was very vast, this did not influence their relationship. The more Elder Wu saw Yang Chen, the more they chatted and the more they hit it off, the more he approved of him. Most of all Yang Chen’s last sentence was basically the most beautiful flattery.

“You are correct.”

Elder Wu smiled and said:

“I have already seen the pill tribulation, at this very moment, having the Heaven Seizing Pill is just meaningless for me.”

“Congratulations Senior!”

Yang Chen cupped his hands in salute to congratulate Elder Wu.

“Elder Wu must not depend on tricks at the time of ascending, his days of being able to move unhindered in the spiritual world are just around the corner!”

This was not Yang Chen flattering him, with regards to matters of cultivation, the more the realm is raised without depending on worldly possessions, the more tremendous their power would be after the realm was raised. Currently Elder Wu had such confidence, so his chance of success had to be even higher than Yang Chen remembered.

“I’m taking advantage of your encouraging words!”

Elder Wu also cupped his hands and after a moment, beaming with smiles, he said to Yang Chen:

“Originally I didn’t know how to express my gratitude to you, young friend. But these words reminded me of something.”

While he was speaking, a jade box appeared on the table between the two people.

“A small present from me. Although it won’t be able to express the depths of my gratitude to you!”

While speaking, Elder Wu pushed that jade box in Yang Chen's direction.

“Young friend Yang, you must not decline it.”

This jade box was precisely the box in which Elder Wu had sealed the Heaven Seizing Pill after it survived the pill tribulation, inside of the box was the Heaven Seizing Pill, bound by several layers of talismans. Surprisingly, Elder Wu had used this Heaven Seizing Pill as the reward for refining the Heaven Seizing Pill and gifted it to Yang Chen.

Yang Chen looked at Elder Wu with a perplexed gaze, but Elder Wu pushed the box a bit further with a smile on his face. The smile was completely sincere without a bit of reluctance. On the contrary; it was as if he was freed from something and had gained enlightenment.

“Since Senior has bestowed this to me, this Yang Chen will receive it shamelessly!”

After some pondering, Yang Chen nodded and stored the jade box in his qiankun pouch. After putting it away, he cupped his hands towards Elder Wu again:

“Congratulations, Senior, you have finally thrown away the shackles and obtained freedom.”



Yang Chen had not said these words without giving any thought, in Elder Wu's mind, there was a lot of attachment to the Heaven Seizing Pill previously. Yang Chen had noticed it by the behaviour of Elder Wu when the refining had failed. Now Elder Wu was not only full of confidence but was also not reluctant to let the Heaven Seizing Pill go. It could be said that, at the moment Elder Wu had passed the Heaven Seizing Pill towards him, Elder Wu had severed his strong attachment to the Heaven Seizing Pill.

Yang Chen's congratulations were perfectly fit Elder Wu's situation at this moment. This conversation felt just like a meeting between two friends who perfectly understood each other.

All of a sudden Elder Wu thought something big. At this moment, only this young man in front of him was his most intimate friend. His joy, his discouragement, his restrictions, his comfort, everything was clearly understood by Yang Chen. To be able to meet such an interesting youngster before ascending could really make people forget their regrets.

“In this mortal world, I cannot help you much. The most I can do is to suppress He LianYun.”

At this moment, Elder Wu already treated Yang Chen as a close friend who could talk to him as equal, so he spoke freely with him.

“Someday in the future, when younger brother ascends to the spiritual world, you must look for this older brother!”

How could Elder Wu not see He LianYun's bitter resentment for

Yang Chen? The reason why he had taken away He LianYun's flame after the refining had been completed, was mostly because he was taking this into consideration. He had also made plans for the matters of the future, at least he could guarantee that, until Yang Chen would grow to the same realm as He LianYun, He LianYun could do absolutely nothing to Yang Chen.

“Many thanks, elder brother Wu, for your support!”

Yang Chen directly changed his address, but Elder Wu did not think that he was being disrespectful, instead was glad from the inside. If anyone could hear how these two were addressing each other, they would be too stunned to say anything. A Da Cheng stage expert who was going to ascend soon, Elder Wu, was unexpectedly calling Yang Chen as younger brother and was claiming himself to be elder brother? Not to mention other things, just the difference seniority alone was sufficient to make ninety nine percent of cultivators go speechless.

“I had promised He LianYun to look for a flame for him, if younger brother is worried that he will threaten you after obtaining the flame, then I might as well not play honestly!”

The communication between these two people clearly showed that Elder Wu no longer considered Yang Chen as an outsider and began to plot with him. For a Da Cheng stage expert to defraud the initial JieDan stage He LianYun was very easy.

“No need, no need!”

Yang Chen immediately shook his head.

“Before doing anything, I will wait for a good chance and once again go to snatch his flame. Elder brother, by all means you must not ruin my plans!”

These words implied that he was being arrogant, but after pondering for some time, Elder Wu had to agree, Yang Chen really did have the qualifications to be arrogant. Not just anybody could participate in the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill at the qi layer and even fewer could refine a Heaven Seizing Pill at the foundation stage. Yang Chen held these accomplishments, his future prospects were already limitless, how could a narrow minded person like He LianYun be compared to him.

“Hahahaha, younger brother’s way of doing things is really to the taste of this elder brother! Fine, I won’t meddle with you, so that I don’t ruin younger brother’s plans.”

Elder Wu burst into hearty laughter and did not say anything more on this, instead he changed the topic.

“Younger brother, what do you plan to do next? Will you still stay in the Immortal Falling Well for the next few years? As I remember, even adding in the time you spent in concocting pills, only seven years have passed in the Immortal Falling Well, according to the rules, you can still stay for three years.”

“No longer!”

Yang Chen shook his head.

“I had come to the Immortal Falling Well in order to train and gain experience. Currently I have already built my foundation successfully. Staying at the Immortal Falling Well would have no more significance. I will return to sect and formally take a master.”

A grimace flashed across his face when Elder Wu heard this. Even though Yang Chen had this much knowledge and techniques, he still wanted to take on a master? But he had no option but to admit that Yang Chen’s words were reasonable, once again. He had already reached the foundation stage, naturally he would become an inner disciple and the sect would surely use a great amount of resources to cultivate him. Although Elder Wu had intended to cultivate him, he was after all a loose cultivator, and his attribute was moreover different from Yang Chen’s, so what was suitable for Elder Wu, may not be suitable for Yang Chen. He also did not know that Yang Chen had both types of all the five attributes. As a loose cultivator, Elder Wu naturally knew the advantages of associating with big sects, so Yang Chen’s decision was not wrong, on the contrary: it was the most sensible choice.

“Since you have decided, why don’t I directly take you back to your sect?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s words, Elder Wu asked the question that came to his mind. If he personally took Yang Chen back to sect, then the Pure Yang Palace would naturally view Yang Chen in a new light and he could also spend some more time with Yang Chen.

“Nevertheless, let’s return to the Immortal Falling Well first!”

Yang Chen didn’t agree directly.

“I still have some unfinished affairs at the Immortal Falling Well, moreover I also need to settle some personal grudges and as soon as I resolve those, it will not be late to return to the sect then.”

“Do you require my help?”

Elder Wu didn’t regard Yang Chen as an outsider, so he directly asked.

“A few foundation stage competitors, how could they be worthy of elder brother personally disposing of them!”

Yang Chen once again laughed, while shaking his head.

“That wouldn’t be good for elder brother’s prestige!”

“Since it’s like this, this elder brother won’t say anything.”

Elder Wu had also thought about it: based on Yang Chen’s reputation in the Immortal Falling Well, as long as he asked, Elder Wu was convinced, that a countless number of people would be ready to settle Yang Chen’s grudges, but if he fought himself, then he would get the reputation of bullying the weak.

But Elder Wu did not disregard Yang Chen and after thinking for some time, he took out a qiankun pouch, put some things into it and passed it on to Yang Chen.

“You will become an inner disciple soon, but this elder brother hasn’t gifted you anything, you have only entered foundation stage recently, so you must not have any flying sword.”

Elder Wu said after thinking thoroughly and pointed his finger at the qiankun pouch.

“Inside this is a flying sword which I had obtained from a fire attributed cultivator after I had killed him, you should test it later to check if it’s suitable to you, this will be my gift for you on reaching foundation stage.”

“In addition, since you will become an inner disciple soon, you will surely receive your own immortal cave soon.”

Yang Chen didn’t even have the time to refuse, when Elder Wu already continued:

“There are also a hundred thousand spirit essences, when the time comes, arrange them in your immortal cave, they can increase the spiritual influence in your immortal cave.”

Seeing that Yang Chen still had the intentions to decline, Elder Wu waved his hand:

“You must not decline, your elder brother can still obtain these things, moreover after ascending, these will have no use for me, so they might as well help you.”

Yang Chen forced a bitter laugh, but didn't decline anymore and accepted them. Truth be told, these things were like grains of rice to Yang Chen, he already had a few too many, it was just that Elder Wu's kind intentions made Yang Chen feel warm.

“When you cultivate in the future, you must conceal your strength and bide your time, if your performance is too flashy, it will not be good for you.”

Following this, Elder Wu sincerely instructed him:

“You must keep yourself safe and by no means reveal your talent unless necessary. Younger brother must not blame elder brother for saying this. You have the Heaven Seizing Pill, and ascending will not be a problem, so it is not worth it to stake it all against other people.”

This was all priceless advice. Yang Chen was listening and nodding, regardless of whether or not he would act according to it, but he was sincerely grateful to Elder Wu for his kind intentions.

“Although the Pure Yang Palace isn't any great sect, its strength is also not too weak.”

After speaking about Yang Chen, he started to talk about Yang

Chen's sect.

“I remember that having a sect's strength has many uses, it is much more convenient when compared to being a lone wolf like me.”

Yang Chen could almost not keep up with nodding. Elder Wu was completely instructing him like his own junior. Ordinary people could not enjoy this kind of mutual affection.

“Hu!”

Finally, Elder Wu took a long breath and said with a smile:

“Then I will wait for younger brother in the spiritual world! We have already arrived at the Immortal Falling Well, you must go immediately!”

At that time, the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle had already arrived at the Li Lou Village of the Immortal Falling Well.



# Chapter 84 - Originally I Had Been Waiting

When they had left Li Lou village, the Heavenly Fleeing Shuttle had taken a time of more than a day to reach the villa where Elder Wu was refining the herbs, but while returning it had only taken them the time to chat for some time and drink a few cups of tea. From this, it could be seen that Elder Wu had gained great benefits during this pill concoction.

Elder Wu didn't appear at Li Lou village himself, instead he directly dropped Yang Chen off at his small room. Because Elder Wu's cultivation was that high, nobody was able to discover him. Everyone could at most sense that Yang Chen had suddenly appeared out of thin air there.

Yang Chen had indeed returned to the Immortal Falling Well to settle the past grudges. Among those people who had chased him at the magma lake, only Peng Hui and one other person had received the judgement, however the other people were free and unfettered.

Obtaining the identities of these people was an extremely simple matter for Yang Chen. A countless number of people had thought of using various sorts of methods to get close to Yang Chen, to curry favour with him, only the identities of a few foundation stage cultivators, nobody had any advantages from keeping them, while they could use them to get a chance to get close to Yang Chen, this kind of opportunity, who would miss it? When Yang Chen had left Li Lou Village with Elder Wu, he had already known the identities of those few people.

Yang Chen would absolutely not let these people get away, at most they had cultivations at the of peak foundation stage, but they were not in a situation where they were about to congeal their dan, at least not within ten years. Yang Chen's ability to make discerning judgements was very good, there was no way he would misjudge.

Yang Chen was going to wait within Li Lou Village and find them one by one. In any case, Elder Wu would not appear himself to stop him within the Immortal Falling Well, so naturally he had to resolve his grudges within the Immortal Falling Well.

In addition to this, Yang Chen also had business to attend to or perhaps even a few businesses. After he had reached the foundation stage, his Profound Spirit Furnace and sword box, both hadn't been refined because of a lack of time, but luckily this time in the Immortal Falling Well, he could properly refine them.

When Yang Chen had released his Spiritual Awareness outside of his room, he suddenly heard a surprised voice:

“Is Great Master Yang inside?”

Following which, a figure hastily ran over. After clearly seeing that it was Yang Chen, he could not help but rejoice and said in a loud voice:

“Great Master Yang has returned!”

Great Master Yang has returned! This news immediately caused a commotion in Li Lou Village. It had already been more than three years, close to four, since he had been taken away by Elder Wu, but currently Yang Chen had suddenly appeared at Li Lou Village again without the slightest damage to even his hair, what did this mean? This clearly showed Elder Wu's matters had already finished and the most important thing was, that Yang Chen had completed the task of the Da Cheng stage expert, Elder Wu.

Nobody among them was blind, Yang Chen had already entered the foundation stage, everyone could see this. Following after Elder Wu for a few years, he had reached initial foundation stage from the peak qi layer, if Elder Wu was not pleased with him, why would he guide Yang Chen like this?

Elder Wu wanted something done and Yang Chen had accomplished it, this also signified that Yang Chen had the ability to obtain Elder Wu's approval. In addition to that, the current Yang Chen had already reached the foundation stage. The increase in his strength implied that he could now refine even higher level pills. Many people still remembered Yang Chen's words that before leaving the Immortal Falling Well, he would be able to make third grade pills, his cultivation had now also increased, was he already able to do it?

"I want to look for the whereabouts of a few people!"

Yang Chen did not hide his aim in the slightest and directly said\_

“I want to be informed immediately when they return to Li Lou Village! As for the reward, I will refine a second grade foundation stage pill!”

After saying this, Yang Chen announced the identities of those people one by one.

Great Master Yang had already tried to find these people at an earlier time, this was not a secret at Li Lou Village. For him to raise the same matter again together with the increase in Yang Chen’s cultivation, how could these people not understand what he wanted to do?

Who would raise an objection and take the side of these people? If they wanted to blame someone, they could only blame themselves for offending Great Master Yang without any reason. Some people had already made efforts to find out what happened, apparently, these people had jointly attacked Great Master Yang a few years ago. Leaving aside the fact that killing within Immortal Falling Well was already violating the rules, just the fact that they had chased him to kill, made many people feel indignant at the injustice.

But previously Great Master Yang hadn’t asked for their help in taking care of them, so nobody dared to act blindly, without thinking, in case Great Master Yang wanted to get rid of them personally in revenge and wipe out the grudge. If they did it in his place, he would not find that pleasing. Currently Yang Chen was surprisingly giving them the opportunity to have a second grade foundation stage pill refined in exchange for the locations of those people, which made everyone pleased beyond expectations.

“I know, I know!”

One by one, people excitedly raised their hands and pushed forward among the crowd under the envious looks of other people. Under Yang Chen’s invitation, they followed Yang Chen to enter his room, not knowing what to say. Nobody dared to use their Spiritual Awareness to probe inside, after a moment, a person came out from the inside full of smiles, he seemed to be floating from happiness.

There was no need to ask, everyone knew that he had obtained those benefits. Thinking of the benefits a second grade foundation stage pill could bring them, even if all of them were already at the foundation stage, it still made them drool. Regardless of what they were doing, as soon as they would discover any traces of those people, they would immediately return to inform Yang Chen.

After bestowing the rewards on those ecstatic guys, Yang Chen put a warning spell formation outside of his small room and afterwards he went inside and planned to refine the Profound Spirit Furnace and the sword box. Apart from Elder Wu, there still wasn’t anyone who would dare to kill within the Immortal Falling Well, so Yang Chen was very relieved. The warning spell formation was only there to notify him if someone had new information, that’s all.

After arranging everything properly, Yang Chen took out the Profound Spirit Furnace and started with the finest details. After going through being influenced by the medicinal qi of the Heaven Seizing Pill, the Profound Spirit Furnace had now turned blue-

green and had moreover increased by one grade. The original aura of a treasure was no longer there, instead it began to evolve and turned inwards.

The Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets had already entered the ninth qi layer. Previously his Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining secrets and Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation secrets were both refined by the fire attribute alone to the fourth layer of heavenly stars and the sixth layer of earth fiend. After refining them, Yang Chen had used his Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets again, to refine the Profound Spirit Furnace.

The aura of the Profound Spirit Furnace had once again compacted and moreover the spirit threads of Yang Chen's Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets had been improved again. The fourth layer of the Heavenly Stars and sixth layer of the Earth Fiend but compared to the upgrade they had received before with only the fire attributed spirit power, the difference was very great.

His entire body was overflowing with Spirit Power, making Yang Chen have an impulse to be violent. He hadn't fought with anyone for a full four years, his whole body felt kind of rusty. Currently Yang Chen was wishing that he could find those people right away and make them taste the flavour of being chased, after he had reached the foundation stage.

But before that, Yang Chen still had to refine the Sword Box, only then could he use it to kill those people.

The flying sword given to him by Elder Wu was in Yang Chen's hand at that time. It had to be said that Elder Wu had given a lot of

thought to assisting Yang Chen.

Not only that, even the original Spiritual Awareness on the flying sword had been wiped out completely, there was nothing to control it, as long as Yang Chen branded it with his own Spiritual Awareness, based on Yang Chen's current cultivation of foundation stage, he was absolutely able to refine it.

Unfortunately, Yang Chen could still discover that there were some flaws within the flying sword. Perhaps at the JieDan stage he could still rely on the sword, but after reaching the YuanYing stage, no matter how he refined it, he would be unable to refine the flying sword to the highest grade again. Perhaps Elder Wu had given him the flying sword as a self defense weapon without thinking too much about it.

Yang Chen would naturally not use this flying sword as the sword soul of the Sword Box. He merely placed it into the sword box and treated it as an ordinary flying sword. Yang Chen had already made arrangements for the sword soul, but that would require a very long time to find and refine it.

Yang Chen did not need to think about the problem of the sword soul right now. He used the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets to apply the Heavenly Stars Treasure Raising secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation secrets on the Sword Box to refine it again. Afterwards, the sword box that was shaped the same as the blade of the XianTai stage also began to transform, becoming even more simple and unadorned.

Compared to the Profound Spirit Furnace, the sword box was

already refined by the peak JieDan stage expert, so it was already at a very high grade from the beginning. Currently, according to Yang Chen, it had already become a middle grade magic weapon.

Yang Chen would always look forward to refining it even more. Currently he was already a foundation stage expert. After returning to the sect, he would immediately become an inner disciple, following which he could take a master. When he thought that he could see his master's face very soon, Yang Chen was overly excited.

But Yang Chen still forcefully suppressed his urge to immediately return to the sect and choose a master and instead calmed down his heart and patiently waited for the news of those people.

From the qiankun pouches of Peng Hui and the other person he had killed, Yang Chen had already found the compass which could track Yang Chen's position. With his ability, Yang Chen could already determine that this compass could only find the position of his qiankun pouch and not any other disciple of the Pure Yang Palace. This only proved one thing, that from the moment he held the qiankun pouch, his position could already be determined.

He had gotten this qiankun pouch at the Ye Xiu Manor, it was given to him by Wang Yuan personally. That time Wang Yuan was waiting for the the thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, which Yang Chen had promised him, so Wang Yuan would not plot against him, that left only one possibility: Chu Heng. Only the Merit Transferring Disciple had the opportunity and the ability to use such tricks, even Sun Hai Jing wouldn't be able to do that.



Chu Heng had planned against him three to four times already, Yang Chen would naturally not let him get by. But Yang Chen did not want to be accused of killing a disciple of the same sect when he still hadn't become an official disciple or perhaps just after he had become an official disciple, so he could only gather enough evidence against him to punish him by sect's rules. Actually it was not that Yang Chen could not find the opportunity to find a lonely region for getting rid of Chu Heng, but how could that be more refreshing when compared to executing him after he had been convicted and expelled from the sect with nowhere to hide?

After refining everything completely, Yang Chen calmly waited for news of those people. Someone had already told him earlier, that a few of those people had already left the Immortal Falling Well, so Yang Chen could only take care of those after leaving the Immortal Falling Well, but he would absolutely not let those who were still here slip.

The people whom Yang Chen was waiting for did not return to Li Lou Village for half a year. At most they had three more months before they would have to return for replenishment. Yang Chen would get his opportunity when they returned to the Immortal Falling Well.

Unfortunately, even if Yang Chen was the luckiest person in the world, apparently this time his good luck hadn't come closer.

Even three more months after Yang Chen had refined the Sword Box and the Profound Spirit Furnace, nobody among those whom he desired to kill appeared. Sensing that something was abnormal, he took a yuan cultivation pill to the disciple in charge of the

Immortal Falling Well and tried to obtain information from him.

The one disciple on duty did not want to help Yang Chen, because he already disliked Yang Chen because of his incident with Jin Tao previously, so even if Yang Chen was a pill concocting master with boundless prospects, he still didn't fawn over him. But he was also not able to overlook the relations with other people, together with a Yuan cultivation pill, he immediately said the locations of those people.

Those people had already left the Immortal Falling Well, they just happened to depart at the time when this disciple was on duty and they had also departed secretly, so apart from him, nobody was aware of this.

“They really have a long life!”

Yang Chen was not very annoyed by this. Even if they had gone out, they had only been able to escape being chased to death, he was convinced that when the time came, Yang Chen could randomly take out a second grade foundation stage pill and plenty of people would be ready to exchange their heads. It was just that Yang Chen hated this method, where he couldn't kill them personally by chopping off their heads.

Since there was no more use staying here, Yang Chen decided to leave the Immortal Falling Well. Immediately, without stopping anywhere, he found the disciple on duty and returned to the surface by means of the Immortal Falling Well's spell formation.

With his heart set on speeding home, Yang Chen had not even gone fifty miles away from the entrance spell formation of the Immortal Falling Well, when he suddenly sensed several killing intents pressuring him from all directions. After probing with his Spiritual Awareness, a smile immediately appeared on Yang Chen's face.

“I travelled far and wide looking for something, only for it to come find me easily!”

Yang Chen stopped and burst out laughing.

Along with Yang Chen's laughter, at least ten figures appeared in the surroundings, seven of which were definitely those who had chased to kill him at the magma lake. Yang Chen did not recognize the others, so in all likelihood they were here to assist these people.

“To think that a qi layer cultivator could reach the foundation stage within a period of a few years.”

The person speaking was the first one to have chased Yang Chen. Looking at Yang Chen with an ashen complexion, he said with a malevolent smile:

“These few years we had to be careful everywhere in the Immortal Falling Well because of you. Fellow Daoist Yang, for a youngster like you to be able to accomplish this much is already sufficient to be arrogant about. But if you do not die, we cannot eat or live in peace hereafter, so without saying too much, we must

send you on your journey.”

“I had waited for you in the Immortal Falling Well for a whole three months, but I hadn’t anticipated that you would all surprisingly be waiting for me outside of the Immortal Falling Well!”

Yang Chen looked upwards and laughed loudly, and said in a loud voice:

“Very good, very good! Settling it outside is the same to me!”

After speaking, Yang Chen extended his hand and the blade of the XianTai stage appeared within Yang Chen’s hand. Holding the blade at slanted angle, Yang Chen’s gaze swept over the ten people surrounding him, after looking at each and every one, he said:

“There’s someone responsible for every grievance, for every debt there is a debtor, we had not past grudges, but you have all chased me for the kill, so you must not blame me for taking your lives!”

# Chapter 85 - Who Incited You All?

“Why is he talking so much? Let’s kill him quickly and run away, there are no people here!”

While he was talking, someone impatiently said this in a loud voice, soon after that, that person quickly moved.

This one move of his initiated movements from everyone else, the flying swords of everyone pounced towards Yang Chen like flying locusts.

Yang Chen stood at the same place as before, waving his extremely vulgar executioner’s blade. As if one slash could chop a mountain, he chopped down in front of him. As the same time as the chop, a smile appeared on Yang Chen’s face, as if his cherished desires had come true, making the expressions of the people attacking him turn ugly.

The first person who had moved to attack him was directly moving towards Yang Chen, his figure exactly following the path of the flying sword. Disdain was spread across his entire face, as if he could behead Yang Chen with just one blow, if only he wanted to.

Seeing the executioner’s blade chopping down, he neither dodged nor did he tried to escape it, he merely raised his flying sword. In his thoughts, Yang Chen was just a youngster who had just reached the foundation stage, even if Elder Wu had bestowed him with a

flying sword, he wouldn't be able to use it proficiently. Moreover, the executioner's blade within Yang Chen's hands did not look like a magic weapon, so he would be able to break the blade in two with just one slash.

Imagination was really beautiful, but it could easily confuse people. But the reality was that, once Yang Chen's slash, containing a thousand jin of power, chopped down, the enemy, together with his flying sword were turned into four. [\[1\]](#)

At that time, the people who were rushing towards him were all startled: the sight of their own companion being cut into two parts with one slash stunned them, involuntarily stopping their movements.

How was this possible? Although that friend was not a peak foundation stage expert, he was still at upper foundation stage already and it had already been ten years since he had entered the foundation stage. When compared with a rookie like Yang Chen, who had entered the foundation stage just recently, his cultivation was only higher, not lower. His magic weapon was also stronger. How could this be the outcome?

In the end, what was that executioner's blade in Yang Chen's hand? Could it be a magic weapon which Yang Chen had refined? Even if it was, how could it be comparable with the flying sword of that Fellow Daoist, who had been refining it for ten years?

But the situation in front of them overturned all of their knowledge. What kind of situation was this? The first person who had taken the lead was also alarmed, how was this possible? Just a

few years ago he had chased Yang Chen alone within the magma lake and at that time Yang Chen did not even dare to appear in front of him, but after just these few years, Yang Chen could get rid of a Fellow Daoist who was not a lot weaker than him, when fighting him face to face?

“Damn it, you!”

After the short period of silence, a loud voice suddenly echoed and another person charged towards Yang Chen like a madman. His flying sword was even faster, rushing to pierce Yang Chen’s stomach.

Ding! Ding! Ding!

A series of clear sounds echoed through the place, but the executioner’s blade in Yang Chen’s hand was horizontal nevertheless, defending the front of his body. The wide face of the blade was obstructing the continuous onslaught of the flying sword. Despite the flying sword stabbing with a lot of pressure, it was not even able to leave a trace on the blade.

But this series of successive attacks made everyone’s eyes shine. This executioner blade was also a magic weapon and moreover a pretty good quality magic weapon, otherwise it wouldn’t be able to break the flying sword of their friend in two and would furthermore not be able to resist these strikes. Immediately everyone’s eyes became even brighter.

The person leading them only wanted the pill recipes and

medical scriptures which Yang Chen had, he had not demanded anything else, this flying sword would naturally be suitable for the other people assisting him. Although there would be casualties and injuries, this matter was similar to stealing food from tiger's den, so who would care about it? After the initial shock passed away, everyone became extremely careful.

The master of the flying sword, Yi Jing, followed after the flying sword and closed in on Yang Chen. Extending both of his hands, he ruthlessly attacked Yang Chen with his fists, because his flying sword was still tangled with Yang Chen's flying sword. This forced Yang Chen to use his hands to deal with it.

Humph!

Yang Chen snorted and, raising his free left hand as a fist, he firmly attacked the fist of Yi Jing.

Bang!

The two fists collided with each other, producing a loud echo. The Five Phases of Yin and Yang secret's Spirit Power passed on from Yang Chen's fist to Yi Jing's fist. Immediately this fusion of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang Spirit Power, drilled into the body of Yi Jing. Not only that, when the two fists intersected, Yang Chen's fist directly broke all of the Yi Jing's fingers, like a metal hammer.

Ahhhhhhhhhhh!



Yi Jing issued a bloodcurdling scream. Not only that, what made him most frightened was that this aggressive Spirit Power of Yang Chen directly got into his fist with an unstoppable loftiness and, following along the arm, started moving upwards. The sound of breaking of bones had already come from his fist. Because of the damage this Spirit Power caused, not only were the fingers in his hand fractured, instead all of the bones in his fist had been pulverized.

This portion of Spirit Power did not stop at that and directly moved upwards, following along Yi Jing's arm. Regardless of how much he resisted, he was simply unable to influence the Spirit Power of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets. Yang Chen's Spirit Power was highly condensed and extremely purified, compared to these people, who had been at the foundation stage for a long time, it was at least a few grades higher. Adding on to that the amplification by the spell formation, Yi Jing's resistance was completely meaningless.

Kacha! Kacha!

The sound of bones disintegrating came from his arms and spread up to his shoulder. Yi Jing's bloodcurdling scream didn't stop and in his distraction, he didn't even notice that his own flying sword had already been stored in Yang Chen's sword box at some point. But his Spiritual Awareness had suddenly been cut off during this time and because he had been controlling the magic weapon at that time, his Spiritual Awareness had taken serious damage, which he was not able to hide.

In his panic, Yi Jing could only think that his flying sword had

already been destroyed by Yang Chen. He was deeply regretting it, but the pain in his body became more and more intense. The Spirit Power didn't stop, even after passing through his shoulder, the sound of breaking bones was echoing from his shoulder, as if it was going to disintegrate at any moment.

The leader directly reached out his hand and put it on the back of Yi Jing. Pure Spirit Power of the peak foundation stage directly rushed into the body through his hand and began to resist Yang Chen's Spirit Power.

“The five phases are rousing each other in his Spirit Power, making it unending!”

After he been injured by it for a while, that unlucky person had already gained a little bit of understanding on Yang Chen's Spirit Power and hastily yelled, fearing that the leader would waste his time using an inappropriate method and would be injured instead.

The five phases rousing each other? The leader was startled, how could Yang Chen have accomplished this? But he also began to aim his counterattack. As long as some of the Spirit Power of Yang Chen was used up, he could break the cycle of the five phases rousing each other.

He was trying to think of a proper way, but when his Spirit Power came in contact with Yang Chen's Spirit Power, he suddenly discovered, that Yang Chen's spirit power had an unfathomable strength that directly crushed his own spirit power defense and continued forward with a bang sound.

Ka Cha!

The shoulder of Yi Jing turned into pieces, creating a breaking sound which made people palpitate. The Spirit Power didn't stop and forcibly rushed to his heart through his veins.

The leader suddenly shouted loudly and was just about to move away, when all of a sudden a piece of manifested killing intent entered his body through the hands he pressed against his companion's body and directly entered his spirit sea.

Hiss!

In a flash, a formidable killing intent submerged the consciousness of the leader, within his mind, apart from that killing intent which could make people tremble, there were no other thoughts.

“Who asked you to come?”

A voice like that of a master of hell, echoed in the ears of the leader, hearing this voice the leader couldn't help but shudder involuntarily.

“It was Fellow Daoist Li from the Greatest Heaven Sect!”

The leader did not know that he had already spoken this

sentence, he only knew that he had to reveal everything under the suppression of that frightening killing intent.

“Die!”

After knowing who it was, Yang Chen had no interest in letting him live, so with a loud shout, these two conjoined people immediately burst into fragments.

Everyone in the surroundings was astonished, just a moment ago Yang Chen’s fist had attacked the fist of their fellow comrade and immediately all bones in his shoulder broke, but even with the leader’s assistance, the bones still exploded in quick succession and soon after that, both of them simultaneously turned into pieces, how could this not terrify everyone?

“What kind of magic did you use?”

On one side a person who had previously chased Yang Chen shouted loudly:

“He is a magician of the demon path, everyone must execute him!”

It seemed to him that a person who had just recently entered the foundation stage and was evenly matched against people on his own level and could even resist the joint attacks of everyone, could only be using techniques of the devil path, there was no other explanation.

“Hu!”

Yang Chen groaned and turned around to face that person. With blood colored light in his eyes, he seemed like a devil god to people who looked at him.

The people at a distance, when looking at the leader, who had the highest cultivation but had also exploded, immediately started escaping after seeing that the conditions were far from encouraging. They did not even try to regain their flying sword.

“Thinking of running? It isn’t that easy!”

Yang Chen had waited with great difficulty for this meeting, how could he now allow them to escape? With just one thought of his, the medicine garden’s great protecting spell was immediately awakened.

Originally, at the Immortal Falling Well, when he was being chased, Yang Chen had to worry about Elder Wu, he was afraid that Elder Wu would discover it inside of the Immortal Falling Well, therefore he didn’t dare to use it, but currently he didn’t have such a worry.

Yang Chen had already reached the foundation stage, so regardless of whether he used Spirit Power or Spiritual Awareness, they both far exceeded their earlier strength. Moreover, the bottle of the medicine garden was already filled with Spirit Power, so he basically did not need to worry about the backlash caused by the

great protection spell of the medicine garden, but at most he could use it, he was not yet able to command it according to his thoughts.

The great spell of the medicine garden enshrouded several hundreds of meters in a flash. The group of the people who had been attacking Yang Chen, suddenly found themselves within a huge dome. While they were confused, those of them who had escaped, suddenly issued bloodcurdling screams. Before they could clearly see what was happening to them, their companions had already turned into a hideous mess.

This one attack scared all of them stiff and they hurriedly summoned their most powerful body protecting magic treasures and spell formations. One of the remaining people had just started running towards the other direction, but when he had walked just two steps, he sensed a pain over his whole body. His entire body had become devoid of strength. He quickly turned around, only to see his own scattered and smashed corpse.

The remaining people did not dare to act blindly without thinking and stayed at the same place, not even daring to move. With frightened eyes they looked at Yang Chen's figure slowly walking towards them.

That fist earlier had already verified that his strength had become even more powerful under the amplification of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets and great spells like the Heavenly Stars and Earth Fiend, so these people did not have any more value to him. Yang Chen didn't want to waste any more time on these dead men walking, so that he wouldn't have to delay his return to the Pure Yang Palace to pick a master, A blitzkrieg strategy would

deal with this wonderfully.

“Anyone who moves will die!”

Threatening them, Yang Chen slowly walked in front of these people and extended his hand.

“What about you all? You all have a compass which can trace the location of my qiankun pouch, who asked you to do this?”

These people hesitated at first but the clever ones immediately took out the compass from their qiankun pouches and gave them to Yang Chen. Many people among them did not have the compass, as they were only invited to assist in killing Yang Chen.

“We were also invited by Fellow Daoist Li of the Greatest Heaven Sect, only these compasses were provided to us by Fellow Daoist Chu Heng of your sect!”

They all knew that at this time, they were the sheep and he was the wolf, stubbornly resisting him after being defeated made no sense, the only other outcome was that they would be killed instead.

People weren't fools like Chu Heng, who would rather die than submit. Everyone only wanted to obtain benefits for themselves that's all, so who would show a spirit of loyalty and self sacrifice? Moreover, Chu Heng had told them that Yang Chen was only a qi layer youngster, but since he could not attack Yang Chen, he was

only borrowing their hand. Who would have known that this youngster could unexpectedly kill so many experts? How was this borrowing their hand to kill Yang Chen, this was clearly borrowing Yang Chen's hand to kill them!

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

The four people who had put forward their compasses had lost consciousness from a single strike of Yang Chen, afterwards he put a series of restrictions on their bodies and sealing their consciousnesses, he directly threw them into the medicine garden. As for the rest of the people who had come to assist, he did not pay any attention and moved to leave. His flying sword flew down and directly chopped everyone into pieces, leaving behind only their qiankun pouches.

The people he had left alive would help Yang Chen in testifying against Chu Heng so they would die later. As for these people who had come to assist, since they wanted to kill Yang Chen, Yang Chen would also not allow them to live.

After settling this affair, Yang Chen's heart apparently relaxed. With this relaxation, he also was expectant. He was already at the foundation stage, after returning to the Pure Yang Palace he could become an inner disciple and could see his master, which he hadn't met after his rebirth, again. Thinking of this, he couldn't remain calm, wishing that he could reach the Pure Yang Palace immediately.

The flying speed of the bamboo falcon was really very slow. Compared to Yang Chen's evading techniques, it was already



lacking. On the whole journey, Yang Chen had used his evading technique and he basically did not see any person appearing, while he was flying towards Pure Yang Palace with all of his strength.

This path passed by through a region Yang Chen was familiar with. The first person Yang Chen had beheaded, that mountain god, his temple was in this direction. Back then, the mountain god had said that he had left some Spirit Stones there, which he did not want Yang Xi and them to get, so Yang Chen wanted to pass by it on the way.

At that time, the mountain god had said in front of his altar, that he had left behind a few catties of Spirit Stones, so he knew that the mountain god was very poor. Yang Chen didn't expect to get rich from this. But since it was set aside for his own matters and that mountain god had made a deal with Yang Chen before dying, Yang Chen would naturally not do it for free, so having these Spirit Stones will keep his conscience clean.

However, when Yang Chen really stopped at that mountain temple and dug at the spot in front of the god stage and exposed that chest, containing Spirit Stones, he couldn't help but cry out in surprise.

# Chapter 86 - He Was Modest About Being Poor

The temple was ruined, the images of its god had already fallen down, the walls were broken and destroyed and only an outline was left over. Every kind of vine was breaking out from everywhere, spiders could be found in all corners, it was very difficult to make people believe that this kind of place would have any relation with jewels and riches.

Perhaps because of this reason, Yang Xi's grandfather had hidden them here; the capital he kept for emergencies; it would give rise to the suspicions of very few people.

The locust tree from below which Yang Chen had excavated the riches had already grown back. Ten year's time was already sufficient for it to grow and become verdant and lush.

The frustration of the mountain god who had been at death's door, let everyone believe without a doubt that he really only had a few catties of Spirit Stones. Yang Chen was absolutely certain about this.

But arranging a spirit spell for a few catties of Spirit Stones was really making a big fuss over a minor issue. But naturally, Yang Chen also understood it. This was in order to prevent the Spirit Power from leaking to maintain the grade of Spirit Stones as well as to prevent others from finding it, this was very normal.

If it were not for Yang Chen firmly believing that the mountain god would not lie or if Yang Chen hadn't discovered this locking spirit spell, he basically would be unable to split the smoke screen and discover the box buried underneath.

It was a tattered wooden box, similar to a normal mahogany box. After opening it, inside was a small metal box, although it was heavy, it was corroded to its limit, almost making it soft because of it. After opening it, twinkling inside were those few catties of Spirit Stones.

It was right that there were only a few catties of Spirit Stones, but these few catties of Spirit Stones were at least two to three million times worth more than several catties of low grade Spirit Stones. These nine catty of Spirit Stones, wrapped inside of this box, were top grade Spirit Stones, which could overshadow even the best quality Spirit Stones easily. Every piece had the same size, same shape and was neatly stacked within the lattices of the metal chest, taking the breath of everyone who saw it.

These are the few catties of spirit stones left behind by that destitute and frustrated mountain god? Yang Chen almost bawled out loudly. Initially, after the words of the mountain god, he hadn't taken it seriously. It was only a few catties of Spirit Stone after all. Yang Chen normally wouldn't have even looked at them, if this location wasn't on his way.

One catty of top grade Spirit Stones was equivalent to one hundred catty of high grade Spirit Stones, one catty of high grade Spirit Stones was equivalent to one hundred catty of middle grade Spirit Stones, one catty of middle grade Spirit Stones was

equivalent to one hundred catties of low grade Spirit Stones so inside of the box there were nine catties of top grade spirit stones, which were equivalent to nine million catties of low grade spirit stones.

Nine million catties of low grade spirit stones could purchase the majority of middle class sects. This was how poor the so called 'poor mountain god' was? This was being poverty stricken? In his previous life, Yang Chen's entire net worth added together would not be equal to this amount, what then would he be? A beggar?

Picking up the Spirit Stones he didn't know whether to laugh or to cry. He was just about to place them into the Achievement Ring, when Yang Chen suddenly thought of something and picked up the metal box and began to ponder over it.

The chest was buried very deeply and it was far heavier than the Spirit Stones it contained. Previously Yang Chen hadn't paid much attention to it, only after holding it in his hand did Yang Chen discover the marvelousness of the chest. Beneath those corrosion marks, there were clear traces of radiance.

After sizing it up, Yang Chen really wanted to severely reprimand the mountain god. Even this metal box which contained the Spirit Stones was made up of profound cyan crystal gold! This kind of top quality tool refining material, which can only be found by luck and not by seeking, was surprisingly found by him in such a broken appearance. If he had not been careful and only preoccupied with those spirit stones, he would absolutely have misjudged it.

This profound cyan crystal gold could be exchanged for ten times

more top grade Spirit Stones than were in the box. Just this number of Spirit Stones was enough for Yang Chen to upgrade his Profound Spirit Furnace, sword box and all of the other flying swords he had by at least two grades.

He still dared to call himself poverty stricken throughout his life? Yang Chen was already thoroughly speechless. In the beginning he wanted to take it just because he already owned it and he didn't want to pass it on to other people, but after looking at the top grade spirit stones, he thought it was fortunate that he had rushed over. Then his thoughts changed to disbelief, all of a sudden Yang Chen felt like he was an idiot in his previous life.

Receiving such a huge profound cyan crystal gold chest, Yang Chen suddenly thought of something: if he would retain this chest and made some person who knew what it was, take a look at it, what sort of facial expression would they make? Reprimand him severely to not waste natural resources recklessly or would they have pulled out a sword to get rid of him? That surely would have been interesting.

After receiving the chest, he was just about to leave, when Yang Chen once again thought of something and returned and bowed his head to look at the huge excavated hole. The Spirit Stones were wrapped up in a chest of profound cyan crystal gold, so what was this tattered wooden box which contained the profound cyan crystal chest? Was it really just a wooden chest?

Reaching his hand out to pick up that wooden chest, he slowly began to analyze it. The worn out wooden chest was made up of rotten wood, which was not unusual in the slightest, but Yang

Chen was not willing to give up. His Spiritual Awareness wrapped up the entire wooden chest and began to examine it bit by bit in every nook and cranny corner.

At last his peak JieDan stage Spiritual Awareness sensed something unusual about the flow of Spirit Power in one corner. Yang Chen keenly caught this anomaly and began to analyze it.

The tatterdness of the wooden chest was a diversion and not an easily broken one. Yang Chen started going through all of his memories, one by one, and only after one whole day and night, did he find the method to break it. After nearly another two days had passed, Yang Chen used the Reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets at the core of the spell to wear it down cleanly little by little, exposing the true features of the wooden chest.

It was fresh and green like it had just been chopped down from a tree. The branches were perfectly straight and well proportioned; they had been superimposed to make a normal wooden chest, but suddenly they gave a hint of lush growth, as if, as long as they were buried in the ground, they would be able to grow very high.

Penglai Divine Wood, that mountain god had surprisingly used Penglai Divine Wood to make a wooden chest! Initially Yang Chen already thought that using the profound cyan crystal gold was already wasting the resources, but now he discovered that, compared to this chest made of Penglai Divine Wood, that profound cyan crystal chest was only a miser's work.

What's a wastrel? This mountain god was as a genuine wastrel! When Yang Chen was using thousand year profound yang fruits as

food, compared with that person he was simply like a beggar in ragged clothing asking for food!

In the future, if someone of the heavenly court told him that he had been poverty stricken and dejected half his life, Yang Chen would not believe it, even if he was beaten to death. Only now did Yang Chen realize that the words of someone from the heavenly court, saying he was poverty stricken, was merely modesty. If someone took it to be true, he really was an idiot.

Suffering from intense psychological shock, Yang Chen had already lost the strength to joke around anymore and could only collect this wealth, which could even make Elder Wu feel inferior, in his Achievement Ring in stupefaction. Soon afterwards he filled the hole and then identified his orientation and then went straight towards the Pure Yang Palace.

Only after two days, did Yang Chen manage to become clear headed from his shock. He could not do anything about it. Although Yang Chen had been a great principal golden immortal in his past life, he had already seen the tricks of countless number of high level experts, but despite seeing them, this was still his first time when such wealth had belonged to himself.

Ah the Penglai Divine Wood, as long as there was even a one finger thick root of it, an extremely strong wooden attribute flying sword could be made from it, even without engraving any spell formation, just by refining it naturally, it could become a high grade flying sword. If it was refined properly and the cultivation method was suitable, then it could easily become top grade, peerless grade or even monarch grade, emperor grade, or the

Immortal grade were not a problem.

The Profound Spirit Furnace of his previous life was of the highest grade, the immortal grade spirit tool. The preciousness of Penglai Divine Wood could be easily seen from this. The wooden box, which was made out of Penglai Divine Wood as thick as a wrist, could have just as well been made out of wood that was as thick as a finger.

Since it was called Penglai Divine Wood, naturally there was a reason. Penglai Divine Wood was innately a wood attributed divine object. When something had the name of “divine”, there was no need to be told what kind of goods it was.

But Yang Chen was baffled: since he had these amazing items, why didn't that mountain god use them to refine a magic weapon and instead left them in the mortal world for Yang Chen? Regarding this, Yang Chen could only make a few guesses: either the mountain god himself did not know that it was Penglai Divine Wood, or he was afraid of treasuring a jade ring. Only the people after ascension would covet it, so he thought that he might as well bury it here, making it never see the light of day from then on.

As for why leaving it for Yang Chen, one reason could be that Yang Chen had promised him to kill a few people of the heavenly court and the other could be that the mountain god believed that Yang Chen was not intelligent enough to recognize how precious it was. It could also have been to draw calamity to himself, making him obtain this big treasure without knowing its value, so that he would commit the crime of treasuring a jade ring and not even get a proper burial, after all he was also the executioner in the



heavenly court. According to mountain god, he was a disgraceful existence and an equally bad person, so he could set a trap against him without feeling the least amount of regret.

But Yang Chen predicted that most likely the mountain god did not know, and instead treated it as an ordinary treasure. If it was Yang Chen in his place, even if he knew that treasuring a jade ring was also a crime, he would still have risked his life to refine it, because a little more strength would gain him a little higher position after ascending. This was the most probable inference.

Regardless of what was said, these things had come to him, so Yang Chen would naturally not use the Penglai Divine Wood to make a chest again. Because he didn't have the ability to refine the profound cyan crystal gold, he didn't need to pay attention to it, but he could not imagine to waste the Penglai Divine Wood like this.

Looking at the appearance of the Penglai Divine Wood chest, it appeared to have several tens of branches. Yang Chen carefully dismantled this box and fortunately, only a tenacious vines were used to bind it, so the Penglai Divine Wood itself hadn't been harmed.

Yang Chen did not have a sufficient cultivation to refine it, but planting it was not a problem. The bottle of the medicine garden was the best choice at the moment. Originally, all kinds of herbs were growing in large amounts inside of it and moreover at the Immortal Falling Well, the bottle had already absorbed a sufficient amount of Spirit Power, so it was just the right place to plant it.

When the medicine garden was refined for the first time, it only had a water attribute, but after mixing the earth and planting some ingredients, it also possessed a little of the earth and wood attributes. If the guarding hall of the bottle's lid was also taken into account, adding in the imitation of sun, metal and fire attribute also had a little influence, then all of the five attributes were amassed together.

But although the five attributes had gathered together, it was not properly and in good order, and moreover the water attribute made up the majority, while the Spirit Power that it had been receiving and absorbing was also water attributed, making it feel as if it was a water attributed magic weapon.

After carefully planting these Penglai Divine Wood branches in a vacant piece of land, Yang Chen began to control the Spirit Power of the medicine garden to frantically moisten and nurse these Penglai Divine Wood branches.

Just as Yang Chen had anticipated, as soon as he began, the high quality Spirit Power which the medicine garden had absorbed, poured down towards these ten Penglai Divine Wood branches in torrents.

The Penglai Divine Wood branches were like bottomless pits, swallowing all of the Spirit Power, regardless of how much Spirit Power was entered, it was completely absorbed, and not even a tiny bit of it overflowed. In addition to that, after Yang Chen had inputted the Spirit Power in the beginning, it was already no longer under Yang Chen's control, as if the bottle's Spirit Power was already completely controlled by the Penglai Divine Wood,

frantically absorbing it without any worries.

As long as there was still a thread of blue liquid in the bottle, it could provide enough Spirit Power for the medicine garden for several tens of years, but at this moment, the blue Spirit Power thread had begun to decline frantically, as if it had run into a sponge. There were just ten Penglai Divine Wood branches, but just nourishing and recuperating their vitality was consuming Spirit Power so quickly and in these large quantities, it could shock anyone.

Yang Chen did not care about using the recently obtained top grade spirit stones, as long as there was a situation where the Spirit Power was insufficient, he immediately used these top quality Spirit Stones to replenish it. Compared to the Penglai Divine Wood and the medicine garden's bottle, these Spirit Stones could be sacrificed for Spirit Power and were basically not worthy of pity.

Fortunately, these circumstances did not occur. When the bottle's Spirit Power was used up by three quarters and Yang Chen was waiting to absorb some Spirit Stones before the Spirit Power was depleted to a dangerous level, the lightning speed of the Spirit Power absorption slowed down.

Looking at this, Yang Chen was exalted. He entered the medicine garden and soon a scene which made him delighted appeared.

The ten roots of Penglai Divine Wood he had inserted into the ground had already sprouted new leaves, it didn't need to be said, but they surely also grew roots below the ground. The branch that was originally only wrist thick was now as thick as someone's calf.

The most important thing was that these Penglai Divine Wood branches were not branches anymore and instead had turned into tree trunks.

The branches were tall, at almost four foot long, but after this change they had grown even taller. The branches had grown perfectly straight and had even sprouted leaves concentrated at the top, while new, tender branches were also extending from them. These ten Penglai Divine Wood branches had survived completely and turned into a very small Penglai Divine Wood forest.

It was worthy of being called the wood attributed divine object, this change had happened just few moments ago and yet the first wood qi had already begun to fill the area. The qi of the thunder pomegranate seed which Yang Chen had previously nourished, was completely ignored before this first wood qi.

The first wood qi began to get richer and in the end it even stretched across the whole of medicine garden and caused large changes to occur. With a rumbling sound, as if the medicine garden had turned upside down, it began to shake violently.

# Chapter 87 - Returning To The Pure Yang Palace

All of the wood attributed ingredients and herbs, regardless of whether they were of the first wood or the second wood, began to grow frantically almost at the same time, as if they had been catalyzed. Within a short period of time, they were as lush as those which had been growing in the medicine garden for hundreds of years.

During this violent vibration, the space of the medicine garden, while appearing slow, was actually expanding quickly. The originally many hundred hectares of space had expanded to two to three times under this great change.

In the large open space surrounding the medicinal farm, faintly observable, small streams appeared out of nowhere, converged at the medicinal farms and afterwards flowed in another direction. Nobody would know from where this stream came and to where it would go, but it had already turned into running water.

This turn of events made Yang Chen quite surprised. Although he knew that the medicine garden was incomplete, it could still be refined a step farther to increase the grade, but he hadn't anticipated that just planting the Penglai Divine Wood branches would attain this kind of result, this was totally out of his expectations.

The first wood attribute was unusually powerful, the grove of

trees which were originally nourished by the thunder pomegranate was completely ignored by Yang Chen, who took the thunder pomegranate and placed it beside the Penglai Divine Wood. Having the nourishment of the Penglai Divine Wood's first wood qi, he believed that its efficacy would be several times better.

What was even more of a surprise was that, during the change in the medicine garden just few moment ago, the maturity of almost all herbs was increased by a hundred years. Leaving aside the herbs which had already matured for a thousand years, just these several ordinary herbs that he had purchased from the market had matured by a hundred years and turned into very low grade treasures, which was really out of his expectations.

But this kind of change was not without any cost: the bottle which had been filled with Spirit Power had been able to fulfill the Spirit Power requirements of the medicine garden for five hundred years, but now first the absorption by the Penglai Divine Wood and then the transformation of the medicine garden had consumed at least eighty percent of this Spirit Power. Finding a region like the underground spirit vein in the Immortal Falling Well, where the Spirit Power was plentiful was indeed not a simple matter.

Despite this, Yang Chen was still extremely delighted. If the Spirit Power started to run out, in the worst case he would have to use those top grade Spirit Stones, but they were also able to make the transformation of the medicine garden even more perfect, so this kind of thing was certainly an opportunity which could only be found by luck and not by seeking. Apparently, in the future it would be essential for him to look for some divine objects of each attribute to replenish the medicine garden, only then would the medicine garden become even more perfect.

In short, the sudden urge to come to the mountain god's temple was the cause of many pleasant surprises for him. After properly finishing all of this, he immediately recalled all of the information he had received at the XianTai Stage and checked if he hadn't forgotten anything. He started his journey again, excited by the expectation of finally reuniting with his master.

The brief interludes on his journey allowed Yang Chen to relax a lot. The people who wanted to assassinate him secretly would be extremely depressed. His speed while returning to the Pure Yang Palace was also quicker by a lot. After three days, Yang Chen had arrived at the foot of Meiqing mountain and in less than half a day, Yang Chen had returned to Nine Earth Manor.

The Merit Transferring Disciple of the Nine Earth Manor was not Chu Heng now, instead he had been replaced by another senior disciple whom Yang Chen was not very familiar with. Seeing Yang Chen, he greeted him with a few sentences and extreme admiration on his face. Even when Yang Chen asked to have one of his servants lead him to the inner Pure Yang Palace, he generously agreed.

Going to the Nine Earth Manor was also in order to take along his own four servants. Among the four, Shen Da had already stepped from the fourth qi layer to the seventh qi layer in the seven years Yang Chen was gone. Rising one layer in approximately two years, couldn't be considered as too inferior. The teachings he had received before he became Yang Chen's servant had possibly not gotten through to him, so he had wasted many years and eventually ended up as a servant.

Ho Lin, Yuan Ting, and Gu Qin were a little bit weaker, but all of them also had a cultivation of the sixth qi layer. Ho Lin was especially impressive, previously under Yang Chen's teaching by examples, her technique of controlling the fire had been brought to the point of perfection, although compared to Yang Chen of those days, it was still inferior, but it was nonetheless quite decent. She had moreover become very skilled in refining the yang qi pill and was at the point of practicing the refining of the xun qi pill and the foundation stage pill.

These four servants were quite handy to use for Yang Chen, and since they had been beaten by Yang Chen and agreed to be his servants, they had never been disloyal, serving him with all of their hearts. The inner disciples were also allowed to have their own servants, so naturally Yang Chen would still employ the same people.

A huge palace resided in the deepest parts of Meiqing Mountain, which was encircled by thousands of scattered small courtyards, this was the only real location of the Pure Yang Palace and also was the place where all inner disciples could come.

The Merit Transferring Disciple of the Nine Earth manor had already notified the Pure Yang Palace. When Yang Chen had lead the four people to the door that symbolized the area for inner sect disciples of the Pure Yang Palace, at first glance he saw four people waiting for him outside of the gatehouse.

Three were male and one was female. They were, Du Qian, Shangguan Feng, Wang Yuan and Gongsun Ling. The first inner



disciple with whom Yang Chen had made friends, and two people who were originally the managers of the Ye Xiu Manor, who had reached foundation stage with his help. And then Gongsun Ling who had befriended him at the Heavenly Stairs. At this moment, all four of them had a smile on their face, waiting for Yang Chen's arrival.

“Junior disciple Yang, congratulations!”

Du Qian was the first one to talk, directly addressing Yang Chen as junior disciple. As long as they had become inner disciples, they had to follow the rules of seniority between masters and disciples. Du Qian and Yang Chen were theoretically disciples of the same generation, the same as Shangguan Feng, Wang Yuan and Gongsun Ling, who had also become inner disciples within the last ten years, so they were all fellow disciples.

“It has only been ten years from the day you entered the sect to reaching the foundation stage, junior disciple Yang, only heaven defying geniuses are like this.”

Du Qian said to praise him, but he immediately glanced at Gongsun Ling, who was standing on the side with a smile on her face and quickly added:

“In the past hundred years, both you and Gongsun Ling have become inner disciples within ten years. My Pure Yang Palace's future seems promising!”

“Senior Disciple is wrongfully praising!”

Yang Chen modestly cupped his hands to make his salutations towards these four people. If not for anything else, then just for coming to welcome him at the door.

“Junior disciple’s famous name has already spread to each and every sect! Who is praising wrongfully?” But Du Qian burst into laughter and patted Yang Chen’s shoulder, saying without any formality:

“If I require any kind of elixir in the future, I will come to you for help, you must not decline me!”

Hearing this, Yang Chen immediately realized why Du Qian had said those words. Apparently the news of him participating in the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill had already circulated in the past few months, otherwise Du Qian would never say so.

Du Qian still hadn’t reached the ground when over at the side, Gongsun Ling’s voice followed without any formality:

“Junior disciple Yang, you haven’t waited for me at the Immortal Falling Well! In the future, you are responsible for making my elixirs!”

“Not a problem! Senior apprentice sister!”

Yang Chen replied with a smile and then cupped his hands towards Gongsun Ling and said:

“Congratulations, senior apprentice sister!”

Gongsun Ling had entered the foundation stage long ago when compared to Yang Chen. Only two years after Yang Chen had entered the Immortal Falling Well, she had already succeeded in building her foundation. She had made good preparations at the qi layer and at the time when she climbed the Heavenly Stairs, she was only at the seventh qi layer, but after going through the Heavenly Stairs assembly, within the brief period of two years, she had made breakthroughs like a hot knife cutting through butter and entered the foundation stage.

The current cultivation speed of Gongsun Ling coincided with the cultivation speed which Yang Chen remembered from his past life, but Yang Chen knew that the tragedy in the future would not happen now. With Yang Chen here, he would absolutely not allow those events of his previous life to happen again. Originally Yang Chen had agreed to wait for her at the Immortal Falling Well, but currently he had come out three years earlier, so it was only fair that Gongsun Ling was overcharging him for her requirement of pills.

It had already been ten years since Shangguan Feng had become an inner disciple, Wang Yuan had entered around the same time as Gongsun Ling, and for the time being they were at the initial foundation stage, at the same stage of laying the foundation. Only after this stage would they be allowed to go out and train. These two people were absolutely rejoicing to wait for Yang Chen at the door.

Needless to say, there was not much to be said since everyone was well aware of the situation. Currently the four people had said all of this because of their friendly relations or perhaps affection as fellow disciples. The reason why Yang Chen had chosen to come to the Pure Yang Palace again after rebirth, apart from his master, was precisely because of these fellow disciples. Although currently he had not met with several of those fellow disciples, he was convinced that he would get plenty of opportunities in the future.

The four people leading Yang Chen and his four servants entered the gatehouse and walked over to that main palace hall of the Pure Yang Palace. That big palace hall was not the loftiest, but was the region directly facing against the gatehouse. Appearing completely dignified, on top of the door, a horizontally inscribed board was hanging, on which three words were written in flamboyant calligraphy: “Cheng En Hall”.

Yang Chen knew that this Cheng En Hall was the location for formally choosing a master after becoming an inner disciple in the Pure Yang Palace, so that he was immediately brought here after he had just become an inner disciple was perfectly normal.

Looking at the distant Cheng En Hall, Yang Chen’s heart could not help but start to beat rapidly. When he thought that his master could be waiting for him within the Cheng En Hall, Yang Chen had a sensation of nostalgia.

Before he could reach the Cheng En Hall, Yang Chen saw two of his friends sitting on either side, as if waiting for him. Sitting next to each other were the Medicine Hall’s hall master Zhu Chen Tao and Pure Yang Palace’s Foreign Affair Hall’s Hall Master Xu Cheng

Xin, both looking at Yang Chen with faces full of smiles.

These two people were JieDan experts so nominally speaking, they already were Yang Chen's uncle masters, naturally they could not go and welcome him at the gate. Waiting inside of the gatehouse was already giving a lot of face to him.

Du Qian and the other people hastily fell on their knees and greeted their uncle masters. Yang Chen did the same and so did the four servants behind Yang Chen, but they greeted them as elders. Although they were servants, they were also disciples of the Pure Yang Palace.

“Good young fellow, in the few years I have not seen you, you have surprisingly engaged in such an extraordinary matter!”

Zhu Chen Tao and Yang Chen could be considered to be close with each other, as soon as they had paid their respects, he immediately stood up and grabbed Yang Chen and burst out laughing. While repeatedly patting Yang Chen's shoulder, he praised him in a loud voice.

“Uncle Master praises me too much!”

Yang Chen said carefully, accompanying it with a smile.

“What too much praise? That Heaven Seizing Pill is something even this old man has only heard about. I would usually not even dare to think about it, but you have actually refined it successfully!

Ha ha! In the future, let me see who dares to say that my Pure Yang Palace does not have a pill concocting master!”

Zhu Chen Tao hadn't stopped laughing and with one hand he continued patting Yang Chen, seemingly without any intention to stop.

“These past few months a countless number of people have come to my Pure Yang Palace, seeking advice. Ha Ha Ha! You have certainly done a great service for our Pure Yang Palace!”

It seemed that the Pure Yang Palace's power and fame had greatly risen in these past few years, otherwise Elder Xu Cheng Xin would not have that sort of glow on his face. The consequence of a large number of people coming to ask for advice was that Xu Cheng Xin's position, when compared to before, had risen by a lot. This foreign affair hall's hall master indicated to Yang Chen that he was completely satisfied.

“Because of you, the number of outer disciples of my Pure Yang Palace have increased several times this year. Even Ye Xiu Manor is entirely unable to take care of them.”

Xu Cheng Xin's smile was somewhat different from Zhu Chen Tao: because of his happiness, both of his eyes had almost narrowed to a line.

“This time, you have earned great credit, I have already reported this to the Palace Master, to evaluate your merit and bestow a reward!”

“This junior only had some good luck, that’s all.”

Even though they had praised him so much, Yang Chen did not care about claiming credit for himself and only replied modestly.

“Good luck?”

Zhu Chen Tao was startled, but soon afterwards he burst out laughing again:

“Naturally your luck was good, if not, why had Elder Wu come looking for you and not for me? Why did you go to the Immortal Falling Well not early and not late, and instead right at the time when Elder Wu was refining the Heaven Seizing Pill and you still happened to be fancied by Elder Wu? This was your chance, other people wanted it too, but couldn’t snatch it!”

What Zhu Chen Tao said was reasonable, Yang Chen only smiled while hearing this and did not say anything. Zhu Chen Tao laughed for a good moment, and then he turned his head to look towards the Cheng En Hall and suddenly turned his head to look at Yang Chen and solemnly asked:

“Yang Chen, pay respects to this old man as your master. This old man wants to make you his first successor disciple, what do you say?”

He had no choice other than to say this: Yang Chen had

successfully refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, which made Zhu Chen Tao even more determined to accept him as a disciple. But last time at the Nine Earth Manor, he had spoken about this with Yang Chen and at that time Yang Chen had used the excuse that it was not according to the rules and declined him. Zhu Chen Tao had seemingly realized his meaning, but he still wanted to fight for it again. There was nothing to be done about it, a person able to refine the Heaven Seizing Pill at the foundation stage was indeed someone a lot of people would crave for.

“Many thanks, Uncle Master for this honor!”

Yang Chen still hadn’t changed his decision. What a joke, even when the Greatest Supreme Elder had asked him to be his last disciple at that time, Yang Chen hadn’t agreed! How could he change it for Zhu Chen Tao?

“Uncle Master, even after I choose a master, I will still remain a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace and will still constantly come to Uncle Master to ask for advice!”

It appeared as if he hadn’t replied to Zhu Chen Tao’s words, but everyone there clearly understood that Yang Chen had tactfully declined him.

“Alas!”

Zhu Chen Tao shook his head while sighing and glanced towards the Cheng En Hall again. Lightly patting Yang Chen’s shoulder, he said:



“Go!”

Under everyone’s gazes, Yang Chen started walking towards the Cheng En Hall. This journey was unusually difficult, even making Yang Chen tremble with excitement. His master was waiting in there for him! Once he thought of this, Yang Chen became impatient and then apprehensive, afraid that the one who appeared would not be his master.

He was moving towards the gate of the receiving favour hall step by step. Nothing on the inside could be seen from the outside, everything was shrouded in darkness and Yang Chen did not use Spiritual Awareness to probe.

Stopping at the gate, Yang Chen’s breathing became hurried, he could hear the sound of his heart beating:

Thump Thump

His step had stopped for few breaths, when a familiar voice appeared from inside:

“What are you distracted about? Come in!”

Just from hearing this voice, Yang Chen couldn’t help the rim of his eyes from turning red, but his heart was almost about to explode!

# Chapter 88 - What Have You All Taught Him?

“What are you distracted about? Come in!”

In his previous life, when Yang Chen was at the gate of Cheng En Hall, he had stopped for some time as well, because of his excitement, and he had also heard these commanding words. When he heard these words, at this instant, Yang Chen even forgot whether he was in past life or this life.

“Yes!”

Resisting his excitement with great difficulty, Yang Chen raised his foot and crossed the high doorstep, entering the Cheng En Hall. His eyes quickly adjusted to the dim light in the hall and he looked at the owner of the voice.

Delicately colored like flowers, a tall figure, that familiar face and voice, together with appreciation and expectation mixed in the gaze, looking at him with a captivating smile. Yang Chen had looked forward to this for a whole ten years after his rebirth.

“Yang Chen, your attribute of the five phases is fire, join my Fierce Yang Hall!”

Gao Yue’s familiar and melodious voice echoed in Yang Chen’s ear:

“But I find it very strange, why didn’t you pay your respects to Zhu Chen Tao and enter his faction? Based on your innate talent, it would not be a difficult matter for you to become a high level pill concocting master.”

“For this disciple to enter the Fierce Yang Hall will in no way obstruct this disciple’s path as a pill concocting master!”

Yang Chen resisted his excitement with great difficulty, and using his strong will power, he suppressed his trembling lips and said these words as evenly as he could. But after he finished speaking, his breath was still somewhat rushed.

“Although your innate talent is not that good, you have a very high comprehension, with your miracle of setting foot on the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, even if you wanted to pay your respects under the Palace Master, it would still not be impossible, why are you fixated on picking me as your master?”

Gao Yue’s suspicions were not quelled down by Yang Chen’s earlier reply, instead they had increased even more.

At this time, Gao Yue was not the Palace Master of the Fierce Yang Hall, and moreover, in terms of strength in her realm, she was the worst JieDan stage expert of the Fierce Yang Hall. After all, Gao Yue had just congealed her dan five years ago, and in these five years she had spent consolidating her present realm. She basically could not contend against those experienced JieDan experts.

What made Gao Yue puzzled was especially that Pure Yang Palace's Palace Master had declared that, among other things, he could choose any person as his master who had the qualifications for accepting a disciple, as a reward for climbing to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, and unexpectedly, in accordance with this reward, Yang Chen had picked her as his master. As a matter of fact, this not only made Gao Yue flabbergasted, but also astonished the other people of the Pure Yang Palace. Did Yang Chen think that paying his respects to a new JieDan stage expert, who barely attained the qualifications to receive a disciple was better than choosing an outstanding master?

“This disciple's intuition tells disciple, that you will be the most suitable person to become disciple's master!”

Yang Chen could not reveal everything to answer this question and could only use such a lousy excuse to deal with Gao Yue's suspicions

“Disciple's intuition has never failed him before. It was the same at the Heavenly Stairs and also at the last stage of refining the Heaven Seizing Pill!”

Just this reason alone would perhaps not convince people, but Yang Chen's examples made it impossible to not be convinced. Yang Chen had produced powerful facts to prove that his so called ‘intuition’ was correct. Even if others wanted to refute it, they couldn't put forward any more powerful facts.

Gao Yue carefully observed Yang Chen and after observing him for a good moment, she even was able to sense the trembling in Yang Chen's body which he was forcefully suppressing. But she did not find it very strange, previously she had met with many foundation stage disciples and almost all of them had shown that sort of fear when meeting JieDan stage experts. Especially under her attentive gaze, some trembling was inevitable.

“Perhaps!”

Gao Yue quickly threw her doubts to the back of her mind; she had just recently obtained the qualifications to receive a disciple, so Gao Yue was very careful with picking her first disciple, but now it seemed that she was quite satisfied, and this disciple was furthermore a well known disciple, to the extent that he had a well known reputation not only in Pure Yang Palace but the entire cultivation world.

“I am Gao Yue of the Fierce Yang Hall, since you have paid respects under me and have entered my faction, you are now a disciple of my Fierce Yang Hall!”

Gao Yue finally showed a smile, apparently this disciple of hers had made her very delighted.

“You are my first disciple, my ground-breaking disciple!”

Hearing these words, Yang Chen couldn't help himself anymore and immediately knelt down, heavily knocking his head on the floor and he loudly said with a voice full of emotions:

“Disciple Yang Chen, pays his respects to master!”

The moment when Yang Chen knocked his head on the ground, the tears he had been suppressing also came free and streamed out. After missing her for several thousands of years, he was finally in front of his master again. When hearing his master’s voice, all of a sudden he thought that those hardships which he had endured all those years ago in the Heavenly Court already didn’t count for anything. If he could see his master in front of him again in exchange for those, Yang Chen would definitely endure those ten thousand years of hardships again.

In his previous life, Yang Chen could only become her disciple after twenty years. At that time, Gao Yue already had the strength of the middle JieDan stage and was not like now, when she had just finished consolidating her dan. The ground-breaking disciple had not been Yang Chen, but in this life, Yang Chen became Gao Yue’s first disciple.

The calm and steady Gao Yue from his previous life was incomparable to the current Gao Yue, who had just consolidated her dan. Apparently receiving a fresh disciple was a new experience for her, she looked just like a young girl, extremely cute.

Yang Chen shedding tears while facing towards the ground did not escape Gao Yue’s Spiritual Awareness, but expectedly Gao Yue was rather disapproving towards these kinds of actions of Yang Chen. Did he not like his master? Even going so far as to cry? Whether for good or bad, he was her first disciple, how could he

start wailing like a little girl, wasn't that scandalous?

“Now quickly come over to pay your respects to the ancestors!”

Gao Yue resentfully reminded Yang Chen. After paying respects to his master, he naturally also had to pay respects to the ancestors. This was also Gao Yue's first time, completely new.

“Yes, master!”

Yang Chen hastily controlled his state of mind and very respectfully burned incense and kowtowed for the ancestors of the Pure Yang Palace and then he paid homage to Gao Yue again and offered tea, finally becoming a genuine disciple of Gao Yue.

It was Gao Yue's first time for such a ceremony, so she was also slightly nervous, even Zhu Chen Tao and the others who wanted to attend the ritual were stopped by her. Within the Cheng En Hall, there were only two people: master and disciple.

“In the future, intensify your cultivation!”

Sitting on the seat of honor, looking at the respectful Yang Chen, Gao Yue felt a bit more like a master and pretending to be experienced she started lecturing Yang Chen:

“We two, master and disciple, we must become the main support of our Fierce Yang Hall.”

Gao Yue was surely talking about the competitions within the sect, a kind of enthusiasm to not admit defeat could also be seen in her, she was instructing Yang Chen, but at the same time was also making her goals clear to herself.

“Yes, master, as long as you want!”

Yang Chen agreed in a loud voice. But within his heart, this is what he repeated countless times:

‘Master, not only can I make us the main support of the Fierce Yang Hall, but I can also make you reach the position of Master of the Fierce Yang Hall and in the future, I can make you sit on the throne of the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace!’

“As long as I want it?”

Gao Yue was caught off guard and blankly stared at the ground. Even if Gao Yue was dim witted, she could still understand the meaning of these words.

“As long as master wants it!”

Yang Chen once again replied with complete certainty and strongly nodded his head, with no signs of joking on his face.

“What if I want I want to remain young forever?”



Thinking about it, Gao Yue raised another request.

“I know at least three kinds of cultivation methods to stop you from aging, and I furthermore know two types of pill recipes for pills which can stop the aging process.”

Yang Chen slightly smiled and answered.

“Regardless of what kind of method I have to use, I can make master stay young forever!”

“What if I demand the recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill?”

Gao Yue looked at Yang Chen as if she was looking at a monster, not knowing whether his words were true or false, but she immediately smiled and changed the question. The imposing pressure of a JieDan expert slightly drifted, waiting for Yang Chen’s answer.

“The most basic ingredient of the Heaven Seizing Pill is the top grade blue-green zoysia, the best ones are those that grow under the nourishment of agates in the deepest parts of top grade jade mines. Other assisting ingredients are...”

Yang Chen kept on talking without the slightest amount of hesitation.

Yang Chen's action stunned Gao Yue again for a brief moment. After that moment of shock, she immediately extended her hand to cover Yang Chen's mouth and said:

“Stop, don't speak!”

How could Gao Yue have imagined this? She had merely asked this to probe him, but Yang Chen surprisingly started speaking without hesitation about the recipe of the Heaven Seizing Pill, which all cultivators in the mortal world yearn for.

“Why are you like this?”

Gao Yue was somewhat emotionally moved, after releasing Yang Chen's mouth, she asked this while creasing her brows.

“Because you are my master!”

Yang Chen didn't think much and directly blurted this out. The softness and warmth of Gao Yue's palm made Yang Chen almost lose control and kiss it secretly, but he did not make any unnecessary movements. But nevertheless, a delicate fragrance lingered between his mouth and nose.

Gao Yue was very close to him, how could she not hear the sincerity and resolution in Yang Chen's voice. She was slightly moved by it but also puzzled at the same time. Since he had already accepted her as master, they would get a lot of time to get along so there was no need to be impatient.

The simple and crude ceremony of formally becoming a disciple without anyone else present did not take too long. When Yang Chen and Gao Yue came out of the Cheng En Hall, Zhu Chen Tao and the others had only waited for a small amount of time.

Regarding Yang Chen's choice, Zhu Chen Tao and the others hadn't protested much earlier. This kind of a talented disciple, how could he choose a random unqualified master? Wouldn't that harm Yang Chen's future? But after they came to the sect leader, everything would be resolved.

“When Yang Chen had climbed the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, he has already been rewarded with the ability to choose any person who is qualified to be his master.”

The Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace was sitting on a mat and slowly, without lifting his eyes, he said:

“This is the reward he deserves!”

“But his comprehension is exceptionally good and his will power is also very strong, if a person like Gao Yue, who has never taken a disciple before was allowed to teach such a talent, wouldn't she destroy him?”

Xu Cheng Xin was very clear about how tremendous Yang Chen's potential was, not to mention others, just participating in the successful refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill overshadowed all other accomplishments. From this alone one could see that he would be a

great pill concocting master in the future and would bring major advantages to the Pure Yang Palace. If this kind of talent was really ruined, that would truly be unfortunate.

Sitting in front of the Palace Master, apart from Xu Cheng Xin and Zhu Chen Tao, there were also Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master, Liang Shao Ming, as well as the Hall Master of the Fierce Yang Hall, Qiao Ming. Apart from the hidden YuanYing stage cultivators, they were considered to be the highest class elders of the Pure Yang Palace, they would naturally be very concerned about the cultivation of a talented disciple.

“Gao Yue is also a JieDan stage expert who has the qualifications to receive the disciple. Having a master for guidance, how could it ruin Yang Chen?”

The Palace Master still had that kind of carefree appearance as if they were not talking about a talented disciple of their sect, but rather some common person.

“Palace Master, we all think that the guidance of a well known master will be a little bit better!”

Lian Shao Ming continued the discussion and tried to offer a compromise, but nobody knew what he was thinking.

The Palace Master sitting on his own mat hadn't even opened his eyes and slowly asked:

“Since you all think so, then let me ask you, before he climbed to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, didn’t you act as if you did not know him? After he climbed to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, who taught him anything? Cultivation, pill concocting, what do you have to say about that?”

While saying this, the Palace Master’s Spiritual Awareness stopped over Liang Shao Ming and then quickly dissipated.

This question, made everyone go silent. All of them knew about the tension between Yang Chen and the former Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng.

Under these kind of circumstances, everyone knew what kind of life Yang Chen had to live previously. Even at the Ye Xiu Manor, Chu Heng stopped everyone from instructing him. Everyone understood this later, but nobody said anything. That time, everyone knew who to choose between a qi layer disciple and a foundation stage disciple. But currently that was not the same: Yang Chen had not only reached the foundation stage, but had also participated in the refining of a Heaven Seizing Pill for Elder Wu. He had already become very well known among pill concocting masters, not just a little, but the most well known of them.

Liang Shao Ming felt very embarrassed. Chu Heng was his disciple and everyone knew that Chu Heng had so brazenly tried to suppress Yang Chen, because he was Chu Heng’s master, so other people had not argued with him about it. But Yang Chen’s current performance had been like a tight slap on Liang Shao Ming’s face. If the disciple did something wrong, naturally the master was also humiliated with him.

Everyone was speechless, they all knew about Yang Chen's experiences. The reason why Yang Chen's comprehension was so good was attributed to his frantic reading at the Hidden Pavilion in the Nine Earth Manor. And the contribution points that had to be paid for entering the Hidden Pavilion, he had paid them on his own by exchanging for his elixirs from the sect. There was indeed no other person who had assisted him. But unexpectedly Yang Chen had worked very hard for the Pure Yang Palace, struggling for its reputation. Strictly speaking, every one of them was a little ashamed.

“Since he had been able to cultivate on his own until he had reached this level, then what are you all worried about? Afraid that Gao Yue teaching him will not be good?”

The Palace Master finally opened his eyes and glanced at everyone surrounding him and then closed them again.

“If you are really worried, then allow my Pure Yang Palace's Hidden Pavilion to be properly exploited by him. If he wants to look at anything, allow him to look at it. Since he hadn't required the reward of a foundation stage pill, then it will be exchanged for this.”

Towards this, nobody had any objections. The matter of Yang Chen accepting a master had been settled conclusively with Gao Yue and Yang Chen becoming master and disciple.

“Yang Chen, since you have already become an inner disciple,

you must strictly adhere to the rules of my Pure Yang Palace! You must not break them, ever!”

Zhu Chen Tao thought very highly of Yang Chen and paid great attention to him, and he also cared about him a lot.

“Speaking of rules of the sect, this disciple has a matter to report about!”

At this moment, Yang Chen recalled something and picked his qiankun pouch and fished out a compass from it, and afterwards, together with his qiankun pouch, gave it to Du Qian.

# Chapter 89 - Show The Evidence

Du Qian subconsciously took the qiankun pouch and compasses, not knowing what had happened. Looking at Yang Chen, he asked him with some suspicion:

“This is?”

“This is my qiankun pouch.”

Yang Chen pointed towards that qiankun pouch and then he pointed to the compass:

“This is a compass which can find the location of my qiankun pouch. There are a few more of these compasses!”

Saying this, he also took out those other compasses within the qiankun pouch. A series of exactly identical compasses were neatly placed on the ground. This made everyone feel as if a major affair was about to happen.

“When I was in the Immortal Falling Well, many people have chased me.”

Yang Chen narrated the events he had to go through, as if he was talking about something that had no relation to him.



“All of them had this kind of compass in their hands.”

Hearing Yang Chen give the description in such a way, Du Qian's complexion turned ashen; Zhu Chen Tao also became solemn, something which was rarely seen. Gao Yue had never before experienced this kind of matter before, so she also puckered her brows and looking at this she angrily said:

“Who dared to touch my first disciple?”

When Yang Chen looked at the slim figure of Gao Yue which was still in front of him, he could not help but feel warm again. If she did not have this kind of temperament in his previous life, then her death wouldn't have been that much of a tragedy. Looking at Gao Yue spitting anger, Yang Chen once again vowed secretly:

“In this life I will support you in rising to the heavens!”

“Master, this kind of trifling matter, let disciple deal with it!”

Yang Chen calmly took a small step forward, stopping at Gao Yue's side. Although he was still half a step behind her, he had already made his intentions clear.

“En!”

Gao Yue glanced at Yang Chen but didn't say much: just one word, showing the dignity of a master.

“Yang Chen, come with me, follow me to the Law Enforcement Hall!”

Du Qian took all of those compasses and the qiankun pouch and stood up after inviting Yang Chen.

The qiankun pouch and those seven compasses were neatly lined in a row on a table in the lobby of the Law Enforcement Hall. Sitting in front of them was Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master, the YuanYing stage elder, Meng Xian. At this moment Meng Xian also had a grim look on his face, silently observing these things. This scene could make anyone anxious.

Du Qian was standing at the side, his head was lowered so that his expressions couldn’t be seen, but it was obvious that he was not very happy. Yang Chen was a disciple of the sect he felt good about, it would be a miracle if seeing Yang Chen being plotted against by others would make him happy. Those friends of Yang Chen were also not happy.

Gao Yue, Zhu Chen Tao and Xu Cheng Xin were of the same opinion. They were angrily sitting on chairs at the side. If the Law Enforcement hall did not give an explanation to them today, they would certainly not leave this matter.

The affair was very clear, the clear purpose was a plot aimed against Yang Chen. Meng Xian had already tested these compasses and they were only effective on Yang Chen’s qiankun pouch, it didn’t work for other people, which clearly showed that it was a

plot to kill Yang Chen.

On top of the qiankun pouch, there was a hidden mark of being refined. In that region, there was also a position indicating mark. These compasses were using this to trace the position of Yang Chen. That one refining method was clearly tied to the Pure Yang Palace.

In the past thousand years, such a matter of brazenly aiming at a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace has never happened, Meng Xian could not help but be furious.

Aiming at a disciple of the same sect, most of all such a talented disciple, that would simply break Pure Yang Palace's hopes of rising through the ranks. Strictly speaking, this was betraying the sect and cheating the master!

This kind of matter had never been heard of before, so naturally the Palace Master had to be notified to make the decision. The flying sword sent by Meng Xian to transmit his message had returned and the Palace Master was following it, directly entering the Law Enforcement Hall. After entering, he directly went to the table where all of these items were kept and without saying anything, he picked up the qiankun pouch and began to use his Spiritual Awareness to examine it.

The enemy's modifications were completely hidden with just a slight irregularity in the area of the belt which was used to bind the mouth of the qiankun pouch, if it were not for these compasses, basically nobody would mind that area. Even Yang Chen only noticed this after he had guessed that an enemy had

made these kinds of arrangements.

“This is the style of a JieDan stage expert!”

The Palace Master determined this quickly and wrinkled his brows, as if not daring to believe this.

“A water attributed technique, my Pure Yang Palace’s technique!”

With this judgement, the Palace Master had already limited the range of suspects to a few people. The Palace Master could not help but knit his brows tightly; a JieDan stage expert, was considered a sect’s backup strength at any sect, if, because of this matter, Pure Yang Palace had to lose a JieDan stage expert, then the Palace Master would also have to take this into consideration before taking care of him.

According to reason, this kind of matter should not have happened. A JieDan stage expert, what need did he have to plot against a qi layer outer disciple? It had to be known that Yang Chen’s qiankun pouch had been given to him at the Ye Xiu Manor not too long ago. Especially for defeating Sun Hai Jing, so he had been given the treatment of a third qi layer disciple and received official equipment.

At that time, which JieDan stage expert would have such a hatred with a countryside youngster, that he had to use such techniques to plot against Yang Chen? This was really the most mysterious.

“This was taken by the Merit Transferring Disciple Chu Heng at that time and afterwards it was delivered to the manager of the Ye Xiu Manor, Wang Yuan and from Wang Yuan it had reached Yang Chen.”

Every item from the sect had been recorded. Meng Xian who had checked just a moment ago after the Palace Master had asked him, immediately replied. Wang Yuan had come to the Law Enforcement Hall after Meng Xian had asked for him.

“Chu Heng?”

Hearing his name, the Palace Master knitted his brows again. Who did not know about the conflict between Yang Chen and Chu Heng? If anyone there was asked who the biggest suspect in this case was, none would reply anything but Chu Heng. But Chu Heng was only a foundation stage disciple. He was simply not capable of making this level of modification to the qiankun pouch, which meant that there was someone behind him.

Luminous Moon Hall’s Hall Master Liang Meng Shao had thus become another suspect in this matter. He was Chu Heng’s master and at the same time also a peak JieDan stage expert, completely capable of modifying the qiankun pouch. The biggest evidence was that he was also water attributed, which was completely in accordance with the Palace Master’s judgement.

“Ask Liang Shao Ming to come over!”

After a moment, the Palace Master resolved something and,

sitting in the position of the Hall Master of the Law Enforcement Hall, he instructed Meng Xian.

Soon, Liang Shao Ming appeared in front of everyone with confusion all over his face, as he did not know why he had been called to the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Liang Shao Ming, have you refined this afterwards?”

The Palace Master did not speak any nonsense and directly came to the point.

Once his words came out, Gao Yue on the side immediately stood up to argue, but Yang Chen on the side swiftly pulled her with his hand. Only then did she remember that the Palace Master was present and restrained herself. Other people looked at Liang Shao Ming attentively and with anger all over their faces, but within the Law Enforcement Hall, nobody dared to flare up.

“Whom did you refine it for?”

The Palace Master asked with an emotionless face and an ordinary tone, as if they were talking at some other place. He didn't have any trace of seriousness because of being within the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Yes, my disciple Chu Heng had asked me to refine it, saying it was for a disciple he thought highly of, and was worried for, so if the disciple had some sort of accident when he went outside, then

this would allow him to trace this disciple.”

Liang Shao Ming was slightly surprised, actually from the time he had been called here, he had been thinking what he did wrong, after answering, he started to feel that something was odd, so he asked with suspicion:

“Is there any problem regarding the qiankun pouch?”

“You take a look at those compasses!”

Palace Master didn’t say much, only raised his head indicating that he should examine those compasses next to the qiankun pouch.

Liang Shao Ming turned around and picked up one of those and his Spiritual Awareness started examining it while his spiritual influence entered it and he immediately noticed the use of those compasses. After discovering their use, Liang Ming Shao’s brows wrinkled, but he didn’t stop and started examining all of them one by one. By the end, anger could already be seen on his face.

“How can he be so muddleheaded?”

Liang Shao Ming was not an idiot, he naturally clearly understood what this many pursuing compasses implied and he almost roared on the spot.

“Whose qiankun pouch is this?”

“It is this disciple’s, Uncle Master Liang!”

Yang Chen, who was standing on the side replied immediately.

Liang Shao Ming raised his head to look at Yang Chen, this was completely within his expectation. After watching Yang Chen attentively for a good moment, he asked:

“Why must Chu Heng kill you?”

“How could this disciple know this?”

Yang Chen adopted an innocent attitude.

“From the time this disciple had entered the sect, Uncle Master Chu has never looked at me favourably!”

This was a fact which everyone knew, even without Yang Chen telling them.

“Can there be any misunderstanding in this?”

After all was said and done, Liang Ming Shao was still Chu Heng’s master, so at that moment, he had to speak in favour of Chu Heng.

“Perhaps Chu Heng was not careful and lost the tracking spell



formation which was then picked up by other people. I also know that at the Heavenly Stairs Assembly, you have made many people envious. Although Chu Heng does not like you, has the situation degraded so much that he must kill you?”

This was very clearly absolving Chu Heng, but he was the Hall Master of Pure Yang Palace’s Luminous Moon Hall, he had the power to protect Chu Heng in some minor cases. Most of all, saying that he must have been careless and lost the tracking spell formation, this kind of explanation was surprisingly rational. In any case, Chu Heng had left the mountain to train after the sect’s martial competition, so losing something was apparently not that alarming of a matter. At most Chu Heng would get the reputation of a careless person, but he would not be accused of a criminal charge.

“This disciple has already been attacked two times outside of the Nine Earth Manor. The first time when coming to enter the Nine Earth Manor and the second when going to the Heavenly Stairs Assembly!”

Yang Chen did not agree with Liang Shao Ming’s argument and narrated the incidents when there had been an attempt on his life:

“Before the Heavenly Stairs Assembly, not many people were jealous of disciple!”

Everyone clearly understood the meaning behind Yang Chen’s words, moreover during these two matters at that time, the entire Law Enforcement had come out in full force to search for the killers. The situation at that time had been very serious, so it was

still fresh in Du Qian's memory until this day. This argument seemed as if Yang Chen was trying to prove that the attacks on himself had no relation to the jealousy of people he had gained after ascending to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, but everyone's thoughts were steered towards the previous two incidents again and this increased Chu Heng's suspiciousness even more.

“Naturally, they were the doings of outer disciple Sun Hai Jing, at that time he already admitted to them with his own mouth!”

Liang Shao Ming did not panic, but his own disciple was supposed to get the reputation of attacking a disciple of his own sect. How could he take things lying down?

“Then this disciple wants to know, Sun Hai Jing was a fourth qi layer disciple, he was neither a pill concocting master nor a tool refining master, he was also not any rich person, so how could he pay the rewards for four seventh qi layer and one eighth qi layer cultivator? How could he even have any relation with them?”

In Yang Chen's previous life, Liang Shao Ming was the mastermind behind selling out Gao Yue, so how could Yang Chen let him slip by? Even though Liang Shao Ming had not made his move yet, he still had to oppose him with equal harshness. Additionally, Chu Heng should have already died long ago, so how could Yang Chen allow Liang Shao Ming to have his own way again?

Each of these words were like a hammer hitting nails on the head, none of them could just be sidelined with an excuse, even if there was one. If Liang Shao Ming said a single wrong or mistaken

word, it might imply that Chu Heng's criminal accusation was justified.

“Perhaps Sun Hai Jing used flowery speech to gain Chu Heng's trust!”

Liang Shao Ming said these words without any shame.

“After all, Sun Hai Jing was the disciple he was most proud of. After associating with him all the time, getting deceived by him would also be a normal matter.”

After all was said and done, Chu Heng would at most get accused of failing in supervising his disciples but would not have any relation with being the mastermind.

“Or maybe we cannot know whether he really had lost it due to carelessness!”

All of a sudden Yang Chen changed the current question with another already discussed matter:

“How about Uncle Master Liang call senior disciple Chu to return and ask him about it? If Senior Disciple Chu does not dare to return, that will immediately prove that he had fled for the fear of being punished.”

“Yes, confronting him in front of everyone is also a method.”

Liang Shao Ming nodded his head.

“I will immediately send out a letter circulating paper crane for Chu Heng! But I must ask for at least half a year, to one year of time, as I also don’t know where he currently is! Master nephew Yang, have these compasses been obtained from those who tried to attack you? Unfortunately, master nephew Yang has killed them, if you have let some among them live, then wouldn’t it be easy to just ask them?”

“Ah!”

Yang Chen slapped his own forehead with exaggeration, and said with an annoyed appearance:

“If only some of them were alive, the truth would immediately come to light!”

“To capture the thief you must catch the stolen goods!”

Liang Shao Ming indifferently said.

“Since you accuse Chu Heng of these things, you must have proof. Just these things won’t do!”

Saying this, he shook his head while looking at these compasses and that qiankun pouch. Then he turned towards the Palace

Master with an attitude implying that he had to defend his disciple no matter what.

“How can you discriminate in favour of your disciple so much?”

Gao Yue loudly blamed him as she swatted the table and stood up.

“As you want to protect your disciple, I must also protect mine, if you want to deal with Chu Heng, you must have evidence first!”

By no means would Liang Shao Ming put the current Gao Yue in his eyes, so he grimly snorted and immediately refuted.

“You all want to get rid of my disciple without giving him a chance? No way!”

The grim faced Liang Shao Ming still hadn't turned around his head, when he was suddenly stunned, seeing that Yang Chen had taken out a weak and restricted body from somewhere and threw it on the ground.

“Luckily I didn't kill all of them that time!”

Yang Chen said with a rejoicing expression.

“This is one of the people who chased me, Palace Master and Hall Master Ming, please pass judgement!”

# Chapter 90 - This Immortal Cave Is No Good

As for sealing the six senses; strictly speaking Yang Chen had had only sealed five senses of this guy: ear, nose, eyes, tongue and body. All of these five senses had been sealed by Yang Chen, just leaving behind his consciousness. There was nobody in the mortal world who learned this technique, only Yang Chen, who was once a great principal golden immortal, knew this technique.

Leaving behind the consciousness meant that he could still think and hadn't sunk into a coma. If he still had hope to escape, being conscious was the best thing for him, but in this situation, where five of his senses had been sealed, it was more of a nightmare than luck.

He could not hear, could not see, could not smell, could not taste and even did not have any sensation of touch. Strictly speaking, after the sense of touch had been sealed, he would simply not have sense any kind of pain or comfort, this was just like his mind had been sent to a space without anything around him, where he could not even sense the passing of time clearly.

In this kind of condition he was still completely conscious. What sort of torture is this? He had gone mad due to being sealed; every day he would desperately hope to sense something that he was familiar with, even if he was allowed to die immediately, he was willing.

“I will answer anything you ask, I just request that you end my suffering quickly!”

When Yang Chen released that guy, he fell down to the ground and immediately broke into tears. He just wanted to die quickly, regardless of where he was. He did not want to experience that sort of despair he had felt when he was sealed, not even for one more second. Rather than being imprisoned like that, he would prefer a quick death.

The Palace Master and the Law Enforcement Hall’s Hall Master glanced at each other. This was somewhat unexpected. When Liang Shao Ming looked at that person, he was also gobsmacked and after hearing his words, his complexion went through a large change. If this person gave them evidence, he would certainly not be able to defend Chu Heng forever.

When everyone heard his testimony, everything had become clear and everyone was already filled with anger. The people of Greatest Heaven Sect were surprisingly aiming at Pure Yang Palace like this. At the time when Yang Chen had entered the sect and when he had ascended to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, it was always like this, and now they were surprisingly still sending people to kill him? Wasn’t this just a tight slap in the face of Pure Yang Palace?

It was only the testimony of one witness, so Liang Shao Ming still wanted to fight for his disciple. But just before he could open his mouth to argue, Yang Chen made another person appear. Not long after his narrative had finished, there was another person. Four people in total appeared in succession. When he saw this, Liang

Shao Ming knew that Chu Heng was finished.

“Hall Master Xu, you go talk to the Greatest Heaven Sect and demand an explanation for this!”

It could not be seen from the Palace Master’s expression whether he was glad or angry, but his voice contained intense anger.

“The disciples of my Pure Yang Palace do not allow others to make them bow, neither do they allow others to tarnish them! Even adding on the matter of the Heavenly Stairs from last time, the Greatest Heaven Sect must give us an explanation!”

“Palace Master, at the time of the Heavenly Stairs Assembly, the Greatest Heaven Sect lost three JieDan experts, if we raise that matter again...”

Xu Cheng Xin was the Hall Master of the Foreign Affairs Hall, he had to handle these affairs smoothly, so he had to consider many things. If the Palace Master made him talk about all of this, wouldn’t it infuriate the Greatest Heaven Sect?

“Even if they lose a hundred JieDan experts, it was still the Greatest Heaven Sect who was in wrong first, the explanation that they owe must still be provided!”

The Palace Master had to consider even more things than Xu Cheng Xin, but seeing the seriousness of the problem, he said with even more emphasis:



“You just go and negotiate with them, no need to pay attention to other things!”

Hearing the words of the Palace Master, each and every one of the younger generation of the Law Enforcement Hall felt their blood boiling. The Palace Master had stuck out so much for a disciple of his sect that he didn't even hesitate to confront the number one sect in the mortal world, the Greatest Heaven Sect. At this moment those several Law Enforcement Hall disciples were ready to lay down their lives for the sect.

Even though he clearly knew that this matter would not lead to any irreconcilable hatred between Pure Yang Palace and the Greatest Heaven Sect, Yang Chen still felt very good. The reason why had he joined the Pure Yang Palace again, along with his primary objective, was not unrelated with the fact that the Pure Yang Palace safeguarded its disciples. As long as he did not allow Luminous Moon Hall's Liang Shao Ming to hold this post at that time, everything would be alright.

“Hall Master Liang!”

After he finished speaking about these foreign affairs, he turned to Liang Shao Meng and said to him:

“Chu Heng has colluded with outsiders to attack disciples of his own sect, we also have witness testimony about that, which is an irrefutable evidence, do you still have anything to say?”

“Disciple does not dare!”

The position as the Hall Master of the Luminous Moon Hall was not something special in front of the Palace Master. Under the intent gaze of the Palace Master, Liang Shao Ming lowered his head, not daring to say anything more.

“So you don’t have any objections?”

The Palace Master asked again.

“No, master!”

Liang Shao Ming’s gaze was fixed at the ground below the feet of the Palace Master. He was faintly shaking his head with a regretful expression on his face, feeling resentful towards Chu Heng for not meeting his expectations.

“Meng Xian, Chu Heng, as a disciple of Pure Yang Palace, has colluded with outsiders and had attacked a fellow disciple, he is guilty of many terrible crimes. Fortunately Yang Chen is fine, so the cultivation of Chu Heng must be abolished and he must be evicted from the sect!”

After Liang Shao Ming didn’t have have any objections, the Palace Master turned to Meng Xian, the hall master of the Law Enforcement Hall and said:

“Call back Chu Heng and execute the sentence of the Law

Enforcement Hal!”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Meng Xian bowed and agreed. Chu Heng’s guilt had already been determined, even Liang Shao Ming could not help him now.

“Yang Chen!”

After announcing the punishment for Chu Heng, the Palace Master turned over to Yang Chen. Yang Chen hastily replied while standing next to Liang Shao Ming.

“Abolishing his cultivation and eviction from sect, this is the punishment of my Pure Yang Palace. As for the personal grudges between you and him, you must settle them yourself!”

The Palace Master’s words were very calm, but everyone could sense the killing intent in them. A person with a wasted cultivation, facing Yang Chen who wanted to settle private grudges, the result was obvious.

“I am grateful to Palace Master for upholding justice!”

Yang Chen saluted him. The Palace Master was simply a parasite within his stomach, if he had wanted, he could have killed Chu Heng with his own hands, but he had still given him this kind of instruction. Apart from expressing his thanks, what else could Yang Chen have said?

“Hall Master Liang!”

The affair still hadn't been settled, when the Palace Master turned to Liang Meng Shao again.

“You have failed to understand and provide your disciple with proper guidance, so you are also responsible, as punishment, you must go into meditation for ten years and ponder over your mistakes. In addition, Yang Chen must be rewarded with ingredients for a flying sword, coming from you.”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Liang Shao Ming didn't refute in the least, when looked at from an outside perspective, this time Liang Shao Ming had played the role of an accomplice. As for modifying the qiankun pouch, although he had said that he was duped by Chu Heng, who knew the true story? But the Palace Master had already decided not to investigate further, Liang Shao Ming had said something ludicrous and still got off lightly.

“Yang Chen! This was a reward for you when you had ascended to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, but at that time you hadn't reached the foundation stage and therefore the reward has been delayed.”

The Palace Master was encouraging Yang Chen again.

“Right now you have already become an inner disciple, so the original reward of a foundation stage pill is already irrelevant, but it will be converted to ten thousand contribution points of the sect. In addition, your master will refine for you a flying sword, suitable to your attribute, with the hope that you will cultivate diligently and gain even higher enlightenment! As for the place of your cultivation, you are allowed to choose any immortal cave within the Meiqing mountain!”

“Thank you, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen bowed again and expressed his gratitude. Since he was already an inner disciple, those rewards which had been promised to him long ago would now be provided to him.

But Yang Chen was neither pleased with the rewards, nor with the punishment. He did not lack any of these natural resources and as for the punishments just a moment ago, it was merely the Palace Master asking for an explanation from the Greatest Heaven Sect, in order to reflect their backing for Yang Chen.

But returning to the main topic: asking for an explanation regarding the matter of the Heavenly Stairs; seven to eight years had already passed since then, why hadn't he asked for a reason previously?

Yang Chen was very clear on this. Even if he was a talent, he was merely a qi layer talent. Even after the Heavenly Stairs Assembly was concluded, he was still not worth for the Pure Yang Palace to become hostile with the Greatest Heaven Sect, let alone worthy to personally go and ask for some sort of explanation. They had

already lost several JieDan experts, what kind of explanation did he still need?

But now was completely different from the past. From the time when the news of Yang Chen successfully refining a Heaven Seizing Pill had spread, Yang Chen was no longer just a simple foundation stage disciple. Instead he was the one who could assist several YuanYing and Da Cheng stage experts in ascending.

An ordinary talent could only raise his cultivation and increase the prestige of his sect somewhat, that's all. But an exceedingly strong pill concocting master was not like this. A high level pill concocting master was able to bring innumerable benefits for the sect, even obtaining the support of several high level experts was not a problem.

The attitude was also different from earlier: previously the Pure Yang Palace had merely supported him energetically, but this time they were exerting all of their power to support Yang Chen.

Previously Yang Chen had received grievances so he wanted to return them now; previously Yang Chen had been plotted against, so now the enemy had to provide a reasonable explanation. Previously, Yang Chen had to suffer injuries, but now he wanted to return them twice over. In any case, currently Yang Chen had become the representative of the Pure Yang Palace, anyone daring to plot against Yang Chen were all immediately and ruthlessly crushed, ensuring that Yang Chen did not suffer any problems.

How could Yang Chen have imagined the thoughts of the Palace Master? To the few friends of Yang Chen it probably just looked

like the Pure Yang Palace supported Yang Chen, but they had not considered this.

Yang Chen's favourable opinion towards the Pure Yang Palace was completely due to the support of his master and the Fierce Yang Hall. But now it also included the Medicine Hall, Foreign Affairs Hall and the Law Enforcement Hall. But as for the Palace Master and the Luminous Moon Hall, Yang Chen's opinion wasn't favourable in the slightest.

Strictly speaking, although the Palace Master was pretty good to him at the moment, he had still somewhat sided with the Luminous Moon Hall, otherwise he would not have allowed Liang Shao Ming, who had afterwards betrayed and sold out Gao Yue, to hold the position of Hall Master. Just because of this one point, Yang Chen did not feel much gratitude towards the Palace Master.

The Palace Master was, strictly speaking, completely shielding Liang Shao Ming. Even in this matter: Liang Shao Ming had barely used any words and some flimsy proof had allowed him to escape from being pronounced guilty. Even if they continued the investigation into whether Liang Shao Ming participated in the conspiracy against Yang Chen or not: Just because he said that Chu Heng had duped him, he would have gotten off lightly and at most he would have received some light punishment, but he still would have been able to keep the position of the Luminous Moon Hall's Hall Master and that little bit of closed door training wouldn't have even tickled him.

In the end, Yang Chen did not believe in the Palace Master very much. It seemed like he was still not worthy enough for the

Luminous Moon Hall's Master to be renounced for him. Yang Chen wanted to change this equilibrium, perhaps there was only one way and that was precisely to increase his own strength until nobody would dare to ignore him.

But Yang Chen still did not need to think about these things a lot for the time being, even if he kept on thinking about it, he couldn't do anything. Therefore Yang Chen delightedly accepted the rewards by the Palace Master and obediently stood behind his master.

After the punishments were declared, the Law Enforcement Hall began to frantically search for Chu Heng. Thus Du Qian was very apologetic that he could not accompany Yang Chen in choosing an Immortal Cave. The others, on the other hand, all made an appointment with Yang Chen to go look for an Immortal Cave some time, but first all of them returned to their own Immortal Cave to cultivate. As for Yang Chen, he followed Gao Yue and returned to her Immortal Cave.

“My Immortal Cave is very simple, you can sit anywhere you want!”

Gao Yue's cave was simple and crude, but when returning to her own territory, she was very relaxed and did not have that displeased look in her eyes anymore. She allowed Yang Chen to do as he wished in a laid back manner.

Yang Chen remembered that this was master's routine on normal days, though there didn't seem to be any rules between master and disciple, it had an atmosphere like in a house. Yang Chen was very



fond of it.

“So what is your current cultivation, what are you good at and what kind of flying sword do you want me to refine for you?”

Without saying much, Gao Yue first asked Yang Chen regarding his request for the flying sword. This was the Palace Master’s reward for Yang Chen, someone had already brought the materials, so Gao Yue immediately began setting out to work, afraid that her disciple would feel neglected.

“There is no hurry, master! Take a rest and let this disciple offer some tea to you!”

How could Yang Chen bear to see Gao Yue exhausted like this. Soon he took the tea sets and tea leaves that he had already prepared earlier out of his Achievement Ring. Then he retrieved the Profound Spirit Furnace and the spring water which he had searched for all throughout the journey to the Heavenly Stairs Assembly and began to boil it.

Gao Yue was very fond of drinking tea and Yang Chen naturally knew about it. He had already searched for everything properly and had only waited for this moment.

Currently, seeing Yang Chen bustling like this, Gao Yue was astonished and also very happy. Smelling the flavour of the tea plants within Yang Chen’s hands, she became even happier. Yang Chen was preparing the tea with utmost care, just according to Gao Yue’s preferences and his method of boiling was moreover

completely new and original. He was also proficient in rinsing the tea plant, raising Gao Yue's expectations to the fullest.

After being heated by the Profound Spirit Furnace and rinsing the tea plants, the spring water was filled into the teapot, after doing another series of procedures, Yang Chen filled the cups and held that cups in front of Gao Yue.

“Master, I invite you to tea!”

As soon as Gao Yue slowly smelled the sweet fragrance, Yang Chen continued:

“The maturity of this tea is insufficient, after ten more years, master can enjoy the best quality of tea!”

“Good, I will wait!”

Gao Yue was not courteous with Yang Chen and directly nodded, drinking the tea in her hand in one gulp, she loudly said:

“Good tea!”

“Master, this Immortal Cave of yours is really simple, and moreover the Spirit Power on this place is lacking!”

Yang Chen knew of Gao Yue's habit of drinking tea, he was very delighted when watching her drinking the tea he personally made

and, without thinking much, he said:

“Once this disciple picks an Immortal Cave tomorrow, master should also pick a better cave!”

# Chapter 91 - The Nest Of Future Talents

The cave was crude and the Spirit Power in this place was lacking? Hearing Yang Chen say such a blunt evaluation, Gao Yue could not help but open her eyes widely. She was looking at Yang Chen as if looking at someone whom she had never met before. As a matter of fact, today was just the first day of Yang Chen and Gao Yu properly meeting each other, so this was not normal.

“Master, don’t worry too much, this disciple knows a suitable location for an immortal cave on Meiqing Mountain. Constructing a few Immortal Caves is nothing much, everything will be provided by this disciple!”

Yang Chen was very delighted and patted his chest, as if completely taking charge, without paying the slightest attention to the strange looks Gao Yue gave him.

“You know about a lot of things, right?”

Gao Yue was very smart, or how would she be Yang Chen’s master in his previous life? Looking at Yang Chen, she directly asked:

“Even the Palace Master and the others have said that you do not need much guidance from me in your cultivation, is that so?”

“This disciple has already learned everything in the Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor. Disciple naturally knows some

things which other people don't know.”

Yang Chen smilingly continued:

“But as for problems regarding cultivation, disciple will naturally ask master for guidance. Previously this disciple couldn't do anything about that matter, but naturally it will not be the same now.”

Yang Chen's words made Gao Yue increasingly curious about him, she suddenly could not help but hold the cup towards Yang Chen for another helping and, leaning towards him, she asked:

“You say this, but if I were to read the entire Hidden Pavilion once through... Then what?”

The recent subconscious actions were so smooth, these two people were fitting together, as if they practiced many times.

“Master, if you want to become a pill refining master or a tool refining master, then you should often look at books which have a lot of different skills, in order to increase your knowledge.”

Yang Chen shook his head and answered with a smile.

“But if master just wants to dedicate herself to cultivation, then looking at these things isn't of much use, it will just consume time in vain and waste energy, that's all. The gains will not make up for the losses!”

“En, that is reasonable!”

Sitting on her chair, Gao Yue subconsciously nodded. Her temperament was very straightforward, she was really not fond of those complicated things like pill concocting. If it were not that her strength was related with the magic weapon she had, then maybe she wouldn't even bother refining them, as she had no interest in doing these kinds of things. Yang Chen's words dispelled all of her thoughts regarding going to the Hidden Pavilion to read.

As for this one question and answer, if someone who did not know about their relation had heard this conversation, maybe they would have believed that Gao Yue was the disciple and Yang Chen her master. Both of them were talking naturally like this and it did not feel inappropriate at all. In his previous life, Yang Chen frequently discussed these kinds of questions with his master and Gao Yue was also very fond of this kind of ambience. Such a mutual understanding between a master and a disciple who met recently was nevertheless very rare.

So Gao Yue could not help herself from tasting the tea offered to her by Yang Chen, while authenticating his cultivation. After all she was his master, so in any case she had to point out the path of cultivation for Yang Chen. Although she could not guide him in pill concocting, in terms of cultivation, she was a JieDan stage expert, so how could she bear losing to Yang Chen's 'vast' knowledge?

For the first day of being a disciple, Yang Chen interacted

delightedly with his master. His master also hadn't adopted the airs of being a master. As her disciple he was nevertheless aware that this was all in accordance with his master's wishes and served her with matchless consideration. Gao Yue felt as if both of them were not master and disciple, but rather two friends who had been in contact for many years.

This was also the feeling that Yang Chen had yearned for day and night, which he had missed for ten thousand years. That scene which he had looked forward to for more than ten years after rebirth was finally happening before his eyes. Even if Yang Chen had the mental state of a Great Principal Golden Immortal, he still couldn't help but feel intoxicated by it.

Perhaps since the intense desire within his heart had been satisfied, his thoughts had become more clear, so at the time of his training in the evening, Yang Chen was even able to sense that the Spirit Power within his meridians was flowing more freely. Especially the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, felt as if boiling over.

In the early morning of the next day, Gongsun Ling, Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan hurried over to the Immortal Cave of Gao Yue. They had already made an appointment with Yang Chen for going together to look for his Immortal Cave.

Gao Yue was also coming, but nobody was even the slightest bit surprised at this. Finding an immortal cave for her disciple was something she had to do as a master. But Yang Chen was relatively special, he had done everything by himself. Although it was like this, Yang Chen had already said that she must abandon her

current Immortal Cave, so how could Gao Yue not come to take a look.

Gongsun Ling was also unusual: although she had already reached the foundation stage a few years ago, she still hadn't set up her own Immortal Cave. Before going to the Immortal Falling Cave, Yang Chen had talked with Gongsun Ling that she was not to worry about picking an Immortal Cave and wait for him to return. For some reason Gongsun Ling had listened and obeyed Yang Chen's suggestion, and had waited until today. Although to almost all other people it appeared that Yang Chen had come to look for the location of an immortal cave for himself, in reality he had to find three immortal caves: for Gongsun Ling, Gao Yue and himself.

The Meiqing mountain range extended very far, it had a perimeter of more than a thousand miles. The Pure Yang Palace was located on the highest peak of the Meiqing mountain range. That was the region with the richest spiritual influence, and also the region with the highest concentration of Immortal Caves at the Pure Yang Palace.

Naturally Yang Chen would not choose a region crowded with that many people, even if the Spirit Power there was strong. After being divided among so many people, it was almost completely thinned out. Therefore, Yang Chen lead everyone to follow him to a small mountain ridge of the meiqing mountain, acting as if sensing Spirit Power, but in reality he had already determined the location.

“Here?”



Seeing the region Yang Chen had landed in, Gao Yue creased her brows. The others were also at a loss, but nobody said anything, they merely followed Yang Chen and afterwards began to carefully sense the Spirit Power in the surroundings.

The region where they had landed was a valley which could neither be considered very big or very small. The scenery here was very good, surrounded by mountains from all sides, which, although they were not very big, were able to obstruct the wind from all directions. The distance from the main Hall of the Pure Yang Palace was around two hours in flight, so not too far but also not very close.

“Younger disciple Yang, is the spiritual influence here suitable?”

It was pointless for other people to ask him, Gongsun Ling was the most suitable candidate to ask anything. Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan had only come to help and Gao Yue was Yang Chen’s master, none among them was appropriate to ask him. Only Gongsun Ling, who had come to look for an Immortal Cave for herself, was suitable for asking this question.

“It only looks like this from the outside.”

Yang Chen smiled but didn’t hide anything from the others.

“In the past I found a very interesting jade slip on the body of an assassin. Recorded on the jade strip was the location of a spirit vein, which he had incidentally discovered.”

Within the Meiqing mountain range there were many loose cultivators, the Pure Yang Palace was allowing their existence. Every once in a while, these people strolled around and perhaps discovered some things which the people from the Pure Yang Palace couldn't discover. Since the assassin had already died, there was no proof whether the spirit vein had already been discovered prior to this or not, everything had been secretly buried with his body.

“Where?”

Yang Chen's words had piqued everyone's interest. A secret underground spirit vein was something that all cultivators would yearn for in their dreams.

Yang Chen extended his finger and pointed to the area below his foot, while smiling without saying anything. This region had an exceedingly powerful Di Mai [\[1\]](#) and would only be discovered two hundred years later. Although it couldn't compare to the Di Mai of the Pure Yang Palace's main hall, for the use of only these few people, this location was extremely good.

Along with his movement, everyone's gaze turned towards the ground below Yang Chen. Only, no matter how they looked, used their Spirit Power to interact with it, or examined it with their Spiritual Awareness, they couldn't find anything out of the ordinary. This was an ordinary, small mountain valley, it had absolutely no relation with any underground spirit vein.

“There is no hurry, shall we first build a seal around this spirit vein?”

Yang Chen was aware of everyone's suspicion but he didn't immediately make the spirit vein appear and instead raised this kind of proposal.

“Otherwise, as soon as we make the spirit vein appear, other people will want to have a share. You have to know that, I don't like people from the Luminous Moon Hall.”

Everyone agreed with Yang Chen's proposal; even within the sect, the competition for natural resources was very fierce. The strength of the Luminous Moon Hall was currently very strong compared to others, so it naturally snatched away many of the natural resources. Of the courtyards near the center of the Pure Yang Palace, where Spirit Power was most abundant, at least half were occupied by Luminous Moon Hall.

For some reason, Gao Yue unexpectedly appeared to have complete trust in Yang Chen. She completely believed Yang Chen's words about there being a spirit vein at this place. Without saying anything more, she immediately stepped onto her flying sword and flew into the sky, where she turned into ray of light, directly going to the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace, while leaving this sentence behind:

“I'm going to inform the Palace Master, and move my things from my old cave.”

Gao Yue's cave was near the core of the Pure Yang Palace and countless people have lusted after it. Once it became public that

Gao Yue would move out, it would certainly make someone very happy. She believed that the Palace Master would give his consent without much thought, as people like Yang Chen, who thought about the prosperity of their sect were simply unique.

“Senior apprentice sister, what kind of immortal cave do you plan to build?”

Yang Chen was not too rushed. He made stone chairs for everyone and passed the time while chatting. While speaking, he extended both hands and a ball of fire appeared in his hands and began to change to different shapes. All sorts of buildings appeared within Yang Chen’s hands.

While choosing the immortal cave, Yang Chen was properly calculating: Gongsun Ling was a talent who would only appear once in a thousand years and his master Gao Yue also had a full water spirit root, together Yang Chen himself, these three people were enough to take the whole cultivation world by storm in the coming years. The sooner these three people would join forces, the more their superiority would complement each other, clearing the way for their future development.

The fortunate thing was that Gongsun Ling had listened to Yang Chen’s suggestion and hadn’t built her immortal cave waited for Yang Chen to return. This meant that the seeds he had previously sown had begun to bear fruits. Gongsun Ling would support Yang Chen, this already established that, in the future, his words would have absolute authority within the Pure Yang Palace.

Although the spirit vein below his feet had strong Spirit Power,

even enough for use by YuanYing stage experts, he had only prepared Immortal Caves to cultivate before reaching YuanYing stage for the three of them. As for cultivation after the YuanYing stage, Yang Chen had an even better choice, only he didn't have the ability to go and accept it at this time.

Gongsun Ling was attracted by the buildings on Yang Chen's hand and began to admire them, even Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan joined in. Thinking about what Wang Yuan had said about following him blindly, Yang Chen suddenly thought of something. Apparently he should also unite a huge force in the Pure Yang Palace and then when the time came, with the help of his fellow disciples, it would be sufficient to dominate the whole Pure Yang Palace.

“Senior disciple Shangguan and senior disciple Wang, if you want to, then you should also move here.”

Yang Chen smiled towards the two people and said:

“Many people will make the place more lively and every one will also get close to each other.”

Yang Chen's proposal increased everyone's heart rate. Even the JieDan stage expert Gao Yue had renounced her Immortal Cave near the main hall of the Pure Yang Palace without the slightest hesitation, which clearly showed that there was not much of a difference between here and there. But both of them had their respective masters, so it was not proper to think for themselves and act accordingly. Shangguan Feng thought for a good moment and spoke without assurance:

“As soon as we return, we will consult our masters, and then if we can, we will move here.”

“That’s good, when the time comes, we will also pull senior disciple Du Qian over here, and maybe we will not need to construct Immortal Caves for each of us and can instead directly build a huge villa, where anyone can choose a room for himself to live and cultivate.”

Yang Chen immediately stopped the projections of those pavilions and kiosks and asked Gongsun Ling:

“What does senior apprentice sister think?”

“It’s good!”

After a small moment, Gongsun Ling immediately nodded her head in agreement.

“Then I will have to trouble senior apprentice sister to arrange a few spell formations to lock the surroundings.”

Yang Chen said casually and then encouraged Gongsun Ling to exert herself.

“As soon as we have built a good villa, I can lead senior apprentice sister to take a look at an exceedingly powerful illusion

spell, maybe we can do something to move that illusion spell to our place.”

Yang Chen was talking about the illusion spell in the place where he had taken the sword box. After Gongsun Ling mastered it, it could be used as a weapon for self protection. He had no use for it anyway, so to keep the fertile water from flowing into the fields of others, letting Gongsun Ling have it was just perfect.

Gao Yue had went very quickly and also returned very quickly. Covered in sword light, she soon landed and said to Yang Chen:

“I have already talked with the Palace Master and he also agreed. You should allow me to take a examine it. I wonder how powerful this spirit vein really is!”

While speaking, the sword light also dispersed and suddenly many people appeared in the vacant land, among them were Yang Chen’s servants, Shen Da, Ho Lin, Ting Yuan and Gu Qin, as well as Gao Yue and Gongsun Ling’s servants. When the time came they could also be used for work.

Having the consent of Palace Master, everything would be easier. But Yang Chen still had to prepare many things in advance. Gongsun Ling’s spell formation also had to be arranged, apart from defense, a spirit gathering spell and a spirit sealing spell also had to be specially arranged. The spiritual influence which was gathered underground had to be sealed off, so that it wouldn’t flow outside. Only after everything was properly prepared, did Yang Chen start to do it.

Taking out sixty four catties of middle grade spirit stones of exactly the same size, Yang Chen placed them on the ground in a regular pattern, adding in the other kind of spell formation ingredients and soon arranged them in a spell formation that no one had seen ever before.

Everyone was confused when looking at it, even a spell formation expert like Gongsun Ling, also hadn't seen this kind of spell formation before. She started feeling that this younger disciple was getting more and more mysterious.

After arranging the spell formation, Yang Chen retreated several steps and began to control the spell formation and started operating it. Within a short moment, a dazzling white light appeared on the ground within range of the spell formation. The white light was very bright, but it was concentrated and not scattered, it had the appearance of giant creature which showed up in the sky and began to dig into the ground. But after looking carefully, nothing appeared to be dug out.

But very quickly everyone sensed a majestic Spirit Power coming closer and closer, rushing out frantically from below the ground. Soon the Spirit Power was erupting from the underground like a fountain and the spirit gathering spell turned incomparably bright in a flash. Everyone was shrouded in this frantically spouting spirit power.

---

[1] Geographical positions according to feng shui



## Chapter 92 - Come Often To Talk

In the beginning, when Yang Chen had taken out sixty four middle grade Spirit Stones, Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan had grown anxious. All of the sixty four middle grade Spirit Stones were of the same size and every one among them had a weight of exactly ten catties. After exchanging them, they would be worth sixty four thousand catties low grade Spirit Stones.

Even if Shangguan Feng, Wang Yuan and Gongsun Ling added their wealth together, it still would not be equal to this, but Yang Chen had taken them out without batting an eyelid. Not to mention anything else, just absorbing the Spirit Power of this many Spirit Stones could be compared to draining a low grade spirit vein, but surprisingly Yang Chen was using these things to arrange an unknown spell formation, simply extravagant.

But everyone knew that Yang Chen was rich. Not to mention anything else, he had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill successfully, so surely Elder Wu would not treat Yang Chen unfairly, Spirit Stones were merely a small token after all. Everyone just thought that it was unfortunate that so many Spirit Stones were being used up.

But when this boundless Spirit Power madly surged forth, everyone didn't have anything more to say. Compared to this underground spirit vein, not to mention six hundred forty catties of middle grade Spirit Stones, even if it was six thousand four hundred or sixty four thousand catties, that also was absolutely worth it. This kind of spirit vein was enough to be compared to eighty percent of the Profound Yang Palace's master vein. And it

would furthermore only be used by these few people.

Currently Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan did not need to ask their masters, they were certain that if they knew about the circumstances of the spirit vein, their masters would certainly force them to relocate here. The master did not have the opportunity and the face to move here, but if their disciple had this kind of opportunity, why would they decline? They should move there immediately.

Including those servants, everyone had felt the very dense, almost uncontrollable Spirit Power. It could only be described with one word: extravagance.

This was really very extravagant. There was so much strong and dense Spirit Power, it was sufficient for use by several hundred people, but only these few people would use it... What word apart from extravagance could be used to describe it?

Gao Yue originally believed that she only had to change her original cave for a location near a spirit vein, and in the beginning she didn't have much of a desire for that, but when this portion of Spirit Power frantically rushed forth, even this JieDan stage expert couldn't help but be astonished and rooted to the ground, not daring to believe what she was sensing.

‘Is this real?’

Gao Yue was repeatedly thinking this. The other people also felt as if they were in a dream. If they compared this to their previous

locations, their original caves were comparable to a small brook which could quench their thirst, while this here was a lake in which they could immerse themselves, actually it was an exceedingly large lake.

“This! This! Isn’t this somewhat excessive?”

Gao Yue stammeringly said these words, an expression of ecstasy mixed with disbelief on her face, making Yang Chen go silly just by looking at it. In this life, Yang Chen’s deepest desire was to look at Gao Yue’s smiling face and right now was the first time. After this, Yang Chen could still do many things to make Gao Yue rejoice.

Gao Yue’s smiling face made Yang Chen feel that all the hard work he had done was worth it. While everyone was stunned, he was secretly enjoying the moment of his master’s happiness. After a moment he lightly coughed to wake these people up from their intoxication.

“Shouldn’t we first build our Immortal Caves?”

Only after Yang Chen reminded everyone did they recall what they had come here for. Fortunately, everyone was equally bewitched, including the JieDan stage expert Gao Yue, so there was nobody left to make fun of them for being stunned.

Yang Chen had suggested just a moment ago that a huge villa should be built and Gao Yue clapped her hands in approval. She was fond of the feeling of being at home and Yang Chen’s proposal was what Gao Yue wished for in her heart.

All of them were cultivators and everyone had remarkable ability, so the inside of the small valley had a completely changed after ten days. The villa was spanning the entire valley was built very quickly. Pavilions and kiosks, small bridges on running water; everything all was built like a luxurious villa.

Shangguan Feng and Wang Yuan first returned to the Pure Yang Palace to bring their own servants. As expected, their masters forced them to rush over.

When the villa was established, even the Palace Master and Medicine Hall's Hall Master, Zhu Chen Tao, had hurried there to congratulate them. Yang Chen hadn't planned to conceal it from the Palace Master and his other acquaintances. Only, when they passed through the spell formations to enter, they didn't have the bearing of the YuanYing stage or the JieDan stage. After seeing this scene, their mouths opened wide because of the shock.

“This is the spirit vein you discovered?”

The Palace Master recovered quickly. Even though the saliva in his mouth was almost going to overflow because of his admiration, he restored his calm very quickly.

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Gao Yue, as the person who had the highest cultivation among everyone replied to the Palace Master's question and soon after that she asked him with a smile:

“Say, do you regret now, Palace Master? Otherwise, does Palace Master also want to come here?”

“This is the karma of you all, it cannot be reaped by someone else!”

The Palace Master was very envious, but he still shook his head and refused Gao Yue’s courteous invitation. After calming down, the Palace Master was also absolutely delighted within his heart. In the end, this was still being used by disciples of the Pure Yang Palace and moreover the two most talented disciples which one could only see once in a hundred years, so whether it was good or bad, it would still only benefit the Pure Yang Palace.

The Palace Master looked for a good moment and then nodded in satisfaction. Whether or not it was delicately constructed, he did not care, but the plentiful Spirit Power here, together with the spirit gathering spells, which were complementing with the spirit sealing spell, were just right. Almost anyone could cultivate on top this spirit sealing spell. If it was placed within the Pure Yang Palace, this would be the treatment received by the innermost core disciples. But here, even the servants could access it.

“Does this villa have a name?”

After appreciating it properly, the Palace Master could not help but ask.

“I was just about to ask Palace Master to bestow a name!”

Gao Yue wanted to appease the Palace Master a bit by giving him this authority.

“Fine, since you are from the Fierce Yang Hall, we can simply call this Second Fierce Yang Courtyard!”

The Palace Master was not pretentious and after some slight pondering he came up with this name. After giving it a name, the Palace Master said to Yang Chen and Gongsun Ling:

“Yang Chen, Gongsun Ling, this is also the immortal cave for you two, congratulations to you two, do you want to say something for the occasion?”

“Many thanks to Palace Master for bestowing this name!”

Gongsun Ling merely bowed to express her thanks and didn't say anything more. The Palace Master nodded slightly, indicating not to be too courteous at Gongsun Ling with his hand, but his gaze was concentrated on Yang Chen. Everyone knew, that Yang Chen was the one who had discovered this spirit vein, so the Palace Master was very eager to know what Yang Chen would say.

“This disciple must ask Palace Master for a trivial task!”

Yang Chen confronted the Palace Master without caring for the huge difference in cultivation between them in the slightest and directly raised his request, like asking a family member.

“What kind of matter?”

The Palace Master asked curiously.

“This disciple has acquired some spirit essences of the five phases at the Immortal Falling Well and was just about to request Palace Master to expand this spirit vein!”

While speaking, a qiankun pouch appeared in Yang Chen’s hand, but they did not know who he had killed for it. Once he opened the qiankun pouch, spirit essences poured out from the inside.

“This!”

Looking at this huge pile of spirit essences, everyone was rooted in place as if sealed, nobody was able to move. All of their gazes were drawn towards that pile of spirit essences on the ground and they weren’t able to pull their eyes away. All of them were totally stupefied, even the Palace Master was not an exception.

Even if he hadn’t gone to the Immortal Falling Well, he knew about the existence of the five phases spirit essences, and also properly understood the effect of the five phases spirit essences. They certainly were able to increase the grade of a Di Mai by increasing its amount of Spirit Power!

Even the Palace Master was speechless when looking at the huge pile of spirit essences at this moment. The Palace Master had seen

spirit essences, and he had also used them, but he had never before seen so many spirit essences in one place.

Which foundation stage disciple could manage to bring several tens of thousands of spirit essences with them? Usually a few disciples would cooperate and after ten years at the Immortal Falling Well they would be able to bring back fifty thousand or so spirit essences, which they would then use to remold some spirit vein for everyone of them to use. But Yang Chen, who was at the qi layer at that time, had surprisingly taken out such a huge pile of spirit essences?

Looking at the huge pile of spirit essences on the ground, they were definitely no less than fifty thousand, probably even more than a hundred thousand. What made these people even more resentful was, that the five phases spirit essences, which were treasured by each and every cultivator, were piled up on the ground without care by Yang Chen. In addition to that, about the qiankun pouch in Yang Chen's hand, nobody knew which loose cultivator it originally belonged to, but it was actually almost a peak quality qiankun pouch.

The grass is always greener on the other side of the fence, even the Palace Master felt a sudden admiration which he was not able to push down within his heart. Such a strong Di Mai for Spirit Power, if one added so many five phases spirit essences, this kind of treatment these twenty people, including even the servants, was even better than the most senior sect elder!

For a second, the Palace Master wanted to berate Yang Chen loudly. There was already so much strong Spirit Power here, but



he was still wasting this many spirit essences? What in the world does he want to do?

“How many spirit essences do you have?”

Gao Yue was also dumbstruck, but relatively speaking, Yang Chen had already given her more than enough surprises these days, making her somewhat immune to them. Even then, Gao Yue had also been stunned for a moment, only then she was able to ask this question.

“Not many, not many, only a hundred thousand.”

Yang Chen replied indifferently, giving everyone the urge to thoroughly beat him up. A hundred thousand spirit essences of the five phases were ‘not many’? How could anyone endure hearing this?

Because of Yang Chen’s reply, everyone’s gazes shifted from the pile of spirit essences to him. Looking at this, Yang Chen helplessly shrugged his shoulders and replied innocently:

“You all know about Elder Wu, he had a lot of these things at that place.”

Hearing this everyone understood what was going on. Elder Wu was the main overseer of the Immortal Falling Well, and he has been the overseer for several hundred years, so it was not unexpected that he had this many spirit essences. Compared with

the value of the Heaven Seizing Pill, these many spirit essences were just a trifle.

Everyone could not help but feeling envious towards Yang Chen's luck, naturally, they felt even more curious about Yang Chen's pill concocting ability. To be able to be regarded as this important by Elder Wu was no ordinary matter. Both the Palace Master and Zhu Chen Tao decided, that, in the future, they had to frequently visit the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, even if they did not have any matter there. Maybe they could have some enormous benefit drop in.

They hadn't realized that this was Yang Chen's plan. As the leader of the sect, naturally the Palace Master couldn't openly plunder the immortal caves of disciples of his own sect, but frequently visiting it was not too strange. In any case, the spiritual influence was enough to support one or two YuanYing stage cultivators, but if the sect leader frequently visited them, then the status of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard would surely increase. So if any of those disciples who wanted to stir trouble here had eyes, they would at least hesitate somewhat before bothering them.

Although the Palace Master had already evicted Chu Heng from the sect, as well as banished the Luminous Moon Hall's Master to meditate for ten years in order to reflect on his mistakes, their friends and disciples in the sect would absolutely cry out in protest. They would surely look for an opportunity to take revenge. Although Yang Chen did not care about these dirty tricks if they were against himself, but he did not want them to disturb his master, or his mood would be ruined for such a pointless reason. With the Palace Master frequently coming over, which

person with eyes would dare to talk drivel to bother them?

Moreover, if the Palace Master and Zhu Chen Tao regularly visited them, then everyone, including Yang Chen, would be able to enjoy the moonlight first, as they would be able to receive guidance regarding any kind of cultivation problem. As the elder of the sect, how could the Palace Master drive away any disciple whom he was visiting, without properly guiding him?

Although Yang Chen had experience of cultivating up to the Great Principal Golden Immortal level, that was only in fire attributed cultivation. He didn't have any experience for high level cultivation of other the attributes, so he was eager to obtain guidance from the people here.

“Do you plan to use all of them here?”

Since he had the idea of coming frequently, the Palace Master also didn't mind if the conditions here became even better. He had asked this without thinking it through, and didn't even wait for Yang Chen's reply when he had already started to work. The five phases spirit essences could improve the spirit vein. The higher the cultivation of the people doing it, the better the results. The Palace Master was naturally most suitable for using them. But after all was said and done, he was still feeling a little bit of regret.

“I request Palace Master to take these.”

Yang Chen hastily bowed and agreed. He clearly realized the intention behind the Palace Master's words and he also didn't

mind exchanging a spirit essences for a favourable impression on the people of the Pure Yang Palace, therefore he quickly took out another qiankun pouch and very respectfully held it in his hands to deliver it to the Palace Master

“This is disciple’s present for the sect, I ask Palace Master to accept it!”

He still had more? Everyone had already gotten used to Yang Chen’s way of handling things, but they were still astonished, yet nobody said anything. The Palace Master was totally caught off guard; using his Spiritual Awareness to explore it, he was so startled that he couldn’t move.

Within the qiankun pouch, there were a hundred thousand more spirit essences! After pondering for a moment, the Palace Master realized Yang Chen’s intentions. Nodding towards Yang Chen, he accepted the qiankun pouch.

“Since you have helped the sect, then I will exempt you from paying the contribution points to enter the Hidden Pavilions in my Pure Yang Palace in the future. In addition, I shall also allow you to enter the Secret Pavilion of my Pure Yang Palace once!”

“Yes, Palace Master!”

Yang Chen didn’t express his thanks as this was something he had obtained in exchange for a hundred thousand spirit essences. Having a clear conscience, he didn’t feel the need to express his thanks.

The Palace Master had received a hundred thousand spiritual essences, with this he was certain that he could suppress the disequilibrium inside the Pure Yang Palace. Although Yang Chen had discovered this region by himself and created his own immortal cave, there was still bound to be jealousy from people. Today it would be this matter, tomorrow there would be some other, there were bound to be many inconveniences. These spirit essences were enough to shut people up.

While the Palace Master was secretly rejoicing, the one hundred thousand spirit essences on the ground were like they had grown legs and separated in accordance to their attributes and then rose high into the air, rapidly entering the mouth of the recently opened spirit vein.

“Everything is alright!”

With the spirit essences entering so quickly, the Palace Master declared the result:

“Remember to leave a room for me. And also prepare a few guest rooms, maybe they will come in handy!”

# Chapter 93 - To Settle The Dispute, Let's Test Something

These words of the Palace Master had already established the privileged position of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard in the future. Apart from the people who Yang Chen had brought with him, if anyone wanted to enter the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard in the future, then he would first have to establish his merit before this permission was bestowed on him.

Naturally Yang Chen would not leave a room just for the Palace Master, Zhu Chen Tao would also require accommodations, so would the Law Enforcement Hall's master, the Foreign Affair Hall's master, and also the current Hall Master of the Fierce Yang Hall, since it was known as Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, there was no reason for the master of the Fierce Yang Hall not to come.

If these people kept an eye on them, the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard would have no big disturbances in the future. As for the Hall Master of the Luminous Moon Hall, wasn't he in meditation pondering over his mistakes? So after he came out, Yang Chen could just pretend to have forgotten him, who would say anything? Would Liang Shao Ming really be so shameless as to run to a junior and demand things?

The newly established underground spirit vein, was one that had been enhanced by a hundred thousand spirit essences, so the people at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard were so happy, that they did not even know what to say. Under Gao Yue's instructions, everyone found a room which had been assigned to them and

afterwards they all hurriedly began to cultivate. Previously, everyone was busy with building the villa, only now were they able to experience the spirit vein.

As for Yang Chen, he had been able to bring pleasant surprises for everyone several times in succession. Everyone was completely grateful to Yang Chen; if not for Yang Chen, nobody there would be able to obtain such a good place for cultivation, even their servants received benefits which were even better than what a great majority of people of the Pure Yang Palace had.

Seeing that everyone has settled down properly, Yang Chen was gratified. This was his first present to his master, an outstanding cultivation environment. This was also his first stronghold for revenge against the Greatest Heaven Sect.

A crafty rabbit has three burrows [\[1\]](#), this was his first hole in the Pure Yang Palace. The Greatest Heaven Sect was not some small sect, it was the subsidiary sect of the Profound Heaven Sect of the immortal world, strictly speaking it was more of a foundation for the Profound Heaven Sect, which could be considered as one of the major powers in the Heavenly Court. Wanting to deal with it alone was simply impossible. Yang Chen wanted to gather all of the power that he could, only then would he be able to accomplish this undertaking.

For entering the sect to pay his respects to his master, Yang Chen had already used ten years of his time. Now Yang Chen's aim was to make his master recognize that her inborn fire spirit root was in fact not as outstanding as her postnatal water spirit root and to change her cultivation to a water attributed cultivation method.

This was a formidable task. To make a JieDan stage expert give up her original cultivation and then start again from scratch with a cultivation method of another attribute was absolutely not as easy as just saying these words. He was convinced that even if the Palace Master ordered her right now, Gao Yue would still not be willing to cultivate all over again. Not only did this require the relationship between both of them to be even deeper, it would also need a suitable opportunity.

Obviously he had recently become her disciple, so right now was not a good opportunity, but Yang Chen was patient and determined, so even if it took ten years, he was still willing to wait for it. Even if Gao Yue didn't change to a water attributed cultivation method, someday her fire attributed cultivation would reach the YuanYing stage, so for the time being she was safe and he did not need to be worried.

Following this, Yang Chen quickly entered the Hidden Pavilion in the Pure Yang Palace, and again began his routine of reading everyday.

When the Palace Master returned to the Pure Yang Palace, he immediately notified the whole sect about Yang Chen offering a hundred thousand spirit essences to the sect. This received unanimous praise from everyone, as everyone would obtain the benefits, so who would not think highly of him verbally?

The elder at the Hidden Pavilion had also received the instructions of the Palace Master, so he was very courteous towards Yang Chen. After the whole Pure Yang Palace had received



the news of Yang Chen successfully refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, they immediately remembered that Yang Chen had read extensively, learning everything in the Hidden Pavilion of the Nine Earth Manor. According to this precedent, coming to the Hidden Pavilion of the Pure Yang Palace was a natural thing.

After politely refusing the good intentions of the elder to guide Yang Chen through a tour around the Hidden Pavilion, Yang Chen started touring the Hidden Pavilion by himself. The Hidden Pavilion inside of the Pure Yang Palace was completely different from that of the Nine Earth Manor, it was larger at least hundred fold.

The Nine Earth Manor had hundreds of thousands of jade slips, but here there were more than ten million. The four arts, medicine, divination, astrology, all were included, all sorts of jade slips that one could think of were there. Moreover, nobody could just look at any jade slip they wanted there. Some records about geography and a brief history of many places in all directions were available to everyone, but jade slips about pill concocting, cultivation methods, tool refining, spell formations and so on, would only have their restrictions lifted if one had the relevant cultivation, otherwise the disciples would simply be unable to read it.

After entering, Yang Chen had gone straight to the region where cultivation methods were kept. His Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets only had a few cultivation methods suitable for cultivation after the foundation stage, the others were still qi layer cultivation methods. Although his other attributes had not reached the foundation stage yet, Yang Chen wanted to prepare a few profound methods for himself, to wrap up the silk before it rains. [\[2\]](#)

In his previous life, Yang Chen had single mindedly concentrated on the cultivation of his fire attribute and had only skimmed through other attributes, thus his knowledge about other attributes was very pathetic. As he was entering the Hidden Pavilion of the Pure Yang Palace, he was just like a poor person who had entered a treasury, so Yang Chen was naturally not modest.

With the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets at hand, who at the JieDan stage or lower could obstruct Yang Chen? In the area where the cultivation methods were stored, Yang Chen looked through all sections, one by one, for foundation stage or lower level cultivation methods. With just a sweep of his Spiritual Awareness, the contents of the cultivation method immediately entered his mind, after which he began to analyze their merits and demerits one by one.

With the cultivation experience of a Great Principal Golden Immortal, combined with his previous cultivation experience of the Five Phases Of Yin and Yang secrets, he could immediately analyze the characteristics of these cultivation methods. Whether or not they were suitable to himself, whatever kind of defects they had, Yang Chen could modify them. If they were compatible with his own, Yang Chen immediately recorded them within his heart. As an effect of the Three Purities Secrets, apart from allowing his Spiritual Awareness to exceed others, his memory also far exceeded other people.

Within the brief period of two days, Yang Chen had recorded several hundred cultivation methods. After his cultivation had increased, not only did his Spirit Power increase, even his ability to

read jade slips had greatly increased.

Yang Chen would stay at the Hidden Pavilion for two hours every day and once the time was up, he would leave immediately. After returning to the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, he circulated the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets and refined the sword box and Profound Spirit Furnace using the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets one after the other, and then he would use the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets. Every time after repeating this kind of cycle, his foundation stage began to stabilize rapidly and his Spirit Power also began to rise in an orderly manner, intending to attack the bottleneck of the second layer of the foundation stage.

The second day after founding the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, Gao Yue had gone to participate in the meeting of JieDan stage or higher grade experts. After returning, upon seeing Yang Chen, she directly said:

“This second courtyard has many people lusting after it, and the Palace Master allowing you to enter the secret pavilion has also been called into question!”

The Second Fierce Yang Courtyard had certainly given rise to great dispute within the Pure Yang Palace. If a Di Mai comparable to the Di Mai of the main spirit vein of the Pure Yang Palace was found, it will be a major matter in any sect. And this kind of Di Mai was surprisingly occupied by a JieDan stage cultivator and some foundation stage experts, even giving the benefits to their servants, who were not even at the foundation stage. How could it not make people go green with envy?

The general assembly of the sect was precisely called to discuss this matter, apart from those who were in closed door training and those who had gone adventuring, all of the JieDan stage experts and elders were in the hall of the Pure Yang Palace to discuss this.

Naturally, the Palace Master had first proclaimed that Yang Chen had offered a hundred thousand spirit essences of the five phases, naturally the Palace Master didn't hide what rewards he had promised.

“This kind of treatment is unjust, it will be unfair to all other disciples!”

Immediately someone jumped out in opposition, it was someone with a high status in the sect, the Hall Master of the Luminous Moon Hall. Although he was sentenced to ponder over his mistake, this time, because it was the sect's general assembly, he was allowed to participate. He felt forced to stand up.

After getting news of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, most of all, after finding that a Di Mai comparable to Pure Yang Palace's master vein had been discovered, Liang Shao Ming had formed a plan. Even if he was in seclusion, he still mobilized his power and had convened the general assembly of the sect.

“The Meiqing Mountain Range is the territory of the Pure Yang Palace, if any Di Mai is found, then it should belong to all of Pure Yang Palace and should not be seized by some youngster!”

Liang Shao Ming said, speaking forcefully and with justice in his voice, representing the thoughts of a large group of disciples, who were all jealous of that sort natural resource, but required a dignified excuse.

“The Second Fierce Yang Courtyard still hasn’t separated from Pure Yang Palace, naturally it still is in the Pure Yang Palace.”

The Palace Master had apparently already figured out the crux of the matter. So, when facing Liang Shao Ming’s question, he merely replied indifferently. Behind him were a few YuanYing stage elders, who were always in close door training, but had been aroused by Liang Shao Ming for some unknown reason this time.

“As for a few youngsters seizing it, this Di Mai had originally been discovered by them and I have also approved the construction of the Immortal Cave at the Meiqing Mountain, which was not outside of the established customs and also doesn’t violate any rules, so how can you say they have forcefully seized it? Seized an area where there was not even supposed to be anything?”

Regarding Liang Shao Ming’s question, the Palace Master refuted without giving it much importance.

“Could it be that Hall Master Liang wants to snatch things obtained by few juniors?”

“They are the disciples of the Pure Yang Palace, so they should think for my Pure Yang Palace. This Di Mai should also be shared between disciples of the Pure Yang Palace and must not be the

property of a few people!”

Liang Shao Ming also didn't beat around the bush and directly spoke about the main point. Among the people present, at least half of them shared the same views as Liang Shao Ming. They had all thought about how to speak out about this, but Liang Shao Ming had taken the lead so naturally they would endorse him.

“Pure Yang Palace's disciples must share the things they have discovered with the sect, these are pretty good words!”

The Palace Master nodded, glancing at the few YuanYing stage elders, he enthusiastically said:

“Yang Chen has already offered a hundred thousand spirit essences to my Pure Yang Palace, this can be considered sharing with the sect, but I don't quite remember: in those days when Hall Master Liang came out of the Immortal Falling Well, how many spirit essences did you share?”

That one question made Hall Master Liang flush with anger. In those days, Liang Shao Ming had gotten hold of over ten thousand spirit essences together with his fellow disciples. They were spirit essences which he had obtained for enhancing the spirit vein of his own Immortal Cave, how could he even give half a piece to the sect?

“We are speaking of the present matter.”

One YuanYing stage elder standing behind the Palace Master said:

“What’s in the past is already in the past!”

“Elder Lin’s words are correct!”

Palace Master immediately took Lin Yun Feng’s words to continue:

“What’s past is already in the past! Yang Chen has discovered the Di Mai half a month ago, do we really need to specifically discuss it anymore?”

Lin Yun Feng immediately shut his mouth and spoke no longer, he was a high level elder, but he was still only an elder and not the Palace Master. The Palace Master’s current words clearly contained some anger. There could be disputes in the conference of elders, but in the general assembly of the sect he could not express a different opinion than the Palace Master.

Liang Shao Ming had originally believed that elder Lin could recover some lost ground for him, but he had also followed along with the Palace Master’s words that turned Yang Chen’s matter into a thing of past, how could this satisfy Liang Shao Ming? Seeing that Lin Yun Feng had given up, Liang Shao Ming had no option but to speak himself:

“Palace Master, you cannot say it like this. Just a few pieces of

spirit essences will have no influence on my Pure Yang Palace, at least not equal to a master vein! He is a foundation stage disciple, so him making use of the spirit vein is an absolute waste, it has to be made use of by people who need it more!”

“Ai!”

Palace Master softly sucked in a breath, he was absolutely not happy with Liang Shao Ming’s behaviour. The person in the Pure Yang Palace who had closest relations with the Greatest Heaven Sect was precisely Liang Shao Ming. Maybe Chu Heng had made things difficult for Yang Chen to obtain benefits from Liang Shao Ming in the beginning. But there was no proof and the Palace Master did not want to move against him, but he was getting more and more excessive. He was a Hall Master and a JieDan stage expert, but he had begun to make things difficult for a junior. He really was a disappointment in all aspects.

Gao Yue also had the qualifications to attend the general assembly of the sect, but she didn’t have the authority to speak. Looking at Liang Shao Ming aiming at Yang Chen, she could not help but refute, based on her personality.

But not giving Gao Yue the chance to speak, the Palace Master asked:

“If we use a reason like this: three months ago, Hall Master Liang has obtained a high quality flying sword, you are just one JieDan stage expert using it, it is indeed wasted on you, in the sect there are a few YuanYing stage experts who don’t have a good flying sword, Hall Master Liang shouldn’t you give it up for the people



who need it more? Talking about seniority, you are Yang Chen's uncle master, shouldn't you set an example for your juniors?"

The same thing happening to others was completely different from it happening to oneself. Liang Shao Ming had just recently obtained a high grade flying sword, which was of a higher grade than any of the other flying swords he had used. He was just about to completely refine it, using this opportunity of ten years in isolation, to thoroughly refine it, so how could he agree to obediently handing it over?

Without waiting for Liang Shao Ming to think for a proper response, the Palace Master once again declared a decision:

"Since everyone is willing to handle it like this, then it would be better if we test it first with the Luminous Moon Hall. In the future, if the disciples of the Luminous Moon Hall have any harvests, they will all be transferred to the sect and will be allocated by the sect, they must not be stashed secretly! We will test it out for ten years and look at the results. If the disciples of the Luminous Moon Hall work as one and wholeheartedly endorse it and it can make the sect grow more prosperous with every day, then after ten years, shall we once again convene a general assembly, and make this a rule of the entire Pure Yang Palace?"

Once these words came out, without waiting for anyone to decide by vote, the Palace Master raised another condition:

"And those who agree with it can also participate. As long as the results are outstanding, changing the sect rules will not be much of a bother!"

After he finished speaking, he directly turned towards the YuanYing elders and smilingly asked:

“Elders, how about it?”

Only a fool would agree to this kind of condition. Everyone knew that fighting over other people’s things was easy, but handing over one’s own things was an extremely difficult task. Who would agree to handing over the things he had obtained by fighting to the sect and afterwards allowing the sect to distribute it? Who would be such a fool?

---

[1] Idiom: a sly person has more than one plan to fall back on

[2] Idiom: to plan ahead

# Chapter 94 - If Not Him, Then Defend Who?

Gao Yue absolutely hadn't anticipated this. The Palace Master put in so much effort for Yang Chen, and at the moment he was sitting calmly, not saying anything else, merely observing the responses of everyone around him.

Those people who had previously supported Liang Shao Ming also reacted at this moment. If they agreed to Liang Shao Ming's proposal of seizing Yang Chen's discovered Di Mai today, then tomorrow they might find even their own things being taken away. The Palace Master had clearly thought about this problem and concluded that Liang Shao Ming would not agree to this proposal.

Liang Shao Ming himself also hadn't come to a decision. If he wanted to take Yang Chen's Di Mai to be assigned to and be shared with the sect, then his own top grade sword would also be snatched by others to be shared with the sect. The problem with the Di Mai's Spirit Power could be solved by letting people absorb it, but if the flying sword was given to other people, it would certainly help them to ascend and then nothing would be left behind.

If he agreed to this suggestion, he'd have to give up his flying sword, but it was also his own suggestion, so he could not easily dismiss it. Even if he agreed, it would only imply that the Luminous Moon Hall would have to give all of their harvests to the sect for ten years, not to speak of others, just by the pressure of the disciples of the Luminous Moon Hall, Liang Shao Ming could not

guarantee that he could take the responsibility. This kind of affair really put Liang Shao Ming in a dilemma, he, a JieDan stage cultivator, had his whole face turn red, as if he was being choked. He was rooted to the ground speechlessly.

The few elders who were originally in support of Liang Shao Ming were all silent at this moment. Previously, when they had been incited by Liang Shao Ming, they had all believed that this Di Mai could greatly increase the strength of the Pure Yang Palace, so they hadn't thought much. But now that the Palace Master had given this sort of argument, they were all adults, how could they not understand the deeper meaning?

The Di Mai only had a good amount of Spirit Power, but these kind of resources were secondary. For a sect, the most important resource was its disciples. If the disciples didn't have any morality, then the sect was not far from decline. If the Spirit Veins they discovered themselves were taken, then they would go to find a spirit vein outside of the sect, and if they lost their attachment to the sect, they may not return anymore.

Silence spread on the scene and it continued for a good long moment. That nobody was speaking also implied that the people didn't agree with the Palace Master's proposal.

“Until now I was under the impression that cultivators would conform to the heavenly laws, most of all the law of karma, to not give birth to greed and not let the heart be sullied by jealousy”

Within the gaze of the Palace Master, a hint disappointment flashed. Whomever he looked at lowered his head, not daring to

make the slightest eye contact with the Palace Master. The Palace Master had slowly spoken these words and many of the people who heard it felt a jolt, as if they had realized something.

“Today I am very disappointed. All disciples of the sect, regardless of whether they were the JieDan experts or the YuanYing experts, coveted the possessions of a foundation stage junior.”

The Palace Master’s voice suddenly got loud and was filled with immense fury, directly echoing in all directions:

“My Pure Yang Palace is considered to be an honest and upright sect, but you still use such evil ways? What about the rules of my Pure Yang Palace, ‘You must not attack the disciples of your own sect and forcibly plunder a junior’s possessions’, what about them?”

The ire of a YuanYing stage expert created a frightening pressure over the entire Pure Yang Palace, regardless of whether it were the formal disciples or the servants, all kept quiet out of fear, not daring to make any kind of noise.

“Today you all tried to snatch a junior’s things, tomorrow a senior would try to snatch your things, today it is Yang Chen, tomorrow it will be you all. If everyone kept on robbing things from others, then one day, if my Pure Yang Palace faces a calamity, who will defend my sect?”

The Palace Master was angry at the fact that these people had

forgotten about the bigger picture in their greed.

“Or perhaps, at the day when your own life hangs by a thread, who will come to help you?”

Nobody dared to raise their head, it was the first time that the Palace Master had been so angry in front of everyone. Even those who hadn't planned to support Liang Shao Ming didn't dare to raise their heads. The angry words of the Palace Master made them realize many things. Although they were being yelled at, they were glad that the palace master was defending Yang Chen today, because it meant tomorrow he would also defend all of them.

“The Spirit Power at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard is strong, but that doesn't mean that nobody will have the opportunity to enter.”

After giving them the stick, it was naturally time for showing them the carrot, the Palace Master clearly knew this.

“If a disciple of the Pure Yang Palace gains sufficient merit in the future, he will be allowed to cultivate in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard for one year, as a reward for his accomplishments. If you want to enter the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard you still need to work very hard!”

It gave hope to everyone that they could also get the opportunity to enter the courtyard.

“If anyone wants to say anything, speak now, if not, then return to your cultivation!”

Perhaps because the Palace Master was able to vent his anger, he was not that stressed anymore, so that kind of frightening pressure also dissipated. Only then did the people inside of the Pure Yang Palace become able to move again.

“Disciple has been thoughtless in this matter. I must ask Palace Master to punish me!”

Liang Shao Ming hastily bowed his head to admit his mistakes. The way he had acted this time would surely invite malevolence from many people and the excuse that he had been thoughtless provided him a way out to save his face, after all, people were not gods, they could make mistakes. Moreover, he had only thought about the sect from the beginning, but his way of thinking had been wrong, that’s all. It wasn’t a huge sin.

“But Palace Master, allowing Yang Chen to enter the secret pavilion, isn’t that somewhat excessive?”

This time, Liang Shao Ming didn’t aim at Yang Chen’s underground vein and instead turned his attack towards the reward bestowed on Yang Chen.

“This kind of treatment should only be given disciples who have done a great service for the sect. Yang Chen has only offered a hundred thousand spirit essences. We could always provide him with enough Spirit Stones and contribution points as rewards, but

is it right to make an exception in his case and allow him to enter the secret pavilion?”

The secret pavilion was the most central region of the Pure Yang Palace, and once inside, one could only be allowed to select one thing, it simply could not be allowed as a reward for people who have not done a great service for the sect. These words of Liang Shao Ming were based on well thought out reason, not allowing anyone to find any faults with it.

“I will once again discuss the matter regarding the secret pavilion with the elders.”

This time, the Palace Master showed his authority and directly rejected Liang Shao Ming’s question in his face. But even after this, Liang Shao Ming was still somewhat glad. After all, those elders who had been present today would not be very happy, so Yang Chen’s chance to enter the secret pavilion was already forfeited.

After the general assembly of the sect was dispersed, Gao Yue immediately went to see Yang Chen after returning, to inform him about this. After telling all of this to him, she encouraged him in the manner of a master:

“This time the Palace Master has shouldered a big burden for you, you must cultivate diligently, so that you do not fail to meet the great hopes of the Palace Master and your master!”

Naturally, Yang Chen immediately made a solemn vow and exposed a calculative smile on his face.



Although Gao Yue did not know what the Palace Master had discussed with those YuanYing stage elders after the general assembly, the other people also didn't know, but Yang Chen could roughly guess what happened.

Just as Yang Chen had anticipated, when the Palace Master met with those YuanYing stage masters in the small hall, where the official business was discussed, an elder immediately started blaming the Palace Master:

“Palace Master, why did you defend that one foundation stage disciple today? Not even hesitating to rebuke all of the JieDan stage disciples?”

Although the other elders did not say anything, everyone had the same expression. Today, the Palace Master had flown into a furious rage, which had showed his awe inspiring authority. But that awe inspiring authority did not have any affect on these elders, they only hadn't refuted him on the scene because he was the Palace Master and they should not ruin his prestige.

“Very simple!”

After the Palace Master sat down, he replied indifferently:

“Because Elder Wu still hasn't ascended!”

Once these words came out, all of the elders clearly understood

everything. Yang Chen had assisted Elder Wu in refining the Heaven Seizing Pill, almost everyone under the heavens knew about this matter. Although nobody knew what exactly had happened at the time of refining, but it was rumored that Yang Chen's role in the refining was crucial.

For this reason, Elder Wu had even specifically spread word for Yang Chen to be protected, this already was sufficient to illustrate Yang Chen's importance. Since nobody among them was Elder Wu's opponent, then they still had to give him face about the people under his protection. Most of all, inside of the Pure Yang Palace. This was a great opportunity to make friends with Elder Wu, so what the Palace Master had done was absolutely correct.

“Since this was the reason, then the matter regarding the Secret Pavilion, shall still be carried out as decided previously, no need to say anything more.”

All of the elders nodded their heads, representing everyone, Lin Yun Feng declared the conclusion:

“Before Elder Wu ascends, we must not allow any person to cause grievances with Yang Chen.”

“But, if this happens, will Yang Chen not face no bumps on his cultivation path? Wouldn't that harm him instead?”

Another elder had a different thought.

“In my opinion, although we should show suitable consideration towards him, we should also allow him to face his own problems, as long as he is not in a life or death crisis. At other times, allowing him to deal with his own problems would be better.”

Everyone there was a YuanYing stage expert, naturally they knew that the words of this elder made sense and nodded in agreement. No matter what was said, Yang Chen was still a disciple of this sect, so someone among them would be Yang Chen's great master, they, as elders, would not persecute a disciple of their own sect deliberately.

“Then how should we treat Yang Chen after Elder Wu ascends?”

Raising this question was precisely Yang Chen's great master, Gao Yue's master, Wang Yong. During the previous discussion, he hadn't said anything since the Palace Master had already spared no pains for the matter regarding his disciple and disciple's disciple, so he had no need to stick out. But after hearing that the Palace Master only supported them because Elder Wu had not ascended yet, he felt somewhat dissatisfied and started to closely enquire about the Palace Master's future plans.

“We will still cultivate him with our full attention and vigorously defend him.”

The Palace Master said this without the slightest bit of hesitation. Everyone was aware of the relationship between Wang Yong and Yang Chen so nobody said anything, but hearing the words of the Palace Master, Lin Feng Yun displayed a trace of disapproval.

“Yang Chen had ascended to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, so his will power is very strong, he had also offered his spirit essences to the sect and without anyone’s guidance he successfully built his foundation. This proves his exceptionally good comprehension, he’s basically a very talented disciple.”

The Palace Master faintly replied with a smile.

“If we don’t cultivate this kind of genius, then should we cultivate a disciple like Chu Heng, the sort of disciple who cheats his master and brings shame to his ancestors?”

During the discussion, nobody said anything. What the Palace Master said was reasonable: a loyal and talented disciple was naturally worth cultivating, even cultivating with great attention. These kinds of juniors were the future of the Pure Yang Palace. After all, the elders were only waiting to be able to attack the bottleneck of the Da Cheng stage and add to sect’s glory, how could they be jealous of a junior?

“Even if it was not because of this reason, I still would defended Yang Chen with all my strength.”

After giving them a pompous reason, the Palace Master did not mind telling them his intentions. He could see that, there were elders who had disapproved of his intentions even though they hadn’t said anything, so he naturally wanted to unify everyone’s thoughts.

Hearing these words of the Palace Master, everyone was startled, apart from this reason, there was still another reason? Everyone clearly understood the Palace Master's temperament, he would not show this much consideration for a junior without a good reason, so everyone pricked their ears to hear the Palace Master's reason. If this reason did not convince Lin Yun Feng, then he would probably be directed against Yang Chen some day in future.

“Yang Chen has refined the Heaven Seizing Pill”

These few words made everyone slap their foreheads. They figured it out within a moment.

“I will speak some unpleasant words, I have not defended Yang Chen so energetically just to cultivate him, but rather, when the time of ascension comes for me and I require a Heaven Seizing Pill, who will refine it for me? If I do not use the disciples of my sect, then should I go to ask other people?”

Everything had suddenly become clear to the group of elders, including Lin Yun Feng. All had an understanding expression on their faces. If the previous reason, that Yang Chen talent was worth cultivating, had not convinced everyone, then this reason was sufficient for everyone to lay down any prejudices and wholeheartedly support Yang Chen.

Everyone was at the stage of advancing from the YuanYing stage to the DaCheng stage, with their final goal being ascension, but who didn't know the difficulty of ascending? If, at the time of their ascension, they had the help of a Heaven Seizing Pill, wouldn't it be much smoother?

If Yang Chen had a significant influence during the refining of the Heaven Seizing Pill, then didn't this mean that he knew the method to refine a Heaven Seizing Pill? Whether it was for the good of everyone or for their own good, there was no reason to become hostile with this junior. Even Lin Yun Feng felt the same way. The reason why he had previously opposed him was because Liang Shao Ming had incited him. He was a YuanYing stage elder, why would he have any reason to become hostile with a junior of the sect, who had only joined ten years ago?

Nobody knew what was discussed between the Palace Master and the elders in the end, but the Palace Master and the elders had unanimously agreed to the reward of Yang Chen entering the hidden pavilion once. Similarly, nobody knew that Yang Chen had gained the support and defense of all the elders.

Yang Chen had guessed this beforehand, but he did not discuss it with anyone else. He was still following his regular routine, spending a fixed time in the Hidden Pavilion every day and then returning, and training, without any interruption.

The Pure Yang Palace now had a tranquil environment, the small waves caused by this were all silenced after the Palace Master's fury. But this was already not the same Pure Yang Palace as in his previous life. Some minor transformations had taken place in the whole Pure Yang Palace, whom nobody but Yang Chen knew of.

This life's Pure Yang Palace just happened to be slowly turning in the right direction for Yang Chen.

# Chapter 95 - Building The Foundation Again

Because of his current cultivation realm, although Yang Chen had found a suitable cultivation method for all attributes to cultivate after reaching the foundation stage, apart from his fire attributed cultivation, Yang Chen hadn't reached the foundation stage in any other attribute, so he was not able to integrate these high grade cultivation methods with his Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets.

This had become Yang Chen's biggest weakness. Because not all of the five phases of yin and yang had reached the foundation stage, he was unable to use a lot of things, including the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets.

After becoming the disciple of his master, Yang Chen could see his master every day and every night, his long cherished wish to become the disciple of his master again had also come true, and he had also established the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, so now increasing his cultivation was the most important matter.

Strictly speaking, the fire attribute of Yang Chen which had reached the Foundation Stage was only the fourth fire, because the Geocentric Flame had greatly increased the cultivation of Yang Chen's fourth fire. In his previous life, Yang Chen hadn't differentiated strictly between the Yin and Yang attribute during cultivation, but currently, because of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, he had to divide them clearly.

In other words, including the Spirit Power with the third fire attribute, Yang Chen had nine attributes of Spirit Power which had to be upgraded through cultivation, in order to reach the Foundation Stage.

After reaching the Foundation Stage at the villa of Elder Wu, Yang Chen had basically spent all of the time with consolidating the Foundation Stage because of the fear that Elder Wu might discover the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, so he basically didn't cultivate. Even to the extent that after reaching the Foundation Stage to the time until the Heaven Seizing Pill was refined, the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets basically hadn't progressed even a single step. From the beginning to the end it had been halted at the ninth qi layer.

But Yang Chen knew that every attribute of his that reached the Foundation Stage would help in increasing the other attributes to a small extent. In other words, as long as one or two attributes of Spirit Power reached the Foundation Stage, then the remaining five phases of yin and yang would be able to reach the peak of the qi layer. Then at that time, as long as he refined enough Foundation Stage Pills for himself, reaching the Foundation Stage would not be a problem.

Currently the simplest way for Yang Chen was to increase his third fire attribute. Regardless of whether it was his experience or outside help, both were in his grasp. In his previous life, he was a fire attributed cultivator, and the Real Sun Fire was precisely of the third fire attribute, these two things added together would allow Yang Chen to quickly build the foundation of his third fire attribute.



Naturally, with Yang Chen's current cultivation level, absorbing the Real Sun Fire was not possible. In his previous life, when Yang Chen was at the middle JieDan stage, he had received the chance to obtain the Real Sun Fire, but still he had just narrowly escaped with his life, almost visiting the yellow springs when absorbing it. But after absorbing it, his achievements were astonishing, not only was he able to reach the YuanYing stage, the Da Cheng stage and then ascend, but he was also able to reach the immortal world.

The Real Sun Fire was extremely precious, He LianYun had also obtained this flame by concocting pills for other people, but now all of his work had helped Yang Chen accomplish his aim. Although Yang Chen could not absorb the flame right then, the Profound Spirit Furnace could. So long as it absorbed the flame successfully, the grade of the Profound Spirit Furnace would increase dramatically.

After one month he stopped going to the Hidden Pavilion. During this time, after making sufficient preparations and informing his master and other friends, Yang Chen went into seclusion to absorb the Real Sun Fire.

Yang Chen took out the small lamp in which Elder Wu had sealed the Real Sun Fire from his Achievement Ring and placed it in front of him. Seeing it for the first time, nobody would believe that this small lamp, flickering like it would extinguish at any moment, actually contained the Real Sun Fire.

The process of absorbing it was similar to the Geocentric Flame, with some slight differences. After all, the Real Sun Fire was two

grades higher than the Geocentric Flame and a fifth grade flame was a rare flame, even in the spiritual world. Its might was enough to make both Yang Chen and Profound Spirit Furnace disappear without a trace, if Yang Chen was even a little inattentive during the refining.

Luckily, Yang Chen had possessed the Real Sun Fire in his previous life, so even in spiritual world no one would be more familiar with this flame than him. He used the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secret to refine the Profound Spirit Furnace and then again used the Universal Treasure Raising Secrets for maintenance, only then did he slowly bring the Profound Spirit Furnace near that small trace of fire.

At the instant Yang Chen approached it, the controlled Profound Spirit Furnace extracted a hair sized flame essence of the Real Sun Fire from the small trace of fire. Compared to the time Yang Chen when absorbed the Geocentric Flame, this trace was even tinier, not even equal to one tenth of that time.

With just this one trace of flame, Yang Chen had a sensation as if the Profound Spirit Furnace was being surrounded by the fire on all sides and in a flash the temperature of the Profound Spirit Furnace increased so much, that nobody could touch it. The whole body of the Profound Spirit Furnace was fiercely burning, as if it could melt any moment.

This was the most dangerous time, if Yang Chen was not able to control the intensity of the flame at this moment, then the whole Profound Spirit Furnace could be destroyed. Yang Chen had already prepared the materials for this, taking out a properly

prepared Profound Cyan Crystal Gold, he carefully placed it into the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Indeed, Yang Chen had already planned to use the opportunity when the Real Sun Fire was being absorbed to refine the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold and increase the quality of the Profound Spirit Furnace. The Profound Cyan Crystal Gold was not something that could be refined by an ordinary flame, even if it was the Real Sun Fire, if it was not controlled by someone, it would require a sufficient temperature to be able to refine it. Currently the majority of the heat of the hair sized flame would be absorbed by the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold, allowing the Profound Spirit Furnace to take advantage and absorb it.

Previously Yang Chen didn't have any methods to refine this such a large Profound Cyan Crystal Gold. Although the Geocentric Flame burned fiercely, it could only be used to refine herbs and earth attributed objects and basically had no effect on such a high grade Profound Cyan Crystal Gold.

As expected, due to the effects of such a method, the temperature of the Profound Spirit Furnace no longer rose, it even started to cool down. On the contrary, some transformations began to happen in the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold chest kept inside of the Profound Spirit Furnace.

Those traces of rust on the outer surface began to be peeled off little by little. All of those were the impurities of the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold, which the mountain god was not able to purify, so they remained on the chest in the form of corrosion. Currently these impurities began to slowly separate under the fiercely

burning Real Sun Fire.

After that hair sized trace was absorbed by the Profound Spirit Furnace, Yang Chen controlled the Profound Spirit Furnace once more to extract another trace, continuing the cycle in this way.

The Profound Spirit Furnace continued to absorb more and more traces of the flame, and the chest made out of Profound Cyan Crystal Gold also started to constantly change color. After the impurities were separated, the chest slowly turned red, with an alarming temperature, but there was no change in its shape. This property of the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold was very suitable to make pill concocting furnaces and fire attributed flying swords, so using it on the Profound Spirit Furnace just happened to be suitable.

Naturally, such a large piece, Yang Chen would not be able to use it completely, but as long as he could use one tenth of it, it would be sufficient to allow the Profound Spirit Furnace to completely transform.

During this cycle, the small flame trace in the lamp kept on becoming smaller and smaller and finally extinguished completely.

For every hair sized trace of the flame he absorbed, the third fire Spirit Power within his body was refined even more. The flame of the Real Sun Fire was very fierce, so Yang Chen did not dare to absorb it into his body at the moment, but this did not stop Yang Chen from taking his own Spirit Power into the Real Sun Flame and refining it by burning and then pulling it into his body again.

At least ninety percent of the Spirit Power was used up in the refining by burning from the Real Sun Fire, but that leftover trace was more pure by many times. During the absorption of every hair sized trace, Yang Chen lost nine tenth of his third fire Spirit Power. Fortunately the Spirit Power of the Di Mai was quite strong and Yang Chen also had sufficient Profound Yang Fruits for replenishment, so he could quickly restore his Spirit Power before every absorption.

For every trace of flame he extracted, the Spirit Power would have to undergo this sort of refining, so Yang Chen's third fire Spirit Power was being hammered into shape by the Real Sun Fire. After the Spirit Power was recovered, it was quickly consumed by the fire, leaving only little bit behind. Soon after that it would be restored again and then refined once more.

The Spirit Power left behind after being burned by the Real Sun Fire was increasing, and this Spirit Power was even more pure than the the Spirit Power after being refined by the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets. The higher the quality of the Spirit Power, the higher the cultivation of the third fire Spirit Power.

When half of the Spirit Power remained after burning from the Real Sun Fire, it had finally reached the critical point. For Yang Chen, there was basically no comprehension needed for cultivation, as long as he could accumulate a sufficient amount of Spirit Power, he could easily break through.

Within the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, the Spirit Power of the Di Mai was acting as if it was being strongly attracted by

something, frantically converging at the small room where Yang Chen was in seclusion. It was enough to interrupt the cultivation of all the YuanYing stage experts who were cultivating, using the Spirit Power of the Di Mai. All of the Spirit Power was rushing forth to enter Yang Chen's body.

The people of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard all noticed this anomaly, this kind of situation was not strange to anyone, it was clear that someone was trying to link the energy of heaven and earth, while trying to build their foundation. After a moment, everything would return to normal.

But nobody knew why this was happening. Hadn't Yang Chen already built his foundation? So how could this situation of heaven and earth being joined, come about? After the foundation stage, the body would automatically attract the Spirit Power of heaven and earth, so could it be that Yang Chen had abolished his cultivation and was building his foundation all the way again?

Although everyone was suspicious, nobody became impatient and rushed to enter and disturb Yang Chen. Who didn't know the biggest taboo of seclusion? Everyone was scared that someone would suddenly break in and disturb them. Moreover, this situation was not anything bad, it could also mean that Yang Chen had made some breakthrough and therefore had triggered this kind of situation.

Due to the third fire Spirit Power building a foundation, Yang Chen's cultivation had been upgraded by one grade. Previously, when he was at Elder Wu's villa, he had built his foundation with the support of the Geocentric Flame and the medicinal power of

the blue-green zoysia, but currently was not the same: this time, the third fire Spirit Power was refined by crazily being burnt by the Real Sun Fire and only then did it reach the foundation stage. The Spirit Power of third fire was now many times more pure compared to the other types of Spirit Power, so at once it occupied the top place within the five phases of yin and yang.

The other phases of the five phases of yin and yang crazily absorbed the Spirit Power of the Di Mai during the process of linking the Heaven and Earth. Within a brief moment, they had absorbed enough Spirit Power, so the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets had been upgraded by one layer and attained the tenth layer, the peak of the qi layer.

Within his spirit sea, the color of the long blood river grew even deeper. The space surrounding it had expanded even more during this process of building the foundation, forcibly increasing by at least fifty percent. Currently it could compare to around half of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard.

Perhaps because only the fire attributed Spirit Power had reached the foundation stage, the spirit sea was divided into layers. At the top was an image of the sun, burning fiercely and underneath that blood river was another dark red colored flame river, clearly reflecting the Real Sun Fire and the Geocentric Flame.

In his previous life, although Yang Chen possessed the Real Sun Fire, it was still not reflected in his spirit sea, but currently, although he hadn't absorbed the Real Sun Fire, it had already left that imprint within his spirit sea. Apart from the long river, capable of being used as killing intent, he was still unable to tell

what kind of uses it had.

The process of absorbing the Real Sun Fire into the Profound Spirit Furnace was still not complete, so Yang Chen did not dare to casually stop it in the least. After he reached the foundation stage, the third fire Spirit Power was even more abundant. The hair sized flame extracted every time had also turned thread sized, with its speed becoming almost ten fold.

When the flame on the lamp had completely disappeared, a golden coloured ball of Real Sun Fire appeared within the Profound Spirit Furnace. This golden ball of Real Sun Fire was in a different direction from the Geocentric Flame, without the slightest bit of interfering with each other, but with just a thought, Yang Chen could move them like his arms and legs.

Within the Profound Spirit Furnace, the intact Real Sun Fire was crazily burning the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold. The Profound Cyan Crystal Gold chest, which wasn't affected in the slightest during previous few months, had already changed shape, changing into an object as flexible as dough.

The Profound Spirit Furnace was already linked with Yang Chen's thoughts and with just a thought, the melted Profound Cyan Crystal Gold began to slowly divide into two parts. The bigger part quickly flew out of the Profound Spirit Furnace and began to cool, while the remaining, smaller part, began to melt even more, fusing with the Profound Spirit Furnace bit by bit.

The Spiritual Awareness offered by his formidable spirit sea, was sufficient to allow Yang Chen to penetrate any region within the



furnace. Those regions which were not stable because of the low levelled materials were replaced, bit by bit, by the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold and afterwards began to separate under the burning of the Real Sun Fire.

By then, the absorbed Real Sun Fire was in fact the whole of the flame, which had split up to purify the metal box and refine the profound spirit furnace in one process. This led to the current situation, where only the last step was remaining.

When the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold had completely fused with the Profound Spirit Furnace, the color of the Profound Spirit Furnace had changed to the cyan color of the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold. If looked from far away, the pill furnace did not look as if made of metal, and more like it had turned into porcelain. Yan Chen immediately used the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets to refine it and only then was the refining of the Profound Spirit Furnace complete.

The Real Sun Fire, together with the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold, one was a fifth grade flame, one was the best quality material in the mortal world. Even if only one was used, it would be able to change the Profound Spirit Furnace entirely, but currently, under the formidable power of both, it had changed multiple times. Currently the Profound Spirit Furnace was not inferior to the violet coloured furnace used by Deng Yi.

“Just right, this kind of Profound Spirit Furnace should be able to refine third grade pills!”

Yang Chen looked at the pill furnace on his hand in satisfaction and faintly smiled.

“Third grade foundation stage pills should be sufficient to make all of the remaining Spirit Power reach the foundation stage!”

# Chapter 96 - Striking A Balance Between Work And Rest

The Profound Spirit Furnace had improved by several grades, allowing Yang Chen to have some confidence in being able to refine low level pills of the third grade. Most of all, as the Profound Spirit Furnace had absorbed the Real Sun Fire and his third fire and fourth fire spirit power had reached the foundation stage, he had complete certainty in refining elixirs such as the foundation stage pills, which could be refined with a cultivation of the foundation stage or lower.

But currently Yang Chen would absolutely not refine ordinary foundation stage pills. It had to be known that currently, the Profound Yang Fruits Yang Chen had were all a thousand years old and the maturity of the other ingredients would also astonish people. If he used this kind of ingredients to refine common foundation stage pills, then wouldn't it seem like Yang Chen's methods were a bit low levelled?

Previously, third grade foundation stage pills were sufficient to satisfy Yang Chen's current needs. As long as he had the ingredients, it would be able to allow the attribute which Yang Chen focused on to reach the foundation stage. But currently Yang Chen had obtained the Penglai Divine Wood, so he had an even more outrageous thought.

The Penglai Divine Wood was a wood attributed heavenly object and was moreover the best wood attributed ingredient in the mortal world. This time, Yang Chen was considering whether or

not he should add the Penglai Divine Wood directly into the foundation stage pill to increase his own wood attributed Spirit Power.

Yang Chen had never done this kind of thing in his previous life, but Yang Chen knew that the cultivation world was not always the same, there were constantly new innovations in the cultivation world, all of the sects were constantly seeking new things to develop and promote. Following the old ways was not the only correct way to learn, using the weak points at which their predecessors had given up and using them for one's advantage was the proper way to become even more outstanding.

Although the recipe for the foundation stage pill was very clear, but using ingredients with different maturities could lead to different quality of pills and moreover different refining techniques could also produce different medicinal efficacies. Yang Chen was currently considering to manufacture a foundation stage pill especially for his first wood attribute's Spirit Power, so it would be better if he used the Spirit Power accumulated within the Penglai Divine Wood.

This was not a simple matter. Developing a new kind of recipe required a huge amount of experiments; and experiments naturally require a great amount of ingredients. Fortunately, this was not a problem for Yang Chen. Regardless of whether it was the Profound Yang Fruit or the leaves of the Penglai Divine Wood, Yang Chen had a sufficient amount of ingredients to conduct the tests.

The experience from his previous life and the large amount of reading at the Hidden Pavilion had allowed Yang Chen to gain a

direction to begin, so he did not have to waste time blindly fumbling around. The refining technique was still the refining technique of the foundation stage pill, but at some point during the refining, the Penglai Divine Wood had to be added.

If other people knew that Yang Chen was using Profound Yang Fruits and Penglai Divine Wood to conduct experiments with the foundation stage pill, countless tool refining and pill concocting masters would madly curse him to rot in hell. Whether it was the Penglai Divine Wood or the thousand year Profound Yang Fruit, both were things, the news of which could give rise to fights, leading to rain of blood due to envy, but Yang Chen was using them to experiment, just like a wastrel.

Compacting the third fire Spirit Power had allowed Yang Chen to have a new idea, he completely hadn't anticipated that he could still gain this kind of advantage using the Profound Spirit Furnace. But this also gave Yang Chen an insight: if the third fire Spirit Power could become so pure, then wouldn't the first tree attributed Spirit Power also be able to achieve the same result with assistance of the Penglai Divine Wood?

The Profound Spirit Furnace had absorbed the Real Sun Fire, so it could fully persist for ten months, the bottle of the medicine garden had also been provided with abundant Spirit Power during these few months, so it had already recovered three fourth of its Spirit Power. When Yang Chen entered the medicine garden to take a look, he was very astonished to find that, after the integration with heavenly materials such as the Penglai Divine Wood, the Spirit Power required by the medicine garden was even higher and it moreover hadn't even changed entirely into water attributed Spirit Power.

The trees of Penglai Divine Wood had grown more and more verdant and lush, but their number hadn't increased much, while those leaves had become even more lush and the roots had also become more solid and robust. Moreover, after these Penglai Divine Wood branches, those herbs had also begun to grow more vigorously. All of this made Yang Chen very satisfied.

But having this thought didn't mean that Yang Chen was going to start refining immediately. The seclusion was for ten months, Yang Chen also needed to come out of seclusion. After rebirth, Yang Chen had gained an all new familiarity towards cultivation: he did not immerse himself in bitter cultivation all day to increase his realm, that's why he had read extensively in the Hidden Pavilion. This was the reason why Yang Chen was acting lazy and not cultivating all day.

“Strange, how did you do that?”

Under Gao Yue's scrutiny, Yang Chen paying a formal visit to his master had a feeling of confusion. Yang Chen's cultivation was still at the initial foundation stage, but when seeing him, but meeting him gave her the sensation of fire assaulting her face. This made Gao Yue, a fire attributed JieDan stage expert, very puzzled.

“Why have you entered closed door training?”

“Thank you, master, for your kind intentions! Disciple has only refined his pill concocting furnace, that's all.”

Yang Chen's words, were half true, absorbing the Real Sun Fire and melting the Profound Cyan Crystal Gold was indeed done during the refining of the Profound Spirit Furnace, but although his words were vague, this was also the reality.

Gao Yue was still suspicious, through most of the time of the seclusion, the connecting of the energy of earth and heaven had happened, which made her unable to understand the matter completely. But Yang Chen had not told, so she also did not ask in much detail.

Everyone knew that Yang Chen was unusual, Gao Yue as the master was even more clear about this. Towards this disciple of hers, Gao Yue still hadn't thought properly about how she should go about instructing him, but during these few months, her thoughts had become clearer by much, letting nature take its course was comparatively better. Everyone had their own way of cultivating, so insisting on something was not good.

"Yang Chen, your situation is very unusual."

Gao Yue did not hide her lack of confidence in front of Yang Chen.

"In fact, I don't have a proper idea about how to guide you. I am only your master in name, if you have any questions, you can put it forward to any expert, but I will not demand you to cultivate in a particular way. Perhaps you should have paid respects to a higher level master and not me."

Gao Yue was very calm, but Yang Chen was getting more and more pleased. This was the correct way of assuming responsibility and not assuming the face of master and giving him directions flagrantly.

Yang Chen was also not very polite and immediately asked about some cultivation problems. Actually, these questions were the problems Gao Yue had not understood and thought about in her previous life, thinking about Yang Chen's questions, together with his offered 'possibilities', allowed Gao Yue to have a sudden enlightenment and immediately, without minding Yang Chen, she entered seclusion to comprehend them.

The current actions of Yang Chen were very contradictory, on one hand he wanted to remind Gao Yue that she should cultivate a water attributed cultivation method, and on the other hand he was assisting her to increase her fire attributed cultivation. But this was something that he could do nothing about, Yang Chen couldn't just say to her indifferently, that she was not suitable for fire attributed cultivation and had to cultivate the water attribute, could he?

Establishing trust and establishing a deep connection were not something which could be done overnight. Currently Yang Chen had no other choice than to do this first and he was naturally extremely delighted at this, reviving his master's concern once again, was exactly what he had been looking for.

He required a chance to settle his master's disputes, so what Yang Chen had to do currently was to secretly influence her and cultivate a deep trust between him and his master, so that at any



time his master would have full confidence in him.

After bidding farewell to his master, Yang Chen wanted to leave immediately for the Hidden Pavilion, but before he could leave the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, he was stopped by Gongsun Ling.

“Younger disciple Yang, you had promised that you would refine my pills when I would go to the Immortal Falling Well.”

Gongsun Ling and Yang Chen did not have any sort of false greeting, she directly extended her hand to invite Yang Chen to discuss. In any case, Yang Chen had already done a great favour for her in the form of the Second Fierce Yang courtyard, but Gongsun Ling also didn't mind a little more.

“I have planned to leave for the Immortal Falling Well soon, what about the pills you have prepared for me?”

“Are you certain about going to the Immortal Falling Well?”

Yang Chen wrinkled his brows, he had gone to Immortal Falling Well, so he knew that that was a region where people do all sorts of corrupt things, but on the other hand that place had the Geocentric Flame and he had to engage in a huge slaughter to fuse with the will of the XianTai Stage completely, but Gongsun Ling completely did not have to take the risk, at least in his previous life, Gongsun Ling hadn't gone there.

In Yang Chen's eyes, the Immortal Falling Well was an ordinary

region, but in the eyes of the ordinary people, it was a genuinely dangerous region, even Immortals could fall there, that was the intention behind the name 'Immortal Falling'.

Ordinary cultivators entering the Immortal Falling Well, could at most wander around in the surroundings of the Li Lou Village, waiting for an opportunity to kill some spirit beasts and obtain some spirit essences, only some peak foundation stage cultivators with violent strength would dare to enter the depths. The people who had chased Yang Chen were precisely this kind of people.

But currently Gongsun Ling clearly was just at the initial foundation stage, and she desired to go to the Immortal Falling Well to train, this was completely different from his previous life. Although Yang Chen was rather glad about Gongsun Ling's transformation, perhaps now she would not perish within the Heavenly Tribulation, but this would also increase the dangers on her cultivation path.

"I want to go! Perhaps if I single mindedly concentrate on cultivation, then maybe I can increase my cultivation realm effortlessly."

Gongsun Lin nodded very sincerely.

"But then I will forever be unable to gain the sort of experience and trials as Younger Disciple Yang. Even if I am able to ascend to the spiritual world due to some luck, then I will still just be a cultivation maniac, who pays no attention to outside affairs, a zombie, nothing more. I do not want to be that sort of person."

Hearing these sentences, Yang Chen confirmed that Gongsun Ling already thought clearly about what she should do to change herself. Regarding Gongsun Ling's decision, Yang Chen could not say anything, although he wanted to say something. But he could do something, like refining the pills Gongsun Ling would require at the Immortal Falling Well.

“Give me two months!”

Yang Chen did not speak much and only asked Gongsun Ling to wait for two months. He wanted to refine all of the pills Gongsun Ling would require for the ten years at the Immortal Falling Well within these two months.

“Senior Apprentice Sister, I will be troubling you to go out on a trip to the market in the city to purchase the ingredients to refine the yang qi pill and yuan cultivation pill.”

“All of them?”

Gongsun Ling was gobsmacked, this huge amount of ingredients, how many Spirit Stones would it cost? She certainly didn't have enough Spirit Stones for this.

But soon, after dismissing all of her worries, Yang Chen handed her a qiankun pouch.

“Here are ten thousand catties of low grade spirit stones, which

will be enough to purchase these items.”

Seeing that Gongsun Ling was hesitating, thinking about whether she should or should not take these Spirit Stones, Yang Chen said with a smile:

“Senior Apprentice Sister, I have promised to refine pills for your use, surely you would not want to make a person break his words?”

Gongsun Ling hesitated for a few moments, finally taking the qiankun pouch from Yang Chen. In any case, she already owed him many favours, if someday she got an opportunity to pay him off, she would not forget about this. Giving Yang Chen a meaningful glance, filled with complex emotions, she was no longer unreasonable and immediately turned around and stepped on her flying sword to buy these ingredients.

Hastily returning to his room, Yang Chen called Shen Da, Gu Qin, Ting Yuan and Ho Lin quickly and instructed them, while handing a list of items:

“Shen Da, Gu Qin you two must visit all of the markets in the extent of the Meiqing mountain and purchase all of these items.”

After giving them the list of items, he also handed them four qiankun pouches. These four were servants, so they still didn't have qiankun pouches. Yang Chen had killed many people, so right now he had taken out a few of them and erased the imprint of the sect on top of them and gave them to these four people.

“Ho Ling, Ting Yuan, you both also start preparing for concocting pills together with me.”

These four people were servants, so Yang Chen ordered them without any restraint. These four people were equally swift in taking the things which Yang Chen had given them, not showing the hesitation which Gongsun Ling had shown.

Ho Lin was going to witness Yang Chen's pill concocting skills again, but it was the first time for Ting Yuan. Both of the females were very excited, most of all Ho Lin. She had emphasized on pill concocting and moreover also heard of the news that Yang Chen had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill, so to be able to look at Yang Chen's pill concocting was a lucky opportunity for her.

“Ho Lin, pay good attention to my fire controlling technique.”

Towards his servant, Yang Chen was not even a little bit stingy.

“Currently you must practice your control over fire. When you can control it properly, then after this time's refining is complete, I will teach you how to refine the xun qi pill, so that in the future, the amount of xun qi pills required by Pure Yang Palace could all be refined by you.”

These words were a big surprise for Ho Lin. These years she had been cautious and attentively served Yang Chen, and when he was not present, she had painstakingly practiced her control over fire. Finally she had been able to get her reward.

Ting Yuan enviously looked at Ho Lin and Yang Chen also saw the emotions in her gaze, so he faintly smiled.

“Ting Yuan you do not need to be jealous, you are fond of researching spirit formations, in the Hidden Pavilion there are a few jade slips pertaining to refining tools, some other time I will make a copy for you. You can still refine tools, even if you don’t cultivate the fire attribute.”

Hearing Yang Chen’s words, Ting Yuan could not help but feel surprised.

Shen Da and Gu Qin didn’t say anything, probably because they were male and not good at expressing themselves like females, but fervor was equivalently visible in their eyes.

These four servants had already followed Yang Chen for more than eleven years. In the beginning they had not accepted him, but after a while they had become quite docile. Moreover they had attentively served him, without giving him any chance to complain. Yang Chen had observed them for a long time, and also finally understood their temperaments. His own servants naturally had to grow.

They just happened to have different interests, Ho Lin Pill liked concocting, Ting Yuan liked tool refining, Gu Qin researched spell formations and Shen Da was devoted to cultivation. Each one had their own characteristics, but Yang Chen did not mind having different kinds of assistants at his side.

“You all have followed me for more than ten years, currently your cultivation has also increased. I will make a promise to you all.”

In order to provoke their ambitions, Yang Chen decided to grant them a huge boon:

“If you all are able to reach the peak of the qi layer, I will refine third grade foundation stage pills for each one of you.”

Bang!

The four servants were as if they had turned to stone in their places, watching Yang Chen attentively and not able to budge in the slightest.

# Chapter 97 - Is This My Spirit Sea?

Third grade foundation stage pills, even if cultivators had swelled like an elm tree or were absolute dregs, as long as they could reach the peak qi layer and take a third grade foundation stage pill, they would surely be able to reach the foundation stage.

Shen Da and the other three had already reached sixth qi layer in these ten years with the occasional guidance of Yang Chen. From the third qi layer to sixth qi layer, could be considered as a good cultivation speed. Possibly their comprehension was weak previously, or maybe their luck was not that good and they couldn't keep up with people who had passed on or maybe they didn't even try their hardest, and had thus fallen to become servants.

During these ten years, Yang Chen had observed these four with the help of other people. They were already unswerving towards Yang Chen, even when Chu Heng had done his utmost to deal with Yang Chen, they still hadn't betrayed him. Therefore, this was their deserved reward.

“Thank you, Young Master!”

All four of them were perplexed and directly fell to their knees, deeply bowing towards Yang Chen. Yang Chen was not only helping them with their cultivation, but also opening a path for them to join the ranks of the inner disciples. As long as they reached the foundation stage, they would not have to bear the identity of servants, but could be inner disciples of Pure Yang



Palace. This kind of change, how could it not move them to tears? The four people even vowed in their hearts, that in the future, even if they became inner disciples, they would still regard Yang Chen as their master.

“But first find the things I need!”

Yang Chen did not say anything about the appreciation shown by these four and also didn't pay much attention to their secret vow, he only smiled and urged them on:

“When cultivating, don't try to flaunt and don't try to run before you can walk. Now go!”

The four people didn't dare to be neglectful: they got up at lightning speed and began to rush to do their tasks. Within a day, all of the materials that Yang Chen needed were in front of him.

Ho Lin sat on the side, attentively watching Yang Chen's every movement and looking at the flame moving in the Profound Spirit Furnace. Yang Chen had specifically instructed her to do so, as for how much she could comprehend, that would depend on her own perception. One could refine a yang qi pill as long as one had cultivated to the third qi layer, but a third grade yang qi pill was not something that third grade pill masters were willing to refine.

Yang Chen's movements were very quick but very clear, mostly because they were specifically for Ho Lin, so even the process of the flames purifying the herbs was extremely clear. His technique was not very complex, but it gave off an unexplainable sensation,

Ho Lin only looked at it for a moment and was immediately immersed by it.

A third grade yang qi pill was much better compared to a yuan cultivation pill in terms of results. A third grade yang qi pill was enough to fulfill Gongsun Ling's Spirit Power requirements for half a day. Adding onto that the abundant spiritual influence of the Immortal Falling Well, Gongsun Ling would absolutely not have any problems regarding a lack of Spirit Power.

As Gongsun Ling was going to stay in the Immortal Falling Well for around ten years, Yang Chen had refined seven thousand yang qi pills for her. In the radius of two thousand miles, all of the ingredients required for yang qi pills had been purchased, leaving none behind. Even those people who were in the business of buying and selling ingredients and herbs had begun to hoard these low grade ingredients.

Apart from the yang qi pills, Yang Chen still refined a hundred yuan cultivation pills, which were also at the third grade. Every one of those could be used at a time of injury to recover Spirit Power and to restore injuries, but this was just to be prepared for any eventualities.

Safety issues were still the main concern, but Yang Chen had obtained a fire jade belt from that unknown person who had chased him on his way to the Immortal Falling Well. After Yang Chen had used the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and the Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets to refine it by a few layers, he erased his own spiritual awareness from it.

This belt already had the defensive power to protect from attacks of an initial JieDan stage cultivator, but after being refined by Yang Chen for a few times, it could endure the attacks from a mid JieDan stage cultivator.

He did not prepare anything more. Firstly, Gongsun Ling would not accept it and secondly, she was going to the Immortal Falling Well to train herself. If her defense was too excessive, the original intention of training and gaining experience would be lost.

After two months, Gongsun Ling held on to these things. When Yang Chen had given them to her, Gongsun Ling hadn't declined and only looked at Yang Chen with multiple emotions. Afterwards she silently received these and properly bidding farewell to Yang Chen, she stepped on her flying sword and controlled it to move towards the Immortal Falling Well.

During these two months of refining, Ho Lin had carefully observed everything from the beginning to the end for two whole months. After sending off Gongsun Ling, Yang Chen began to instruct Ho Lin to refine the xun qi pill. This kind of low level pill completely depended on the ability to manipulate flames. The ingredients were very low levelled, already unsuitable for Yang Chen to spend his time to refine them.

Ho Lin had already practiced her control over flames for more than nine years and although there was still a great disparity compared to Yang Chen, she had already reached the level to satisfy the requirements for the xun qi pill. Within a few days, Ho Lin had already grasped the technique to refine the xun qi pill and began to set dates with the Medicine Hall to refine the xun qi pill

and at the same time earned a large number of sect's contribution points and Spirit Stones.

Gao Yue was still in the process of comprehending her insights, it seemed that her cultivation would increase again. Yang Chen did not disturb her and after exchanging greetings with everyone, she began her closed door training again.

This time, Yang Chen was planning to attack the first wood Spirit Power foundation stage bottleneck. During the time he was refining pills for Gongsun Ling, apart from mechanically refining pills, Yang Chen didn't stay idle and pondered over the possibility of adding the Penglai Divine Wood branches into the foundation stage pill. If other people knew that Yang Chen, while refining third grade pills, was still pondering over other things, it would surely make them go mad.

Yang Chen had already thought of the method to blend the Penglai Divine Wood's first wood Spirit Power with the foundation stage pill. The branches and tree leaves of the Penglai Divine Wood were not suitable for making elixirs, but could be used to refine tools, while the most suitable part to be used in medicine were the roots. After he determined this, the number of tests Yang Chen needed would reduce greatly. He only needed to test for a few crucial points, even if it failed, the resulting objects would still be things which people would drool over, so it wouldn't just be wasted.

Taking four small roots of the Penglai Divine Wood branches, Yang Chen began to refine the third grade pill. The four roots were to be added at four crucial points at the time of refining the

foundation stage pill. These were the possibilities Yang Chen had come up with after doing tens of thousands of simulations in his mind.

The thousand year matured Profound Yang Fruit were in fact matured for over one thousand three hundred years, adding in the other ingredients, which were all excellent ingredients with a maturity of over a thousand years or higher, this furnace of pills, even the leftover ashes, were rare objects.

In accordance with the method of making the foundation stage pill, these ingredients were added into the Profound Spirit Furnace and the Geocentric Flame began to purify them. When all of the ingredients had turned into a liquid and had been mixed, Yang Chen added the first root. Just as he added the root, Yang Chen immediately discovered a frightening problem.

The geocentric fire was surprisingly unable to quickly refine the Penglai Divine Wood.

Although, according the concept of the five phases rousing each other, wood gave birth to fire, the Penglai Divine Wood was very high grade and the Geocentric Flame could not match up to it.

Yang Chen was now very glad that he had spent a year to allow the Profound Spirit Furnace to absorb the Real Sun Fire, so now it could be used immediately.

If it were some other person, even the original master of the Real Sun Fire, He LianYun, if the Real Sun Fire were meeting an object

like a piece of Penglai Divine Wood, which could rouse other phases, it would have lead to the Penglai Divine Wood directly being burned to ashes, leaving nothing behind. But in his previous life, Yang Chen was the master of the Real Sun Fire, so he was more familiar with the flame than any other person in the mortal world. Only a trace of the extremely fine thread of fire could have directly penetrated through the small root of the Penglai Divine Wood.

On one side he had put his mind to controlling that melted medicinal liquid, on the other side he was also controlling this trace of flame to refine the roots. Fortunately Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness right now was very powerful. The three purities secrets were not only making Yang Chen's Spiritual Awareness become ever more powerful, but were also allowing Yang Chen to put his mind to two things, allowing him to accomplish these things effortlessly.

After spending a lot of time, that one root was finally refined, blending in with the liquid of the foundation stage pill. No mistakes had appeared during the process, which had already been simulated tens of thousands of times, and after one month, the medicinal liquid successfully revealed a shallow, green colored pill.

This third grade foundation stage pill was completely different from ordinary foundation stage pills. The hint of wood attributed Spirit Power was very obvious on the outside. This was the first pill Yang Chen had tested and although it was successful, Yang Chen still wanted to compare it with a few other test results, to have a look which one had the best results.

Very quickly four months had passed and within Yang Chen's Achievement Ring, there were now four green foundation stage pills. Currently these four pills were arranged in a row in front of Yang Chen, with their colors ranging from a shallow green to a dark green, revealing the degree of wood attributed Spirit Power they contained, depending on the color.

The four roots were added at different times and had produced four different types of results, but the most shocking thing was, that Yang Chen had refined these four foundation stage pills in four tries. In other words, his success rate for refining third grade foundation stage pills was a hundred percent.

Refining a foundation stage pill was not a very difficult matter for a high grade pill concocting master, but a third grade foundation stage pill was not something that even a third grade pill concocting master could refine successfully in every try. That Yang Chen had accomplished this would be enough to make people like the YuanYing stage experts, Deng Yi and Zhu Peng feel inferior.

Yang Chen needed to penetrate the pills with his Spiritual Awareness to determine the difference in Spirit Power between these foundation stage pills. But when he wrapped up the pills in his Spiritual Awareness, his consciousness all of a sudden appeared within his spirit sea and in front of him were four enormous, green balls.

Yang Chen had absolutely not expected that he would come into the spirit sea at this kind of time, but when he saw the four huge, green balls, he could not help but let his mouth fall open because of the shock and amazement. Where were these four balls? They

were clearly the four foundation stage pills, magnified to this extent and the volume of every pill appeared to be several times more than Yang Chen had wanted.

What made him even more delighted that he could look at any part inside of these four balls, no spot was hidden from his sight. The structure of these four pills, their composition, the distribution of Spirit Power, even the few defects within the pills, at this moment, nothing was hidden from Yang Chen and everything was laid out in front of him.

‘Could this be an effect of the three purities secrets?’

Yang Chen did not dare to be sure of any reason why his spirit sea had turned out like this, he was completely unable to understand this. Although in his previous life, he was a great principal golden immortal, he was the lowest level great principal golden immortal and his spirit sea was merely a simple spirit sea, without anything inside. Not to mention the different layers of his spirit sea, he would not even have been able to see the composition of these foundation stage pills.

But regardless of what was said, this was not a bad thing for Yang Chen. To be able to analyze these foundation stage pills so clearly, their structure, their composition, their distribution of Spirit Power and even their defects, what more could a pill concocting master want? This was simply a well tailored gift for Yang Chen! It would definitely make other pill concocting masters go green with envy.

Whatever the reason was for the spirit sea being like this, Yang



Chen immediately gave up on analyzing these four foundation stage pills and retreated from the spirit sea. After coming out, he immediately began to repeat the contents of the three purities secret from his memory, as he knew that the most probable reason for this was precisely the three purities secret.

Very quickly Yang Chen discovered the origin of this effect: the three purities secrets were able to constantly increase the Spiritual Awareness of cultivators. Compared to other cultivation method for Spiritual Awareness, they were a lot stronger, but usually, after cultivating for a long time, cultivators would divide their Spiritual Awareness after it had reached a realm, higher than their own.

After the Spiritual Awareness was divided, it meant the appearance of a second primordial spirit, but usually for this kind of condition, it required a cultivation of at least the YuanYing stage. Because the murderous spirit of the XianTai Stage had been refined by the three purities secret into a large amount of Spirit Power, Yang Chen had attained this condition long ago, but since his cultivation was very low, he hadn't been able to divide his Spiritual Awareness to form a primordial spirit. Currently his Spiritual Awareness had already reached the peak of the JieDan stage, but his cultivation was only at the initial foundation stage. This huge difference of almost two realms had led to the appearance of this situation, which was not recorded within the three purities secret.

This is a kind of qualitative change, triggered by the quantitative change was a pleasant accident and at the same time it signified that Yang Chen had finally reached the third layer cultivation method of the three purities secrets. Even if the Greatest Supreme Elder was present at that moment, he would also have admired

that lucky opportunity which Yang Chen had received.

Since it was such a good thing, Yang Chen naturally did not hesitate to cultivate the third layer of the three purities secrets. That sensation of the Spiritual Awareness being refined gave Yang Chen some anguish, but then that familiar, pleasurable feeling appeared again. Just using it once, Yang Chen was able to sense that his spirit sea had become even more refined, it truly was the Greatest Supreme Elder's cultivation method, powerful to the extreme.

The four foundation stage pills in front of him, had not entered his spirit sea before, with just one look within the spirit sea, Yang Chen had determined that these were merely the projections of those foundation stage pills, after they had been scanned by his Spiritual Awareness. Once he entered the spirit sea, Yang Chen had already experimented with the method for coming out, the size of the pills changed according to Yang Chen's wishes, allowing him to see their inside composition even more easily.

Within the spirit sea, Yang Chen could cover everything at a single glance. The four pills were being thoroughly analyzed by Yang Chen to the utmost: where was the heat control imperfect, when was there a deficiency in the ingredients being added, in a pill that Yang Chen had previously believed to be perfect, he found more than ten defects.

Naturally, he also found the most perfect pill he wanted. But these were not the pills which Yang Chen was going to use immediately, rather, according to the method of refining this foundation stage pill, he would have to replace the minor root of

the Penglai Divine Wood with the main root and refine it again.

# Chapter 98 - Foundation Stage, Foundation Stage, Foundation Stage

Replacing a thin, minor root with a master root was naturally a completely different concept. This kind of common sense, even an ordinary person was able to understand it. Naturally, cultivators understood the difference between the accumulated Spirit Power, as well as the difference between their functions even more clearly.

Yang Chen had begun with four pills, they were merely tests after all and still far from genuinely refined foundation stage pills. This time, Yang Chen was even more serious and the refining time was longer by two or three times.

Naturally, the cause for the long duration was the time needed to refine the master root of the Penglai Divine Wood, which was many times longer and it was also more difficult compared to refining the small, minor root. Just this one step had taken a few months for Yang Chen. The strength of the master root could clearly be ascertained from the fact that this was the result of Yang Chen controlling the Real Sun Fire with all of his strength for the entire duration.

Selecting the best quality of Profound Yang Fruits and the best complementary ingredients as well as the thickest master root within the forest of Penglai Divine Wood trees, just this had used up one whole quarter of the medicine garden's Spirit Power. And Yang Chen was merely using them to reach the foundation stage, this was simply too wasteful.

After two months, the final product was a dark green pill with three, clear pill patterns on top of it, in the shape of a miniature Penglai Divine Wood tree: the third grade Divine Wood Foundation Stage Pill.

Those minor defects in the previous pills had been reduced by a lot under Yang Chen's meticulous control, becoming more and more perfect. The concentrated medicinal qi hovering over the pill immediately made people realize how extraordinary this pill was.

After making careful preparations, Yang Chen put that perfect pill into his mouth. As soon as the dragon eye sized pill entered his mouth, it dissolved into the essence of Penglai Divine Wood which Yang Chen was familiar with and rushed directly towards Yang Chen's lungs.

Surging violently through his meridians, the Spirit Power of the Penglai Divine Wood started tyrannically blending with his first wood Spirit Power. After a short amount of time, it had completely assimilated with the first wood Spirit Power within Yang Chen's body, without any restraints.

This process was far more gentle compared to when Yang Chen had used the Real Sun Fire to compress the Third Fire Spirit Power. For every trace of Spirit Power he purified, a huge amount of Spirit Power was consumed, all of this loss had to be made up by the Spirit Power produced from the Five Phases of Yin and Yang Spirit Power within Yang Chen's body, as well as the Spirit Power that was supplied by the third grade foundation stage pill.

The Five Phases of Yin and Yang Five secrets were circulating crazily, as Yang Chen was about to make up for the deficiency of the first wood Spirit Power after he had assimilated the essence of the Penglai Divine Wood. When the essence of the Penglai Divine Wood had accumulated a sufficient amount of first wood Spirit Power, Yang Chen began to fight over controlling the essence of the Penglai Divine Wood.

Simply speaking, Yang Chen was using up an enormous amount of Spirit Power to compress the essence of the Penglai Divine Wood to the peak and then split it up trace by trace to transform it, and afterwards he began to absorb and refine these traces and turn them into a part of his own Five Phases of Yin and Yang type Spirit Power.

Yang Chen extracted a trace from the essence of the Penglai Divine Wood which he had taken into his body, and then he absorbed and refined it, while at the same time allowing his meridians to adjust to this extremely pure, first wood Spirit Power. This process lasted for a whole two months.

When the final trace of the Penglai Divine Wood's Spirit Power was thoroughly absorbed by Yang Chen, Yang Chen once again entered the state of linking the energy of Heaven and Earth.

This was already the third time in this life that Yang Chen had entered this state. The Spirit Power hiding the sky and covering the earth rushed in from all directions and converged within Yang Chen's body, replenishing the first wood Spirit Power he had just refined to the peak again. This situation could astonish anyone. This lasted for around half an hour.

When an ordinary cultivator would build his foundation, the linking of Heaven and Earth would only last for a very short time, but this time Yang Chen had set a whole new record. This strange matter even made the Palace Master, who was cultivating within the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard at this time, stop his cultivation and wait outside of Yang Chen's closed door training room.

Naturally, the Palace Master would not do anything rash to interrupt Yang Chen's cultivation or do anything to disturb him. The same as him, another person had also come here because of this strange occurrence and that was Yang Chen's master, Gao Yue.

As the first wood Spirit Power reached the foundation stage, it also urged the Spirit Power of the remaining attributes to increase frantically. The long time it took in the process of linking up the Heaven and Earth, has lead to the Spirit Power within Yang Chen's body frantically rushing to the peak of the qi layer within just half an hour after making a breakthrough.

Consequently, Yang Chen had no option but to build a foundation in his remaining seven attributes of Spirit Power at the same time. This was another crazy process which would astonish people: after the first wood Spirit Power had finished linking the Heaven and Earth within half an hour, an even larger scale insurrection of the energy of Heaven and Earth began at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard inside of Yang Chen's room.

Even when a JieDan stage expert congealed his dan, it still didn't not produce this kind of enormous activity. All of the Spirit Power of Heaven and Earth within the hundred meter radius of the

Second Fierce Yang Courtyard was crazily rushing over there, as if it was being sucked by a massive black hole. This was to the extent that even many people cultivating in the Inner Pure Yang Palace discovered the anomaly.

The few people at the grade of an elder immediately flew into the air and in a flash they arrived at the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard. But when they discovered the Palace Master standing outside of the room where Yang Chen was doing his closed door training, they all silently understood and didn't say anything, quietly landing behind the Palace Master.

The Second Fierce Yang Courtyard didn't have many people permanently residing in it, all of the elders clearly knew who they were and currently, apart from Gongsun Ling and Yang Chen all the other people had already arrived there. Gongsun Ling had already left for the Immortal Falling Well, so the elders didn't even need to use their Spiritual Awareness to know who was inside of the room.

The large amount of Spiritual Influence of Heaven and Earth had formed a huge whirlpool in the sky above Yang Chen's room and at the bottom of the whirlpool was Yang Chen. Yang Chen's body was like a huge sponge, frantically absorbing the Spirit Power which was refined and purified by the Reverse Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets in his body and was turned into a part of his own Spirit Power.

Yang Chen's consciousness had already appeared within his Spirit Sea at this moment. The Spirit Sea, which originally had a blood colored river, as well as a sun in the sky with the long river



of Geocentric Magma beneath it, at this moment also held a large number of gargantuan trees. These huge trees had also firmly taken root at the side of the blood colored river. The long roots even extended to the magma river underneath, while the height of the huge trees was barely touching the sun in the sky. The thick tree trunks stood with indomitable spirit, forming a bridge between Heaven and Earth.

The outline of the Spirit Sea had already expanded to the size of five Second Fierce Yang Courtyards, having a radius of at least a hundred hectares. Yang Chen was standing in the middle, able to sense its vastness. The blood colored river had become even longer, cutting the spirit sea into two parts horizontally.

“What happened here?”

Seeing the strange appearance of Heaven and Earth Spirit Power constantly surging in, everyone outside of Yang Chen’s room was dumbfounded. Nobody knew what had happened. But everyone had come to the same conclusion, that this was definitely a good thing.

The linking of Heaven and Earth continued for half an hour, but the people standing outside weren’t impatient for even a second.

Those fellow cultivators who were of the same generation as Yang Chen as well as the servants, although they were curious about what was happening, at the same time they also used this chance to cultivate. Just cultivating there for a small amount of time led to much better results.

As for the Palace Master, the other YuanYing stage experts and Gao Yue, they were guessing what had happened with Yang Chen that would cause these circumstances to continue for so long. But everyone knew about these circumstances, because everyone there had experienced it, this clearly was the process of linking the Heaven and Earth at the time of building the foundation. It was just that nobody had ever seen this much activity at that time and neither had it continued for such a long time.

On one hand, everyone was waiting and on the other, they were deeply pondering about it. Finally the violent convergence of the Spirit Power of Heaven and Earth started to ease up and then finally slowed down. Everyone relaxed within their hearts, knowing that this was already the final juncture.

The Palace Master suddenly thought of something Xu Cheng Xin had told him: apparently, at the Heavenly Stairs Assembly, Yang Chen had said that he had already cultivated the Spirit Power of all five phases, supposedly in order to sense what the Spirit Power of other attributes felt like. In addition to that, the Palace Master himself had sensed earlier that, although the fire attributed Spirit Power was most prominent in his body, Spirit Power of the other attributes did indeed also exist.

But at that moment the Palace Master had remembered Xu Cheng Xin's words, so he knew that Yang Chen had gained this experience, and he had also proved it in front of Xu Cheng Xin by controlling fire as water and controlling fire as earth, therefore he hadn't paid much attention to it at that time. But currently, seeing the long time it required to link up Heaven and Earth made him think of another possibility.

Yang Chen couldn't possibly have succeeded in building his foundation in the Spirit Power of all five attributes, right? This thought made the Palace Master extremely frightened. Cultivating all five phases simultaneously and reaching the foundation stage at the same time, how could the label 'talented disciple' be enough to describe him? Even using 'monster' would not be enough for him.

How was this possible? If it were a YuanYing stage cultivator who had reached the foundation stage in the rest of the other attributes, then the Palace Master would have believed it, but a person who had only recently built his foundation in the fire attribute had unexpectedly built his foundation in all of the five phases of Spirit Power? If someone heard this thought, they would surely treat it as a joke. Even if Yang Chen was very hardworking, where did he get the time to cultivate?

He knew that Yang Chen had a reputation of being lazy in cultivation in the Nine Earth Manor, even in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, apart from these two seclusions, all of the remaining time he was idling around. So how was it possible that he had reached the foundation stage in all of the five phases?

But if this was not true, then how could the current circumstances be explained? The Palace Master was very confused, he was hoping that Yang Chen could immediately finish and come out so that he could ask him and clear everything up.

As a consequence of linking the energy of Heaven and Earth it had allowed Yang Chen's Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets to form an equilibrium once again, this was the state Yang Chen was

the most comfortable in and also the one where his fighting strength was the most powerful.

Originally he had planned that he would refine the Profound Spirit Furnace and Sword Box with the Heavenly Stars Treasure Refining Secrets and Earth Fiend Sacrificial Formation Secrets using the Spirit Power of the Five Phases of Yin and Yang secrets, immediately afterwards, but Yang Chen quickly discovered the people standing outside of his gate. Even his master and the Palace Master were among them. Yang Chen had no other choice but to go out, immediately ending his seclusion.

“I pay my respects to master, I pay my respects to Palace Master and the other elders!”

After coming, apart from paying his respects to those seniors, he did not make any other movements. Everyone held back for the moment he was greeting them, but afterwards they surrounded him and started examining him.

At this moment Yang Chen's Five Phases of Yin and Yang had been balanced again, so he had automatically developed a mysterious and reserved temperament. Although he seemed as if he had returned to his true self, everyone, including Gao Yue, could sense the formidable strength of the five phases Spirit Power silently circulating inside of his body. Perhaps in the eyes of those great experts, this Spirit Power was not worth much, but they were experienced people, so they could naturally estimate Yang Chen's strength.

Yang Chen, who had just reached the foundation stage and was

only at the first layer of the foundation stage could actually handle more than ten cultivators at the same level, and this was still the most reserved estimation. Even middle foundation stage cultivators may not be Yang Chen's opponent, perhaps only upper foundation stage or peak foundation stage cultivators could be evenly matched with Yang Chen.

This foundation stage disciple has yet again managed to astonish them. The Palace Master did not know what to say and Gao Yue, who was worried about her disciple, could not bear it anymore and, in front of all of these people, she asked Yang Chen:

“Yang Che, what was all of that hubbub about? Were you building your foundation?”

“Yes, master!”

Yang Chen answered very respectfully. Within a moment he had already thought about how to deal with these elders.

“You have cultivated Spirit Power of all five phases at the same time, aren't you afraid that you will not be able to differentiate between your primary and secondary attribute?”

Gao Yue's eyebrows almost turned into a knot. Since she had started cultivation, she had never before heard of anyone cultivating all five phases simultaneously and moreover cultivating them successfully. There had been some cultivators who had cultivated the five phases, but their outcomes were very miserable, everyone knew that people like Yang Chen, who could gain this

kind of benefit, were very rare.

“This disciple was still focusing on cultivating the fire attribute, but somehow the other attributes were also raised to the foundation stage, this disciple hadn’t anticipated this.”

As before, Yang Chen replied extremely respectfully to Gao Yue’s questions, while at the same time dispelling the doubts of the other elders.

“If you haven’t focused on the other attributes, then how did you reach the foundation stage?”

Gao Yue asked while being entirely confused, this question was also on the minds of the Palace Master and the other elders. Having Gao Yue ask these questions in their place was better than asking themselves, as they were all dumbstruck on the scene.

“This disciple has carelessly refined a foundation stage pill and wanted to test its results, the outcome is the current situation.”

Yang Chen replied ‘honestly’ as before.

“What sort of foundation stage pill?”

This time the Palace Master rushed ahead of Gao Yue to ask the question. As the Palace Master, he immediately realized that this was the most important point.

“This is the pill refined by this disciple, I invite Palace Master to have a look!”

Yang Chen took out the top quality foundation stage pill from his Achievement Ring and clasping it in both hands, he put it in front of the Palace Master.

“A third grade foundation stage pill?”

As soon as the Palace Master took the pill, he immediately discovered the strangeness of the pill and cried out on the spot in surprise.

The cry of the Palace Master immediately caught the attention of the other YuanYing stage elders. All of them immediately came over and looked at the pill in the Palace Master’s hand one by one, wishing that they could immediately snatch it and carefully examine it.

There were three clear patterns on the pill, which confirmed the grade of the pill without a doubt. This certainly was a pill that had been refined three times, but why was the colour of the foundation stage pill green?

“This strong wood attribute Spirit Power, what is it?”

Holding the pill in his hand, the Palace Master immediately sensed the wood attributed Spirit Power contained within it and

asked softly:

“Fu Sang wood? Cyan Sun Wood? Not correct, they aren’t this powerful, could it be that this is - Penglai Divine Wood?”

Bang!

The YuanYing elders lost all of the aloofness of YuanYing stage elders and immediately cried out in alarm, one by one, as if something inside of them had broken.



# Chapter 99 - Real Pure Yang Fire

Penglai Divine Wood, this was a legendary resource and surprisingly it had appeared within this pill? How was this possible? All of the YuanYing stage elders wished that they could immediately grab this pill and investigate it properly, only the status of the Palace Master was stopping them from this, as doing this would indeed be going too far, but still they had completely surrounded the Palace Master.

A foundation stage pill, even a third grade foundation stage, didn't hold much value for them, as they had already reached the foundation stage countless years ago. At most Yang Chen's ability to refine a third grade pill would be considered as an extremely gifted disciple within the sect who should be cultivated very carefully.

But Penglai Divine Wood was different, it could be used to refine the most powerful of flying swords. If a wood attributed cultivator got it by luck, then it simply could be considered as one of the very best magic weapons in the mortal world.

Only, this kind of object was really too precious, even the Palace Master was unable to directly determine that the essence of this pill was that of the Penglai Divine Wood. He only eliminated a few types of high grade, wood attributed materials and deduced the result.

After the Palace Master had looked, the pill passed through the hands of the YuanYing stage elders and after each of them had

carefully recognized it, nobody dared to dispute that the pure wood attributed essence in the pill did not belong to the legendary Penglai Divine Wood.

“Yang Chen, the wood attributed spirit essence is of what material?”

As soon as everyone had finished looking, the Palace Master hinted everyone to come to the room where official business could be held in the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, as it was indeed not proper for the group of elders to stand in that small courtyard. Only after everyone had been seated, did the Palace Master open his mouth to ask.

“I don’t know!”

Yang Chen directly lied.

“I came across a small piece of wood, which contained a strong wood attributed Spirit Power, so I just tried to use this wood attributed Spirit Power and refine the foundation stage pill with it, but I didn’t expect that I would succeed in the first try.”

“What about that piece of wood?”

The Palace Master impatiently asked, but after immediately realizing that he was forgetting his manners, he slowly added one more sentence:

“Do you still have it?”

Although the other YuanYing stage experts hadn't said anything, all of them were expecting him to reply affirmatively.

“I only have this small piece left.”

Originally he had planned to say that he didn't have any, but changing his plans, he took out a finger thick piece of a Penglai Divine Wood branch and placed it into the Palace Master's hand.

“This finger sized part had broken off, and the rest I used for refining.”

“This! This!”

Holding the fresh and green branch in his hand, the Palace Master sensed an even richer wood attributed Spirit Power when compared to the pill. Even his fingers started shaking. The gazes of these few YuanYing stage experts also fixed on this, not willing to budge.

Even holding it within his hand, the Palace Master did not dare to ascertain that this was Penglai Divine Wood. He still wanted everyone to observe it and identify it, only then would he agree with the result. After all, this kind of thing was an object of legends, who could recognize it right away? Even that mountain god was duped by it, so what about people at the level of the Palace Master?

After the small branch passed through everyone's hands, the gaze of the Palace Master shifted to the third grade Foundation Stage Pill in front of him. Perhaps it shouldn't just be called a third grade Foundation Stage Pill, instead it should be called as a third grade Divine Wood Foundation Stage Pill.

“Third grade Foundation Stage Pill!”

Lifting his head, the Palace Master looked at Yang Chen and his lips seemed to dry out.

“Was this refined by you?”

“Yes, this disciple has refined it.”

Yang Chen would naturally not deny it, this would certainly increase his status in the Pure Yang Palace, how could Yang Chen not take the credit?

The Palace Master was still the Palace Master, after his initial excitement of obtaining the Penglai Divine Wood was gone, he immediately began to think about the affairs of the Pure Yang Palace, and what could make him happier than a disciple who had just reached the foundation stage but was able to refine a third grade foundation stage pill, and was moreover also able to refine the Penglai Divine Wood?

Disregarding the fact that Yang Chen taken such a third grade

foundation stage pill while it contained Penglai Divine Wood, which had allowed all of his five attributes to reach the foundation stage, even if the pill did not contain Penglai Divine Wood, if Yang Chen could make this kind of pill for all of the outer disciples, what would be consequences for the Pure Yang Palace? Even Zhu Chen Tao, who was a well known middle JieDan stage third grade pill concocting master, could he have certainty to refine a third grade foundation stage pill at every attempt?

The xun qi pill had increased the number of outer disciple of the Pure Yang Palace by a lot, and as the news of refining a Heaven Seizing Pill had spread, the number of new disciples had almost tripled that year, and now, a third grade foundation stage pill which could definitely allow all of the peak qi layer disciples to reach the foundation stage, all of this had something to do with Yang Chen. Could it be possible that Yang Chen was second coming of Pure Yang Palace's great ancestor?

It had to be said that Yang Chen's deeds had sealed this fact: the Di Mai of the Second Fierce Yang Courtyard, the Penglai Divine Wood, scaling the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, those two hundred thousand Spirit Essences; nobody would believe that a mere foundation stage disciple had all of this, but these things were all events which had actually already happened.

The more he thought about the things which Yang Chen had done, the more the Palace Master was satisfied, but at the same time the more he loathed Chu Heng, who had suppressed Yang Chen. He was even more resentful towards Liang Shao Ming of the Luminous Moon Hall.

“How much time did you need to refine this kind of third grade foundation stage pill?”

Fiddling with the pill, the Palace Master was examining it over and over and this time he discovered that, apart from the wood attributed Spirit Power, there was still an exceedingly high amount of differently attributed Spirit Power inside of the pill. Even the Palace Master was amazed again and again when he sensed this exceedingly high amount of Spirit Power.

The thousand year Profound Yang Fruit was used in this third grade pill and all of the assisting ingredients used were at least matured for a thousand years, naturally it would be brimming with Spirit Power which could alarm and astonish anyone. But the Palace Master did not know this, he merely concluded that it was the result of refining the refining the pill three times.

“This kind of pill which contains wood attributed Spirit Power will require at least eight months.”

Yang Chen answered cleverly, increasing the time by at least two times and said:

“If it was a normal foundation stage pill, it would still require at least four months.”

“En!”

The Palace Master nodded on hearing Yang Chen’s reply. The

time was not very excessive, but it was also something which would allow everyone to receive such a pill. Pondering about it for some time, the Palace Master once again asked a related question:

“What if it is a second grade foundation stage pill?”

“That one is simple!”

This time Yang Chen didn't conceal anything and sincerely replied:

“One month.”

Hearing Yang Chen's reply, the Palace Master didn't say anything for a long time and only muttered to himself, pointing his gaze towards the Penglai Divine Wood, which was being swapped in the hands of the elders, making a round trip, again.

“Yang Chen!”

After a long time, the Palace Master opened his mouth to call out to Yang Chen as if he had figured something out.

“This disciple is here!”

Yang Chen hurriedly replied.

“Are you willing to hand over this one branch to the sect?”

With his gaze fixed on that one branch of Penglai Divine Wood, the Palace Master asked to probe him, all with a tone of having a discussion.

“This disciple is willing!”

Yang Chen didn't think about it much and directly answered. Since he had already taken it out in order to deliver it to the sect, Yang Chen would definitely not refuse.

“As for this pill.....”

The Palace Master thought for a moment while fiddling with Yang Chen's third grade pill and said:

“Can you also deliver it to the sect, to allow Zhu Chen Tao to research it?”

“Yes!”

Yang Chen nodded without feeling any dissatisfaction, as he never had any intentions of taking it back after he had taken it out. If he had not taken out some real material, how could his status increase in the Pure Yang Palace?

“The sect will not just take away your things.”



The Palace Master looked into Yang Chen's eyes and slowly said:

“If you have any request, raise it without hesitation. If the sect is able to satisfy it, then we will not be stingy.”

The few elders had already stopped observing the Penglai Divine Wood and were carefully listening to the conversation between the Palace Master and Yang Chen. When the Palace Master had asked Yang Chen to raise any request without hesitation, none of them raised any objection.

This was clearly something which belonged to Yang Chen, this point was enough to make even Elder Lin, who had conflicts with Yang Chen, unable to say anything. Having a dispute within the sect did not mean that because of it, they would also hinder the development of sect.

Yang Chen was a talented disciple who had constantly given them many nice surprises and currently he had selflessly delivered some Penglai Divine Wood, an object of legends, to them. If they still had anything more to say, that was just offending everyone in the sect. These were elders who had cultivated to the YuanYing stage, if they still couldn't open their minds, then they were not worthy of being elders.

And moreover, with the possibility that they would require Yang Chen's help to refine a Heaven Seizing Pill someday, it dissolved any issues with this. So whether in public or in private, they couldn't find any reason to fight against it.

“This disciple wants to know, what was the outcome of the negotiation with the Greatest Heaven Sect?”

Yang Chen didn't request anything, instead he first asked a question. This problem was directly related to Yang Chen, because Li Qing Chen of the Greatest Heaven Sect and Chu Heng had sent people to kill Yang Chen together and then, at that time in the Law Enforcement Hall, the Palace Master had requested Xu Cheng Xin to negotiate in anger.

“The Greatest Heaven Sect has apologized to our Pure Yang Palace and you because of the matters at the Heavenly Stairs.”

The Palace Master hadn't anticipated that Yang Chen would ask this, so after recovering from his distraction, he continued to reply:

“The Greatest Heaven Sect has already relieved Cheng Wen Cai of all duties related to the sect, and has also given their quota of two disciples for the Heavenly Stairs Assembly next year to us.”

“In addition, the nineteen JieDan stage experts who were involved in plotting against you, all had their sects compensate to some extent.”

The Palace Master attached a lot of importance to this issue, so he remembered these details clearly.

“There is a flying sword, sixteen types of pills, a pill furnace and a piece of immortal liang tree. Their reply had come not too long ago, but you were still in seclusion, therefore the sect replied in your place.”

“As for the matter of Li Qing Chen sending people to kill you...”

The Palace Master paused, as if wanting to allow Yang Chen to get prepared for something:

“The official position of the Greatest Heaven Sect is that this is a personal matter between you and Li Qing Chen and that Greatest Heaven Sect will not personally step in to protect him. You can look for him at any time to settle this personal grudge and both sects will not interfere in any way. Are you satisfied with this?”

Satisfied, Yang Chen was naturally satisfied. The Greatest Heaven Sect had suffered a loss of four JieDan stage experts, still had to apologize and also had to give up their quota! This was a course of action, from which everyone could see that they had admitted their mistake, so how could Yang Chen be dissatisfied? Even if Yang Chen had received virtually no benefits, he was still very satisfied, let alone demanding anything more.

A very small qiankun pouch appeared in the Palace Master's hand. It clearly contained those things of compensation, but he didn't hand it over directly to Yang Chen and rather asked him:

“The sect is holding your things, naturally we will not take it away without giving you anything, what do you require?”

“It is up to Palace Master!”

Yang Chen immediately retreated, leaving everything for the Palace Master to decide. It was obvious that, if the Palace Master had not taken out some benefits, among those elders was his Grand Master, Gao Yue’s master, Elder Wang Yong, who would not agree. Thus to make it appear as if he was not seeking any rewards it would leave an even greater impression on the upper echelons.

“Since the Penglai Divine Wood is really hard to come by, I will give you some options to pick from.”

The Palace Master did not push Yang Chen a lot, he was used to bossing people around, so he had his own attitude. Pondering for one second, he immediately thought of a way:

“You are a fire attributed cultivator, my Pure Yang Palace has hoarded the Real Pure Yang Fire for several generations, this secret has not been divulged to anyone other than the sect leader and a few elders, I will grant you the status of an official disciple and bestow the Real Pure Yang Flame to you. There is also a piece of Dark Flame Crystal Stone, although it is not as precious as Penglai Divine Wood, but it is still a fire attributed treasure which can be used as a top grade material for refining a flying sword. The other parts can be brought using contribution points and Spirit Stones, you can pick any one among these!”

Hearing the Palace Master’s words, Yang Chen was pleased beyond his expectations. The palace master had surprisingly given

him the option to choose any one among the Real Pure Yang Fire and Dark Flame Crystal, what more did Yang Chen needed to think about?

“This disciple chooses the Real Pure Yang Fire!”

Almost without any thinking, Yang Chen immediately picked the Real Pure Yang Fire. It had to be known that this was an even higher flame than the Real Sun Fire. Only the core, fire attributed disciples of the Pure Yang Palace had a chance to try their hands at it, and even that was only a chance and nothing more.

The nature of the Real Pure Yang Fire was very tyrannical, even if it was a YuanYing stage expert he would still not be able to absorb and refine it, according to his previous life's memory, nobody within the mortal world or spiritual world had used this Real Pure Yang Flame, only in the Immortal World had fire attributed experts shown it occasionally; this was an extremely rare item.

Within the Pure Yang Palace, only the grand ancestor used to possess the Real Pure Yang Fire and this was also the origin for the name of the Pure Yang Palace. There wasn't anyone in the younger generation who had refined it. When the Pure Yang Palace was destroyed in his previous life, the Real Pure Yang Fire was also destroyed by the Palace Master at the final moment. From then on the Real Pure Yang Fire didn't exist in the mortal world.

In his previous life, Yang Chen didn't have the qualifications to touch the Real Pure Yang Flame and even if he had the qualifications, he didn't have the ability to refine it. But in this life,

this opportunity was arranged for him, making Yang Chen simply overjoyed.

“You should think this over properly!”

The Palace Master apparently also had a desire for Yang Chen to take it, as nobody in the Pure Yang Palace had been able to refine the Real Pure Yang Flame after the great ancestor and it had just become a decorative item in the Pure Yang Palace. Yang Chen’s control over fire was clear to all, maybe he would be able to inherit it and make full use of it to develop the Pure Yang Palace. Although he had these kinds of expectations in his mind, the Palace Master still reminded Yang Chen:

“You will not be able to refine the Real Pure Yang Fire at least until you ascend, but you can refine the Dark Flame Crystal as soon as you reach the JieDan stage, do you still want the Real Pure Yang Flame?”

“This disciple still selects the Real Pure Yang Flame!”

Yang Chen answered firmly once again, without caring for the prompting of his great master and also not caring about the anxious looks of his master, Gao Yue.

“Good!”

The Palace Master carefully looked at Yang Chen for a good moment, confirming that Yang Chen wasn’t joking. Then, flipping

his hand, a square shaped transparent case appeared in his hand. The top of the case was covered with all sorts of sealing spell formations, through the case it could be seen that the inside was filled with a white dazzling light, flickering continuously.

# Chapter 100 - The Great Master Can Also Give Pointers

Together with that original qiankun pouch, the Palace Master delivered the Real Pure Yang Flame to Yang Chen. After Yang Chen had respectfully accepted it, the Palace Master waved his hand and immediately a divine light entered Yang Chen's spirit sea, this was a chant used for opening the seals on the Real Pure Yang Fire.

“Foundation Stage, Third Grade Pill Concocting Master, Yang Chen, I will await the day when you refine the Real Pure Yang Fire!”

The Palace Master wasn't pretending even a little while saying these words, he was indeed sincerely expecting this outcome.

“But you can only keep this for at most three hundred years. Once this time is over, it will automatically return to the secret pavilion of my Pure Yang Palace, so you must hurry up.”

“This disciple will surely try to do his best and not disappoint the Palace Master and the elders!”

Yang Chen immediately expressed his gratitude and determination, but in his mind he was thinking that it was really fortunate that he had taken out the branch of Penglai Divine Wood. If it hadn't been for that, it would still take countless years before he could gain access to the Real Pure Yang Fire.



In other words, only the Palace Master of the Pure Yang Palace could open the secret pavilion of the Pure Yang Pavilion and take out the flame from within. Apparently the Palace Master was quite confident in Yang Chen, he had even imparted him the technique to control it. It had to be known that, without this technique, even Elder Wu would likely not be able to open those seals.

After he had been bestowed with this reward and all of the doubts had been cleared, the Palace Master, who had just obtained the Penglai Divine Wood, didn't stay much longer in the room and immediately went to look for a place to research that one minor Penglai Divine Wood branch together with the other elders. If this was successful, maybe the Pure Yang Palace would also have a few more divine items, aside from the Real Pure Yang Fire.

Wang Yong stayed behind as everyone else turned to leave, but when the Palace Master turned around to ask him for a reason, he just waved his hand to decline:

“This old man is fire attributed and this Penglai Divine Wood has no connection with me, I still want to give some pointers to my disciple's disciple.”

These words were reasonable, so nobody said anything and allowed Wang Yong to remain behind.

Gao Yue, together with Yang Chen, were still respectfully waiting on one side and only after everyone had entirely disappeared without leaving no trace did Wang Yong slap the table and

complain to Yang Chen:

“Youngster, why didn’t you look at me for advice, how could you pick the Real Pure Yang Fire?”

“This disciple just wants to test whether this disciple has the karmic luck or not!”

Confronting his own great master, Yang Chen didn’t dared to be impudent and answered the question with an extremely respectful attitude.

“Karmic luck?”

Wang Yong was startled but didn’t immediately refute Yang Chen, evidently he had recalled Yang Chen’s deeds in these past few years and apparently Yang Chen really had a heaven defying fortune, otherwise how was it possible that, as soon as he paid his respects to his master, he could immediately find a spirit vein which was clearly not inferior to the master spirit vein of the Pure Yang Palace? Moreover he had also ascended to the peak of the Heavenly Stairs, and he had the strength to refine a Heaven Seizing Pill when he was at the qi layer, how could the person who achieved all this not be blessed by great fortune?

“Fine! Experimenting a bit is also good!”

After thinking about this clearly, Wang Yong nodded, not questioning him again.

“That dark flame crystal is now an opportunity lost forever, if worst comes to worst, when your cultivation has increased some more, refine a few high grade elixirs and exchange them for it. But unfortunately, regarding the matter of pill concoction, this old man and Yue’er will not be of much help to you.”

Even Wang Yong had no option other than admitting defeat against the achievements of this grand disciple with regards to pill concoction. After all, while Wang Yong was also a fire attributed cultivator the same as Gao Yue, he mostly concentrated on fights and on refining tools, but he was not so proficient in the field of concocting pills. Yang Chen had refined a third grade foundation stage pill at a very young age with just a cultivation of the foundation stage, which naturally proved that he had an innate talent with regards to this. Maybe Yang Chen really had a chance with regards to this Real Pure Yang Fire.

In his previous life Yang Chen did not have a lot of contact with Wang Yong, after Yang Chen had formally become Gao Yue’s disciple, Wang Yong had already begun his seclusion to attack the bottleneck for reaching the Da Cheng stage, and by the time when the Pure Yang Palace had met with an accident, Wang Yong had been unable to break through. In the end, to save his grand disciple, he had perished while taking down an enemy YuanYing stage expert with him, it was indeed very unfortunate.

After Yang Chen’s rebirth, he would not allow this kind of tragedy to happen again. Although Wang Yong hadn’t said much, his intentions for Yang Chen’s safety were very clear. Yang Chen could naturally sense this kind of care. But Yang Chen also knew that Wang Yong still cared for Gao Yue more, after all Wang Yong

and Yang Chen did not have a lot of contact with each other, Yang Chen was more of a package-deal with his master.

But for Yang Chen, that Wang Yong was safeguarding Gao Yue, was the best possible outcome. Hearing Wang Yong's words, Yang Chen immediately began to talk:

“Many thanks, great master, for your care, this grand disciple will strive harder and will absolutely not fail to meet great master's expectations!”

After thinking about this, Yang Chen's faith in Wang Yong increased even more. He had already initiated his plans at the Pure Yang Palace and now, being under the watch of his great master, some matters could naturally be solved very easily now.

“Great Master, this disciple requests you to place restrictive formations on the surroundings; grand disciple does not want other people to hear the following words.”

Yang Chen said very sincerely to Wang Yong. His facial expression was extremely serious, even Gao Yue hadn't seen such seriousness in Yang Chen's face before.

Wang Yong was startled and wrinkled his brows, but he didn't say anything, so with a wave of his hand, he placed a restrictive formation and said:

“Good, I have already placed a restrictive formation, now if you

have something to say, speak freely.”

“This is not enough, Great Master!”

Yang Chen resolutely shook his head, not even caring about giving face to Wang Yong.

“This matter is of the greatest importance, Great Master, I must request you to place at least nine layers of restrictions!”

“Yang Chen!”

Gao Yue immediately berated him loudly, Wang Yong was Gao Yue’s master, but Yang Chen unexpectedly didn’t even feel relieved with him.

Yang Chen’s words also made Wang Yong curious, what kind of secret was it that required nine layers of restrictions to ensure that it didn’t leak? He attentively looked in Yang Chen’s eyes for a good moment and the majestic pressure of a YuanYing stage elder also began to lightly push on Yang Chen, but Yang Chen acted as if he hadn’t sensed anything and stubbornly shook his head.

“Not enough, great master!”

“Good!”

Wang Yong was also affected by Yang Chen’s seriousness. With a

great wave of his hand, ten layers of restrictions immediately sealed the room used for official business, where the three of them were. After everything had been arranged properly, Wang Yong sat down and fixed his gaze on Yang Chen.

“Very well, now even the Palace Master cannot know about the contents of the our conversation without alarming me, you wanted to say anything, speak!”

Yang Chen didn’t say anything, instead he took out the jade box containing the Heaven Seizing Pill which Elder Wu had given him from his Achievement Ring and placed it in front of Wang Yong.

“What is this?”

Wang Yong fearfully asked. There were sealing talismans and spell formations on the box, which were made by a Da Cheng stage expert. They could even make this YuanYing stage expert sense fear and trepidation, what kind of object was forbidden like this? This kind of sealing was comparable with the seals on the Real Pure Yang Fire.

“Great Master, this box has nine layers altogether and every layer also has strong restricting seals.”

Yang Chen said, pointing towards the jade box.

“These are the seals made by Elder Wu himself, inside of these seals is precisely the Heaven Seizing Pill!”

“Heaven Seizing Pill?”

Not only Wang Yong, even Gao Yue standing on the side cried out in fear simultaneously. Even Wang Yong, who was a YuanYing stage elder, whose mental state would not change even if Mt. Tai collapsed in front of his eyes, couldn't help but cry out with surprise and asked Yang Chen in a questioning tone, with his voice trembling:

“Could it be that this is the Heaven Seizing Pill refined for Elder Wu? Or is it that you actually refined two pills?”

Wang Yong had lost his self control. If even a Da Cheng stage expert like Elder Wu, who was going to ascend very soon, lost his colour upon seeing a Heaven Seizing Pill then what about a trifling YuanYing stage elder?

The first thought in Wang Yong's mind was precisely that Yang Chen had refined more than one Heaven Seizing Pill, otherwise, after Elder Wu used one pill, where did the extra Heaven Seizing Pill come from?

Gao Yue had already been in shock for quite a while, such a powerful object made Gao Yue simply unable to believe what she was seeing and what she was hearing. No wonder Yang Chen had treated the matter with such consideration! If Gao Yue had known this, let alone nine layers, she would have asked to put up eighteen layers of restrictions! The excessive shock made Gao Yue lose the ability to speak and left her rooted to the ground, flabbergasted

and not even able to move.

It seemed that Yang Chen was already prepared for this kind of situation, as he immediately moved towards Gao Yue with a big step and placed both of his hands on his master's shoulders and slowly supported her to sit down on a chair, separated from Wang Yong by a table on which there was precisely the jade box.

Wang Yong didn't care in the slightest bit that the master and disciple were sitting on equal footing, both of his eyes had already been fixed on that Heaven Seizing Pill, which had captured his gaze for a long time, so that he was not even able to shift it.

After these two people had been stunned for the time it takes an incense stick to burn, Yang Chen coughed softly, making both of them recover from their shock.

“Have two Heaven Seizing Pills been refined or not, tell me.”

After becoming clear headed, Wang Yong impatiently asked Yang Chen.

“Yang Chen, tell me whether that is the case!”

“Great master, a thing like the Heaven Seizing Pill, how is it possible that two of them had come out?”

Yang Chen bitterly smiled, seeing no alternative he explained:



“If I could refine two of these in the first try, then wouldn’t this Heaven Seizing Pill be very ordinary?”

“Then this is the only pill?”

Fear was visible on Wang Yong’s face, not even daring to accept this clearly obvious fact.

“This is precisely that one pill we had refined for Elder Wu.”

Yang Chen nodded his head, and he had also spoken very clearly this time, distinctly and with confidence, ensuring that both Wang Yong and Gao Yue clearly understand this fact.

“Then why do you have this pill?”

Hearing Yang Chen’s definite reply, Wang Yong and Gao Yue first reaction was not to beaming with smiles on obtaining this, instead it was as if they had provoked a huge misfortune, their voices were trembling just like in the beginning.

“Elder Wu already had no more use for this kind of pill, so he gifted it to me.”

Yang Chen’s gentle tone was like it contained a magic to make people meditate, naturally the content of the sentence was even better, making both Gao Yue and Wang Yong, whose hearts had

been hanging in their throats calm down slowly.

“Goodness gracious!”

In spite of the fact that Gao Yue’s appearance was as if she was paralyzed while sitting on the chair, she softly spoke:

“You almost scared me to death!”

Wang Yong, sitting in front of Gao Yue, was apparently in a much better position compared to Gao Yue. His head was full of beads of sweat, which had only now dared to drop down to the ground, Wang Yong himself hadn’t sensed that his heavy breathing would make it impossible to believe for anyone this was the breath of a YuanYing stage expert.

Hu... Hu...

Only after taking several deep breaths was Wang Yong able to calm down. The first thing that he did not was not to question Yang Chen closely, but rather to immediately increase the number of layers of restrictive spells on top of the nine previously placed layers by as many as he could. Only after he felt exhausted did he stop raising the layers.

“Why did Elder Wu gifted it to you? Why didn’t he have any more use for it?”

After everything was set up properly, Wang Yong’s gaze, which

had been fixed on the jade box moved to Yang Chen. Looking at his calm and composed grand disciple, he suddenly had a feeling that he could not see through him. A foundation stage expert who had refined the Heaven Seizing Pill which a Da Cheng stage expert could use at the time of ascension, all of this was similar to a dream.

“Because this Heaven Seizing Pill is not a perfect Heaven Seizing Pill!”

After saying these words, Yang Chen began to tell Gao Yue and Wang Yong about the events that had happened at the time of refining. Especially about the time when the Heaven Seizing Pill had been defeated by the wind tribulations, for which Elder Wu had substituted in its place. After experiencing the wind tribulation, he had become full of confidence towards ascending, which made both of them realize that this Heaven Seizing Pill was now no longer of much use to Elder Wu, so it was only right and proper that it was given to Yang Chen.

Naturally, Yang Chen hadn't hid the matter about seizing the flame from He LianYun. Hearing that He LianYun, a YuanYing stage expert had surprisingly tried to make things difficult for Yang Chen, who was only at qi layer at that time, Wang Yong began to curse him nonstop, without showing the bearing of a YuanYing stage expert in the slightest, but much more like a village's old man, deeply protective of his children.

Wang Yong and Gao Yue eagerly listened to the ups and downs during the process of refining. By the time when Yang Chen was telling them about the pill tribulations, Wang Yong was unable to

wait to ask about the circumstances of the Yin Fire tribulations, due to his excitement.

“This disciple asks for forgiveness for being impudent!”

Yang Chen extended his right hand and stretched it to Wang Yong's head, while extending his left hand towards Gao Yue.

Wang Yong was startled, but he soon understood: Yang Chen intended to push his own memories into Wang Yong's Spiritual Awareness, allowing him to sense the event that had happened at that time. Immediately all kinds of wonderful, but strange images began to fill up his mind. Seeing Wang Yong like this, Gai Yue also followed his example and pressed her forehead to Yang Chen's hand.

The images of the pill tribulation began to appear in the Spiritual Awareness of Wang Yong and Gao Yue. Fortunately, the transformation of Yang Chen's Spirit Sea after he had reached the foundation stage allowed him to support this ability to allow them to see what he wanted them to see. This was originally a technique of the spiritual world, even people like Deng Yi could only manipulate their own Spirit Sea, but could not share it with others.

Wang Yong and Gao Yue had forgotten to care about these minor details in their excitement; they were completely immersed in the process of the pill tribulation. Lightning tribulation, Yin Fire tribulation, Wind tribulation. The descent of the Three Calamities had appeared within their Spiritual Awareness completely intact, as if this was happening in front of their eyes. Even the part where

Elder Wu had resisted the Wind tribulation by himself wasn't missed.

Yang Chen had removed his hand long ago, but these two people were still immersed within the pill tribulation, unable to free themselves. Yang Chen didn't disturb them and calmly waited for both of them to become clear headed on their own.

After a long time, only Wang Yong had managed to awaken from that state, with a smile across his face, he said in loud voice:

“Oh so it was like this! This will save me at least a hundred years of useless work!”